



ABSOLUTE CHOICE

BOOK 05

Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Absolute Choice

(Jue Dui Xuan Xiang)

(绝对选项)

by

Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring

(梨落秋溪)

Synopsis

A world filled with heroes with superpowers. A world attacked by calamity fiends. A modern world filled with wonders and dangers.

Shi Xiaobai, a child from normal Earth, walked into such a world, proclaiming to be its king. But at the first signs of danger, he is forced to make a choice, one which he cannot refuse for time would repeat, making him face the choice again.

He is not humble nor is he modest, but neither is he delusional. Yet, the Absolute Choice seems to make fun of him. Will the joke be on him or will he laugh at his opponents? There will be many watching his escapades, and there will be some joining him in his adventures.

To see through the world and to grasp its truth, that is the destiny of the King.

Copyright by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rex @ [Wuxia World](#)

Translation Edits by Lucas @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: I'll Do Whatever You Want To Do Tonight

The old succubus shocked Shi Xiaobai.

And for the other three palace maids' families, their reactions were identical to the first elderly succubus.

The Infernals had black skin, and most of them were born ugly. However, Shi Xiaobai was shocked by the pure loyalty they had.

It was a truly beautiful loyalty. You could call it fanaticism or craziness, but you could not deny that such loyalty was a form of beauty for a king on his throne.

Shi Xiaobai was not the real Infernal King. He had not done a single thing for the country or these people. However, after gaining such a beautiful loyalty, he could not feel a sense of hate for them, despite the fact that devils were impressed on humans as an ugly and evil existence.

The loyalty of these Infernals was much more beautiful than humans or Transcendents.

“Give them the best treatment,” said Shi Xiaobai softly.

The Infernal Queen nodded. “Alright.”

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment and asked the Infernal Queen. “This King wants to make the country even better. What should This King do?”

The Infernal Queen faltered for a moment and said seriously a few moments later. “Do as you did in the past. Darling, you have already done a very good job. You are the most perfect king that I’ve ever heard of, seen or imagined.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he could not help but turn silent.

Back in the Infernal King’s bedroom, Shi Xiaobai had seen several books on governance and he had guessed that the Infernal King was probably an enlightened ruler, but he never expected that the Infernal King would be given such high acclaim.

From the attitude of the Infernals, it was obvious that the Infernal King was an excellent monarch.

“Let’s go back.”

The Infernal Queen said when she noticed the darkening skies.

They spent an entire afternoon’s time to settle the matters regarding the four palace maids. As the most noble existence in the Infernal domain, Shi Xiaobai did not need to do so. It was also unprecedented for a king to personally apologize to his people.

But because of this, the look of admiration and love in the

Infernal Queen's eyes became more intense.

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he nodded. It suited him because he wanted to return to the Infernal King's bedroom to see if there were any clues left. He wanted to know what sort of king the Infernal King was.

...

After returning to the palace, Shi Xiaobai did not immediately return to his bedroom. Instead, he first paid a visit to Sunless and company. He was surprised to discover Sunless, Pulp Farmer, and Liu Yu engrossed in their reading. Sunless had brought a few books back to her room, but Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu decided to stay put in the library. It could be euphemistically called 'reading by the lamplight'.

When asked, it was revealed that many of the books in the Infernal Library were extremely beneficial to them. Many theories and knowledge were different from what the humans knew, but they had their own unique views. It gave them an enlightening feeling as they realized that things could be explained in particular ways.

Even Sunless was full of praise of the Infernal domain's sword manuals. It even made Shi Xiaobai feel like grabbing a few books to read. However, Shi Xiaobai, who never had interest in reading, felt dizzy just thinking of the densely packed words in the books.

It was enough just thinking about reading.

Shi Xiaobai next went to the arsenal and discovered Feng Yuanlin still in there. Feng Yuanlin's superpower was not creating shields out of nothing. He needed to come into contact with real shields to be able to replicate them. By being able to come in close contact with the shields in the Infernal domain's arsenal was a great opportunity for Feng Yuanlin.

Shi Xiaobai did not disturb Feng Yuanlin, who was immersed in enhancing his strength. He only conveniently took a shield and ate it along the way.

The black metal shield that looked hard and sturdy tasted like chocolate cookies. Furthermore, its nutritional value was eleven. It was tasty and pragmatic. It completely trashed the hundred dishes cooked by the Infernal domain's chefs.

Shi Xiaobai chewed the black metal shield in satisfaction as he thought about finding an opportunity to head to the arsenal tomorrow to have a sumptuous meal. Wouldn't that be great?

When Shi Xiaobai walked past the silver-haired girl's room, he knocked on it gently but the girl did not open the door. Shi Xiaobai did not disturb her any further as it was likely for her to be asleep.

After going his rounds, Shi Xiaobai finally returned to his bedroom.

Shi Xiaobai pushed the door and entered. Scanning the room, he realized that the Infernal Queen wasn't in the bedroom. He was

delighted because it was a perfect opportunity.

Shi Xiaobai closed the door as he eagerly walked towards the desk.

However, just as he was halfway there, he heard a splash.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head in shock and a naked figure came out of the water in the bathing pool.

The first thing he saw was snow-white skin.

The Infernal Queen, who came out of the bathing pool, was completely naked. The most private parts of her body were not covered in any way. Water droplets rolled down her smooth skin, but what was even more crystalline than the water droplets were her pair of charming eyes.

“Darling, I’ll do whatever you want to do tonight.”

...

...

Transcendence

This day was destined to be a day forever recorded in history for

Transcendence.

In the afternoon, the western city wall had been destroyed. The gatekeeping gargantuan had left and King Leonis had disappeared.

But in the afternoon, the gatekeeping gargantuan returned.

And what was most astonishing was the head in the gatekeeping gargantuan's hand.

It was King Leonis's head.

Leonis was dead!

It sent shockwaves throughout Transcendence.

And at that moment, the gatekeeping gargantuan bellowed a terrible roar at Transcendence—"All of you get the fuck out and meet your new king!"

Moments later, the residents of Transcendents realized that the new king the gatekeeping gargantuan referred to was himself!

The Transcendents scoffed. This watchdog that even beggars could bully wanted to be their new king? Even if King Leonis was dead, it would never be your turn!

But soon, many people realized something. Why was King Leonis's head in the gargantuan's hands?

Combined with the gargantuan's roar about usurping the throne, the Transcendents came to a terrifying conclusion—the gargantuan had killed King Leonis!

Regardless if it was a guess or fact, the gargantuan's intentions of vying for the throne incurred the animosity of many powerful warriors.

However, in a short afternoon, not a single person dared to make a sound.

The eight Transcendent Bravehearts, including Moya, were easily overwhelmed by the gargantuan. If not for the gargantuan showing a tiny bit of mercy, the eight Bravehearts would have died instantly.

At that moment, every Transcendent finally realized that the gargantuan in front of them was very strong. He was ridiculously and unbelievably strong. He was even stronger than King Leonis!

It was the tradition of the Transcendents where the strongest person was made king. Since the gargantuan's strength was not to be doubted, he became the new king of Transcendence.

And in that cold night, the gargantuan suddenly announced a chilling decree.

“Inform all countries that Transcendence will be declaring war on the Infernal domain. All Bravehearts must come to Transcendence tomorrow or their titles as Bravehearts will be removed. If they dare to use the title of Braveheart after having their titles denounced, This King will personally kill the person as well as destroy the person’s country!”

The gargantuan’s words made every Transcendent panic.

Having suffered another abject defeat, Moya, who could only swear allegiance, said aghast, “My esteemed king, do you want to launch a war?”

The gargantuan sneered and turned to look at the Infernal domain. He said coldly, “War has already begun.”

...

Chapter 402: War Has Already Begun!

Celestial domain, Celestial King's palace

Speechless was sitting on the Celestial King's throne in a depressed manner.

At the Celestial domain's stone door, the wolf-headed guard had knelt down in horror and called him "Your Majesty".

Speechless originally believed that the wolf-headed guard had made a mistake, but after he entered the Celestial domain, he realized that every Celestial inside the Celestial domain recognized him as the Celestial King. No matter how much he denied it, even to the point of claiming to be here to steal the Celestial Jade and challenge the Celestial King, as well as taking out the challenge letter he had prepared.

However, not a single Celestial believed Speechless's words or had any doubt about his status as Celestial King. They prostrated before him and requested him to stop joking while trembling.

Speechless was rendered speechless. He had no choice but to accept the ridiculous plot setup.

"Little Yue, why don't you comment on what's going on? Does the Celestial domain think that whoever is the most handsome is the Celestial King? This Emperor believes that his face can easily one-shot the entire Celestial domain, but This Emperor doesn't have a modicum of interest being the Celestial King," Speechless

grumbled as he silently played with the holy item of the Celestial domain in his hand—the Celestial Jade.

Mu Yuesheng could not help but roll her eyes. Disregarding Speechless's shameless act of touting his own horn, his body language appeared as if he enjoyed it. She despised him for it, but she too could not figure out why he had suddenly become the Celestial King.

Unlike Shi Xiaobai, the two of them did not even think of the wondrous possibility of the 'assessment program's designation'. The only thought they had was that something had gone wrong, or that Speechless had done something he had failed to notice. Those acts might have initiated a hidden plot.

Mu Yuesheng pondered for a while with her eyebrows furrowed before she gave up thinking on the matter that provided no clues. She said, "You seem like you are enjoying it. As Celestial King, it is equivalent to you possessing all the resources of the Celestial domain. Even a holy item like the Celestial Jade can be held by you easily. This is a great opportunity that others would love to have."

When Speechless heard her, he squinted his eyes as he tasted a mouthful of the grape wine from the table. He said in admiration, "The Celestial domain's wine is indeed delicious."

Speechless set the glass of wine down and looked at Mu Yuesheng. His eyes suddenly turned serious as he said, "However if This Emperor were to become the Celestial King, how is he to challenge all three kings?"

Mu Yuesheng was slightly surprised as she immediately looked down and said, "Do you really need to challenge all three kings? Can't becoming the Celestial King be your excuse?"

Speechless fell silent for a moment before he said with a deep voice, "It can be used as an excuse and the old fogeys of the Li family have no choice but to accept the excuse, but...how can This Emperor accept such an excuse?"

Mu Yuesheng looked up suddenly and said in surprise, "What do you mean? The act of challenging the three kings is of your own will?"

Speechless nodded and said, "Of course. This Emperor had prepared seven years for this day."

Mu Yuesheng gaped and hesitated for a moment before she whispered, "But you once said that you want to be Speechless Li."

"Not only does This Emperor want to be Speechless Li, he also wants to surpass the Hero King," Speechless said in a deep voice, "But the premise of surpassing the Hero King requires This Emperor to accomplish his past achievements and nothing less!"

Mu Yuesheng shook her head and say with a wry smile, "I can't agree with your point of view. I believe that Speechless Li can surpass the Hero King, but there is no need to become the Hero King before surpassing him. Speechless Li can carve out a new path that belongs to him, creating a legend that he can call his own."

Speechless laughed in spite of himself and said, "To think that the name 'Speechless Li' is such a lofty existence in your mind. Sorry, Little Yue. Your Brother Speechless is not as great as you imagined. After fully understanding the legend of the Hero King, I believe that no one after him can create a legend that can surpass his. A legend that surpasses the Hero King does not exist from my point of view. To surpass him, I believe that one has to follow his life trajectory before taking one more step than he did."

Mu Yuesheng gave Speechless a penetrating glance and said seriously, "On this point, you are inferior to Shi Xiaobai. If it were him, he would not hesitate and do what he wants and walk down a path that belongs to him. Brother Speechless, do not let the 'Hero King' be your shackles that restrict your own expression."

Speechless was stunned when he heard this. He said with a chuckle, "What you said is very reasonable. I have nothing to offer to your viewpoint. But if from the day you were born, you were arranged and trained to become a particular person, wouldn't you have a grudge against that person? Would you think of telling this world and telling the people who designated your fate that you can surpass that person? Do you understand? What I want to do and the path I want to take is to follow the Hero King's footsteps and go even further than him!"

Mu Yuesheng gaped as she lowered her head slightly. She no longer spoke.

Speechless sighed and fell into silence.

The atmosphere turned heavy and oppressive.

At that moment, the sound of footsteps broke the heavy silence.

The two looked up and saw a bull-horned Celestial guard who was three meters tall enter the palace.

Although the bull-horned guard wore a guard's uniform, he looked rather majestic and had an extraordinary bearing. It was obvious at a glance that he was no ordinary guard.

"Is there something?" Speechless asked curiously.

The bull-horned guard bowed his head but he did not kneel. He said in a deep voice, "Your Majesty, the first division has already begun the mission. Should the second division be ordered to be on standby?"

Speechless was stunned. "What do you mean? Speak clearly."

The bull-horned guard looked up slightly as his eyes had a trace of doubt. However, he quickly lowered his head as he enunciated his words clearly, "According to your command, the Celestial army's first division—the kamikaze squad has launched a preemptive assault on the Infernal domain in the wee hours of the night. They will likely open up a path in the Infernal domain. Your Majesty, when do you plan on letting the second division begin the second wave of attacks?"

Upon hearing that, Speechless and Mu Yuesheng were given a fright as they stood up from their seats.

Speechless said in a deep voice, "When did This Emp...This King issue such an order?"

The bull-horned guard immediately replied with a deep voice, "Two days ago, you raised the motion of launching a full-scale attack on the Infernal domain at the round table meeting. You were unanimously opposed by the seven Elders, but you were insistent on it and determined. You used the 'Will of the King' that every Celestial King can use once during his reign, forcefully passing the motion of invading the Infernal domain. According to your plan, a three-hundred-strong kamikaze squad will use their lives to launch a sneak attack tonight so as to open a gap in the Infernal domain! All of this can be testified by the seven Elders, the ten Divine Generals, as well as me!"

Speechless and Mu Yuesheng looked each other in the face. They had only just arrived in the seventh level two days ago.

In that case, the command was issued by the real Celestial King?

But why would the real Celestial King issue such a command?

This situation had never been seen in the history of the trials that humans have seen in millennia.

Speechless was left shocked for a moment before he quickly

calmed down. Regardless of what the Celestial King had done, he was now the Celestial King.

Speechless said to the bull-horned guard said, "It must have been a moment of folly and not the wishes of This King. Quickly pass the order to get the first division to retreat. The plans of invading the Infernal domain have all been canceled!"

The bull-horned guard looked up and gave Speechless a penetrating gaze. He shook his head and said in a deep voice, "I'm very sorry. The first division had already launched a sneak attack on the Infernal domain three minutes ago. Most of them should have died valiantly in battle, so it is unlikely that the plans of invading the Infernal domain can be canceled."

"Your Majesty, war has already begun!"

Chapter 403: We Aren't Real

Infernal domain, Door of the Bravehearts

The whole world believed that there was only one entrance to the Infernal domain—the narrow Door of the Bravehearts. This was because entry from any other direction would cause one to fall into a maze and lose their sense of direction. Even if one could finally walk out of the maze, one would appear outside the Infernal domain and never inside.

The Door of the Bravehearts was the only entrance that would not lead to a maze. It was also the only entrance that connected the interior of the Infernal domain to its exterior.

And it was because of this that the Infernal domain was easily defensible. Even if one had a million-strong army, trying to gain entry through such a narrow entrance would only result in a battering by the armies guarding the Infernal domain.

However, there were people who knew of a secret—the Infernal domain's mazes were not natural, but a result of several array formations. And these array formations were within the Infernal domain.

This was one of the biggest secrets of the Infernal domain. Mortals would not have any way of knowing, but the Celestials were different. Due to a particular reason, the Celestials knew of this secret.

Therefore, the Celestials were the greatest enemies of the Infernals as well as their greatest threat. This was because they knew that as long as the maze array formations were destroyed, it would result in a hole in the exterior barrier of the Infernal domain. And one maze array formation was all that was needed to have such an effect.

As the saying goes, an ant hole can cause the collapse of a great dike. Just a tiny hole would allow the Celestial army to directly destroy the Infernal domain's exterior barriers.

And the Celestial army's first division was a reconnaissance squad. They were endowed with the most confidential of missions—using three hundred kamikaze soldiers to destroy at least one array formation.

The first squad's commander, Maio, was already eighty years old. He was once one of the ten Divine Generals. After he retired, he did not choose to lead a peaceful retirement. Instead, he volunteered to be the commander of the first division.

Although this division was numbered one, it was the division that most Celestial soldiers hated to be assigned to. This was because the division was the first to make the charge and the first to die when war broke out.

Although the Celestials lived in isolation and had not warred for millennia, no one knew when the flames of war would ignite or when the smoke would waft to them.

Honor was dear, but life was dearer.

Of course, there were people who valued the treatment received by the first division. As the most dangerous division, the wages exceeded the other divisions. Things like pension, medical, unemployment, work injury and maternity insurance, board and lodging, allowances and year-end bonuses didn't exist, but the wages they received every month were twice that of the soldiers of the same rank!

Therefore, both honor and life could be given up for money.

There was no lack of such money-grubbing worms in the first division.

These worms were easily recognizable. Maio could tell at a glance that more than half of the young soldiers were trembling. His eyes flashed a look of disappointment.

However, there was a small minority of young soldiers who seemed to face death calmly in the eye.

This made Maio feel a tiny sense of comfort.

"If we succeed, would the war begin?"

A shivering soldier said with a tremble, "Shall we flee instead? For peace?"

With that said, there was immediately a number of soldiers that echoed him. Of course, there were other soldiers that laughed derisively.

Maio sighed and said with a heavy voice, "If we fail, there's still the second first division. And if we become deserters, your parents, spouse and children will be chased out of the Celestial domain."

With that said, all the soldiers fell silent.

Maio looked at the dark sky and said, "Ever since His Majesty used the Will of the King, the war has already begun. If the Infernal domain is not conquered, the Celestial domain will be in danger. For our family, our lives will not be in vain. Children, time is up. Let us send ourselves to our deaths!"

...

...

Infernal domain, Infernal King's bedroom

The completely naked Infernal Queen stood up from the bathing pool. The most private parts of her body were not covered in any way.

Water droplets rolled down her smooth skin, but what was even

more crystalline than the water droplets were her pair of charming eyes.

"Darling, I'll do whatever you want to do tonight."

Bold words that had a bashful tone to it came out of her light pink lips. Her soft voice sounded slightly hoarse which gave it a temptatious allure.

The Infernal Queen lifted her right foot out of the bathing pool as she walked to the middle of the room with water dripping down her body. A splendid scene could be seen from time to time as her thighs separated with every step she took. The full and ample bunnies on her chest bounced up and down in a supple manner.

Shi Xiaobai watched in a daze for three seconds. This was the first time he had seen the naked body of the opposite sex. Furthermore, it was one that he would consider very beautiful from an aesthetic point of view. Shi Xiaobai could not help but look for an additional three seconds.

This was a major influence on his pure heart.

There were huge differences between the bodies of men and women. And the greatest difference was between the legs.

Shi Xiaobai came up with a very scientific conclusion and could not help but ponder over the reason for the difference.

Unlike other teenagers, Shi Xiaobai would be dozing off in anatomy classes. He had never seen raunchy stuff before. Even in animations, games, or websites, he would turn a blind eye to the pornographic content. He did not have the desire to delve further into it. And it appeared as though his roommate, Yang Wei, was happy with such a situation happening. He deliberately chose not to inform Shi Xiaobai of the anatomy knowledge that even primary school students would more or less know.

Shi Xiaobai knew that there existed the possibility of 'mating' between men and women. He also knew that the term "Pa Pa Pa" represented intimate actions between men and women, but for the actual act or the specific details, they were things Shi Xiaobai did not know. He temporarily did not have the interest to know either.

In a world where sex and desires prevailed, there were always people who did not know a thing. They were obsessed with certain things, so they would miss out on some general knowledge. You could call them idiots or retards, and Shi Xiaobai was such a youth.

The scene in front of his eyes made Shi Xiaobai ponder.

Like the legendary story, Adam and Eve began thinking when they looked at each other's bodies—Why were there such huge differences between the bodies of men and women?

Such a thought made Adam be instinctively attracted to Eve and eventually, he tasted the forbidden fruit.

And at that moment, Shi Xiaobai was facing a similar test.

But it was different from Adam's. What Shi Xiaobai was facing was not the equally ignorant Eve, but the Infernal Queen, who clearly knew everything.

The Infernal Queen was taking step after step in an enchanting manner as she came to a meter away from Shi Xiaobai. She gave an embarrassed smile and stretched out her slender and soft hands. Placing them on Shi Xiaobai's cheeks, she said gently, "Darling, am I beautiful?"

The Infernal Queen's naked body was in close proximity, but even under such close scrutiny, there was no sign of a blemish on her soft and fair skin. It was like flawless milky jade.

Shi Xiaobai had no way but to admit that the Infernal Queen in front of him was very beautiful. He nodded slightly as his eyes seemed to glaze over slightly.

The Infernal Queen chuckled in joy as she stretched out her hands to hold onto Shi Xiaobai's hands as she slowly pulled them towards her chest.

"Darling, I'll do whatever you want to do tonight, as long as you are happy."

The Infernal Queen's eyes were filled with affection and obsession, as though she was willing to give up everything for the person she loved deeply.

But just as Shi Xiaobai's hand was about to touch the ample bunnies, Shi Xiaobai suddenly pulled his hands back from the Infernal Queen's grasp.

The Infernal Queen was left stunned as she asked curiously, "What happened?"

Shi Xiaobai slowly took a step back. His eyes were bright and clear as a lake. "You know that This King isn't the real Infernal King."

The Infernal Queen laughed in surprise as she said, "Darling, you are joking once again! If I knew that you weren't the Infernal King and not my husband, how would I do such a bold and shameless deed?"

Shi Xiaobai grinned as his eyes flashed a penetrating wisdom, "You would, of course, do it because you are not the real Infernal Queen either!"

...

Chapter 404: They Are A Pack Of Lone Wolves

It was a dark, moonless night with strong winds. The misty night seemed like the Heavens had specially prepared it for the first division. The three hundred Celestial soldiers proceeded in the night.

They were all dressed in black stealth clothing. They did not wear a single piece of armor. Even the weapons they chose were black bronze weapons that were of ordinary sharpness. This was in order for them to slink into the night.

The squad had a large number of cowardly worms, but few of them were weak. Eighty-year-old Maio was known in the army as the "Strict Undying Old Fart". Although there had been a lack of war for millennia, the standards he imposed on the soldiers under him in their everyday training were higher than normal.

If someone in the first division wanted to enjoy treatment two times better than soldiers of the same rank, they had to endure the strict training Maio imposed on them. If not, they would be immediately be eliminated ruthlessly by Maio. After all, there were many people who envied the first division's benefits.

Therefore, in this stealth mission at night, the three hundred soldiers showcased their extremely high level of skill and discipline. Even though they were trembling in fear of death, they did their best to curb the production of any sound.

The sound of footsteps, breathing, and every other sound was minimized, so as to seamlessly merge into the silence of the night.

Maio, who was creeping right in front, came into the narrow path known as the Door of the Bravehearts. The second soldier paused for three seconds before he mustered the courage to walk in.

The other side of the Door of the Bravehearts was the Infernal domain. It was also very likely to be their burial ground.

But, who would wish to die?

And who would be willing to die?

After Maio said "Children, let us send ourselves to our deaths!", he very wisely added another line.

"But if we can do it nicely enough, it might not be impossible to survive."

A kamikaze squad did not mean that they would definitely die. The mission they were carrying out just had a very high mortality rate. Although the likelihood of dying was extremely close to sure-death, there was still a tiny chance of survival.

What ignited the most hope in people was not a star-filled sky, but the faint light in the darkness.

If one wanted to survive, one needed to do the job perfectly.

The three hundred Celestial soldiers demonstrated their perfect bearing. This was a result of the usual rigorous training they had undergone as well as the hope of them surviving.

Maio, who was once one of the ten Divine Generals, showed his strong side. Even though he was at the advanced age of eighty, he was still like an old horse in the stable that dreamed of heroic exploits. He was first to lead the charge. Before the two Infernal guards managed to react in time, their throats were slit. With a muffled cry, the Infernals that had been somewhat negligent died in pain.

The Infernal domain that had never faced an invasion for countless years was careless in its defense. At that moment, the weakness was vividly torn apart and magnified.

The first line of defense behind the Door of the Bravehearts had four patrolling Infernals. Before they managed to issue any warnings, they were instantly killed by Maio singlehandedly.

The three hundred Celestial soldiers successfully infiltrated the Infernal domain through the Door of the Bravehearts. They had silently completed the initial stages of the invasion.

However, regardless of how negligent the Infernal domain's defenses were, it was still the Infernal domain. When the three hundred Celestial soldiers stepped into the second line of defense,

a searchlight suddenly fell onto the Celestial soldiers!

A warning siren immediately resounded through the night sky!

The Infernal guards at the second, third and fourth line of defense were jolted awake. They quickly picked up their weapons in preparation to destroy the sudden intruders!

"Disperse!"

With an order from Maio, three hundred Celestial soldiers immediately scattered like sand. A cohesive squad transformed into ants that crawled in every direction.

And most crucial of all, they still tried their best to repress the sounds they produced while running in every direction.

In the darkness of the night, there were rustling sounds that sounded like the light sounds of crickets. It was impossible to tell that it was the footstep sounds of three hundred Celestial soldiers.

As for the searchlight, it swung back and forth but only managed to illuminate a portion of the fleeing Celestial soldiers!

"Here!"

"Over here too!"

"No, over here!"

"How many enemies are there!?"

In the darkness, the Infernal guards shouted in pointed responses.

The Infernal guards that could not discern the number of enemies could only charge into the enemy group with weapons in hand. They began their slaughter with the aim of killing as many as they could!

The Celestial soldiers' resistance was extremely valiant. However, what surprised the Infernal guards was that the enemies they were fighting against did not have any reinforcements.

With five Infernal guards attacking a Celestial soldier, there was no one who came to support the besieged Celestial soldier!

Screams punctuated the night sky as most of the Celestial soldiers screamed out tragically. Few of the Infernal guards died.

However, when the Infernal guards could no longer find a living Celestial soldier, they were shocked to discover that all the guards at the second line of defense had died. The second line of defense was broken!

This was the first division of the Celestial army. They would not support any fellow soldier that was discovered. Their only goal was

infiltration and advancement, so as to complete their mission!

As they were only three hundred people, they had no chances of victory when facing the entire Infernal domain's soldiers. The only method they had was to complete the invasion as fast as possible before the Infernal domain reacted in full force!

They could not attack in groups. They were only lone wolves that ran in different directions for the same goal.

There was bound to be a direction in which a gap could be found!

Maio ran frenetically, as he constantly heard the tragic screams of his fellow young soldiers. It made his aging heart feel depressed. Due to the effects of time, his stone-cold soul was carved with a tinge of emotion. It made him feel sentimental about partings in life or death.

But the real soldiers had to disregard their lives and deaths!

Maio's eyes flashed with a cold and resolute light. Like the most ruthless and fiercest forest wolf, his rich experience and keen intuition allowed him to dodge the pursuit of the searchlights again and again. When his companions were discovered and surrounded, he would turn a blind eye and coldly make a detour so as to find a fleeting crack in the defenses.

The second line of defense!

The third line of defense!

The fourth line of defense!

Maio penetrated layer upon layer of defenses like a sharp sword. He may lay dormant in the night or proceed at an extremely fast speed in the night. But when he attacked, he would silently take a fresh life along with him.

More deaths were happening beside him as the Celestial soldiers were constantly sacrificed. When he crossed the fourth line of defense and passed the Infernal domain's wall, he was the only person left.

To penetrate the Infernal domain's four lines of defenses with just three hundred soldiers was a spectacle even if the four lines of defenses had become relaxed over years of peace.

And Maio, who was advanced in age, had completed such a spectacle.

He was about to ignite the flames of war when he stood in front of an array rune that was inscribed on a stone wall.

Maio closed his eyes and stretched his hands out to the array's runes.

There were thousands of such array runes in the Infernal domain. It was one of the most ordinary ones, but just this rune

alone was not simple to destroy. Even Maio, who was once one of the ten Divine Generals, was unable to do so in a short period of time.

Unless he used unusual means.

"Long Live His Majesty!"

Maio suddenly opened his eyes. Light bloomed as his body combusted in flames!

"Boom!"

A deafening explosion echoed in the already noisy night!

At that moment, the giant in Transcendence, as well as the bull-horned guard in the Celestial domain's Celestial King's palace, said the same words almost simultaneously.

"The war has begun."

Chapter 405: Who Exactly Are You

Infernal domain, Infernal King's bedroom

"You would, of course, do it because you are not the real Infernal Queen either!"

A glow flashed in Shi Xiaobai's eyes that seemed to see through everything.

The Infernal Queen was startled and said with a puzzled expression, "I'm not the real Infernal Queen? Darling, why are you making such a strange joke?"

Shi Xiaobai smiled without saying a word. After looking into the Infernal Queen's eyes for a few moments, he pointed to his right armpit and said, "Unfortunately, This King does not have a red mole under This King's right armpit."

When the Infernal Queen heard this, her expression remained the same as she said with certainty, "I'm certain that Darling has a red mole underneath your armpit."

Shi Xiaobai chuckled, "This afternoon, This King had deliberately taken off his clothes while in the bathroom. This King had looked using a mirror but there was no red mole. Do you think that This King made a mistake?"

The Infernal Queen fell silent for a moment before her

expression gradually turned serious. She pondered for a moment before saying softly, "Maybe I remembered wrong. It might be under the left armpit."

Shi Xiaobai shook his head with a laugh as he said, "Unfortunately, there was none under the left armpit either."

A look of surprise flashed in the Infernal Queen's eyes as she exclaimed, "Impossible!"

"Impossible?"

Shi Xiaobai said with a sneer, "Do you mean that it's impossible that This King doesn't have a red mole under either of his armpits or do you mean that it's impossible for This King to be so insipid as to check his armpits so carefully?"

The Infernal Queen fell silent as she looked at Shi Xiaobai and said with a faint grumble, "Darling, are you trying to make things difficult for me?"

Shi Xiaobai chuckled, "You know that This King has a birthmark on his chest because This King's clothes had been changed before, but you did not obtain more private information. However, in order to make This King believe that he is the Infernal King, you used the very persuasive argument of the existence of a red mole under the armpit. That was indeed a very wise lie because ordinary people would not pay any attention about the existence of a red mole under the armpit. And there was no way anyone would take off their clothes on the spot to check. After someone realizes that

he was the Infernal King, he would not make the unnecessary move of verifying it. This is a lie that nearly could not be exposed. But you must have never thought that This King will really check. Furthermore, This King had checked both armpits!"

The Infernal Queen sighed and said, "Darling, aren't you just splitting hairs? When Darling kept insisting that he wasn't the Infernal King, I was anxious and said a lie, so as to stop Darling from joking. Darling, you could lie and say that you are not the Infernal King, so why can't I make a harmless lie?"

"Of course you can lie," said Shi Xiaobai with a nod. "You were quite clever to not say that you remembered wrongly. Lying is indeed the best excuse. This King also believed that you had said a lie because of your anxiousness, but unfortunately, that is not the only thing you did that let the cat out of the bag!"

The Infernal Queen said in a soft voice, "What did I do to make Darling misunderstand me?"

"Perfume." Shi Xiaobai said softly, "This room is filled with a perfume scent."

The Infernal Queen said in surprise, "Is there a problem spraying a bit of perfume in the room?"

"It's very normal to spray perfume in the room, but the problem was that the perfume is poisonous!"

Shi Xiaobai said with a sneer, "You probably never expected that not only is This King immune to poison, This King can also easily detect the existence of poison. The perfume in this room contains a strong aphrodisiac poison. It confused This King's mind temporarily, but thankfully, This King is immune to poison, or This King would have indulged in lust."

The Infernal Queen gaped and whispered, "Darling, you returned after so many days, and I was lonely. I wanted to spray some aphrodisiac perfume to enhance my appeal. Is...that also wrong?"

"It's not wrong, and it's very reasonable, but the mistake was that you were too eager."

Shi Xiaobai stretched two fingers out. "Twice. You sprayed the perfume twice. The amounts that were sprayed both times were completely different. You probably never expected that This King could precisely distinguish the level of toxicity in the perfume. The amount of aphrodisiac perfume sprayed tonight is 3.3 times more than it was in the afternoon. If you were only doing so to increase your appeal, is there a need to increase the concentration of the aphrodisiac perfume?"

The Infernal Queen said with a wry smile, "I, I might have made a mistake and sprayed too much. Darling, if you don't like such methods of enhancing appeal, I won't spray it in the future. But how can this say that I'm not the real Infernal Queen? I only did this in a moment of folly because I love you too much..."

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, "Indeed, these two points would not be able to explain anything. Be it the red mole under the armpit or

the aphrodisiac perfume, it at most proves that you have lied and that you are not as honest to This King as you appear. But unfortunately, you made the biggest mistake. Think back carefully. Back when This King said 'You know that This King isn't the real Infernal King', how did you answer?"

A trace of surprise flashed in the Infernal Queen's eyes. She carefully recollected what her first response was.

Back then, she had said the words "Darling, you are joking once again! If I knew that you weren't the Infernal King and not my husband, how would I do such bold and shameless deeds?"

Was there something wrong with that?

Where was the problem?

The Infernal Queen's pupils suddenly dilated as she looked in disbelief at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai sped up his speaking speed and said, "Do you understand now? Your guilty conscience answer has completely exposed you. When This King said, 'You know that This King isn't the real Infernal King', you instinctively rejected the matter that 'you know that This King isn't the real Infernal King', and not that 'This King isn't the Infernal King'! It's because you know that This King is not the Infernal King, so you never realized the pitfall of that sentence. You were too eager to deny the fact that you knew that This King is not the Infernal King. But by doing so, you exposed the truth!"

"Then, with the 'You know that This King isn't the real Infernal King' as a premise, all your actions can be explained. You know that This King isn't the Infernal King because, in order to make This King believe that he is the Infernal King, you said the lie about the red mole under the armpit. You know that This King isn't the Infernal King, so he would not have intercourse with you normally. Therefore, you sprayed aphrodisiac perfume. When you realized that the effects were not obvious, you allowed This King more latitude first before striking later. You waited until the night and increased the concentration of the aphrodisiac perfume. And all of your actions, be it the striptease or you being naked at this moment, your goal is extremely obvious. You want to seduce This King!"

"If you are the real Infernal Queen and with you knowing that This King isn't the real Infernal King, how could you possibly take actions to seduce This King? Therefore, there is only one truth. You are not the real Infernal Queen!"

The Infernal Queen fell silent and after looking into Shi Xiaobai's eyes for a moment, she said softly with a laugh, "What Darling said are just wishful speculation and inference. There is no evidence at all. I admit that I said a lie, sprayed aphrodisiac perfume and did very bold and shameless acts of temptation. The question from before was me answering incorrectly because of a moment of confusion. But what can all this prove? I only did so out of loneliness, hoping that Darling can quickly show his love to me. By doing this, wouldn't it perfectly prove my feelings for you? Darling, your inference sounds very reasonable, but there is no evidence that can prove that I'm not the real Infernal Queen."

Shi Xiaobai sighed and said, "The evidence you want is very simple. You can change everything about you to be identical to the Infernal Queen, but there is one thing that you instinctively ignored. That's because you didn't think that This King would be able to discover the thing that you couldn't be bothered to hide. Your strength is ridiculously strong."

When the Infernal Queen heard this, her eyes widened.

Shi Xiaobai focused on the Infernal Queen's naked and alluring body and confirmed that he did not make a mistake. When he gathered his killing intent to concentrate on the body in front of him, he did not see a single red line.

Not a single one!

This was unprecedented for Shi Xiaobai. He could see about three or four red lines even for the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign or King Leonis in his fourth state. But, Shi Xiaobai could not find a single one inside the Infernal Queen in front of him!

"You are very strong. You are so strong that there is no need to hide your power level because you know that This King will not be able to see your true strength. And that's true. This King can't tell, but it's because This King can't tell which lets This King know that your strength far exceeds the real Infernal Queen! You are a fake Infernal Queen!"

Shi Xiaobai focused on the Infernal Queen's eyes and said with a deep voice, "Your strength can clearly one-shot This King! Why are

you pretending to be the Infernal Queen and trying all means to seduce This King! What is your goal? And...who the hell are you!?"

Chapter 406: The Seductive Infernal Queen

"Who the hell are you!?"

Shi Xiaobai asked the question that puzzled him the most.

He could tell that the Infernal Queen in front of him was not the real Infernal Queen, but he could not figure out who the fake Infernal Queen was.

With absolute strength that overwhelmed him but had to pretend to be the Infernal Queen to seduce him. Who would do that?

"Clap! Clap! Clap..."

The crisp sound of applause sounded. The Infernal Queen beamed as she clapped. She said softly, "I never expected you to see through me so fast. That's right, I'm really not the real Infernal Queen, but...don't you want to turn something fake into reality?"

The Infernal Queen's eyes flashed with a seductive look as she took a step forward. She lifted her arms and raised the jade bunnies in front of her chest. She split her legs slightly and exposed the most enticing but unspeakable things.

"As long as you want it, this lovely body will be yours to play with."

The Infernal Queen's voice was charming and seductive. It sounded like decadent moaning which could easily stir the desires of others.

Shi Xiaobai calmly focused on the Infernal Queen's naked body but he did not show the slightest bit of fascination, nor did he deliberately turn his head away. He studied the enticing private parts of the Infernal Queen as though he was looking at a cold piece of rock.

"You pretended to be the Infernal Queen and made so many lies. The goal is to seduce This King, so how could This King fall for it despite knowing it?"

Shi Xiaobai said with a sneer, "If you still have any sense of shame, put your clothes on."

The Infernal Queen was stunned when she heard this and she snorted coldly, "Shi Xiaobai, is it possible that you are impotent? Or is it possible that you do not like tainted goods? Don't worry, this body has never been touched by anyone else. If you wish, you can become her only man. Aren't you even stirred at all?"

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said with a scoff, "It seems like you still haven't figured out the situation. It's not that This King does not have any physiological response. By stripping naked, This King will obviously harden as a form of courtesy, but This King is not like the perverted schlocks that only think with their dicks."

"How boring."

The Infernal Queen sighed before turning around to pick up her clothes. She wore them at an adequate pace, but it was apparent that the Infernal Queen was still insistent. She continued posing in a seductive manner as she put the clothes on while staring at Shi Xiaobai. She looked even more enticing than when she was taking the clothes off.

Shi Xiaobai continued ignoring the Infernal Queen's final efforts as he calmly asked, "Who are you?"

The Infernal Queen slowly pulled up her panties that were already between her legs. When she raised her thigh, she deliberately came to a stop. When she heard Shi Xiaobai's question, she smiled with squinted eyes, "Try guessing?"

Shi Xiaobai was appalled. The Infernal Queen's remark revealed something completely different from her mature demeanor. It resembled more like a playful girl.

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily left at a loss as to how to respond.

However, the Infernal Queen's interest was suddenly stirred. As she looked at Shi Xiaobai with a grin, she said, "I'll give you three chances. If you are able to guess my identity correct in the three chances, I'll honestly admit to it. However, if you are unable to guess it after three times, you will never know the truth. Cherish the precious opportunity. I suddenly look forward to the question of whether you are able to guess of my identity with your intelligence."

Shi Xiaobai faltered for a moment but he did not reject the Infernal Queen's suggestion.

He was very confident in his own intelligence.

"For This King to be designated as the Infernal King by the assessment program, it means the scheme must be related to the assessment program. This King is unable to precisely guess your identity, but there is one thing that can't be wrong!"

Shi Xiaobai said confidently, "You were created by the assessment program. The assessment program gave you the Infernal Queen's body and identity, and provided you with information regarding This King. It also gave you immense strength and also the mission of seducing This King!"

This was the only information that Shi Xiaobai had managed to infer. He was confident that he wasn't wrong.

However, the Infernal Queen shook her head and said without even thinking, "Wrong, especially wrong!"

Shi Xiaobai was flabbergasted. That could actually be wrong?

However, from the Infernal Queen's grinning expression, it looked like she was relishing Shi Xiaobai's failure at guessing. It did not seem like she was lying

However, if the Infernal Queen was not sent by the assessment program, how did she gain the identity rights of the Infernal Queen?

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly turned his head as his eyes lit up. "You previously said—'this body has never been touched by anyone else. If you wish, you can become her only man'. You referred your body as 'her', which points to the fact that the body isn't yours. You only replaced the Infernal Queen's soul! You were not created by the assessment program, but you also have the ability to replace the Infernal Queen's soul. Then there are two possibilities. Firstly, you do not belong to the land of the trials. You are an outsider! Secondly, you are the...Level Lord!?"

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she fell silent for a moment. She gave Shi Xiaobai a deep glance and said, "You are very smart. You were able to manage to notice such tiny details. Even I didn't notice that I had revealed anything, but you were able to infer so much from it. You are indeed impressive. But...you guessed wrong."

Shi Xiaobai gaped slightly. He did not shout out aghast 'how can it be possible' like ordinary people when facing such a situation. Instead, he continued thinking. Even though his extremely convincing theory had been denied without any reason, he was not thrown into confusion.

A look of admiration flashed in the Infernal Queen's eyes as she chuckled and said, "You have already guessed twice, but gave three answers. Technically speaking, you have failed. However, I'm truly looking forward to you being able to guess my identity, so I'll give

you one last chance. You still have three other chances. Go ahead and guess. Who am I?"

Shi Xiaobai fell silent as he gave the Infernal Queen a silent glance. Suddenly, he turned towards the desk and nonchalantly picked up a book to flip through it.

"Have you given up?"

A look of disappointment flashed in the Infernal Queen's eyes.

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, "Give up? Such a word does not exist. This King just doesn't want to waste the third opportunity. Rest assured. This King will manage to guess your identity. Just wait till the moment when This King has enough clues. This King hopes that when he reveals your real identity, you would be able to uphold your promise and admit it honestly."

Shi Xiaobai did not like to make blind guesses without any reason. He knew that if he were to blindly guess, it would be a waste of an opportunity.

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she beamed even more as she chuckled, "Then, I'll look forward to it."

As the Infernal Queen laughed, she walked towards the large and soft silk-laden bed.

"You are the fake Infernal King and I'm the Infernal Queen. Two

fakes make it true, so why don't you turn something fake into reality?"

The Infernal Queen threw herself onto the bed and rolled on it once. Squirming into the blanket, she said seductively, "I'll first warm the bed. Whenever you want to come to bed, I'll open my legs to warmly welcome you."

Shi Xiaobai only smiled silently at the seductive Infernal Queen's words. He cast his gaze back on the desk. He chose to expose her in order to prevent the Infernal Queen from sexual harassment. It gave him more time to investigate clues left behind by the real Infernal King.

However, just as Shi Xiaobai was flipping through a small notebook that resembled a diary, a loud explosion sounded from the distance.

Immediately following that, a high-pitched alarm resounded incessantly throughout the entire Infernal domain.

The silence outside the bedroom was instantly broken by panicked footsteps and noisy shouts.

"What's the situation!?"

Shi Xiaobai instinctively looked at the Infernal Queen and asked.

In bed, the Infernal Queen yawned lazily and said with squinted

eyes, "You ask me, but who can I ask?"

It was obvious that she was feigning ignorance, but her emotive acting was extremely playful. It was like she was saying 'I know, but I'll not tell you. Are you angry?'

Shi Xiaobai laughed from his anger, but there was nothing he could do about her. Putting down the notebook in hand, he walked out to figure out what had happened.

Damn it, it's infuriating. Exposing her appeared a bit too early.

Chapter 407: No One Can Prevent The War!

Celestial domain, round table meeting room

"As Celestial King, does This King not even have the slightest bit of authority? This King is now commanding to cancel all the battle plans of invading the Infernal domain!"

Speechless was looking with a gloomy face at seven Celestial Elders, who were sitting in front of a large, round table. It was rumored that the seven Celestial Elders were descendants with the purest bloodline, but from Speechless's point of view, they were just seven elderly dwarfs with sallow skin.

The seven dwarves remained unperturbed despite Speechless appearing like he would go mad at any moment. They seemed oblivious of the wrath of the Celestial King that was about to be triggered.

The most esteemed Grand Elder of the seven Elders was the first to speak by saying, "Your Majesty, with all due respect, I'm afraid you do not have the right to cancel the battle plans."

Speechless said with a sneer, "Why doesn't This King not have the right? Try telling This King what rights he possesses when This King is the most esteemed Celestial King of the Celestial domain?"

The Grand Elder faltered slightly before he quickly gave an indifferent smile. He said nonchalantly, "A thousand years ago, the

Celestial domain has begun a round-table parliamentary system. The round-table system is not only the highest legislative branch of the Celestial domain, it is also the one with the highest authority in the Celestial domain. Even Your Majesty was elected by the round-table parliament. Therefore, all important matters in the Celestial domain are decided by the round-table! And as the Celestial King, Your Majesty has the right to participate in matters regarding the Celestial domain. Furthermore, one of your votes is counted as two."

"Of course, you, Your Majesty, have quite a good deal of preferential treatment. For example, Your Majesty has the preferential right to choose from the various resources of the Celestial domain. Your Majesty can also enjoy the best delicacies and best beauties of the Celestial domain. When the citizens of the Celestial domain see Your Majesty, they have to respectfully salute Your Majesty and are not to treat Your Majesty frivolously. If there is a diplomatic situation, Your Majesty's image will represent the Celestial domain. There are many similar rights. In summary, other than important matters of the Celestial domain that require the deliberation of parliament, the other matters are free for Your Majesty to decide."

Speechless fell into a daze when he heard this. He could not help but cringe in his heart.

Wasn't this a fucking parliamentary monarchy? Fuck that round-table parliament!

However, as compared to the parliamentary monarchies in the human world, the Celestial domain's parliament was much smaller

in size. The seven Elders decided on the important matters of the country, so basically, the rights were concentrated in the Grand Elder's hands. Although he as the Celestial King had two votes, it was useless when it was two against seven.

Speechless never imagined that the Celestial King was in such an awkward situation in the Celestial domain. It appeared as though all rights were concentrated in the king, allowing him to lord over thousands of people, but he was actually just a 'puppet ruler' who had his rights removed. A round-table parliament had directly removed the ruling rights of the Celestial King. It was no wonder he had a nagging feeling that the bull-horned guard's attitude towards him was not like what a king with the right to kill should have.

As for what the Grand Elder said about enjoying delicacies and beauties, that was something even more to scoff at. The subtext of those rights was very simple—Your Majesty, just enjoy gallivanting and leave the Celestial domain to us.

In short, the Celestial King was the round-table parliament's, no, the seven Elders' political puppet!

Speechless suddenly thought of something and immediately asked in wonder, "Since This King does not have the right to single-handedly decide on important matters of the country, how was This King be able to go against all odds and pass the plan of invading the Infernal domain?"

The Grand Elder chuckled, "Your Majesty, are you joking? Or have you not woken up yet?"

Speechless' eyes flashed a cold beam as he looked at the Grand Elder. He said with a sneer, "What do you think? Answer This King. Although This King does not have absolute rights, don't forget that This King is the strongest person in the Celestial domain."

The seven Elders looked at each other when they heard him. They found it ridiculous.

Did the Celestial King plan on using force to threaten them? Did he really think that he was the strongest person in the Celestial domain?

However, it was apparent that the Grand Elder did not want to lose all decorum with the Celestial King. Hence, he signaled to the other Elders before pretending to appear respectful. He said, "Your Majesty, although the round-table parliament is the core decision maker of the Celestial domain, Your Majesty is still a supreme existence. You possess the greatest right in the Celestial domain—the Will of the King. Every Celestial King has the right to use the 'Will of the King' once during his rule. You can propose any executive order that parliament has to pass as long as the order does not lead the Celestial domain towards destruction. Just two days ago, you used the 'Will of the King'. The executive order was to launch a full-scale invasion of the Infernal domain. Although it did not match with the peaceful concept of the Celestial domain, it was not one that would lead the Celestial domain towards destruction. Therefore, parliament eventually passed your order!"

When Speechless heard this, he fell silent for a moment. Two

days ago was the period when he just arrived in the seventh level. He was still touring the world to kill time. The Celestial King, who used the 'Will of the King', clearly wasn't him, but the real Celestial King. But this was something unprecedented in previous trials. What was the reason or what was the thing that changed or triggered the plot to go down such a strange path.

Speechless sighed in his heart. But clearly, he would not give up on preventing the war. He looked at the Grand Elder and said softly, "If This King remembers correctly, back when This King proposed the executive order of launching a full-out invasion of the Infernal domain, the seven of you had vehemently opposed it. Why are all of you vehemently opposing This King's present intent of cancelling the executive order of the Infernal domain invasion?"

The Grand Elder said in a deep voice, "Back when Your Majesty proposed the executive order of invading the Infernal domain, it was a conflict with the 'Isolation and Peaceful Act' that was passed through the Will of the King used by the Celestial King from a thousand years ago. As there was worry that the Celestial soldiers were unable to adapt to a sudden war after a thousand years of peace, we had unanimously raised our objections. But since you used the Will of the King, we could only choose to pass it. And at this moment, Your Majesty suddenly want us to cancel the attack. With all due respect, it's too late!"

Speechless said coldly, "Why is it too late?"

The Grand Elder said with a sigh, "It's because the first division has already begun carrying out the mission. And according to intelligence reported a minute ago, Commander Maio lives up to

our expectations and successfully destroyed a segment of the array formation. The war between the Celestial domain and the Infernal domain has already begun."

Speechless said in a deep voice, "The war has yet to begin. It's only the destruction of a segment of the array formation. According to what This King knows, the Infernal domain's barrier's array formation has more than a thousand segments. Only by destroying more than half of them would the Infernal domain's barrier be considered destroyed. Things have not proceeded to an irrecoverable state. We just need to take the initiative to make peace with the Infernal domain!"

"Peace?"

The Grand Elder could not help but laugh, "Your Majesty, you are really confused. Since time immemorial, gods and demons stood on opposite sides in an eternal conflict. The Celestial domain and the Infernal domain were arch-rivals to begin with. The Celestial-Infernal war that happened a thousand years ago caused the absolute destruction of life. It made the benevolent Celestial King choose to initiate the retreat so as to end the war. We signed a peace agreement that the Celestials are never to step out of the Celestial domain. Only then was the Celestial-Infernal war ended. But now, the Celestial domain had not only disregarded the agreement by stepping out of the Celestial domain. It has also destroyed a segment of the Infernal domain's array formation. What reaction do you think the Infernal domain will have? The war has already begun. This time, even if we concede once more, the Infernal domain will definitely not easily spare us!"

"Furthermore, why should we compromise? In fact, when you used the Will of the King to pass the decree of invading the Infernal domain, you had received the the unanimous cheers of the Celestial citizens! The race of the Celestials is the greatest race in the world. So why should we be restricted to the tiny Celestial domain? This war is the collective desire of the Celestial domain. It is a longing for freedom! No one can stop the hearts of the people. Not Your Majesty, nor the round-table parliament!"

"Therefore, no one can stop this war!"

Chapter 408: A Fool That Did Not Care For His Life

Infernal domain

After the sudden explosion, a high-pitched alarm rang incessantly throughout the entire Infernal domain. There were panicked footsteps and noisy shouts in the Infernal Palace.

Shi Xiaobai placed down the book in his hand and walked out of his bedroom.

Under the bright lights, he could see many succubi and Infernals running in panic. Just as Shi Xiaobai walked out of his bedroom, an armored Infernal guard ran towards the bedroom.

"Your Majesty!"

Despite his haste, the Infernal guard never forgot to kneel and address him appropriately.

Shi Xiaobai immediately asked, "What happened?"

The Infernal guard clearly was here to report on the alarm that had sounded in the Infernal domain. Without even catching his breath, he immediately said, "Your Majesty, an enemy has intruded into the Infernal domain at night. According to the reports, those soldiers are apparently Celestials from the Celestial

domain, who had signed a peace agreement of never stepping out of the Celestial domain a thousand years ago! It is very likely for the Celestial domain to have violated the peace agreement, launching a sneak attack on the Infernal domain!"

Shi Xiaobai faltered slightly. He did not know much of the history between the Celestial domain and Infernal domain, so he could only continue asking, "What was that explosion from before?"

The Infernal guard answered respectfully, "Your Majesty, a Celestial soldier did a suicide attack and destroyed a segment of the array formation! However, all the intruders have already been vanquished. Your Majesty, please rest assured. The enemy's sneak attack has only managed to destroy one of the segments of the array formation. The artisans are already carrying out emergency repairs. It will not cause any problems to the Infernal domain's barrier!"

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. Although he was unsure what the array formation and the Infernal domain barrier were, it was clear there was an ulterior motive for the enemy to choose to launch a suicide attack to destroy the formation array.

"Carefully confirm that there are no more intruders. Pass This King's command. Strengthen the defenses and patrols. The enemy's offense is definitely not over."

Although Shi Xiaobai was not the real Infernal King, he would not go as far as not do a thing. After a moment of consideration, he said with a deep voice, "Send troops to heavily guard every

segment of the array formation. The enemy's goal is definitely not a single segment. If there are any abnormal occurrences later, send someone immediately to inform This King."

"Yes! Your Majesty!"

The Infernal guard immediately replied in deference. Then, he scrambled to carry out Shi Xiaobai's orders.

Shi Xiaobai was still able to make a reasonable judgment and pass orders calmly despite the blurry state of events.

However, Shi Xiaobai had an ominous feeling. He began to regret that he had exposed the Infernal Queen too early. If not, he could consult the Infernal Queen and obtain more important information.

How infuriating. A free source of information was gone just like that.

The alarm was still sounding incessantly. It was shrill and brought with it an uneasy panic. It wasn't true that the Infernal domain had never encountered an intrusion before. In fact, many Bravehearts had attempted to infiltrate the Infernal domain at night, but this was the first time a segment of the Infernal domain's barrier was destroyed. This was supposed to be an important secret of the Infernal domain and it seemed like the enemy had learned of this.

And according to the reports, the enemy was likely the arch-nemesis of the Infernal domain for millennia—the Celestial domain.

This seemed to suggest that a bitter war was about to begin.

The person that was stirred by the alarms was not limited to Shi Xiaobai. Liu Yu, Pulp Farmer, Feng Yuanlin, and Sunless quickly came to the Infernal King's palace. Even the silver-haired girl who had went to bed early on was awoken as she rushed over.

The silver-haired girl's expression did not seem very good. Her eyes were slightly red and lumpy. Clearly, she had cried in remorse after returning to her room. When she came to the palace, she immediately blushed when she saw Shi Xiaobai. Clearly, she had recalled of the embarrassing matter in the afternoon. She quietly hid behind Sunless, but could not help but steal a few glances at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai gave the silver-haired girl a concerned glance. Although he noticed that she did not look well, her mental state was not as unstable as it was in the afternoon. He was slightly relieved.

With everyone gathered, Shi Xiaobai immediately explained to them about the reason behind the explosion and the alarm. He had an ominous feeling about the matter, but he was unsure about its severity.

Shi Xiaobai repeated the report given to him by the Infernal

guard ad verbatim to them. He wished that Liu Yu and company, who had done some research of the seventh level's world, would be able to provide him with some information.

It was unexpected that Liu Yu had a drastic change of expression when he finished listening to Shi Xiaobai's description!

Liu Yu exclaimed, "Oh no, the Infernal domain's barrier will be destroyed!"

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly asked, "Why do you say so?"

Liu Yu said anxiously, "In fact, This Penniless Priest also doesn't know much about the story behind the Celestial domain and Infernal domain. I happened to see some information in the library this afternoon. I learned that the Infernal domain and the Celestial domain had a war that extinguished many lives a thousand years ago. In the end, the Celestial King chose to sign a peace agreement to never step out of the Celestial domain. That finally ended the war! But now, the Celestial domain has suddenly launched a sneak attack. They have violated the agreement, which is equivalent to tearing up the peace treaty! They want to start a war!"

"Infernal domain and its defensive barrier is an impenetrable fort that is almost impossible to be taken down! The only way for the Celestial domain to wage a war is to destroy the Infernal domain's barrier! Although they have destroyed only one segment of the array formation, don't forget the saying—an ant hole can cause the collapse of a great dike! Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, we can't just stand here waiting. We need to personally protect the array formation!"

Shi Xiaobai felt his heart jump when he heard that. He finally realized the seriousness of the situation, but before he could say a thing, he suddenly heard a deafening explosion!

Everyone was startled but the explosions did not come to a stop as another explosion rang!

Immediately following that, the second, third, fourth...segments were next. In less than a minute, there were hundreds of explosions that echoed throughout the Infernal domain!

The entire Infernal domain shook from the explosions. Wails from children could be heard as the screams of the Infernals constantly filled the sky. It was as if Armageddon had begun.

A minute later, the explosions came to a stop.

Liu Yu said with a pale face, "It's too late. The Infernal domain's barrier has been destroyed."

At that moment, the Infernal guard that previously came to report stumbled in as he ran. Before he reached the hall, his anxious voice could be heard!

"Your Majesty, things are bad! The barrier of the Infernal domain has been destroyed. The Celestial army is beginning their invasion!"

...

...

In the Silent Desolate Lands, in a barren land about ten miles from the Infernal domain, more than ten thousand Transcendent soldiers were resting. They were exhausted from the night march here.

But looking at the hundred-meter-tall giant in front of them, they were reminded of his terrifying power. They did not dare to accommodate the thought of desertion. There were soldiers that had previously attempted to desert but were easily discovered by the giant. With a simple jump, he crossed thousands of soldiers and squashed the fleeing soldiers into a meat pulp. The massive body that did not seem to match his speed and agility was appalling. It made them not even dare to resist him.

The giant was sitting down at the moment, and watching the Infernal domain from a distance like a mountain.

And behind the giant was Moya, who looked apprehensive and respectful.

Moya, who had once repeatedly abused the giant verbally was afraid that the giant would pursue the matter. Therefore, he appeared very loyal and humble. He knew that he was no different from an ant in front of the giant.

When the explosions that lasted for a minute and billowing smoke came from the Infernal domain, Moya could not resist asking, "What happened to the Infernal domain? Was that previously planned by Your Majesty?"

The giant gave Moya a sideways glance before turning his head back. He said softly, "It's only someone that has taken action before This King. If This King isn't wrong, it's the Celestial army."

Moya was appalled as he said, "The Celestial domain has sent troops to attack the Infernal domain as well? Then what should we do now?"

The giant coldly said a single word, "Wait."

Moya instinctively asked, "What are we waiting for?"

The giant impatiently stared at Moya. It made Moya shiver in fear but the giant finally said, "If a snipe and a clam are locked in fight, it is only to the advantage of the fisherman. What do you think This King is waiting for?"

Moya was enlightened as he felt lucky!

Thankfully, the giant was not a fool. He did not choose to forcibly intrude in the war between the Celestial domain and Infernal domain. Instead, he had wisely chosen to strike at the end. This gave their slim hopes of victory a boost.

Moya said in excitement, "Your Majesty is wise! When the Celestial domain's armies are mostly destroyed, the Infernal domain would definitely be almost exhausted of their supplies and ammunition! When the time comes, we will send our troops and cooperate with the Celestial domain. In that case, we will definitely be able to conquer the Infernal domain!"

"Fool!"

It was unexpected that the giant sneered and scolded Moya after hearing him. He said coldly, "Who says that This King will be cooperating with the Celestial domain? Remember, the race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world. The Infernals and Celestials will definitely kneel before the Transcendents! This King is only waiting for the Celestials to go into full force. When the time comes, This King will not only kill all the Infernal and Celestial soldiers in the Infernal domain, but the next step would be to invade the Celestial domain. Both the Infernal domain and Celestial domain will be destroyed!"

Moya felt like a bolt of lightning struck him when he heard that!

He never expected that the giant's ambitions were so high that it was ridiculous.

Heavens, using ten thousand exhausted soldiers and weak generals, he wanted to destroy both the Infernal domain and Celestial domain?

Fuck, after all that, the giant was a fucking fool that did not care

for his life!

...

Chapter 409: Take You Flying In Awesomeness

From the very beginning with only one segment of the array formation destroyed to that very moment when the Infernal domain barrier suddenly collapsed, it was clear that it was a series of plans put into motion when the Celestial army came attacking ferociously.

"It looks like the Celestial domain is bent on invading the Infernal domain!"

Liu Yu said with a frown, "Why is this happening? Did someone stir the hatred between the Celestial domain and the Infernal domain?"

The Hero King once stole the Celestial King's Celestial Jade and handed it to the Infernal King. It immediately sparked the Celestial King's hatred for the Infernal domain which resulted in war. And the current situation seems somewhat familiar.

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows began to knit together. He recalled that back in the Silent Desolate Lands, Speechless had once said that he wanted to replicate the legend of the Hero King.

Could it be possible that Speechless had replicated the Hero King's methods and stirred hatred?

He had not received the Celestial Jade that Speechless sent, so

none of it made sense.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment, but he chose not to tell the matter regarding Speechless to the rest. Although he had met Speechless once, he could sense that Speechless was a righteous person. It was unlikely he would do such a thing.

Everyone hastened their footsteps and rushed to the perimeter of the Infernal domain. According to the Infernal guard's report, more than ten thousand Celestial soldiers were invading the Infernal domain's first line of defense. As for the Infernal army, they were already gathered and were in the midst of destroying the enemy.

The more than ten thousand Celestial soldiers was in fact not a very large number compared to the immense size of the Celestial domain. This was likely just the first wave to probe the Infernal domain, but it also implied that the war had already begun.

Although Shi Xiaobai was a fake Infernal King, he had seen with his own eyes the love and respect the Infernal citizens gave to the Infernal King in the afternoon. Their pure loyalty had touched him. Therefore, even though there was no need for him to shoulder the responsibility of the Infernal domain's life and death, he planned on reinforcing the Infernal soldiers without any hesitation.

As for Sunless and company, they had seen the Infernal domain's book collection, tinkered with the Infernal domain's weapons, and eaten the Infernal domain's delicacies. They felt somewhat indebted to it and in addition to Shi Xiaobai being the Infernal

domain's Infernal King, they were prepared to lend a helping hand.

There was no need to mention the silver-haired girl. Her blunder had caused the death of four succubi. She was filled with remorse so there was no reason for her to hesitate.

Everyone had grim expressions, but none of them felt very nervous. Although it was possible that the war had been incited, the war had only just begun. They believed that with their strength, the war would quickly come to an end the moment they joined.

But when they arrived at the battlefield, all of them were somewhat stunned.

The Infernal domain's soldiers were embroiled in a massacre with the Celestial domain's soldiers. There were sounds of weapons clashing and blades piercing into flesh. There were angry shouts and shrill screams that kept assaulting their auditory senses. The battlefield was covered with blood and corpses. As the soldiers trampled over the corpses, they became the next to be trampled.

It was beyond their wildest imaginations that a battle between tens of thousands of soldiers would be such a bloody horror!

The silver-haired girl could not help but turn her head away as she did not dare to look any further. Sunless lowered her head slightly as well as she did not wish to see such a bloody scene. The

expressions of Shi Xiaobai and company turned solemn.

The soldiers on both sides of the battlefield were like two differently colored sand mixed together. In the chaotic battle, an area-of-effect attack would result in friendly fire. However, if they killed one after another, how long would it take to kill more than ten thousand soldiers?

Furthermore, the few of them may have killed demonic beasts or monsters, but they had never killed Celestial soldiers or humanoid creatures. There would be a strong resistance that came from their instincts.

The cruelties of war caused people to flinch and shrink back at the sight of it.

Killing in war was so heartless and without reason. There was no way to do it as if it was only right and natural.

But if nothing was done, the Infernal and Celestial soldiers would die constantly. Doing nothing was also a form of killing.

Immediately, the trial-takers fell into confusion.

Shi Xiaobai looked at everyone and whispered, "If we participate in the war, it might be possible to end the war quickly. But it will just increase the killing. This King does not wish for that to happen, and it is likely you share the same thoughts. Therefore, what we do is not killing, but to utterly smash the enemy's morale

and force them to flee."

Liu Yu said in surprise, "How do we do it?"

Shi Xiaobai said a few simple words gently, "Destroy the leader and the army will collapse!"

When the rest heard him, their glazed eyes lit up. They turned to look and saw that on the other end of the battlefield, there was a Celestial officer riding a horse. He was protected by several Celestial soldiers. He was located right behind the Celestial army, so he was clearly the general of the ten-thousand-strong army.

At that moment, Liu Yu, who looked far into the distance for a moment, said, "That is one of the ten Divine Generals of the Celestial domain. This Penniless Priest had seen him in the information. If This Penniless Priest remembers correctly, he is the Divine General Centaur, who is ranked tenth among the ten Divine Generals."

When Liu Yu said this, everyone took a careful look. They discovered that the Celestial domain's officer was not riding a horse, but that his lower half was that of a horse!

Shi Xiaobai immediately said, "Stay here and wait. This King will go and kill it."

If one wanted to kill the Celestial army's Divine General that was located right at the back, one needed to traverse the entirety of the

bloody and chaotic battlefield. One would also face the obstruction of layer after layer of Celestial soldiers. To Shi Xiaobai, who had once traversed a land filled with demonic beasts, it was nothing. However, for the rest who did not have particularly good movement techniques, the difficulty and risk was self-evident.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai did not wish for the rest to take any risks with him.

However, the rest clearly would not let Shi Xiaobai take the risk alone. Sunless took a step forward and said softly, "I'm going too."

Pulp Farmer and company also brandished their weapons to express their determination.

The most exaggerated one was the silver-haired girl. She suddenly walked behind Shi Xiaobai and wrapped her arms around his waist.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head in surprise. The rest were also extremely startled.

"What's wrong?" Shi Xiaobai asked in surprise.

Did the silver-haired girl's suddenly hug him boldly from behind to stop him from risking his life?

No, such an action did not make sense.

The silver-haired girl's eyes were shimmering but she did not dare to look into Shi Xiaobai's eyes. She gradually blushed but at the next moment, with a whoosh, a gigantic pair of crystalline wings appeared from her back!

The silver-haired girl could not speak, so she used her actions to reveal her intentions. She flapped her crystalline wings and flew up into the sky. Shi Xiaobai, who was hugged from the back, naturally flew up into the sky with her!

Only at that moment did Shi Xiaobai and company understand the silver-haired girl's intentions. She was planning to carry Shi Xiaobai and fly across the chaotic battlefield!

Shi Xiaobai gaped and wanted to tell the silver-haired girl that there was no need to do so. With his Crab Steps, it was not difficult for him to traverse the battlefield. However, he did not say a word after hesitating for a moment.

It was because the watery eyes that kept dodging him were filled with determination and persistence.

She wanted to do something and she had to do something so as to make herself feel less remorseful.

The silver-haired girl hugged Shi Xiaobai tightly as she flew towards the vast sky.

Chapter 410: Complicated And Confusing Changes

The silver-haired girl carried Shi Xiaobai with her a hundred meters into the sky before she headed for the other side of the battlefield. The Celestial soldiers that were embroiled in battle on the ground could only watch helplessly.

In the sky, the silver-haired girl's arms were hugging Shi Xiaobai with increasing force. It was as though she was afraid that she would accidentally drop him.

Shi Xiaobai acutely noticed that the silver-haired girl was flying rather unstably and somewhat slowly. It was apparent that she was not accustomed to it.

"First time?"

Shi Xiaobai could not help but turn his head and ask.

His voice was nearly drowned by the strong winds high up in the air, but it still managed to reach the silver-haired girl's ears.

The silver-haired girl's face that was turning cold from the blowing wind immediately turned hot once again. She hesitated for a moment before nodding gently.

This was the first time she was carrying another person in flight.

It was much more difficult than flying alone. It was not because Shi Xiaobai was heavy, but because he was too important.

She was afraid that if she made a mistake, she would cause Shi Xiaobai to plummet from a high altitude.

Due to the incident in the afternoon, she had accidentally cried out in pain due to not being able to hold back the pain of her broken tooth. It had caused four succubi to die and it also made her unable to trust herself.

Shi Xiaobai easily guessed at the silver-haired girl's mental state. He could not help but sigh. He felt even more pity for the silver-haired girl's kindness.

Shi Xiaobai said softly, "Relax, even if This King falls from here, This King will still be left unscathed."

Shi Xiaobai was not joking. After consuming the Transcendence Holy Tree's fruit, with his physical strength and psionic protection, it would definitely not be fatal if he fell from a few hundred meters. He might not necessarily escape unscathed, but the greatest injury he could get would be bone fractures.

But when the silver-haired girl heard Shi Xiaobai's comforting, she immediately imagined the scene of Shi Xiaobai plummeting. She immediately tensed up as she hugged him even tighter, as though she wanted to merge Shi Xiaobai into her body.

Shi Xiaobai gave a helpless smile. He had wanted to ask about the matter of her suddenly having crystal wings because he had previously witnessed Speechless using similar crystal wings to cross the vast ravine back in the Silent Desolate Lands.

However, from the way the silver-haired girl's arms were nervously trembling, he decided not to distract her.

The duo flew high in the air and nearly melted into the night. Soon, they passed the chaotic battlefield. Although the silver-haired girl flew rather clumsily, she had managed to successfully reach the destination. The spot they arrived was directly above the Divine General Centaur.

Shi Xiaobai said, "Fly to a height of hundred meters and let This King down."

The silver-haired girl hurriedly shook her head. She didn't dare to let Shi Xiaobai drop at a hundred meters.

Shi Xiaobai said helplessly, "Then make it fifty meters. Only by falling from the sky can This King end the battle in the fastest possible way."

The silver-haired girl shook her head like a rattle. It was clear that she did not wish to let Shi Xiaobai take the risk of fifty meters.

"Thirty meters?"

The silver-haired girl shook her head.

"Twenty meters?"

The silver-haired girl still shook her head.

"Ten meters!?"

The silver-haired girl nearly turned dizzy from shaking her head.

Shi Xiaobai was rendered speechless as he suddenly reached out his hands to hold onto the silver-haired girl's soft arms. With a hard pull, he opened the silver-haired girl's arms.

Shi Xiaobai's strength was clearly not one the silver-haired girl could match. Instantly, Shi Xiaobai had freed himself from her embrace.

The silver-haired girl was given a fright as she nearly screamed. But she quickly covered her mouth subconsciously as she stared with widened eyes at Shi Xiaobai while swooping quickly downwards.

They were at an altitude of two hundred meters. With Shi Xiaobai plummeting from such a height, the silver-haired girl's heart was so nervous that it nearly jumped out of her chest. She tried her best to chase after the plummeting Shi Xiaobai.

But for some reason, Shi Xiaobai's descending speed was many times faster than hers. There was no way for her to catch up!

Suddenly, the silver-haired girl saw a black and white sword appear in Shi Xiaobai's hand. Golden bits of light appeared in the air as they gathered around Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai lifted his sword high up with both hands and plummeted straight towards the ground. The golden light was gathered on the black and white sword as suddenly a gigantic golden sword phantom appeared!

A hundred meters!

Fifty meters!

Thirty meters!

Twenty meters!

Ten meters!

The phantom of the golden sword grew increasing corporeal. It was dazzling in the dark night and was even brighter than the stars and more beautiful than the moon!

The Celestial army on the ground clearly noticed the falling golden sword phantom. They hurriedly yelled and fled. Even the

Divine General Centaur widened his eyes as he tried to flee!

However, Shi Xiaobai's speed of descent was too fast. It was unbelievable!

The silver-haired girl noticed that despite using all her strength to descend, Shi Xiaobai had already landed on the ground when she was still a hundred meters in the air!

And accompanying him was the gigantic golden sword phantom!

The silver-haired girl swore that she would never forget this scene that would follow her for the rest of her life!

The gigantic golden sword phantom stabbed straight into the ground as countless specks of golden light dispersed and inundated the ground. It was like a large golden lotus that had bloomed on the ground!

"Boom!"

An explosion boomed as all sound was drowned. Ears went momentarily deaf as the world seemed to plunge into a moment of silence.

And in that lonely silence, one could see a golden lotus emanate through the darkened ground from the sky. The resplendent light spread as the golden dots of light rose into the air like bubbles. They appeared like stars that were returning back to their rightful

place in the sky.

And in the middle of the golden lotus stood a youth. It was as if he was enveloped in light but it also seemed like he was emitting the light.

All of that was an unforgettable beauty.

The silver-haired girl's eyes gradually blurred but she could not bear blinking her eyes. She only wanted to deeply etch the scene into her mind.

But the beautiful picture for the silver-haired girl was a nightmarish scene for the Celestial soldiers. It was because their Divine General, Centaur, was pulverized by that strike. Even the flag that represented the Celestial domain was reduced to dust in the light.

"The Divine General is dead!"

"Heavens, what a terrifying strike. How can we fight that?"

"Run, quickly run!"

With the Divine General dead, the Celestial soldiers that were only a probing first wave immediately lost all morale as they ran away screaming.

Fleeing soldiers were bound to be defeated.

The Infernal soldiers immediately pursued the escaping Celestial soldiers in excitement.

But at that moment, a deafening roar stopped them.

"Don't pursue them! Return!"

It was none other than Shi Xiaobai's voice. Only then did the Infernal soldiers realize that the golden sword phantom that shot down from the sky came from their beloved Infernal King.

The Infernal soldiers immediately stopped their pursuit. They did not ask for any reason, nor did they grumble about not pursuing. Instead, they threw up their hands and yelled, "Long live the Infernal King!"

Under the deafening shouts, the Celestial soldiers fled in defeat like crestfallen dogs!

...

Silent Desolate Lands, ten miles away from the Infernal domain

The scene of the golden sword phantom falling made the Transcendent soldiers shiver. The cheers of long live the Infernal King could still be heard clearly from a distance of ten miles.

Moya could not help but ask, "Your Majesty, what should we do now?"

"It looks like the Infernal domain won the first battle."

The giant fell silent for a moment before saying, "The war has only just begun. The Celestial domain has only sent its first wave of attacks as a probe. Continue waiting."

Moya nodded.

At that moment, the sound of hurried footsteps came from the rear.

"No good! No good! No good!"

A green-skinned dwarf was running frantically and looked out of breath. Despite so, he continued shouting 'no good'. He had rushed here from afar, as though something urgent had cropped up!

The giant frowned and shouted to the green-skinned dwarf that had rushed over, "What happened?"

The green-skinned dwarf yelled at the top of his lungs, "Your Majesty, it's bad! The Transcendence Holy Tree...has been burned down!"

There was immediately an uproar among the Transcendent soldiers when they heard this!

The giant's heart leaped as well as he loudly said, "Speak clearly! Why would the Transcendence Holy Tree burn down?"

The green-skinned dwarf immediately responded but he nearly choked. After taking three deep breaths, he said in a hurry, "Your Majesty, after you led the troops away...some scoundrel sneaked into Transcendence and...burned the Transcendence Holy Tree down! According to the Grand Elder, the power that burned the holy tree comes from...comes from..."

The giant angrily bellowed, "Quickly say it. Where did it come from?"

The green-skinned dwarf gasped and nearly choked to death, but he endured it by shouting, "From the Celestials!"

...

...

Infernal domain, first line of defense

The cheers of long live the Infernal King lasted for several minutes before it was forced to come to halt by Shi Xiaobai. The soldiers began cleaning up the bloody battlefield. When they saw the corpses of their comrades-in-arms, the joy of victory

immediately disappeared as they began wailing.

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his heart. This was the cruelty of war. So what if they had won?

After seeing familiar companions turning into cold corpses, was there a failure worse than such pain?

Shi Xiaobai quietly looked into the distance. He knew that the war had just begun. The next wave of attacks from the Celestial domain would quickly befall them.

How should he prevent the war?

At that moment, an Infernal general suddenly walked towards Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai asked in wonder, "Is there something?"

The Infernal general knelt down respectfully. With a nearly inaudible voice, he whispered, "Your Majesty, is tomorrow's plan to be continued?"

Shi Xiaobai was startled as he asked in surprise, "Tomorrow's plan?"

The Infernal general said with a nod, "Yes, Your Majesty. Didn't you secretly arrange a plan of invading Transcendence three days

ago. Now with the Celestial domain suddenly attacking us, are we to continue carrying out our plan?"

...

Chapter 411: Let Us Play A Board Game That Tests Wisdom And Strategy

"Yes, Your Majesty. Didn't you secretly arrange a plan of invading Transcendence three days ago? Now with the Celestial domain suddenly attacking us, are we to continue carrying out our plan?"

The Infernal general's words made Shi Xiaobai frown. He had yet to arrive in the seventh level three days ago. The person who secretly crafted the plans was apparently the real Infernal King, but why would the real Infernal King want to invade Transcendence?

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment before he asked, "Back then, on what grounds did This King use to propose the invasion of Transcendence?"

The Infernal general was slightly surprised. The question sounded odd, but the Infernal general immediately expressed his virtuous loyalty and respect. He quickly answered truthfully, "I am unsure of the specific reason, but I remember that back then Your Majesty was extremely furious and cursed Transcendence for being a 'darn thief'. It's as if they had stolen something important of Your Majesty's, and they had forced your hand to invade Transcendence even if the peace of so many years would be broken."

Shi Xiaobai's heart leaped. The word 'thief' gave him a strange association.

Shi Xiaobai did not carry on asking. With a deep sigh, he said to the Infernal general, "Cancel the invasion plans of Transcendence. Now, the most important thing is to guard the Infernal domain and withstand the attacks of the Celestial domain."

Regardless of the reason why the real Infernal King wanted to invade Transcendence, the present Infernal King was Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai obviously could not lose his mind. He would not send troops to invade Transcendence while the Celestial domain was attacking the Infernal domain.

When the Infernal general heard this, he heaved a sigh of relief. He immediately responded respectfully, "Yes! I will inform the various generals and cancel the plans of invading Transcendence."

The memory of the Infernal King's wrath three days ago was still fresh on the Infernal general's mind. He was afraid that the Infernal King would lose his reason due to his anger and insist on proceeding with his attack on Transcendence. Now, the Infernal general felt relieved seeing the Infernal King calm and composed.

As the Infernal general retreated, the silver-haired girl happened to fly down from the sky.

After she landed, she stared at Shi Xiaobai. Clearly, she was unhappy about Shi Xiaobai's act of pulling apart her arms when they were two hundred meters in the air. Her heart nearly leaped out because of fright.

Shi Xiaobai gave a placating smile and said, "Look, This King is

completely unscathed despite falling two hundred meters."

Shi Xiaobai had no other option. Coming down from the sky was the fastest and most effective way to crumble the morale of the Celestial soldiers. However, the silver-haired girl was overly kind-hearted. She did not even agree to a height of ten meters and was afraid that he would suffer even the tiniest of injuries. It forced Shi Xiaobai to use such a method.

When the silver-haired girl heard him, she rolled her eyes. Like an angry kitten which had its tail raised, she stared angrily at Shi Xiaobai. It seemed to say—you are naughty, really naughty.

The silver-haired girl's return to her lively state made Shi Xiaobai's heavy heart feel much better. He laughed heartily as he reached out and stroked the silver-haired girl's head and quipped, "Thank you for bringing This King on a flight. However, your flying skills still need improvement. This King nearly suffered a high-altitude mishap."

The silver-haired girl's face turned slightly red as she pretended to stare angrily at Shi Xiaobai. She then turned and ran towards Sunless and company that were walking over. Being unable to speak, she had a natural affinity with Sunless, who was a person of few words.

Shi Xiaobai gave the others a knowing nod before he turned to look at the Infernal soldiers that were cleaning up the tragic mess.

The war had just begun and the first wave of the Celestial army

had already caused such bloodshed.

How cruel would it be if the war intensified?

How should he prevent the war?

...

...

Shi Xiaobai and company spent the night at the Infernal domain's first line of defense till the early hours of the morning. However, the second wave of attacks did not come. When the Infernal reconnaissance troops returned from their search for the Celestial army's command post, they reported that they did not find any traces of the Celestial army in a radius of a hundred miles.

Shi Xiaobai saw how the Infernal soldiers were exhausted from a night of waiting, so he let the Infernal soldiers rest. He only left behind a tiny portion of patrolling soldiers.

Shi Xiaobai and Sunless waited till ten in the morning before returning to the Infernal King's palace to rest. Waiting foolishly for the enemy's attack without resting was an extremely stupid act. It was critical to have enough sleep as no one knew how long the war would last or when the enemy would attack.

Shi Xiaobai returned to the Infernal King's bedroom and realized that the Infernal Queen was still sleeping in bed. When he opened

the door, the Infernal Queen did not open her eyes, but the slight changes in her breathing sounds revealed that she was faking her sleep.

Shi Xiaobai did not plan on exposing her because he had more important things to do.

Shi Xiaobai went straight for the desk which he never had a chance to study for a prolonged period of time.

There were books and notes piled on the desk. It was very likely that the real Infernal King had left behind several pieces of useful information on the desk.

But this time, Shi Xiaobai did not immediately flip through the books. Instead, he reached his hand towards the table's bottom drawer.

As entry into the Infernal King's bedroom was prohibited, the drawer was not locked. Shi Xiaobai began rummaging through the drawer. Despite there being many things in the drawer, none of them was what Shi Xiaobai wanted to find.

Only when he rummaged through the third drawer did Shi Xiaobai's eyes light up slightly. He pulled out an item from the drawer's clutter.

It was a jade pendant. It was a pure, smooth, cold and flawless amber-colored jade.

Shi Xiaobai held the jade pendant in hand and finally affirmed his guess.

The jade pendant was very pretty, but from the looks of it, it was not an ordinary jade pendant. Shi Xiaobai, who had an acute sense for the quantity of energy, could sense the endless amounts of energy contained within the jade pendant as he held it in his hand. The energy was something that could match the Transcendence Holy Tree's fruit.

It was not an ordinary jade pendant.

It was the—Celestial Jade!

Shi Xiaobai sighed. After hearing the Infernal general mention the word 'thief', he recalled the story of the Hero King. The Hero King had stolen the Infernal King's Infernal sword and pushed the blame on Leonis. It resulted in the war between the Infernal domain and Transcendence. And in the story, the reason why the Celestial domain attacked the Infernal domain was because the Hero King had stolen the Celestial King's Celestial Jade and he had sent it to the Infernal King.

Therefore, the first thing Shi Xiaobai searched for was the jade pendant when he returned to the bedroom. He never expected that the Infernal King would place it into the cluttered drawer.

But what was all this about?

Did the assessment program deliberately set the story background to be as such?

Shi Xiaobai ruminated over it.

While pondering, Shi Xiaobai instinctively did something. He placed the Celestial Jade in his hand into his mouth and began chewing on it before swallowing it.

After swallowing the Celestial Jade, a surging force swept through his body. Shi Xiaobai was jolted awake as he gaped. He felt at a loss whether to laugh or to cry.

Why did he develop such a bad habit...

"Darling is awesome to be able to even eat the Celestial Jade."

The Infernal Queen's mocking voice sounded from behind, "I'm very curious. How does the Celestial Jade taste?"

Shi Xiaobai turned around and noticed the Infernal Queen, who was dressed in a translucent night gown that faintly revealed her figure, climb out of bed before she slowly walked towards him.

Shi Xiaobai said with a placating smile, "Not bad. It tastes something like meat floss pie."

Shi Xiaobai did not plan on making any excuses for his unwittingly instinctive behavior. Since he had already eaten the Celestial Jade, there was nothing else he could do. Although it was someone else's item, it was now in his hand.

Furthermore, the Celestial Jade's nutritional value was on the same grade as the holy tree's fruit. There were only benefits and no harm to his consuming of it. As for the blame of eating the Celestial domain's holy item, it could be blamed on the 'Infernal King'.

The world he was in did not have meat floss pie, so the Infernal Queen was unable to imagine it instantly. She only smiled as she looked at Shi Xiaobai. There was a probing look that shimmered in her eyes. When she saw that Shi Xiaobai had found the Celestial Jade, she wanted to see if Shi Xiaobai would take it for his own. However, she never expected that Shi Xiaobai would eat the Celestial Jade.

This made the Infernal Queen surprised, shocked and amused.

In her opinion, Shi Xiaobai was an extraordinary human.

"Darling, you made me stay alone in this empty room for an entire night. You are so cruel. I was really lonely."

The Infernal Queen did not continue harping on the matter of the Celestial Jade. Instead, she squinted her eyes and said with a smile, "Darling, do you want to play a board game with me so as to kill time?"

Shi Xiaobai was surprised.

Play a board game?

Shi Xiaobai could only scratch his head when dealing with the Infernal Queen, who acted erratically.

However, he had no interest in playing a board game, so he refused without any hesitation, "Not free."

The Infernal Queen clearly did not expect Shi Xiaobai to agree. Therefore, she said with a chuckle, "If Darling were to win a round, I'll answer any question except for questions pertaining to my identity!"

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was stunned but he could not help but ask, "Really?"

The Infernal Queen nodded, "I definitely wouldn't break my promise."

Shi Xiaobai, who was struggling to figure out a way to prevent the war, immediately had his eyes lit up. He knew that the Infernal Queen in front of him definitely knew a lot of information and intelligence that he did not know. If he could inquire any question other than the ones pertaining to her identity, it would be absolutely helpful to him.

Shi Xiaobai immediately said, "Alright, This King agrees. Go ahead, what game shall we play?"

Shi Xiaobai was not well-versed in many board games, but he was very confident of his intelligence. He was not afraid of a board game that was a test of wits.

But it was unexpected that after a moment of pondering, the Infernal Queen blinked and said, "What game does Darling want to play?"

Shi Xiaobai was astounded. "You are letting This King decide?"

The Infernal Queen nodded with a terse affirmation.

Shi Xiaobai chuckled. She actually wanted him to decide on the game? The Infernal Queen really did not know the immensity of the universe!

If he won the game, he could obtain information and intelligence, so Shi Xiaobai would definitely not hold back.

He said with a smile, "Alright, let us play a board game that tests wisdom and strategy..."

...

Chapter 412: A Complex Chess Game That Turns Crazy

"Alright, let us play a game that tests wisdom and strategy..."

Shi Xiaobai said with a chuckle, "Aeroplane Chess! [1. Also known as Ludo]"

The Infernal Queen naturally did not know of the unique board game that came from Earth, but since she dared to let Shi Xiaobai decide, it was certain that she was mentally prepared to play something she had never played before.

The Infernal Queen said with a calm smile, "I've never played Aeroplane Chess before. Can Darling explain the rules?"

"Alright."

Shi Xiaobai nodded understandably. He took a piece of white paper meant for drawing from the desk and began drawing the layout of Aeroplane Chess. Each corner was supposed to be evenly divided between the colors, red, yellow, blue and green. However, Shi Xiaobai could not find any crayons, so he could only use text in place of color.

Aeroplane Chess's four differently-colored regions were constructed in a regular pattern. One simply needed to remember one colored corner to reproduce the rest. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai very easily reproduced the board of Aeroplane Chess.

After that, he found four golden coins and four silver coins from the clutter in the drawer. He used them to represent the airplane pieces.

After Shi Xiaobai was done preparing the chess and chess pieces, he began explaining the rules of Aeroplane Chess.

In fact, the rules of Aeroplane Chess are simple to understand. Every side has four airplane pieces parked in their hangers that are located at the corners of the board. One would roll the dice, and an airplane piece can only be taxied out of the hangar when a 5 or 6 is rolled. Any piece can be chosen, but the number of spaces the piece can move is decided by the number of spaces indicated by the dice. The piece has to fly clockwise around the board before reaching the center base. Whoever first gets all four airplane pieces into the center of the board wins.

Additional rules are the rules of additional rolls, sending a piece back to the hangar, jumping to the next space of its own color upon landing on a space of its own color, shortcut paths, and stacking of pieces.

The additional rules were not that complex and were easily understandable. Aeroplane Chess was one of the many board games that had rather simple to understand rules.

And to most people, the largest factor that depended on victory in Aeroplane Chess was luck. One's luck at dice rolling determined the outcome. The better one rolled the dice, the more '6' appearing

to result in additional rolls allowed one to move more spaces.

Furthermore, if one had bad luck, with the airplane pieces almost reaching the center base, but one just fails to roll the required number. It would result in one unable to successfully reach center base. The advantage of being ahead might eventually evaporate into nothingness.

Hence, to most people, Aeroplane Chess is easy to learn and understand. Also a board game that was more related to luck was considered to be more leisurely than strategy board game. They were most suitable for children.

However, when the Infernal Queen heard all the rules, she fell into silence for a moment before she could not help but look up and say, "Darling, the choice of board game is truly complex. It is indeed a test of intelligence and strategy. However, I need to warn you that my intelligence is something even I'm afraid of. Darling, are you sure you want to choose a board game that consists only of intelligence and strategy?"

Shi Xiaobai said with a laugh, "Sorry, This King also frequently wonders about the existence of such a clever existence like This King. So, competing in intelligence and strategy is also the greatest advantage and forte of This King. No matter how smart you are, you won't be smarter than This King."

The Infernal Queen said with a covered smile, "Since Darling is so confident, then why don't we play Aeroplane Chess?"

Shi Xiaobai said with a nod, "Come on. This King wants you to taste the feeling of despair of what it means to never 'fly to the finishing point'!"

...

...

Aeroplane Chess in the eyes of an ordinary person is an entertaining game that is mostly about luck and a tiny bit of strategy. But to Shi Xiaobai, it was a game that was a grueling test of intelligence and strategy. In the Infernal Queen's point of view, it was a game that completely tested intelligence and strategy.

Why would it be like that?

Was Shi Xiaobai fooling the Infernal Queen while the Infernal Queen was just playing along with him in sarcasm?

Of course not!

It's because to the two of them, Aeroplane Chess is truly a game that is much more complicated than other board games. It could even be considered the most complicated board game of all!

You might find it ridiculous. Aeroplane Chess is clearly a board game that depends on one's luck at rolling the die to determine victory. Furthermore, there were only four pieces that could be controlled! So how could it have anything to do with complexity?

You might think that Shi Xiaobai and the Infernal Queen were joking.

But in fact, you ignored the most important point. The greatest difference Shi Xiaobai and Infernal Queen had from ordinary people was—they did not need luck when rolling a die!

Yes, with their strength and ability to stably control their strength, they could roll the required number at any time they wanted!

Rolling dice was a procedure that could be directly skipped. All they needed was to consider what number they should roll during their turn!

And after completely abandoning the concept of luck, how complicated is Aeroplane Chess? Let me analyze it in detail for you.

Firstly, in Aeroplane Chess, there is an award mechanism. When you roll '6', you are awarded the option to roll the die a second time or not. But in order to prevent players from throwing an infinite numbers of '6', the rules had a catch that if '6' was rolled three consecutive times, one would be punished. All the airplane pieces of the player, including the pieces that had reached the center base would be sent back to the hangar and play passes to the next player.

Therefore, when the player can arbitrarily control the rolling of points, they can easily throw from 1 to 18, with a total of 18 valid

choices.

And in Aeroplane Chess, there were same-colored jumping of pieces (if a plane piece lands on a space of its own color, it immediately jumps to the next space of its own color), as well as shortcut squares (when a plane piece lands on one of the shortcut squares of its own color, it may take a shortcut, traversing a quarter of the board. It would complete a move as high as 16 moves). These two jumping rules made the player have way more than 16 possible moves.

And according to the calculations, from sending the airplane pieces out of the hanger, with all three dice rolls used on the same airplane piece can at best move it by 42 spaces!

That also meant that in one round, there were 42 possible outcomes available to the player for each airplane piece!

And the player has a total of 4 airplane pieces!

Furthermore, the player can choose to not throw 6 to prevent the triggering of the reward. Each round, the player can choose to move once, twice or thrice, a total of three choices.

Then, how many variations can a player have in his own round?

The answer was on the order of the product of 42, 4, and 3—504 combinations!

In addition to the possibility of stacking pieces (when a plane lands on another plane in its own fleet, the player may "stack" the pieces and move them as one piece until they reach the center) or attacking (when a player lands on an opponent's piece, the opponent returns that piece to its hangar). These two change the possible variations of the control of the pieces.

A player was facing way more than 504 combinations during his single round. It was even more than a thousand!

What did this mean?

It means that during one's turn, one has a thousand possible moves to make. Furthermore, after your round, you have to consider what the changes the other party's thousand possible moves would do to the situation.

And this was just one round of the game. We all know that really talented chess players would typically calculate three to four rounds, or even up to ten rounds. And in Aeroplane Chess, if one wanted to consider ten rounds ahead, how many combinations would be needed?

1000 to the 20th power!

It could be considered so complex that it turns crazy!

Chapter 413: It's Impossible For This King To Make A Mistake

If this simple and straightforward number is unable to let you have an intuitive sense of the complexity of Aeroplane Chess, let us compare it to some other board games that people might be more familiar with. After all, there is no damage when there is no comparison.

For example, let's talk about Go which is considered an extremely complicated board game.

Go's board is formed out of 19 by 19 squares, with a total of 361 intersections. That means that each round, a player is facing a 361 variables. But most people know that the intersections can be occupied by pieces, so when the pieces are placed, the number of available moves depend on the number of remaining pieces and the number of intersection points.

Therefore, in Go, a player will be facing 361 variations in the first round, but in the second round, it will reduce to 360. Of course, Go has the situation of capturing pieces by surrounding an area. However, it only increases the number of variations, but will never exceed 361!

That is to say, even the extremely complicated Go only has 361 variations. It's completely incomparable to Aeroplane Chess's thousand variations!

And let's consider another well-known board game—Chinese

chess.

The complexity in Chinese chess that is slightly superior to Go is that every round, a player has control over 16 pieces. And in each round, only one piece can be moved.

However, the complexity in Chinese chess that is inferior to Go is that the number of variations of Chinese chess is too few. The General, Advisor and Elephant piece are limited to one side of the board, so there is no need to talk about them. The number of variations they have is also extremely tiny. And Soldier pieces can only move one space in a straight line in the beginning. Its number of variations is just pathetic.

The Horse piece can cross the river that is in the middle of the board, but the movement is too restrictive. It can only move diagonally, and is limited to 8 movements. However, there is a possibility of being blocked, so there are cases when it is unable to move.

Chariot and Cannon pieces are the most mobile pieces in Chinese chess. They could move orthogonally. The Cannon piece can even jump over intervening pieces to capture other pieces. However, the amount of movement the Chariot and Cannon pieces is severely restricted. It's because the board of Chinese chess is only a 9 by 10 grid. Removing the dangerous positions in a game, the number of variations the Chariot and Cannon pieces can cause would be extremely limited.

Therefore, although Chinese chess controls many pieces, each piece has too few variations. Therefore, the amount of variations

each round can create will never exceed Go, much less be comparable to Aeroplane Chess!

It is the same rationale with Chess.

Therefore, the conclusion is already obvious. In the event where players can freely control the roll of the dice, the complexity of Aeroplane Chess far exceeds that of Go, Chinese chess and chess!

This was why Shi Xiaobai and the Infernal Queen would call Aeroplane Chess as a game that is a 'grueling test of intelligence and strategy'!

...

...

In any board game, there was a tactical difference between the first and second mover. It was the same with Aeroplane Chess. Under the insistence of the Infernal Queen, Shi Xiaobai eventually became the first mover.

This looked like the Infernal Queen was voluntarily giving Shi Xiaobai the advantage, but in fact, it was a strategy the Infernal Queen chose.

Shi Xiaobai very quickly understood the meaning behind the Infernal Queen's words of 'my intelligence is something even I'm afraid of'.

The Infernal Queen was truly very intelligent. Her every step could be said to be perfectly calculated. It never gave Shi Xiaobai a chance to take any advantage of her.

Shi Xiaobai chose to first move two airplane pieces and made one of the pieces complete a same-color jump.

However, the Infernal Queen chose to move three airplane pieces. At the third time she rolled the die, she threw a '5'. She had allowed them to take off, but she did not do so the three consecutive times. She did not let any piece join the battlefield.

Immediately following that, Shi Xiaobai's nightmare descended on him.

He and the Infernal Queen were diagonally across each other. He played with red while the Infernal Queen played green. Only when Shi Xiaobai's pieces passed the green hangar would the Infernal Queen let her pieces leave the safe zone and strike at Shi Xiaobai's pieces, forcing Shi Xiaobai's pieces that crossed the line to return to the hangar.

Expulsion of the other party's airplane pieces was a very common and simple strategy, but when it reached the rigorous extent to which the Infernal Queen could perform, it became a terrifying act.

As the first player, Shi Xiaobai's first choice was of course to attack, but not a single one of his pieces could reach the final line.

Every time it passed the green hangar, it would be sent back by the Infernal Queen's strike!

This was not a simple matter. As long as the Infernal Queen made a little miscalculation, it would allow Shi Xiaobai's pieces to leap to the final point. But what was terrifying was that the Infernal Queen did not make even the tiniest of missteps!

No matter what actions Shi Xiaobai's airplane pieces took, be it taking a detour before the green hangar or to use a shortcut to traverse a great distance, or stack pieces, the Infernal Queen would see through it and set up a trap to resolve the situation. She was always able to send Shi Xiaobai's pieces back to the hangar!

The Infernal Queen had used four pieces to seal off all possible routes that Shi Xiaobai could use to reach the end point!

"I heard Darling wanted to let me experience the 'despair of what it means to never fly to the finishing point'?"

The Infernal Queen gave a sweet smile that exuded her astonishing beauty. In her smile was an unassailable confidence.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a moment, and said softly, "Is this the reason why you insisted on being after me?"

The Infernal Queen nodded and said with blinking eyes, "I don't seem to be experiencing the 'despair of what it means to never fly to the finishing point'."

Shi Xiaobai chuckled and said, "Very good and very forceful. It has to be said that you have made This King turn slightly interested. Your defense is very perfect, but it only confines you to defense. By constantly defending without attacking, there is similarly no way for your piece to reach the end point."

The Infernal Queen said with a covered smile, "Darling, what you said makes a lot of sense. But I must say, I am constantly defending, but isn't Darling constantly invading? By constantly invading without any defense, Darling would eventually make a mistake. When the time comes, I will not be showing any mercy."

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, "Mistakes? Such a word does not exist."

The two looked into each others eyes and stopped their 'taunting'. They cast their gazes back on the board and began to think even more seriously.

And the game situation was as Shi Xiaobai said. He was constantly attacking, but he had to always consider about the possibility of the Infernal Queen's counterattack. He seemed like he was haphazardly attacking, but in fact, he was sealing the chances of the Infernal Queen going from a defensive to offensive stance.

As for the Infernal Queen, she was constantly looking for a mistake while defending. But under Shi Xiaobai's perfect calculations, she could only constantly defend.

Their pieces constantly struck each other in a struggle. And after a hundred rounds, not a single piece reached the end point!

"Darling, you are really very clever."

The Infernal Queen, who failed to find any mistake for a hundred rounds, looked at Shi Xiaobai with glazed eyes. She spoke sultrily, "Your cleverness has made me wet."

Shi Xiaobai did not understand the hidden meaning behind 'wet' as his mind was completely on the board game. He replied, "You aren't bad either. To be able to play a hundred rounds with This King in Aeroplane Chess without being defeated, you are the first."

The Infernal Queen said with a coquettish smile, "To not make me find a mistake, Darling is the first as well. If both of us do not make any mistakes in this game, it can go on for all eternity."

Shi Xiaobai said, "This King isn't sure if you will make a mistake or not, but it is impossible for This King to make a mistake."

As Shi Xiaobai said, he rolled his die to finish the actions for his round. At that moment, the Infernal Queen's four pieces were on the board. Shi Xiaobai's first action of rolling a 6 had hit the Infernal Queen's closest piece. The second action he did was to roll another 6 and make one of the plane pieces in the hangar lift off.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai just needed to roll a '4' for his third

time and he would be able to once again seal off the chances for the Infernal Queen to launch a counterattack.

However, the dice did not stop at '4'. Instead, with a shake, it rolled a '6'!

Shi Xiaobai's pupils contracted slightly. His hand that he had not retracted remained stiffly in place.

The smiling Infernal Queen suddenly dazed as she looked up at Shi Xiaobai and said in surprise, "Darling, you made a mistake!?"

Chapter 414: Truly Realistic Acting

The corner of Shi Xiaobai's mouth suffused a wry smile as he said, "Hand slipped."

The Infernal Queen was surprised as she looked Shi Xiaobai seriously in the eye and said, "Then it doesn't count. Try rolling it again?"

Shi Xiaobai immediately shook his head and said firmly, "Of course not. Making a mistake while rolling the die is a mistake. A true gentleman never regrets a move he makes in chess. How can I freely roll it again? Furthermore, it's only a tiny mistake. It has little effect, so let's carry on."

The Infernal Queen fell silent.

Was it really a tiny mistake?

By rolling a '6' a third time, it meant that Shi Xiaobai had consecutively rolled three '6's. According to the rules, three consecutive rolls of '6' would result in a punishment.

All of Shi Xiaobai's airplane pieces were immediately sent back to the hangar, including the pieces that had reached the end point. Furthermore, it was a forced end to his turn, and immediately switched to the Infernal Queen's turn!

This was none other than a huge, fatal mistake!

The Infernal Queen gaped, but when she saw Shi Xiaobai's resolute attitude, she did not attempt to persuade him any further. She found it rather unfortunate that such an intense game would quickly come to an end.

But out of respect for each other, the Infernal Queen did not go easy on her round. She had three pieces on the board, so the Infernal Queen made three moves, sending all three pieces away from Shi Xiaobai's kill zone!

Shi Xiaobai was helpless regarding this. In the next round, he threw '6', '6', '5'. He made three airplane pieces take off, but he could no longer prevent the Infernal Queen's three pieces from reaching the endpoint!

"It looks like I have quite the advantage."

The Infernal Queen sighed. After hesitating for a moment, she finally decided not to go easy. In the next round, she sent all three pieces to the endpoint!

And at the moment, the situation was that three of Shi Xiaobai's four pieces were still at take off over the hangar, but had yet to advance. As for the Infernal Queen, three of her pieces had reached the end point. As long as she sent the last piece to the end point, she would win!

The Infernal Queen was holding a big advantage.

However, Shi Xiaobai laughed instead. It was a deep and meaningful smile.

"You say that you have quite an advantage?"

Shi Xiaobai threw his die and let the fourth piece lift off. He sent two pieces into the board and said with a chuckle, "You can always try and see if you can send your last piece to the end point under This King's defense. The despair of what it means to never 'fly to the finishing point' begins from this moment!"

The Infernal Queen looked up in surprise as she gave a surprised smile. "I see now. Does Darling plan to switch from offense to defense? Interesting. Then, let me see if Darling can withstand my attacks!"

With only one piece left, the Infernal Queen had easily entered an unbridled offensive stance. As for Shi Xiaobai, the only thing he could do was defend against the Infernal Queen's last piece!

And to speak the truth, using four pieces to defend against one piece was much easier than the Infernal Queen's usage of four pieces to defend against four pieces. With Shi Xiaobai's meticulous thinking, the Infernal Queen's only piece would never cross his defense as long as he did not make another mistake.

The Infernal Queen attempted for forty rounds but failed to pass through Shi Xiaobai's iron defense. Therefore, she joked, "If Darling had any desire to attack by first sending one, two, or even

three pieces towards the end point, Darling's defense would fall apart. However, Darling did not do so and maintains a full-out defense of four pieces. It seems Darling doesn't want to lose? Or is it because Darling really wants to be with me for the rest of his life?"

The Infernal Queen only had one piece left. If Shi Xiaobai had sent one or two pieces to the end point, his defense would show flaws and allow the Infernal Queen's last piece to escape the encirclement and obtain victory!

However, Shi Xiaobai had completely abandoned taking the offensive. He only defended as though he was a loser without any ambition!

Such a struggle could indeed delay the Infernal Queen's victory, but it appeared as though he was afraid of failure.

This made the Infernal Queen slightly disappointed.

However, was Shi Xiaobai a person afraid of failure?

Of course not!

Shi Xiaobai slowly picked up the die. On the forty-first round, it was his turn once again. Shi Xiaobai said with a chuckle, "This King doesn't have that much time to waste on you. This game has already ended."

The Infernal Queen was stunned as she cast her gaze at the board.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai threw '6', '6', '1'. He managed to stack four pieces together!

The Infernal Queen's pupils constricted slightly as she looked at her own piece. She was horrified to discover that her piece was exactly 43 spots away from Shi Xiaobai's stacked piece!

On closer look, there was no way for her piece to reach the end point during her round. She was short of one step!

As for Shi Xiaobai, his stacked piece could reach the endpoint by moving its maximum distance.

The Infernal Queen's smile gradually turned stiff.

Her piece could only move 42 steps at most, and it was short of one step to strike Shi Xiaobai's piece.

And her piece required two rounds to reach the end point!

But in the next round, Shi Xiaobai's stacked piece would simultaneously reach the end point, allowing him to clinch victory!

She was short of one step!

But this miss was as good as a mile!

The Infernal Queen gaped as she looked incredulously at Shi Xiaobai.

She had lost. She had lost in such a manner?

During the calm and peaceful attack, she had not revealed any flaw, but it had suddenly resulted in death!

Was all of this a coincidence?

Or was it...

"Darling, you did it on purpose!?"

The Infernal Queen said with an uncontrollable laugh, "That mistake roll Darling made was not a mistake—Darling chose the moment when I could send three pieces to the end point in two rounds to make a mistake. So it was to deliberately let me send three pieces to the end point?"

Shi Xiaobai nodded.

The Infernal Queen's eyes shimmered as she whispered, "Darling had already planned everything from the moment he deliberately made the mistake. Darling had 'seen' the situation at the forty-first round and knew that victory was at hand at the forty-first round.

Is that it?"

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head once again.

The Infernal Queen's eyes flashed a look of disbelief as she said in astonishment, "How did Darling calculate every step I would take up the forty-first round? How did you do it?"

Shi Xiaobai looked the Infernal Queen seriously in the eyes and whispered, "Because you are too perfect. Your every step is the most perfect move that This King can think of. Your every step is done with the most precise calculations such that This King is unable to find any flaw in it. However, perfection is its biggest flaw! You only play a perfect game, so considering what is the most perfect move in every round is sufficient to calculate what moves you would make."

The Infernal Queen's eyes glazed over for a moment. She had never realized of such a simple reasoning—perfection had become her biggest flaw!

Although Shi Xiaobai had said it in such a simple manner, to put it into practice was actually impossible to imagine. How much reasoning was needed to deduce the forty-one rounds in his head while also needing to consider his own moves as well as the perfect response of his opponent and eventually set up a trap? How clear was his logical reasoning as well as how powerful was his psyche?

The Infernal Queen could not help but feel a sense of admiration. However, her mouth did the opposite by saying, "Darling's acting

is truly realistic to make me think that Darling had made a mistake. Darling won the game in such a crafty manner!"

Shi Xiaobai gave a faint smile and calmly said, "All is fair in war!"

The Infernal Queen gave Shi Xiaobai a meaningful glance and whispered, "What an appropriate saying. I have lost. Darling, ask any question you have. Other than my identity, I will definitely answer you truthfully, even if Darling asks which part of my body is the most sensitive."

.....

Chapter 415: Darling Asked The Right Person

"What an appropriate saying. I have lost. Darling, ask any question you have. Other than my identity, I will definitely answer you truthfully, even if Darling asks which part of my body is the most sensitive," The Infernal Queen said sultrily.

Shi Xiaobai ignored the Infernal Queen's sultry words and asked her the number one question he wanted to ask, "How can the war be prevented?"

The Infernal Queen's eyebrows pricked up, but there was not much of an astonishment on her face. It was as if she had guessed what Shi Xiaobai's question would be as she chuckled and said, "Since time immemorial, gods and demons stood on opposite sides in an eternal clash. The war between the two factions had began from the first Celestial King and Infernal King. It lasted for three centuries until the Celestial domain finally had a Celestial King that was sick of war. A treaty with unfair terms and conditions was signed in exchange for thousands of years of peace. And now, the flames of war have been stirred once again. Just like a well-aged wine, how can the fragrance of the wine be suppressed any further once the wine cork is removed? It is very difficult to prevent the war."

Upon saying that, the Infernal Queen paused. Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly as he said, "And then?"

When the Infernal Queen said a load of crap to end with an analysis that the war would be very difficult to prevent, Shi

Xiaobai had an ominous feeling.

The Infernal Queen gave a small laugh and said, "Although it's very difficult, I had actually thought of a solution prior to this. Does Darling want to hear it?"

Shi Xiaobai found her sentence somewhat odd, especially the words 'prior to this', but he naturally nodded.

The Infernal Queen said, "If I didn't guess wrong, the reason for the Celestial King's incitement of war is because of that Celestial Jade. If Darling had immediately returned the Celestial Jade and apologized with reparations, before signing some unfair treaties, there is a possibility of preventing the war."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was stunned as he said, "That's your plan?"

The Infernal Queen nodded as though it was for granted, "I only managed to think of this plan."

Shi Xiaobai fell silent and said helplessly, "The Celestial Jade has already been eaten by This King!"

The Infernal Queen blinked her eyes and said, "I saw that, which was why I said that it's a method I thought of 'prior to this'! Now, I can't help even if I wanted to."

Shi Xiaobai rolled his eyes and said, "Isn't your answer too

perfunctory? You had said that your intelligence is something that even you are afraid of? But now, you are giving me an answer anyone with a bit more intelligence can come up with?"

The Infernal Queen said with a shrug, "Wasn't my intelligence just beaten by Darling? If Darling can't figure out a solution to the problem, how would I be able to?"

Shi Xiaobai could tell that the Infernal Queen did not plan on seriously answering his question. It might be because she really did not know or she did not want to tell him because of some unknown reasons, but from the way things looked, the Infernal Queen was planning to go back on her word!

Shi Xiaobai was infuriated at that moment. He did not hold out all hope that he would be able to gain the method of stopping the war from the Infernal Queen, but after playing a round of mentally taxing Aeroplane Chess, which killed numerous brain cells, Shi Xiaobai felt that he had suffered a great loss.

Shi Xiaobai said with a deep voice, "This King is extremely unsatisfied with your answer. But since you can't answer the question, This King won't make it difficult for you. This King shall change questions."

The Infernal Queen smirked as she said, "If Darling wants to ask another question, he will need to play another round of Aeroplane Chess with me."

Shi Xiaobai's mouth twitched as he said, "Your first answer isn't

to This King's satisfaction, yet you think it's right to get This King to play another round with you? If you bought a rotten fruit, will you continue buying from the same fruit stall a second time? You must at least prove that your answers are of value or why would This King waste his time to play a completely worthless game?"

The Infernal Queen was surprised as she chuckled and said, "What Darling said is very reasonable. I have nothing to offer to your viewpoint. In that case, as Darling said, I will answer another one of Darling's question and satisfy Darling. But in return, Darling has to play at least one more round of Aeroplane Chess with me!"

Shi Xiaobai could tell from her words. The Infernal Queen had deliberately gone back on her word because she was worried that he would no longer play another round with her after he obtained the answers he wanted. He could tell that the Infernal Queen wanted to seek revenge on the chessboard.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment before finally nodding. Shi Xiaobai admitted that he did not have any match when it came to Aeroplane Chess. He had a myriad of methods to beat the Infernal Queen into submission.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes flickered as he asked the next question he wanted to know about the most.

"What is the Infernal King's Mandate?"

The Infernal Queen fell into a daze. Clearly, Shi Xiaobai's

question had exceeded her expectations. She could not help but say, "Darling, why do you keep asking such odd questions?"

Shi Xiaobai rolled his eyes and said, "Don't tell This King that you can't answer this question either?"

The Infernal Queen's eyes flickered for a moment as she slowly shook her head and said, "Just the opposite. Darling asked the right person. I am probably the only person who can answer this question."

...

...

Celestial domain, in front of a teleportation nexus

With war beginning, the Celestial domain had naturally opened up a teleportation nexus that connected the Celestial domain to the mortal world. Troops of Celestial soldiers were sent through the nexus to the mortal world.

The teleportation nexus was two-way. By activating it in the Celestial domain, there would be one opened up in the mortal world as well. It was equivalent to opening a path from the mortal world to the Celestial domain as well.

This was a hidden risk for the Celestial domain because it meant that although the Celestial domain could enter the mortal world, it

also meant that mortals could enter the Celestial domain.

And at that moment, there were a hundred thousand elite soldiers gathered in front of the Celestial domain's teleportation nexus. They were the second wave that was meant to invade the Celestial domain. After the first wave was defeated early last night, they were supposed to have set off and continuously strike at the Infernal domain.

However, they had no choice but to stay in front of the teleportation nexus for an entire night.

That's because in front of the teleportation nexus's switch, there stood an existence that was not easily touched.

Their king, the Celestial domain's Celestial King had switched off the teleportation nexus. Furthermore, he was standing at the switch and prevented any soldier from approaching it!

Divine General Blood Leopard, ranked eighth among the ten Divine Generals, tried to persuade him all night, but the Celestial King remained cold. Anyone who dared to approach it would be met with a heartless slash of the sword!

The Celestial King had blocked a hundred thousand soldiers alone, but the soldiers did not dare to group up and attack him.

It was already nearing noon. Divine General Blood Leopard had not given up trying to persuade the Celestial King. He repeatedly

stressed, "Your Majesty, please turn on the teleportation nexus. The defenses placed at the teleportation nexus that we set up in the mortal world are far from sufficient. If the Infernal domain were to invade now, the nexus will likely fall! Your Majesty, please think again!"

Speechless remained silent. This was the only method he could think of to prevent the war. In the country with a parliament, he did not have much authority as the Celestial King so Speechless was forced to act in this manner.

As for Divine General Blood Leopard's mentioning of sending guards to defend the nexus, Speechless wasn't foolish enough to believe him. He was certain that if he were to let the hundred thousand soldiers reach the mortal world, it would immediately mean the beginning of a bloody and cruel battle.

From the intelligence from last night, the Infernal soldiers did not pursue them. From the looks of it, the Infernal domain did not plan on fighting the war. As long as he could stop the Celestial soldiers from proceeding, he could be able to prevent this one-sided war.

With this thought in mind, Speechless was even more determined to not let the hundred thousand soldiers use the teleportation nexus.

At that moment, the hundred thousand soldiers suddenly spread out like a tide and made way for a wide path. A figure slowly walked over.

Speechless looked over as his expression changed slightly.

That was a tall and muscular man with bullhorns on his head. He was dressed in the garb of a guard. From the beginning, Speechless had guessed that the bullhorned guard was not an ordinary guard. When he later learned of the bullhorned guard's identity, he was truly given a scare.

The bullhorned guard was not a guard, nor was he a Divine General, but the—Celestial domain's Field Marshal!

Chapter 416: Speechless Begins To Question Life

According to information pertaining to the Celestial domain from past trial-takers, Speechless had certainly never seen any description regarding the Celestial domain's Field Marshal. But this time, the Celestial domain suddenly had an additional Field Marshal whose influence and power exceeded the ten Divine Generals!

All the military power of the Celestial domain was in the hands of the bull-horned Field Marshal!

The hundred thousand soldiers knelt down and chanted, "Field Marshal Awesomo!"

Field Marshal Awesomo's expression was livid. As he walked slowly over, he said in a deep voice to Speechless, "Your Majesty, what are you trying to do!?"

Speechless could ignore Divine General Blood Leopard, but he had to contend with Field Marshal Awesomo because all the military power was in his hand. He could easily cause a revolt.

Speechless shrugged his shoulders and said, "This King simply wants to prevent the war. Field Marshal Awesomo obviously knows of the cruelty of war. This King is doing this to save the lives of these hundred thousand soldiers. All of you should thank This King instead."

Field Marshal Awesomo said with a sullen expression, "Disregarding the Elders' objections and using the Will of the King to start the war was because of you. Now, with the troops having high morale and fighting spirit, it's the best opportunity for us to invade the Infernal domain. But the one singlehandedly stopping the war is also you, Your Majesty. What does Your Majesty intend to do?"

Speechless could only give a wry smile in his heart. There was no way for him to explain that the Celestial King that proposed the war wasn't him. He could only shoulder the blame silently, so Speechless said, "This King has already said. The proposing of a war was done on impulse by This King. After considering it later, This King is filled with regret. So what if the war is won? Our troops will be dead with countless injured. How many people will lose their loved ones? The entire Celestial domain will wallow in the sorrow of death. Now, that the war has only just begun, preventing and ending this war that should not have happened is the only way for This King to redeem the sin he committed in his rashness!"

Speechless had a sincere expression and his words were very inspiring. All the Celestial soldiers that heard his words were lost in thought. There was an additional but different look in their impatient and anxious eyes.

When Field Marshal Awesomo saw this scene, a sneer suffused across his lips as he said coldly, "Your Majesty, I didn't plan on exposing your lies, but I can't stand hearing it any further—The reason why you stubbornly insisted on war was not because of a moment of impulse but because of carelessness. You caused the

extremely valuable Celestial Jade to be stolen by a spy sent by the Infernal King. In order to take back the Celestial Jade, you had hidden your mistake and stubbornly launched the war! Your Majesty, by preventing the war, are you wallowing in self-defeat and have decided to 'give' the Celestial Jade to the Infernal King and pretend as if nothing had happened?"

When Field Marshal Awesomo said that, all the soldiers burst into an uproar. They did not know that the holy item, the Celestial Jade, had been stolen. They never expected that the cause for the war was because of such a reason!

If that was true...

"Are you maligning This King?"

Speechless frowned. "The Celestial Jade is clearly in This King's..."

Speechless immediately took out the Celestial Jade from his pocket that he had been playing with previously. However, when he held it and seriously sensed it, Speechless's expression changed. The words he said midway came to a halt.

"This is a fake piece of Celestial Jade!?"

Speechless looked in disbelief at the jade pendant in his hand.

Field Marshal Awesomo said with a laugh, "Your Majesty's acting

is really admirable. That fake Celestial Jade was specially crafted by an artisan under your special orders. You were worried that the seven Elders would realize that you had lost the Celestial Jade. The reason why you launched the war was because you wanted to get the Celestial Jade back as soon as possible. Everything you did was to cover up the mistake you did due to your carelessness. Are you actually questioning me?"

Speechless could not help but turn silent. He knew that Field Marshal Awesomo was right. What he said was probably the reason why the real Celestial King had launched the war. The plot was similar to the plot of the Hero King and now, he had to shoulder the blame.

Speechless immediately felt very helpless. He thought that by becoming the Celestial King for no good reason, he could at least enjoy the privileges of being the Celestial King. He never expected that not only did he need to shoulder the blame for the original Celestial King, he needed to clean up after the Celestial King's mess. He might as well be the Infernal King! Although the Infernal King was infamous, he at least had the Infernal Queen, who was considered the number one beauty in the world!

When the soldiers saw how Speechless was silent, they immediately realized the truth of the matter. By not responding, the Celestial King had silently acknowledged it.

This...

Was a Celestial King that would launch a war in order to cover up a sordid deed worthy to be their king?

The expression in the soldiers' eyes changed as they could not help but take a step forward.

Speechless was immediately jolted awake as he swept his eyes coldly at the soldiers and said coldly, "Stop. Whoever dares take another step, don't blame This King for being ruthless!"

Speechless' intimidation was still effective. The soldiers came to a stop and looked at each other. They were not sure as to what to do, so they finally looked at Field Marshal Awesomo.

Field Marshal Awesomo said with a sneer, "Your Majesty, have you come to your senses? Do you know how much harm you are causing to the Celestial domain by what you are doing now? The teleportation nexus has been activated. Traces of its activation can't be removed in a short period of time. The Infernal soldiers will quickly find the location of the teleportation nexus. If the teleportation nexus's defense were to fall, once the Celestial army is sent through the nexus, they would be killed by an ambush set up by the Infernals. Furthermore, the Infernal army can easily launch a counteroffensive on the Celestial domain. Then, the location of the battlefield will reverse! Furthermore, first division's Commander Maio had exchanged his life to destroy the Infernal domain's barrier. If this drags on, the Infernals will repair the Infernal domain. We will probably end up in a situation of being beaten with no way to fight back! Your Majesty, every second you delay is wicking off life of the entire Celestial domain!"

Field Marshal Awesomo's words startled Speechless. The Celestial soldiers also felt afraid and worried. They began stirring.

Speechless fell silent for a moment and said, "Don't worry. From the fact that the Infernal domain did not enter a pursuit yesterday, it tells us that the Infernal domain does not plan on making the war turn more intense. As long as we give up the invasion, they would not take the initiative to invade. The teleportation nexus's defense will not fall. If it falls, This King..."

Just as Speechless was speaking his assuring words, the teleportation nexus beneath everyone's feet began to rumble. Rainbow colors began to chaotically flash.

Field Marshal Awesomo exclaimed in horror, "No good, someone is forcefully opening the teleportation nexus!"

Divine General Blood Leopard stared with widened eyes. "The teleportation nexus's defense has fallen so quickly!?"

Speechless, who only finished mid-sentence, could not continue on. He lowered his head and looked at the flashing teleportation nexus and felt extremely speechless.

At that moment, Field Marshal Awesomo walked towards the switch. Speechless gaped but no longer stopped him. He knew that he no longer could stop it. Although he was the Celestial King, he could not will the situation that would affect every life in the Celestial domain.

Speechless could only curse angrily in his heart—Fuck you, you idiotic Infernal King. Can't you fucking tolerate it for a moment?

Do you fucking love war that much?

Speechless looked up and sighed.

He had tried his best.

But he couldn't prevent the war.

...

Chapter 417: Infernal King's Mandate

Infernal domain, Infernal King's bedroom

The Infernal Queen said with a chuckle, "Just the opposite. Darling asked the right person. I am probably the only person who can answer this question."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised before his eyes lit up. The answer to the question could be related to how he could complete the first Absolute Choice. He actually did not have his hopes up when it came to the Infernal Queen, so he was rather surprised that the Infernal Queen really knew the answer.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask, "What is the Infernal King's Mandate?"

The Infernal Queen glanced at Shi Xiaobai and said with a covered smile, "It looks like Darling is eager to know the answer, then I won't be keeping you in suspense. The Infernal King's Mandate..."

As she spoke, the Infernal Queen walked towards the desk and pulled out an old book from the pile of books and handed it to Shi Xiaobai. "Darling, see for yourself."

Shi Xiaobai could not help but rolled his eyes. So the answer to his question could really be found on the desk!

Shi Xiaobai gave the Infernal Queen an odd look. Since the answer was on the Infernal King's desk, why did the Infernal Queen say that she was the only person who could answer. Could it be...

Shi Xiaobai suppressed the guess in his heart as he took the old book over. Although he could have found the book by searching the desk, it would take him a certain amount of time since the book was at the bottom.

Shi Xiaobai looked down at the old book in his hand. It was such an old book that it was nearly rotting. It was as though it had lived through thousands of years.

Shi Xiaobai flipped through the book as the text that was nearly melting into the blackish-yellow paper reflected in his eyes. Blots of mottled rust covered a portion of the text and there were marks of worms having chewed on it.

The text was blurry, but it could barely be understood. There were missing words, but the general idea could still be inferred. Shi Xiaobai struggled as he read the old book.

The book was very thin, with slightly fewer than twenty pages. The words were also rather large, and each page had less than a hundred words. Shi Xiaobai read it seriously, and when he nearly flipped to the end, his mood turned heavy.

The book described a first-person narrative.

The protagonist of the story was D'yaba, who was a prince of the D'ya clan. From a young age, he was favored and led a blissful childhood.

The protagonist had an elder brother named D'yaji. Similarly, he was a prince of the D'ya clan and was the idol of the protagonist and his closest playmate.

D'yaba's happy life came to an end in the year he turned sixteen. That year, an unknown plague broke out in the D'ya clan. The clansmen that were inflicted with the plague turned extremely ugly and they would increasingly become irrational to the point of going mad and engage in wanton murder.

For the D'ya clan's survival, the D'ya clan began implementing a quarantine by exile. By sending the clansmen into an isolated zone, they were left to fend for themselves.

And when the exile was proceeding in full swing, the protagonist, D'yaba was also infected!

In theory, it was impossible for D'yaba to be infected because he lived in the palace all the time. When the plague broke out, he had never stepped out of the palace, so there was no reason for him to be infected!

But nothing could change the harsh reality. Although D'yaba was a prince, with half of the D'ya clan infected and exiled, even a prince was not spared.

D'yaba was banished to a zone that was like an isolated prison.

The story was a first-person narrative. At that point, the author's choice of words when describing the land of despair they were exiled to was "I've been banished to hell."

And the book ended abruptly. The simple story sounded somewhat boring and there were too many questions left hanging. However, the final sentence left by the author made Shi Xiaobai's mood turn heavy.

"Many years later, I learned that the reason for my infection was because of my brother's wicked means. He had done it to obtain the throne that I would have been willing to give him..."

Shi Xiaobai sighed gently and looked towards the Infernal Queen and said, "Where's the second half of the story?"

The story was obviously not over. It was clear that D'yaba did not die from the infection 'many years later' or killed by the infected after being banished to 'hell'. Instead, he had strongly lived on. What would he do after knowing that the tragedy was a betrayal by his beloved brother many years later?

Furthermore, what did this story have to do with the Infernal King's Mandate?

Shi Xiaobai's mind was filled with questions.

The Infernal Queen smiled and said, "The second half of the story is rather complicated, but it is also very simple... Not only did D'yaba survive, the clansmen that were inflicted with the plague did not die either. Furthermore, under D'yaba's lead, they found a road to survival and became another race. After knowing that the infection was D'yaji's nefarious scheme, D'yaba was enraged. Therefore, war was waged."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his eyebrows jumped as he exclaimed, "Two races? War? Could it be..."

The Infernal Queen said with a nod, "That's right. Just as Darling is thinking, the D'ya race is the current Celestials, and the ugly race that was ousted due to the sickness is the present day Infernals! D'yaba and D'yaji were the first Infernal King and Celestial King respectively! The hatred between the two of them had ignited the flames of war between the two races! Since time immemorial, gods and demons stood on opposite sides in an eternal clash because the original reason was a plague and a feud!"

The small book narrated a simple story, but it also depicted the origins of the Celestials and Infernals!

"Then, what has this got to do with the Infernal King's Mandate?" Shi Xiaobai asked.

This was the fundamental issue.

The Infernal Queen said with a chuckle, "The rise of the Infernal King, the birth of the Infernals, the beginning of the war, all of this

is because of a single word. Every Infernal King's Mandate is obviously that word—revenge!"

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows knitted together. "Seek revenge against the Celestials? Or is it a revenge against the first Celestial King?"

The Infernal Queen shook her head and said, "None of them. The Infernal King's revenge is targeted at the Celestial King. It has nothing to do with the other Celestials, and the first Celestial King has long died. Therefore to the present Infernal King, the mandate would be naturally the revenge against the present Celestial King!"

"Darling, if my reasoning is correct, the Infernal King's mandate is...to kill the present Celestial King!"

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows pricked up slightly as he thought carefully over the reasoning behind her conclusion.

A mandate referred to a mission or responsibility that one had to shoulder. And the Infernal King's mandate was obviously none other than mission and responsibility the Infernal King had to shoulder!

The second, third and the successive Infernal Kings had all inherited the first Infernal King's position and will. They obviously had to shoulder the mission handed down to them by the first Infernal King. This was the answer to the Infernal King's mandate.

Revenge was the Infernal King's mandate!

And from whom would the vengeance be sought?

As the hundredth Infernal King, he naturally could not seek revenge against the first Celestial King, D'yaji. He could not seek revenge against a race that had the same bloodline as his either. So the target could only be the presently living Celestial King!

There was no problem with the reasoning.

"In order to complete the Absolute Choice's mission, the current Celestial King has to be killed."

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai felt his head ache. To kill the Celestial King or to kill the Celestial King. This problem with the same choices was vexing.

Chapter 418: Tolerate My Ass!

With the Infernal domain's barrier was destroyed, the Infernal domain should have been the target of everyone. If the mortal world and the Celestial domain combined forces and attacked the Infernal domain, it would be very difficult for it to defend itself after it lost its natural protection. However, in midday of the second day, something drastic happened to the situation. The eyes of the goddess of war turned favorably towards the Infernal domain.

At midday of the second day, a shocking news came from afar. The Transcendent army had successfully attacked the teleportation nexus that the Celestial domain used. Although the Celestial army managed to defend in time, preventing the Transcendents from taking control, the teleportation nexus's switch was destroyed. As a result, the teleportation nexus temporarily could not be closed!

What did this mean?

It meant that the Celestial domain had entered a distressing situation just like the Infernal domain. If the teleportation nexus could not be closed, the greatest defense of the Celestial domain was constantly at danger of the enemy's attack. The Celestial domain, which just needed to focus on attacking, now had to divert a sufficient number of their forces to defend their own lands!

The Celestial domain could not even act brazenly before it could do it!

What resulted in such an awkward situation with the Celestial domain was not because of the Infernal domain's counterattack but because of the Transcendents' sudden attack!

Why did the Transcendents, who were supposed to ally with the Celestial domain to destroy the Infernal domain, suddenly bite at the Celestial domain like a mad dog?

According to the furious Transcendents, the Celestial domain had burnt down their holy tree. The evidence was the power that had burnt down the holy tree. It was Celestial Fire that only the Celestial King could wield. No one could imitate it, so the evidence could not be clearer!

Everyone in the Celestial domain gave Speechless questioning looks.

Speechless, who was already questioning life, was rendered even more speechless. Why was the blame on him all the time?

However, Speechless couldn't explain it. He could only shake his head and denied it. He claimed to not have destroyed the Transcendence Holy Tree. He did not have any motive, nor did he have the time to commit the crime.

The Celestial domain believed Speechless's explanation because they knew that the Celestial King did not have the time to do such an act.

But the Transcendents would not believe it. The troops that were forced by the giant to fight were originally rather reluctant, but now, it was as if they were on stimulants. The anger and hatred in them gave them sufficient motivation to wage war.

Therefore, the flames of war between the Transcendents and the Celestial domain were ignited by midday.

As for the Infernal domain that was about to suffer the fierce invasion of the Celestial domain, it felt like it was liberated. The Celestial domain could only fend for itself, so how could it have the time to attack them?

The tensed Infernal soldiers were finally able to heave a sigh of relief. The repairing of the Infernal domain's barrier's was still underway. When the Infernal domain's barrier was restored, the Infernal domain would once again become unassailable!

There were Infernal generals that suggested to ally with the Transcendents and attack the Celestial domain together. Even if they did not ally, they could kick the Celestials while they were down. By launching attacks on the Celestial domain on one side, the Celestial domain would suffer attacks from multiple angles and would not be able to live in peace.

Such a suggestion was obviously rejected by Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai was overjoyed when the Infernal domain managed to extricate itself from the war in such a baffling manner, so how could he want it to implicate itself again?

Shi Xiaobai ordered the Infernal soldiers to not participate in the war between the Celestials and the Transcendents. He poured more manpower into the restoration of the Infernal domain's barrier so as to speed it up.

Shi Xiaobai had a new trouble facing him. According to the ancient story and the Infernal Queen's speculation, the Infernal King's mandate was to kill the present Celestial King. Shi Xiaobai had basically agreed with the guess and did not have much reservations about it.

Shi Xiaobai did not know that the present Celestial King was Speechless. He was just like the popcorn eating crowd who blamed the Celestial domain's attack of the Infernal domain on the Celestial King. Hence, he had a deep hatred for the present Celestial King. If he needed to complete the Absolute Choice's mission, Shi Xiaobai did not mind sending the mastermind behind the war to his maker.

However, it was a problem when it came to killing the Celestial King.

Assassination? Murder? Deathtrap?

Shi Xiaobai was not good at killing, so the matter made him rather vexed.

However, what was considered a pleasant agony lasted for less than an afternoon because something that made Shi Xiaobai nearly curse out loud happened.

The Transcendents and Celestials' battleground had moved!

As though it was agreed upon, the Transcendent and Celestial soldiers moved their battleground to the Infernal domain!

...

Shi Xiaobai could understand why the Transcendents and the Celestials had made such a choice. Although he had expressed the firm attitude of not participating in the war, it was hard for the Infernal domain to shy away from the possibility that it was waiting to benefit from the internecine struggle through its inaction. The Transcendent and Celestial armies naturally had the same worries—If the Infernal domain were to strike when all was over, what would happen?

And the way to resolve this worry was—to force the Infernal domain into joining the war!

The Transcendents and Celestials did not stop the war. They only moved the battleground to the Infernal domain's first line of defense. However, it resulted in a fundamental change.

The Infernal soldiers were left astounded. They were planning on standing by the sidelines and watch the flames of war blaze while eating popcorn, but who knew that the flames would reach them!

How were they to fucking tolerate this?

Sorry about that, Shi Xiaobai tolerated it.

Shi Xiaobai, who had hardened his heart to not participate in the war, ordered for the Infernal soldiers to abandon the first line of defense and to not leave the boundary of the second line of defense.

You like fighting in someone else's house?

Fine, This King will let you fight. The outcome is at most smashed furniture, broken walls, shattered grounds...right?

At the worse, This King can rebuild, repurchase and repair. This King won't send the troops and allow you to do as you wish!

The Infernal King was placed on a high pedestal in the minds of the Infernals, so Shi Xiaobai's policy of tolerance did not encounter much opposition.

However, tolerance was not the solution to the problem. That's because when you take a step back, the other party would reach out for a yard after taking an inch!

The Celestial and Transcendent armies quickly expanded the battlefield to the second line of defense!

Shi Xiaobai clenched his fists. After some thought, he decided to

continue tolerating!

However, in less than ten minutes, the battle reached the third line of defense!

Shi Xiaobai breathed in deeply for three minutes and after struggling for a long time, he finally decided to tolerate it again!

However, the Celestials and Transcendents ignored the Infernal domain's tolerating stance. Soon, the battlefield expanded into the fourth line of defense.

It was the final line of defense for the Infernal domain. If the Celestial and Transcendent soldiers took another step, it will enter the civilian zone of the Infernal domain! When that happened, what was ignited was no longer cold buildings but burning warm-blooded lives!

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai looked up and sighed.

The Infernal Queen said with a smile, "Then, does it mean that Darling still plans on tolerating?"

Shi Xiaobai smirked and said angrily, "Tolerate my ass. Do those bastards really treat This King as some cowardly turtle? So there is no end to it? Fine, very fine! Since they dare to come all the way here, then don't fucking leave!"

Shi Xiaobai's angry voice reached outside the palace. And in a

hidden corner outside the palace hid a shadow that the palace maids and guards did not discover despite walking past it several times.

The shadow laughed inaudibly.

"Is the show finally about to begin?"

Chapter 419: The Most Cowardly Infernal King In All Of Eternity!

Was the show really about to begin?

The answer was—No!

Shi Xiaobai was infuriated. He finally could not give in and tolerate. He even cursed out 'tolerate my ass'. He naturally would activate the Infernal soldiers and use force and death to clean the Transcendent and Celestial soldiers that had entered the fourth line of defense, even if it would cause massive loss of lives and bloodshed.

And when the time came, the war would enter its worst situation. The war between the three domains with countless deaths and injuries would unfold. To the people in question, it would be an exhausting and painful slaughter, but to bystanders, it was an extremely exciting show.

However, the story did not proceed as that shadow in the corner expected.

When the nearly enraged Shi Xiaobai walked out of the palace, his mood had calmed down. It was as though he could freely control his emotions, allowing him to wipe away his wrath clean with a few breaths.

Immediately following that, Shi Xiaobai issued a command to the

Infernal generals. The command left the shadow at a loss of whether to laugh or cry—Do your best to defend the fourth line of defense. Stop any attempts of breaking the defense but try your best to capture them alive. Do not take the initiative to attack and just defend well.

When the Infernal general heard the command, he was stunned agape and unsure of how to react.

The shadow in the corner was dumbfounded for a moment.

Others were already fighting in your house, and all you do is defend?

How fucking cowardly are you?

Others are already about to destroy your home. At least your front yard has been smashed, but you are still trying your best to capture them alive?

How fucking foolish are you?

The Infernal general garnered his courage to ask Shi Xiaobai if they had heard the command wrongly. But all they got was Shi Xiaobai's negative response and an emphasized repeat of his orders.

Try your best to capture them alive!

Just defend well!

That was the way Shi Xiaobai reacted when facing the enemy's repeated intrusions and humiliating situation of almost reaching his domain.

If not for the Infernal King's exalted status in the Infernal domain, with him being revered, Shi Xiaobai would probably have been cursed badly. He was likely the most cowardly Infernal King in all of history with no one in the future matching him.

But the present Infernal King had always made the correct decisions and actions, so he was deeply loved by the people. It was different from the awkward situation of the Celestial domain's round-table parliament. The Infernal domain was ruled by a monarchy, so the Infernal King's decisions were obeyed by the Infernal soldiers. At most, they would secretly grumble.

Therefore, a situation which the Celestials and Transcendents never expected in their wildest dreams occurred. Even though they were about to invade the hinterland of the Infernal domain, even though they had been so aggressive in their actions, the Infernal domain never sent its troops in retaliation. It only firmly defended the fourth line of defense like an ice-cold mountain.

When someone slapped you in the face but you did not ruthlessly fight back and instead cover your face as if nothing had happened, such a defense could only be deemed as an action of a coward.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai's reign as Infernal King made the

Transcendent and Celestial soldiers call him 'the most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity'.

They could not attack the Infernal soldiers that hunkered down like a turtle as a defense that did not attack had too few weak points. Furthermore, they were facing the threat of the other army. It was too risky to invade the Infernal domain, so slandering was their final means of attack. The mockery and humiliation of the Infernal King began to sound in the fourth line of defense.

The Infernal soldiers were so angered that they nearly lost their minds. However, their military discipline and their trust in the Infernal King allowed them to endure the bombardment of the taunts.

However, the trust in the Infernal King was not eternal. When humiliation reached a certain point, trust and loyalty would collapse.

And the collapse was only a matter of time.

...

Infernal domain, Infernal King's bedroom

"The most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity."

The Infernal Queen said with a tut, "Can Darling still remain unperturbed after hearing such a title?"

Shi Xiaobai lowered his head as he looked at the board on the table. Without lifting his head, he said, "It doesn't matter."

The Infernal Queen said with a slight smile, "Darling sure is open-minded. However, I'm curious. Back then, Darling's incensed look did not seem like it was faked. Why did you manage to calm down the moment you walked out of the door and made such a rational decision?"

"It's because This King can't be angry."

Shi Xiaobai looked up slightly and said, "This King does not know why either, but his intuition tells This King that if This King maintains his state of wrath, something bad would happen. Furthermore, why should This King be angry?"

The Infernal Queen's eyebrows pricked up slightly as she said, "The Celestials and Transcendents have ignored Darling's act of tolerance and remained insatiable. They keep pushing the boundaries and have almost reached our homes. Shouldn't Darling feel angry because of that?"

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, "Of course it's infuriating and This King was indeed infuriated. But on second thought, aren't they trying to deliberately provoke This King? Then why should This King be angered and fall for their plans? In contrast, if This King were to remain calm and make the most rational judgment, wouldn't they feel terrible?"

The Infernal Queen said with a chuckle, "What a clever way of alternate thinking, but...it doesn't seem like it's Darling's style."

Shi Xiaobai looked up and said with a meaningful smile, "It looks like you understand This King rather well?"

The Infernal Queen said with a calm laugh, "Of course. We have already spent so much time as a couple, so how could I not understand you?"

Shi Xiaobai smiled and did not dwell on the topic. Instead, he said with a sigh, "It is indeed not This King's style. According to a written script, This King should be incensed and order the entire army and chase the Celestial and Transcendent armies out of the Infernal domain before winning a beautiful victory. This will let the bastards who remain insatiable know that This King isn't a cowardly turtle that is free for them to carve up."

"To be honest, This King really wants to do that, but This King can't do that."

The Infernal Queen asked, "Why can't you do that?"

Shi Xiaobai said in a deep voice, "Because by doing so, it is equivalent to pouring oil onto the burning flames of war. If the Infernal domain were to join the war with blazing momentum, there can only be three outcomes. A tragic victory, a tragic defeat or to sign a peace agreement after a tragic sequence of events. Regardless of the matter, it would be tragic."

"If the present situation is maintained, it would be completely different. The Celestials and the Transcendents mutually keep each other in check while they do not dare to attack the Infernal domain with full force. And with the Infernal domain sleeping in peace by the side, the Celestials and Transcendents would not dare to fight in an all out battle. The three sides are forced to leave a card up their sleeves. After a long period of time, the blades of war will turn blunt. The morale of the soldiers will be turned dull and the troops that would die in the flames of war will decrease. And the bitter fruits of war the three sides will taste would not be as bitter."

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she fell silent for a moment and said gently, "With all that said, Darling has chosen to be benevolent."

Shi Xiaobai laughed and said, "If being benevolent can save countless lives, why should This King choose anger and killing?"

The Infernal Queen gave Shi Xiaobai a serious look before she whispered, "That afternoon when Darling went to apologize to the family members of the three palace maids, Darling should have understood something. To the Infernal domain's citizens, sacrificing for the Infernal King is a glorious death. They are willing to die for Darling."

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, "This King knows that. However, This King does not only want to save the Infernal soldiers. This King is similarly benevolent to the Celestial and Transcendent soldiers. This King always believes that the people most detestable in war are not the soldiers that fiercely kill their enemy, but the

masterminds behind the war. It's those leaders that hide in the back as they command and send thousands to their deaths. The Celestial and Transcendent soldiers aren't at fault. They have loved ones, family just like the Infernal soldiers. They should not die here. This King has no way to immediately end the war, but he can try his best to decrease their chances of death."

The Infernal Queen lowered her head slightly and said, "Darling's breadth of vision for him to be able to turn anger into benevolence and forgiveness in such a short period of time is something I admire and venerate. However, Darling shouldn't forget two things. Firstly, the dulling of blades of war does not mean that the number of fatalities will decrease because an unending war will only last even longer. When the time comes, the death numbers might end up to be higher than for a quick clash of swords. Secondly, how long does Darling think the Infernal soldiers can tolerate it? Their grievance of only defending will eventually turn into blaming Darling. When loyalty and trust were to disappear, their discipline would no longer be as perfect. War will happen sooner or later."

Shi Xiaobai looked deeply into the Infernal Queen's eyes and said, "You are indeed clever. The two points you raised are correct, but how can This King not have considered them? Don't worry. This King has already thought of a ingenious method to resolve the two problems."

"Oh?"

The Infernal Queen pricked up her eyebrows and exclaimed, "What's your method?"

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, "A way to quickly end the war and also kill the Celestial King, as well as winning back loyalty. However, there is still a need to wait."

The Infernal Queen asked again, "What are you waiting for?"

Shi Xiaobai replied with a whisper, "When This King's reputation is completely rotten."

...

...

It turned out that Shi Xiaobai was right. The blazing flames of war appeared to be doused with heavy rain because of the Infernal domain's retreat and firm refusal to fight back.

Due to the Transcendents' hatred for the Celestials, they did not wish to ally with the Celestials to attack the Infernal domain. However, they were afraid that the Infernal domain would benefit from their internecine struggle. Therefore, the battle with the Celestial domain also became muted.

The Celestials were in a similar situation. They were afraid the Infernals would ally with the Transcendents because they destroyed the Infernal domain's barrier. They were also afraid that the Infernal domain would watch by the sidelines and suddenly strike at the last moment. They too left several cards up their

sleeve.

The blades of war turned dull in such a manner. The Infernal domain became an existence that constrained both the Celestials and Transcendents. And the Infernal domain, which had such an advantageous position, chose to defend like a cowardly turtle. The Infernal domain's lack of attacks made it appear even more terrifying because no one knew when the tiger that had its claws retracted would suddenly pounce.

And it turned out that the Infernal Queen was correct as well.

Although the blades of war had been dulled, it did not mean that the war would come to a halt. It just caused victory that could have been decided after a few rounds of tragic battles to be prolonged.

The war was still ongoing and there were deaths among the troops. It just slowed down.

And due to the pure defense and zero offense system, the battlefield remained at the fourth line of defense. The Infernal domain was like a trapped beast and was unable to take a step out.

Despite having a huge advantage, the Infernals had to be humble and hide in their turtle shell. This gradually caused the Infernal citizens to begin grumbling. In addition, the Celestial and Transcendent troops never ceased their mocking taunts. The Infernal soldiers felt aggrieved and wished that they could crazily vent their anger.

However, the Infernal King repeatedly stressed and ordered once again the same order from beginning to the end—Capture them alive if possible. Just defend.

Therefore, the title of 'the most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity' was not only spread on the battlefield. It proliferated the mortal realm and to the Celestial domain. Even the Infernal domain slowly had such voices.

Shi Xiaobai's infamous title of 'the most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity' was spread throughout the three domains!

It could be said that Shi Xiaobai's reputation was completely rotten!

And on the tenth day of the war, a shocking matter that stunned the three domains happened!

Two letters were sent to the Transcendents' giant and the Celestial domain's Celestial King!

It was a letter from the Infernal King!

The letter read—

"To the Celestial King and King Leonis:

Why should wars be fought between soldiers? Do you dare to

fight king against king? This King only wishes for a life-and-death battle between the three kings, with life and death determining the outcome! If This King were to die in battle, the Infernal domain will surrender! Conversely, if you were to unfortunately die by This King's sword, please withdraw your troops! This King has penned the challenge. Do the both of you dare to fight? —The most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity!"

...

Chapter 420: The Only Fear Is That The Celestial King Will Not Dare To Participate

"To the Celestial King and King Leonis:

Why should wars be fought between soldiers? Do you dare to fight king against king? This King only wishes for a life-and-death battle between the three kings, with life and death determining the outcome! If This King were to die in battle, the Infernal domain will surrender! Conversely, if you were to unfortunately die by This King's sword, please withdraw your troops! This King has penned the challenge. Do the both of you dare to fight? —The most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity!"

The two letters with the same content were separately sent to the Celestial domain and Transcendence. It might have been done unwittingly or it might have been done deliberately, but the contents of the two letters were quickly revealed. It proliferated in the three domains, causing every commoner on the streets and the soldiers to know of the letter's content. A flurry of discussion broke out because of it.

The letter that came from 'the most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity' had ruthlessly smacked many people in the face. What was it about being the most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity? The Infernal King, who dared to suggest the life-and-death battle between the three kings and remained indifferent to life, had nothing to do with 'cowardly', even if his strategy was problematic!

What a nicely phrased “why should wars be fought between

soldiers? Do you dare to fight king against king?" This sentence not only showed the Infernal King's courage and confidence, it also explained the reason why the Infernal King did not send his troops. The Infernal King was not being 'cowardly', but it was because he did not wish for his soldiers to die in battle!

The Infernal King's reputation changed dramatically from that moment. By suggesting a life-and-death battle between the three kings, it had immediately shattered the rumors that he was the most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity. The words about king against king made the three domains understand his benevolence.

That phrase 'do the both of you dare to fight' became a popular catchphrase.

As the three domains were discussing this matter, what they cared about the most, was whether the Celestial King and the Transcendents' new king would accept the life-and-death battle between the three.

...

Transcendence

At this moment, Transcendence was completely different from the prosperous state it was in when it held the martial arts tournament. A cold layer of gray shrouded the sky of the country. There was constant wailing and painful cries everywhere.

The towering tree that seemed to exude rainbows which covered the country in lustrous colors was half-wilted. The other half was burnt black. The branches emanated the rotting smell of death. The once lustrous crown of the tree seemed to be the bringer of decay and there was a black air that lingered around it that dispersed into the sky, turning into a black haze.

The Transcendence Holy Tree had been destroyed through burning. And what was destroyed was not only the holy tree. The foundation of Transcendence was in the midst of destruction as well.

Legends said that it would be the holy tree of Transcendence that would protect them when the Infernal army arrived, but it was in fact not as extraordinary as the legends said. It was just an immensely tall tree. There was no tree spirit in the tree, so against the destruction of the Celestial Fire, it could only struggle and was powerless to resist.

The holy tree was not a guardian, but to Transcendence, it was an existence even more important than a guardian.

Why were the holy tree's beautiful leaves covered in poison?

It was not because the holy tree was poisonous to begin with. It was because the descendants of the Transcendents were born with a terrifying disease. The disease would make the yellowed-skinned Transcendent children gradually turn black. They would slowly become extremely ugly, making them look like the dwarf devils of the Infernals.

However, due to the existence of the Transcendence Holy Tree, the virus in the children's disease would be slowly absorbed by the holy tree. Although it was unable to completely absorb all of it, it would not affect their normal lives. These children would eventually end up with a skin color that was in between black and yellow. It was the reason why most Transcendents had green skin.

Therefore, the Transcendence Holy Tree was a natural healing cleric that the Transcendents depended on for survival. It used its leaves to absorb all the viruses!

And at that moment, the Transcendence Holy Tree was mostly burned down. Its life was almost coming to an end. It was unable to absorb the virus any more. In fact, the virus in the leaves was gradually dispersing, forming a haze that lingered in the sky.

The unfortunate and wailing infants became a tragedy that could not be saved. The virus made them cry out in pain but it would not take their lives. However, it would change their appearance and their race, to the point of changing their destiny.

And for adult Transcendents who were frailer, the remnants of the virus in their bodies would relapse, causing their bodies to undergo significant transformations.

The entire Transcendence was thrown into grief and anger.

To the Transcendents, destroying the Transcendence Holy Tree was equivalent to committing a sacrilegious act against the entire

race which deserved death. And the blame was put on the Celestial King.

Normally, if they wanted to sacrifice the Celestial King as an offering to the holy tree, they would first need to gain victory in the war against the Celestial domain.

However, with the letter from the Infernal King, they had seen a new glimmer of hope.

With the three kings engaging in a life-and-death battle, revenge was at hand!

The giant chose to participate in the life-and-death battle without any hesitation.

"The race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world. When This King shatters the skulls of the Infernal King and the Celestial King, no one in the three domains will ever dare to deny this fact."

The gatekeeping giant looked towards the Celestial domain as a sneer suffused across his lips.

"The only fear is that the useless Celestial King will not dare to participate."

...

"The only fear is that the Celestial King will not dare to participate."

Shi Xiaobai said as he landed the black piece in his hand.

Shi Xiaobai, who was utterly bored, was playing Go with the Infernal Queen. The main reason was that he was attempting to gain more useful information from the Infernal Queen. However, after a few rounds of Aeroplane Chess, they had no choice but to decide on a draw. After that, Shi Xiaobai suggested changing the game.

The Infernal Queen did not mind it. Therefore, the two began playing all sorts of games, Chinese chess, Go, Stratego, Jungle, Chinese checkers, Gomoku, Reversi, etc.

However, Shi Xiaobai never won again.

Of course, he never lost either.

No matter what game it was, it would end up with a tie or a tie had to be forced.

Shi Xiaobai's morale and fighting spirit did not dull because of the frequent ties. Instead, it intensified and he wished to defeat the Infernal Queen once again.

The Infernal Queen did not reveal a trace of weariness either. The fighting spirit in her eyes was even more intense than Shi Xiaobai's. It appeared as though she was extremely indignant about losing to Shi Xiaobai at a score of 1-0. While playing the board games, the Infernal Queen would constantly speak sultrily. When the Infernal Queen commented on the life-and-death battle between the three kings, she had been full of praise for Shi Xiaobai's intelligence.

Shi Xiaobai calmly accepted the Infernal Queen's praises but he expressed something that was on his mind—the only fear is that the Celestial King would not dare to participate.

Shi Xiaobai was not afraid that the new Transcendent king would reject the participation of the battle because the Transcendence Holy Tree had been destroyed. The new Transcendent king clearly would not give up on the opportunity to seek revenge on the Celestial King.

The only thing to worry about was if the Celestial King would refuse the battle.

Shi Xiaobai had waited to the moment when his reputation was rotten before sending the letter so as to force the Celestial King to accept the challenge. However, only the heavens knew if the Celestial King would be cowardly enough to rather accept the infamous title of being 'the most cowardly Celestial King in all of eternity' than accepting the risk of participating in the life-and-death battle.

Chapter 421: So, Apparently Field Marshal Awesomo Is Very Awesome?

Celestial domain, round table meeting room

Speechless looked at the letter in his hand and could not help but laugh. "Impressive. Why didn't This King think of such a move. When it comes to having fun, the Infernal King is the best at it."

The seven Elders looked at each other and never expected the Celestial King to have such a reaction after seeing the letter. The Grand Elder said in a heavy tone, "What does Your Majesty thinks about the life-and-death battle between the three kings?"

Speechless said in a matter of fact tone, "Of course, it will be accepted."

The Grand Elder pondered for a moment before he said, "To decide the outcome of a war with a fight, isn't this too much of a child's play? I believe that it's best to refuse it. Furthermore, it's a life-and-death battle. The dead will be the loser and the loser will definitely die. The Infernal King and the Transcendents' new king are not nobodies. What if..."

Speechless waved his hand and said, "There are no ifs. This King will definitely be the ultimate winner. Now, the Infernal domain is hunkered down in defense, and the three sides are restrained. War can't be continued on. It might as well be decided in a battle between kings. The Infernal King really chose a perfect time. However, it seems like the timing was planned by the Infernal

domain. Tsk, the Infernal King is that clever? Alright, there is no need to discuss this matter further. It has been decided. Whatever you want to win back through the war, This King will return it through the life-and-death battle."

The Grand Elder fell silent for a moment before he said in a heavy tone, "The Celestial domain and Your Majesty cannot accept the life-and-death battle. We can just treat the Infernal King as a silly clown and completely ignore him. Although the present situation of the war doesn't have much of an advantage, the Celestial army has the absolute advantage. As long as this form of attrition continues on, we will definitely obtain final victory. Why is there a need to take the risk? The life-and-death battle is way too risky for Your Majesty and the Celestial domain."

Speechless frowned slightly before he said, "It seems like you don't trust in This King's strength? Don't worry. The Infernal King and the Transcendents' new king is not This King's match, Furthermore, this life-and-death battle cannot be refused. The timing the Infernal King chose is perfect. When the three domains were mocking him as the most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity, he had issued this life-and-death battle. If This King were to refuse it, what would This King become? To not dare to accept the challenge from the most cowardly Infernal King in all of eternity, then wouldn't that mean This King is the most cowardly Celestial King in all of eternity? This life-and-death battle is not that simple. It affects the reputation of the three kings, the morale of the soldiers, and the hearts of the people. It has to be accepted."

The Grand Elder frowned deeply as he hesitated for a moment. He said, "Although this shouldn't be said, but if Your Majesty continuously refuses to acknowledge the error of his ways, then I

will have to say it. With all due respect, Your Majesty is probably not the match of the Infernal King and the Transcendents' new king! The Infernal King and the Transcendents's new king are publicly considered the strongest warriors in the Infernal domain and Transcendence, as for Your Majesty..."

Speechless was stunned as he said, "Is This King not the strongest warrior in the Celestial domain?"

The Elders looked at each other. The rumors that said that the Celestial King had suffered some agitation that made him forget many important things appeared to be true.

The Grand Elder gave a light cough and said, "Your Majesty, your strength...is about the standard of the third Divine General. Compared to the Infernal King and the new Transcendent king, there is logically a bit of a gap. I thought Your Majesty would flatly refuse the life-and-death battle, but I never expected Your Majesty to...appear unaware of the situation?"

The Grand Elder tried his best to say something uneuphemistic with the most euphemistic tone.

Speechless finally understood that the real Celestial King was not the strongest warrior in the Celestial domain. Furthermore, his strength was only on the level of the third Divine General. There was no way to compare to the Infernal King and the new Transcendent king.

Speechless' mouth suffused an enlightened but wry smile. It was

no wonder the Celestial King's position in the Celestial domain was so awkward. The seven Elders and Field Marshal Awesomo only treated him with respect on the surface because the Celestial King was not the strongest warrior in the Celestial domain!

Why was being the Celestial King so fucking tragic?

Not only did he have to shoulder the blame, he was also fucking not the strongest warrior?

When Speechless thought of this, he nearly cursed out loud. He took a few deep breaths before he managed to calm down.

However, Speechless felt like he was burning in rage that he needed to vent.

Speechless looked at the Grand Elder and said with a heavy tone, "Who is publicly recognized as the strongest warrior in the Celestial domain?"

The Grand Elder pricked up his eyebrows slightly and after some hesitation, he said, "The strongest warrior publicly recognized in the Celestial domain is none other than—Field Marshal Awesomo!"

The corners of Speechless's mouth suffused a sneer as he said coldly, "None of you know anything about This King's true strength. Fine. This King needs a warm up before the life-and-death battle between the three kings anyway. So Field Marshal Awesomo is very awesome?"

Speechless sneered as he walked out of the meeting room. He ordered the guard outside the meeting room, "Get Field Marshal Awesomo prepare a battle arena and inform all Celestial soldiers that This King will be sparring with Field Marshal Awesomo."

When the guard heard him, he froze for a moment and was suspecting if he had heard wrongly.

The seven Elders in the meeting room looked at each other as a faint and derisive smile suffused across their lips.

The Celestial King must have lost his wits.

When Speechless noticed how the guard remained motionless for a long time, he frowned and said, "What are you dazing around for? Quickly spread the news. This King can no longer wait to posture."

The guard's mouth twitched.

"Let's hope Field Marshal Awesomo would go slightly easy on him. Although he's an idiot, he is still the Celestial King after all."

With this thought in mind, the guard turned around and executed Speechless's order.

...

...

The 'sparring match' of the Celestial King and Field Marshal Awesomo was scheduled in the afternoon. The Celestial army filled the entire arena.

The Celestial King had once sparred with the second Divine General and was 'completely thrashed. Many people spared his feelings and classified his strength to be at the third Divine General's level. However, it was a question if the Celestial King could really defeat the third Divine General.

As for Field Marshal Awesomo, he was always considered the strongest warrior in the Celestial domain. He was an existence that could completely thrash the first Divine General. To the Celestial commoners, Field Marshal Awesomo's strength was what the Celestial King should possess, so as to be an existence that could match the Infernal King.

As such, not a single Celestial soldier thought well of the Celestial King in the sparring match. They could even guess at how bad the thrashing would be!

And the sparring happened as they expected—it was a one-sided thrashing!

However, the thrashing and the person being thrashed were completely different from what they expected. It was quite the opposite!

Throughout the entire match, Field Marshal Awesomo was being suppressed. He was not even given a chance to breathe!

It was not true that Field Marshal Awesomo was not as good as the stories went. In fact, he had showcased stunning strength and destructive power, but the unfathomable Celestial King had all sorts of tactics. He could easily nullify Field Marshal Awesomo's attacks and launch a counterstrike!

"Isn't the Celestial King too strong?"

"How is the Celestial King so strong?"

"Heavens, this might be a fake Celestial King."

The Celestial soldiers were extremely shocked. The seven Elders could not even sit still as they watched with widened eyes in disbelief at their Celestial King.

The final outcome of the match was naturally the Celestial King coming out victorious. Furthermore, he had clinched victory unharmed.

On the contrary, Field Marshal Awesomo was not only bruised all over. Even one of his bull horns on his head had been bent. He looked extremely pathetic.

As Speechless stepped on Field Marshal Awesomo, he declared his victory. Speechless looked up and surveyed the crowd and said with a sneer, "Does anyone have any objections to This King's decision on participating in the life-and-death battle between the three kings?"

At that moment, how could any Celestial soldier dare to object?

The seven Elders could only obediently shut their mouths.

The Celestial King, who could easily crush Field Marshal Awesomo, would probably win the life-and-death battle between the three kings easily.

Speechless walked down the stage after having enjoyed the entire process. The warm up process was only worth six points to him. Field Marshal Awesomo's strength could indeed be considered the strongest in the Celestial domain, but unfortunately, to Speechless, he was still too weak.

Mu Yuesheng came up to him and with a complex look in her eyes she whispered, "I guessed that you are very strong, but I never expected you to be this strong."

Speechless chuckled and said, "Silly girl. Do you think This Emperor stayed in the Psionic Mortal Realm for eight years to fool around? This Emperor's present strength is about the same strength as the Hero King when he was in the Psionic Mortal Realm. Unfortunately, This Emperor won't have the opportunity to fight the three kings alone."

Mu Yuesheng smiled and said, "But you can fight two kings."

Speechless shrugged and said, "It feels like something is ultimately missing. Whatever. Since the number is lower than the Hero King's, This Emperor will do it at a faster speed than him. One minute. In one minute, This King will cleave off the heads of the Infernal King and the new Transcendent king."

...

On the day Shi Xiaobai issued the life-and-death battle challenge, the Transcendents and the Celestial domain responded one after the other. The answer was—fight!

Finally all three parties sent ambassadors and discussed the time and venue of the life-and-death battle.

Regarding the venue, after a round of discussion, it was decided to be at the Silent Desolate Lands which was not home ground to anyone.

The three ambassadors represented the views of the three king, and the three king's surprisingly came to a unanimous decision—the sooner the better!

Therefore the life-and-death battle between the three kings was decided to be at noon tomorrow!

Chapter 422: Goodbye

On the day of the life-and-death battle between the three kings. Early in the morning.

Shi Xiaobai woke up from his Cogitation and could not help but frown. For some reason, the effects of his Cogitation were surprisingly terrible. He had always been accustomed to using Cogitation to replace his sleep. In the past, a night of Cogitation would allow him to feel an obvious increment in his psionic power.

But ever since he came to the seventh level, Shi Xiaobai was shocked to discover that his psionic power would not increase during his Cogitation. It was as though he had reached a bottleneck.

What was going on?

Shi Xiaobai still did not have a complete understanding of the psionic cultivation system up till this day. There was no way to fix it as he would have a headache just reading the dense sprawl of text in books. There was no way for him to continue reading.

Shi Xiaobai contemplated for a moment and came up with many possibilities. However, there was no way for him to decide which was the correct one. He could only temporarily shelve his doubts and find a chance to ask others when he has an opportunity.

Shi Xiaobai stood up from his seat. Straightening his arms, he forcefully twisted his body.

As Shi Xiaobai stretched his stiff body after a night of sitting, cracking sounds that resembled firecrackers were heard. From the sounds, one could tell that it was power surging through him.

A smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips.

In the past ten days or so, he had completely digested the energy from the holy tree's fruit and the Celestial Jade and converted them into physical strength. The holy tree's fruit and the Celestial Jade had allowed his body to experience two gigantic leaps in power. It was as if he had experienced two terrifying metamorphoses.

Shi Xiaobai did not know how to measure his physical strength either. In fact, he did not have much systematic knowledge about the way physical strength was measured in this world either. However, Shi Xiaobai knew that his physical strength must have reached an astonishing stage. At least for the rookies in the Psionic Mortal Realm, it was an unimaginable height.

This was also all thanks to him suddenly possessing a superpower—the ability to eat any item as food. Furthermore, it was a superpower that gave him the ability to obtain the nutritional value from what he ate to increase his physique.

Shi Xiaobai named the superpower—"Power of Taotie".

The Power of Taotie was immensely helpful for Shi Xiaobai at his present stage. His physique was only considered above average

among rookies in the beginning. Although This Turtle Is Hardest had allowed his right arm to be called a Qilin arm, his other body parts were considered relatively weaker.

However, after eating the Transcendence fruit and through the Power of Taotie, Shi Xiaobai's physical toughness had risen to the point of being able to crush Moya and be on the same level as Leonis.

This was of course the reason why the Transcendence fruit was considered one of the rare holy items. It was truly a great opportunity for Shi Xiaobai to have eaten the Transcendence fruit.

And at the moment when he had accidentally eaten the Celestial Jade, it caused Shi Xiaobai's physical toughness to be enhanced once again. Shi Xiaobai guessed that if he battled with Leonis again, the one that would be sent flying would definitely not be him.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. Theoretically speaking, the Celestial Jade should have been a holy item that would be vied for by the trial-takers of the alternate world that he found himself in. It was probably an item that the assessment program could not even replicate. But why did the real Celestial Jade still exist after thousands of years to the point of him successfully eating it?

It was as though it was deliberately sent into his mouth?

Shi Xiaobai found the matter suspicious, but he accepted the

benefit he had gained with peace of mind.

In his boredom, Shi Xiaobai even gave his physical toughness a new name. He called it the 'Body of The Heretic King'.

Due to the two metamorphoses he underwent thanks to the Transcendence fruit and the Celestial Jade, his physical toughness had reached the third stage of the Body of the Heretic King!

As Shi Xiaobai felt the strength of the blood flowing in his body, the feeling of being filled with power gave him absolute confidence, to the point of it being a bit 'inflated'. The third stage of the Body of the Heretic King made him not worry about the upcoming life-and-death battle between the three kings.

The sounds that came from Shi Xiaobai twisting his body echoed in the bedroom.

A lazy and charming voice sounded at that moment.

"Darling sat on that cold chair all night once again. It hurts me so much. The sky has just turned bright, why doesn't Darling come into bed and snooze for a while? The bed here is fragrant and warm. It will definitely be very comfortable for Darling."

The Infernal Queen lifted the quilt slightly. In the shadows, the beautiful figure could be faintly seen. If one was closer, one would be able to smell an alluring body fragrance emanating from the bed.

Shi Xiaobai was already accustomed to the teasing and temptation. Although a warm bed was quite tempting for him, he would rather sit on a cold and hard chair than lie in that bed. That was because Shi Xiaobai knew that it was not a bed, but a grave.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment and said, "Stop sleeping. Get up and play one last game with This King."

The Infernal Queen was surprised as she said in surprise, "Why did Darling say that it would be the final game?"

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, "No idea, but intuition tells This King that this will be the last game between us."

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she immediately sat up. The quilt slid down to her waist and under her translucent nightgown, her impressive figure could be faintly seen. The Infernal Queen said in a coquettish tone, "Darling's intuition is probably problematic. Quickly set up two games. I will play two rounds with Darling at the same time!"

...

The Infernal Queen successfully defeated Shi Xiaobai's intuition. The duo began dual-tasking. Their left hands played Go, while their right hands played Chinese chess. Furthermore, the rules were such that each move could only be contemplated for three seconds. In a short period of time, the both of them began playing two rounds simultaneously.

If others were to see this scene, they would probably be appalled. As the duo simultaneously played two games, the speed at which they moved was staggeringly fast. It was as though they were deliberately competing in speed. The other person would immediately land a piece when one of them made their move.

However, despite the time to contemplate was so short and them needing to dual-task, the duo's every step could be considered near perfect. There was almost no flaw left behind. Even if a flaw appeared, it could be rescued in a few moves later.

Therefore the final outcome of the two games that ran concurrently was—a tie.

The Infernal Queen said in a faint voice, "Another round. If I cannot defeat Darling in one game, I really wouldn't be able to sleep and eat."

Shi Xiaobai chuckled and said, "No more. There might not be any outcome even after another hundred rounds. The both of us have played countless games over the past ten days. No one can win the other and it is not a coincidence. Furthermore, This King has to set off now."

The Infernal Queen lowered her head and said softly, "For the life-and-death battle between the three kings, I won't be accompanying you."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised and asked out of curiosity,

"Why?"

The Infernal Queen looked Shi Xiaobai seriously in the eyes and gently said, "That's because the battle will be a tough battle for Darling. If I were to watch by the side, I might not be able to resist intervening if Darling were to be injured. My heart really aches for Darling."

Shi Xiaobai was surprised. Disregarding the fact that the Infernal Queen's words were not sincere, what sort of logic was it for her to rather not see something because she was afraid to not be able to hold back if she saw him injured?

Shi Xiaobai did not mind if the Infernal Queen would accompany him to watch the match. Without harping on the issue, he nodded and said, "Alright, This King will be going."

"Goodbye."

Chapter 423: The Battle Can Be Lost, But The Celestial King Has To Die

Before the life-and-death battle between the three kings, all three sides had sent ambassadors to discuss the details regarding the life-and-death battle. A shocking unanimous decision was that all three kings wanted it as soon as possible. Therefore, the life-and-death battle was immediately decided to be the noon after the day Shi Xiaobai sent out the two letters.

For the life-and-death battle venue, the three ambassadors entered quite an intensive debate. Although the three kings did not care about the venue, the three ambassadors who had the interests of their king, naturally wished to gain the venue with the best advantage. However, none of them could convince the other in the contention. Therefore, it was eventually decided to be held in the middle of the Silent Desolate Lands. It was a spot that was considerably close to the entrances to the three domains.

And the most intense point of debate among the three ambassadors was not about the detail about venue, but...the number of spectators.

The life-and-death battle was held in the Silent Desolate Lands. Although it was vast, it was not adequate for viewing a battle. Furthermore, no one knew how extensive the aftershocks of the battle would be. Hence, the life-and-death battle was not made public to the commoners of the three domains.

There was a need to limit the spectators and distribute them equally for each of the three domains. That way, it could prevent

any side from having soldiers in ambush.

However, the number could not be too large or small.

If there were too many people, a sinister possibility of soldiers pretending to be members of the audience could happen.

If there were too few people, it would be a waste of a life-and-death battle that was destined to go down in history. Many commoners looked forward to being able to catch a glimpse of the glorious battle of the three kings.

The three ambassadors even specially made a field trip and after calculations and debate, the number of spectators were limited to ten thousand per faction, for a total of thirty thousand people.

This was already considered a large scale for the audience. The three realms used a night's time in an intense campaign to decide the spectators qualifications.

When Shi Xiaobai learned of this matter, he gave the direct order that the spectator rights were to be issued in a random manner. It prevented corrupt officials to use it for personal gains. It also let the poor Infernal commoners to have a chance to witness the life-and-death battle.

Of course, Shi Xiaobai directly used his authority to give Sunless and company the qualification to view the battle.

At eight in the morning, the Infernal domain quickly gathered ten thousand spectators and set off for the Silent Desolate Lands. In consideration of the spectators being mostly weak and feeble commoners, the group of people proceeded on foot. It would take several hours to trek across the desolate lands in order to reach the central zone of the Silent Desolate Lands.

Shi Xiaobai and Sunless were walking right in front of the group. They completely ignored the group that was accompanying them as they walked extremely fast. Soon, they opened up a distance from the Infernal commoners because their normal walking speed was already much faster than the running speed of commoners. If they had to control their speed to be at the same speed as the commoners, it would be too uncomfortable.

Therefore, they decided to reach the venue of the life-and-death battle first. They were all bold and talented, so they were not worried that the Celestial domain or Transcendence would lay an ambush.

Along the way, Sunless and the silver-haired girl very naturally were by Shi Xiaobai's sides. Pulp Farmer and the other two knowingly fell back by the side. The trio had mixed emotions and only felt that Shi Xiaobai's luck with women was really something enviable to the point of jealousy.

In the past ten days, they would only meet each other during lunch and dinner. They would busy themselves the rest of the time. Other than Feng Yuanlin, who could not extricate himself from the arsenal, the others were in the library reading books.

There were many hidden opportunities in the land of the trials. In the library, there were many books that were just ordinary, but there were a few rare manuals hidden in it. They were hidden prizes prepared for the trial-takers of the land of trials, but they had to be discovered.

Sunless and company experienced a 'gold rush' in the library and benefited greatly from it.

As for Shi Xiaobai, he was the greatest oddity of all. Other than his meals, he would stay all day in the Infernal King's bedroom. And similarly, the beautiful Infernal Queen stayed in the bedroom with Shi Xiaobai to the point of not even coming out for her meals.

Such a situation made people's thoughts run wild. It was not surprising if something shameful happened during the ten days he spent alone in a room with such a beautiful creature. Even if the shameless things happened continuously, it would be completely understandable.

The perfect education in the forbidden room was stimulating just thinking of it.

As normal men, Pulp Farmer and the other two could not help but steer their thoughts towards such things.

However, Sunless and the silver-haired girl were as pure as white paper. They completely did not have their thoughts stray towards such matters. They were only curious as to what Shi Xiaobai was doing while in the bedroom. The two girls believed Shi Xiaobai

completely when he said that he had spent ten days playing chess with the Infernal Queen.

This made the male trio feel very uncomfortable, to the point of wanting to denigrate "You are playing a very large game of chess." But after thinking of Shi Xiaobai's terrifying strength, they obediently shut their mouths.

...

Shi Xiaobai and company advanced at a very fast speed. They reached the venue where the life-and-death battle would be held two hours early. There in the bleak and quiet desert, there were a few dozen spectators who had arrived early.

However, the spectators came from the Celestial domain and none of them recognized Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai and company found a spot without any person and rested by a boulder.

Liu Yu said, "It's said that Leonis died of an illness, causing the Transcendents to have a new king. Apparently, the new king is even stronger than Leonis. That's really strange. When did the Transcendents have an existence stronger than Leonis? There have been so many incredulous things that have happened on the seventh level. This Penniless Priest is beginning to suspect if he has read fake information."

Shi Xiaobai said with a laugh, "Let's hope it's real. It's best if the new king is really stronger. This King does not wish to win the life-and-death battle between the three kings in such a boring manner."

Liu Yu rolled his eyes and said, "Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, your plan regarding the life-and-death battle between the three kings is indeed wise, but isn't it a little like playing with fire? You could clearly have removed the words 'life-and-death'. Why did you need to take such risks?"

Shi Xiaobai chuckled in his heart. Indeed, he could have removed the words 'life-and-death'. The name battle between the three kings was sufficient, but unfortunately, the Infernal King's mandate was to kill the present Celestial King. A life-and-death battle was the best opportunity.

Pulp Farmer said in a heavy tone, "A three-way battle is very different from a one-on-one duel. Shi Xiaobai, it's best that you be careful. The strongest one might not clinch victory because two that are at a disadvantage can choose to cooperate. Hiding your strength and keeping an appropriate low profile has more benefits than harm."

Feng Yuanlin said as well, "Boss Shi Xiaobai, don't forget the exit command. This is a trial and not a real life-and-death battle. In the event, and I'm saying in the event that the new Transcendent king and the Celestial King shamelessly join forces and cause you to fail to defeat them, you must not persist!"

The male trio gave concerned suggestions that targeted Shi

Xiaobai's three flaws—boldness, high-profile posturing, and refusal to give up.

Shi Xiaobai was at a loss whether to laugh or to cry, but he felt his heart turn slightly warm. He nodded gently and expressed that he got it, but it was unknown if it went in one ear and out the other.

At that moment, Sunless's plain and gentle voice sounded from the left, "Be careful."

Shi Xiaobai said with a slight chuckle, "Don't worry. The ones that should be careful are the other two."

His right sleeve was tugged and Shi Xiaobai turned his head to see the silver-haired girl holding up a writing board.

"Brother Xiaobai, I heard the war was instigated by the Celestial King. That Celestial King sure is rotten. It's perfect that the new Transcendent king hates him greatly. Why don't you first ally with the new Transcendent king and finish that baddy Celestial King?"

The silver-haired girl blinked her sparkling eyes, indicating that her proposal was worth heeding.

Shi Xiaobai laughed. Although it was a three-way battle, he did not plan on allying with anyone. However, finishing the Celestial King was his main goal.

The battle can be lost, but the Celestial King has to die.

That was the thought on Shi Xiaobai's mind.

And at that moment, a familiar voice rang from afar.

"Shi Xiaobai!"

Shi Xiaobai subconsciously turned his head and saw two figures slowly walking from afar.

A girl with short, brown hair was waving at him.

And beside the girl was an ordinary-looking youth who walked over while smiling.

They were none other than Mu Yuesheng and Speechless.

...

Chapter 424: Shall We Make A Bet?

Shi Xiaobai was not surprised when he saw Mu Yuesheng and Speechless arrive. After all, the life-and-death battle between the three kings was quite a startling event. If the two of them were still in the seventh level, they must have received the news and thought of a way to come watch the battle.

Shi Xiaobai smiled as he greeted Mu Yuesheng. Shi Xiaobai had been slightly worried when he did not meet Mu Yuesheng after knowing that she was the sixth Braveheart who slew the dragon. Now that Mu Yuesheng appeared safe and sound, Shi Xiaobai could finally heave a sigh of relief.

So Mu Yuesheng had gone to the same place with Speechless. Since he had not seen them in Transcendence and the Infernal domain, it was highly likely that they had gone to the Celestial domain.

When Shi Xiaobai came to this thought, he turned his head to give Speechless a knowing nod. They had previously met in the Silent Desolate Lands and after a battle, they eventually became friends.

Speechless was one of the few opponents that could make Shi Xiaobai's head ache. Because of that battle that they did not finish, Shi Xiaobai still did not have absolute confidence in beating him.

Speechless smiled and gave Shi Xiaobai a nod. Seeing the silver-haired girl beside Shi Xiaobai, he turned to look at Shi Xiaobai and

said, "Did my younger sister give you any trouble?"

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised and asked out of curiosity, "Your younger sister?"

Speechless said with a nod, "Sister by blood."

Shi Xiaobai turned to his side and gave the silver-haired girl a look. She first gave a depressing nod before shaking her head indignantly. Finally, she turned her head and stared angrily at Speechless.

Speechless said with a smirk, "Look at that girl. She's so naughty that she doesn't want to recognize her own brother. In the past, she was like a twittering sparrow, and after a few years, she doesn't like to speak at all. Who knows who taught her to pretend to be aloof and cold."

Upon hearing Speechless's denigration, Shi Xiaobai was startled for a moment.

The silver-haired girl did not like to speak? Pretend to be aloof and cold? Did Speechless not know that his sister had lost the courage to speak?

Shi Xiaobai frowned and he wanted to correct Speechless's unintentional but extremely hurtful denigration.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai's right hand was gently pulled. Shi

Xiaobai turned and saw the silver-haired girl looking at him with forlorn eyes. She shook her head gently when she saw him turn his head over. There was a trace of plea in her eyes.

Shi Xiaobai's heart seemed to be pulled.

Speechless did not know.

And she did not want him to know.

Shi Xiaobai gaped and finally let out a gentle sigh.

Speechless saw how the silver-haired girl was pulling Shi Xiaobai's hands. From their close proximity, they looked rather intimate. They could even exchange ideas through their eyes. As an elder brother, Speechless instinctively turned vigilant.

Speechless' eyes shimmered before he suddenly pulled something out from his pocket. He said to Shi Xiaobai, "Found something good on the trip to the Celestial domain. Intended to give it to you as food the next time you were encountered. Here's a treat, Shi Xiaobai."

Speechless said and spread his hands open.

Shi Xiaobai looked over and saw two extremely beautiful night pearls in Speechless's hands.

When the others heard Speechless's words, they naturally looked over and wondered. Since when did Speechless and Shi Xiaobai have such a good relationship? He even specially brought a specialty from the Celestial domain to Shi Xiaobai. What sort of delicacy was it?

However, they never expected it to be two night pearls!

What was going on?

Letting Shi Xiaobai eat night pearls?

As Shi Xiaobai never displayed his Power of Taotie in front of them, they did not know that Shi Xiaobai had such a strange appetite.

Shi Xiaobai was first startled but he felt that it was not something he needed to deliberately conceal. He stretched his hand and took the night pearls in Speechless's hands.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not immediately consume them. Instead, he held the night pearls tightly in his hand as he sensed the energy within the two night pearls. He was no longer as hungry to the point of eating anything like when he first met Speechless. After consuming the Transcendence fruit and Celestial Jade, he was basically satiated.

Shi Xiaobai probed for a moment before he was disappointed to learn that the two night pearls did not have a very high nutritional

value. From the looks of it, it was an ordinary night pearl. But since it was Speechless's good intentions, so it wasn't right for Shi Xiaobai to rebuff him. After hesitating for a moment, he placed the night pearls into his pocket and said, "Thank you for your good intentions, but This King temporarily isn't hungry."

Everyone immediately let out a sigh of relief. Seeing how Shi Xiaobai did not really eat them, they figured it was probably an odd joke.

An imperceptible look of disappointment flashed in Speechless's eyes.

Didn't this rascal even eat rocks back then?

Speechless wanted to let Mu Yuesheng and the silver-haired girl see the fact that Shi Xiaobai would eat anything. In passing, he could also teach his two sisters and provide more evidence to "stay further away from Shi Xiaobai or he might eat you".

But unfortunately, his 'ploy' did not succeed.

Speechless was feeling somewhat depressed. Seeing everyone casting odd looks at him, he immediately changed the topic of conversation. "The few of you are already gathered here and must have heard of the news regarding the life-and-death battle between the three kings. Where were you prior to this? Transcendence or the Infernal domain?"

Shi Xiaobai answered, "Infernal domain."

Speechless' eyes slightly lit up as he said, "Did you manage to meet the Infernal King? The Infernal King is quite different from what I imagined. He seems to be quite a pacifist? The timing he chose to propose the life-and-death battle between the three kings was perfect. It was full of wisdom. The Infernal King is actually so clever? It's also unknown how powerful the Infernal King is?"

Shi Xiaobai and company looked at each other and had somewhat odd looks. They did not know how to tell Speechless that the Infernal King he was referring to was the Shi Xiaobai in front of him.

Shi Xiaobai coughed and was about to tell Speechless the truth that he was the Infernal King.

But at that moment, Speechless continued with his monologue, "However, regardless of the Infernal King's strength, the victor of the life-and-death battle between the three kings will definitely be the Celestial King. Furthermore, the Celestial King will clinch victory in an overwhelming manner. Furthermore, the benevolent Celestial King will consider sparing the Infernal King and the new Transcendent king at the end. As long as they plead on their knees and shout, 'Sire, spare us', and everything will be good."

Shi Xiaobai was surprised. For some baffling reason, he was condemned to being a definite loser. He even needed to kneel and plead for his life. This feeling was rather strange. Also, why did Speechless have such high regard for the Celestial King?

Mu Yuesheng, who knew the truth, rolled her eyes by his side. She hesitated if she should ruthlessly expose Speechless's 'naughtiness'.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly felt reluctant about revealing his identity as the Infernal King as it would cause the situation to turn awkward. He smiled and said seriously to Speechless, "It looks like you think highly of the Celestial King's strength, but the story you said will not happen. That's because the Infernal King's strength is absolutely beyond your imagination. The final victor will be the Infernal King. Furthermore, the Infernal King suggested a life-and-death battle so it will be a battle that will have no end to it. Even if the Celestial King were to kneel down and shout grandpa, the Infernal King will not show him any mercy."

Shi Xiaobai described the story that he thought would happen.

Speechless' eyes shimmered as a smile suffused across his lips. He said, "I never knew you thought so highly of the Infernal King, but no matter what, the Celestial King will definitely be the ultimate victor. Shall...we make a bet?"

Chapter 425: Forgot To Tell You

"Shall we make a bet?"

Speechless said on a whim, "Since the both of us have our differences, why don't we make a bet? I'll bet that the Celestial King will win, while you bet that the Infernal King will win. How about it?"

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows pricked up slightly as he said, "What will be the bet?"

Speechless fell silent for a moment. He lowered his head in thought and after a long while, he said with a sly smile, "The loser will have to satisfy any request the winner makes as long as it doesn't touch their bottom line."

Shi Xiaobai could not help but hesitate when he heard this. He was obviously filled with confidence about his victory, but the bet seemed too strange. Furthermore, he had nothing he wanted to request from Speechless.

At that moment, Mu Yuesheng finally could not stand watching this. She said to Shi Xiaobai, "Shi Xiaobai, don't bet with him."

Shi Xiaobai gave her a questioning look.

Mu Yuesheng gave Speechless a glance and said after some hesitation, "The Celestial King is extremely shameless, but he is

indeed very strong. Without any surprises, the Celestial King will be the final victor."

Mu Yuesheng did not choose to expose Speechless's 'scam' because the moment she exposed him, Speechless would end up in an awkward situation. However, she could not bear watching Shi Xiaobai being fooled. In her heart, Speechless and Shi Xiaobai both took very important spots in her heart. One of them was a cousin with blood relations who once stood up for her when she was young, while the other was a partner who she was filled with respect and gratitude for.

Speechless stared silently at Mu Yuesheng and expressed unhappiness at her aid towards an outsider.

Speechless who wanted to scam Shi Xiaobai naturally did not plan on giving up so easily. He immediately tried to goad Shi Xiaobai on by saying, "It's fine if you don't want to make the bet. After all, the Celestial King is indeed very powerful and terrifying. The bet is unfair to begin with."

Shi Xiaobai saw through Speechless's intentions and found it amusing. From the looks of it, the Celestial King was truly very strong for Speechless to have such huge confidence. From Speechless and Mu Yuesheng's point of view, the Infernal King was no match for the Celestial King under normal circumstances.

However, the present situation was not normal.

Speechless and Mu Yuesheng would never guess that he was the

Infernal King.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment. The goading which lacked any tricks could be ignored by him but for some reason, he wanted to accept the bet.

Even though the bet did not really attract him, it was free after all, wasn't it?

Shi Xiaobai made up his mind and said with a grin, "Since you want to bet, so be it. When you lose, don't you go back on your word. This King has to take the time to think about his request."

Speechless was delighted when he heard this. He felt like the fish had been hooked. He immediately said, "A man never goes back on his word."

As such, a bet that both sides had their own 'schemes' was formed.

At that moment, deafening footsteps came from the other end of the horizon.

The ground was trembling violently as the footsteps sounded like thunder. As it approached, everyone turned to look at it. Before they could see anything, their minds could imagine the scene of a massive object walking over.

And when they really saw it, they discovered that the monster

they imagined was not as terrifying as the hundred-meter-tall giant that was walking from the horizon. The terrifying scene of a mountain approaching them was stifling.

Shi Xiaobai, Pulp Farmer and the rest who had been to Transcendence immediately recognized the hundred-meter-tall giant that came in such an imposing manner as the lowly gatekeeping giant of Transcendence. They were surprised as they looked in each others' eyes and saw their thoughts in them.

"He is the new king of Transcendence?"

The hundred-meter-tall giant approached slowly before he suddenly made a leap, traversing several kilometers. He agilely entered a huge basin and with a boom, it was as if a mountain had crashed down from the sky. Many members of the audience were thrown into the air before they plummeted down in a wretched state.

The gigantic basin was the arena stage for the life-and-death battle between the three kings. The basin was wide and expansive like a plain. And the thirty thousand spectators would watch the battle from above the basin.

With thirty thousand spectators surrounding the basin, it did not appear crowded. One could imagine how spacious the basin was.

This was a surprising find by the negotiating ambassadors. In the Silent Desolate Lands, there was a perfect battle arena. It was as though the heavens had deliberately set up the land formation for

the life-and-death battle between the three kings.

The basin was where the three kings would duel and at that moment, the hundred-meter-tall giant had leaped into the basin with an exaggerated posture. His identity could not be any clearer.

Liu Yu said with mixed emotions, "This Penniless Priest never expected that the giant would be the Transcendents' new king. Apparently, he is stronger than Leonis?"

Feng Yuanlin and Pulp Farmer nodded as well. They found it very shocking.

Shi Xiaobai was also somewhat surprised. He remembered that the gatekeeping giant had previously been humiliated by Moya to the point of not daring to rebut. Who knew that he was such a mighty figure that hid his strength so well? Was this what they called 'swallowing the humiliation and bearing a heavy load'?

Speechless looked at the hundred-meter-tall giant in the basin. The giant was one of his opponents and on the surface, the giant was likely a very powerful opponent. He wished that the giant was not just outwardly strong but inwardly weak.

As Speechless was having some thoughts, he heard Liu Yu's words. He immediately turned around and asked, "You know that giant?"

Liu Yu seemed somewhat restrained when facing Speechless. He

slightly straightened his clothes before solemnly narrating to him the story of their meeting of the giant in Transcendence.

Seeing how Liu Yu was about to use his Liu-style story narration, which would change a simple matter into a very complex one, Feng Yuanlin immediately rebutted him and with a few words, he summed up the gatekeeping giant's identity.

Speechless was somewhat astonished as he said, "He was once a lowly gatekeeping dog, but now, he's the magnificent king of Transcendence. Interesting."

The gatekeeping giant was sitting in the basin and after resting with his eyes closed for a moment, he suddenly opened his eyes, as though he had turned impatient. He suddenly stood up and surveyed the spectators around the basin. He said with a roar,

"Where's the Celestial King and Infernal King? Get your asses down here and die!"

The gatekeeping giant roared like rolling thunder. It was so loud that the crowd could not help but cover their ears.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes flashed a cold beam of light. He never liked the giant from the very beginning. Now, he was even more irked by him. Shi Xiaobai took a step forward and was about to jump into the basin.

However, there was a person who took one step before him.

Speechless' back faced Shi Xiaobai and company. With a very cool and graceful manner, he walked towards the basin and said, "Sorry Shi Xiaobai. This Emperor forgot to tell you something. Actually, This Emperor is the Celestial King. It seems This Emperor will definitely win our bet. Haha!"

Speechless jumped into the grounds with a laugh!

At that moment, he felt very cool. The timing he chose to reveal his identity could be said to be perfect!

Speechless was feeling satisfied as he turned around, hoping to see Shi Xiaobai looking flustered.

But when he turned his head, he was given a shock. That was because Shi Xiaobai had appeared behind him. Just like him, he had jumped in.

Speechless said in surprise, "Why did you follow?"

Shi Xiaobai gave Speechless a complicated look and sighed. He said, "Sorry about that. This King forgot to tell you that This King is actually the Infernal King..."

...

Chapter 426: Does The Naked Infernal Queen Look Good?

"Sorry about that. This King forgot to tell you that This King is actually the Infernal King..."

Shi Xiaobai sighed while having mixed feelings. He never expected that Speechless would be the Celestial King.

What was he to do now?

If he wanted to complete the Absolute Choice's mission, he needed to kill the Celestial King, but the Celestial King was Speechless, who was a friend and the silver-haired girl's brother. He also seemed to be related to Mu Yuesheng, so how could he possibly kill him?

But if he did not kill him, in the event the Absolute Choice failed...

Shi Xiaobai immediately began to have a headache.

Speechless was also feeling mixed feelings. He said with a dry laugh, "Why didn't you fucking say so earlier. This is somewhat embarrassing."

Speechless originally thought he had been cool. To be the Celestial King despite being a trial-taker was something pretty cool

when said out loud. Furthermore, he had just 'tricked' Shi Xiaobai to enter a bet he was bound to lose. He had perfectly grasped the opportunity to reveal his identity. Supposedly, Shi Xiaobai should have been extremely angry and shock everyone else. It would have been a great act of posturing.

But he never expected that Shi Xiaobai was the Infernal King!

Shi Xiaobai was the supreme existence in the Infernal domain, the Infernal domain that stood by his word!

Shi Xiaobai was the Infernal King who had the most beautiful Infernal Queen!

Shi Xiaobai was the Infernal King who he was once envious and jealous of!

And looking back at himself, as Celestial King, not only did he have to shoulder the blame of losing the Celestial Jade, instigating the war, burning the Transcendence Holy Tree and all sorts of blames, he was also not the strongest person in name, and he wasn't a ruler with any power.

Fuck, it would be harmless if there wasn't any comparison.

Speechless immediately felt that his role as Celestial King and Shi Xiaobai's role as Infernal King were like night and day.

Shi Xiaobai seemed to be telling him—You think you are cool?

That doesn't exist!

Speechless felt very upset.

Speechless fell silent for a long while before he said in a hoarse manner, "It's said that the Infernal Queen is the most beautiful person in the world. Is the Infernal Queen beautiful?"

Shi Xiaobai was racking his head about the problem with the Absolute Choice, so when he heard this strange question, he was momentarily unsure of the answer. He could only give a vague answer, "Probably?"

Speechless immediately said with a hoarse voice, "Then...does the naked Infernal Queen look good?"

Shi Xiaobai was appalled. What sort of question was that?

However, Shi Xiaobai's mind could not help but flash the scene of the naked Infernal Queen. To be honest, to say that she did not look good was something unconscionable. Shi Xiaobai always felt that he was a person with a 'conscience', so he nodded and said, "Not bad."

"Oh my!"

Speechless held his chest and uttered a strange scream. His expression was one of utter pitifulness.

Speechless felt like he had received 10,000 damage. Why was he the king of blame, while Shi Xiaobai was the king of good fortune. He had to face seven old fools every day, while Shi Xiaobai could face the naked Infernal Queen every night?

"Shi Xiaobai, This Emperor will definitely not show any mercy. Prepare to get beaten up by This Emperor!"

Speechless put down some smack talk as he silently turned and walked to the corner of a wall. He felt like he had received such a huge shock that he needed to rest his mind.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat flabbergasted. He found Speechless weird. Not only were his questions weird, his reaction was also very weird.

"Weirdo."

Shi Xiaobai came out with such a conclusion before he began racking his brains again.

...

Above the basin, Sunless and company were equally feeling complicated.

Feng Yuanlin said with a dry chuckle, "To be honest, I have

always been looking forward to Boss Shi Xiaobai's battle with Speechless, but who knew it would be under such circumstances."

Liu Yu muttered to himself, "Shi Xiaobai is made the Infernal King, while Speechless is made the Celestial King. It looks like it's not a coincidence or mistake, but because they were chosen. But by who? Indeed, the two of them were the chosen ones?"

Pulp Farmer said with a heavy voice, "This is a life-and-death battle. Victory can only be determined only through death. What will the two do?"

Mu Yuesheng said with a frown, "The two of them wouldn't...really fight to the death, right?"

Sunless stared at Shi Xiaobai as her eyes flashed with a look of worry.

The silver-haired girl swung her gaze between Shi Xiaobai and Speechless. Her eyes were filled with anxiety and fear.

...

As the new Transcendent king, the gatekeeping giant had even more complicated feelings. He never expected that the human that defeated his father, Leonis, in the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament was the Infernal King that pretended to be a Braveheart!

"Shameless Infernal King. You pretended to be a Braveheart to become the tournament's champion and make the Transcendents think that the race of the Transcendents is not the strongest race in the world. What a sinister plot! You have to die today. This King will make you die a horrible death!"

The gatekeeping giant bellowed angrily!

If not for Shi Xiaobai, his father, Leonis, would not have been defeated. The faith of the Transcendents would not be questioned. They would not be in a hurry to prove the bloodline of the Transcendents and Leonis would not have died. The Transcendence Holy Tree would also not be destroyed by the sinister Celestial King...

If Shi Xiaobai did not appear, the gears of fate would not have turned towards such a tragic end!

Everything was Shi Xiaobai's fault!

And the human who called himself Shi Xiaobai was the disguise of the Infernal King!

This was a grudge added over an older grudge. The giant was extremely infuriated!

There were more and more Transcendents gathered above the basin as they looked at Shi Xiaobai. They recalled everything that had happened at the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament. After

recalling the story that King Leonis exploded to his death due to the internal injuries left behind from that battle, their angry emotions could no longer be curbed!

"Shameless Infernal King!"

"The Infernal King and Celestial King are fucking bastards!"

"My heavens, how can there be such an insidious Infernal King!?"

The Transcendents angrily voiced their grievances. And the Infernals that were present naturally could not tolerate the Transcendents scolding their king. They immediately scolded back angrily.

The scene immediately turned into a din as both sides almost began to fight!

"Silence!"

Shi Xiaobai shouted towards the Infernal domain group. The Infernals hurriedly shut their mouths and their stunning discipline showed once again.

Shi Xiaobai turned to look at the Transcendents and said loudly, "The matter isn't as you imagined. After this life-and-death battle is over, This King will find a time to explain it to all of you. This matter...is very complicated."

The matter was indeed very complicated. Shi Xiaobai found it very difficult to explain it. He also did not expect that he would suddenly go from being a Braveheart to the Infernal King.

Everything did seem like a shameless plot, but it was not the case.

However, the giant clearly would not believe him. He said with a sneer, "After the life-and-death battle is over, you will be a corpse. No, you wouldn't even have a corpse left."

Shi Xiaobai could only give a helpless smile. He did not speak another word because even if there wasn't a misunderstanding, the Transcendents would hate him greatly after the life-and-death battle because if nothing surprising happened, the giant would definitely die in battle.

Shi Xiaobai was feeling very complicated.

A battle that used death to determine the outcome was supposed to be simple and brutal.

But now, it would be a complex life-and-death battle.

Chapter 427: Posturing Before The Battle

Noon was quickly approaching. Soon, the life-and-death battle between the three kings would begin. The thirty thousand members of audience had already reached and they had circled above the basin. It was quite an amazing scene.

And in the basin, the three kings were standing at each corner of the basin, forming a triangular formation. A repressed atmosphere filled the entire basin as the gatekeeping giant exuded a killing intent that made the audience above the basin feel suffocated.

At that moment, someone in the audience yelled.

"Ah, quick look. What is the Celestial King doing!?"

The yell made many surrounding spectators involuntarily turn their heads to look at Speechless.

They saw Speechless's hands behind his back. From the front, it looked like he was making a cool pose of only having his hands behind his back, but from the back, keen-eyed spectators saw a strange scene.

Speechless' hands were crossed and there was a strong rope that tied them together!

In the basin, there was no one else other than the three kings. Furthermore, the distance between the three kings was quite

considerable. Who could have tied the Celestial King's hands together?

"The Celestial King is tying up himself!"

"What is going on? Why did the Celestial King tie his own hands? Could it be a warm-up before the battle?"

"It can't be? How can there be such a strange warm-up before the battle?"

The audience began buzzing. Pulp Farmer and the other two looked at each other and discussed about Speechless's actions. Sunless only stared in Shi Xiaobai's direction. She was completely unconcerned with the development on Speechless's side. As for the silver-haired girl and Mu Yuesheng, they spontaneously rolled their eyes at that moment.

Shi Xiaobai and the giant heard the audience's discussion as they turned to look at Speechless.

The giant asked in a deep voice, "Despicable Celestial King, what games are you playing now?"

The giant found himself too naive so in the face of the shameless Infernal King and the despicable Celestial King, he needed to constantly increase vigilance and intelligence or it was very likely he would be deceived.

Now, even a game of tying hands came out.

Was this playing to the gallery? Or was it to make him underestimate his opponent?

Speechless was very pleased that everyone's eyes were on him. The corner of his lips curled up slightly and his eyes looked on with disdain. In an invincible and lonely looking pose, he said, "From This King's point of view, defeating the both of you doesn't require hands."

This was Speechless's answer as to why he tied his two hands.

It had to be said that his answer was rendering everyone speechless.

The Infernal and Transcendent audience went into an uproar as they found the Celestial King extremely arrogant to dare make such a bold statement and belittle their kings.

On the Celestial domain side, the members of the audience had changes in expression. They knew that the Celestial King was very strong, so strong that he could crush Field Marshal Awesomo, but the Infernal King and the new Transcendent King were not weak either. Why the heck was he not using both hands!?

The silver-haired girl and Mu Yuesheng both revealed disdainful looks, giving "I knew it" expressions.

Feng Yuanlin's eyes shimmered with a look of enlightenment, as he shouted, "Holy crap, how could I have forgotten it. Posturing before battles is a hallmark of Speechless, right?"

Liu Yu smacked his lips and said, "Posturing before battles is indeed Speechless's famous habit, but who knew that he would dare to do so against the giant and Shi Xiaobai."

Pulp Farmer said in a deep voice, "Isn't this posturing a bit too much? Although Speechless is considered the number one youth in China, with unfathomable strength, Shi Xiaobai doesn't seem much weaker than him, right? By tying his own hands, he might be biting off more than he can chew."

In the basin, the giant produced a deafening laughter, "You will pay a bitter price for your arrogance."

On the other hand, Shi Xiaobai remained calm. He knew that Speechless was not a brainless, arrogant person. Speechless definitely had a way to fight if he said that he did not need his hands.

However, the posturing was done in a very stiff manner.

At that moment, the giant suddenly turned his head and said to a spot above the basin, "Moya, throw that thing over!"

Everyone's attention was immediately diverted by the giant's words.

Moya, who was on the edge of the basin, responded, "Your Majesty, the Infernal King is clearly a shameless wretch. Are you really going to do it?"

The giant angrily said, "Cut the crap, throw the thing over!"

Just as the giant's words faded, a black object was thrown towards the sky and landed inside the basin.

Everyone stared with widened eyes as they tried to discern the black object.

What was the object the giant got Moya to throw over? What did it have to do with the Infernal King?

Under the blinding sunlight, they finally managed to discern the black object's true shape. It was a black sword.

The black sword not only had a black blade, even its surroundings were lingering with a faint black mist. It was like ghosts of darkness were swirling around it as they continuously exuded a daunting cold aura in the burning sunlight.

The black sword spun in mid-air before landing on the ground. With a final boom, it stabbed into the ground in front of Shi Xiaobai.

"This is your Infernal Sword."

The giant said coldly, "For some reason, this sword had appeared in Transcendence, but it is definitely not stolen by the Transcendents. Now, This King will return the Infernal Sword to you!"

Shi Xiaobai knew that the Infernal Sword was in Transcendence, but he never expected that the giant would voluntarily return it. What was he up to?

Shi Xiaobai could not help but wonder aloud, "Never knew that you would be so honest."

"Honest?"

The giant said with a sneer, "Shameless Infernal King, rumors say that with the Infernal Sword in hand, your strength will be enhanced to a whole new level. This King just wants to beat you into meat pulp when you are in your strongest state so as to prove the strength of the Transcendents."

Even if the giant knew that Shi Xiaobai was the shameless Infernal King who pretended to be a Braveheart, he had decided to go according to plan and return the Infernal Sword. He was confident that he could defeat the Infernal King in his strongest state. Furthermore, only by defeating the Infernal King in his strongest state was it fun enough!

This was the confidence of the strong!

"This is how the strong fucking posture!"

Feng Yuanlin said with mixed emotions, "First, it's Speechless tying his own hands. Next, it's the new Transcendent king returning the Infernal Sword. Their posturing methods seem to come from the same school. They both render people speechless, but you can't help but admire their confidence. It gives people the feeling that the strong should be like that!"

When Liu Yu and Pulp Farmer heard this, they felt the same way and nodded.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. He never expected that after Speechless finished posturing, the giant would also posture. However, Shi Xiaobai had no choice but to agree that the giant's posturing was done very well. To return the Infernal Sword to his hand was such an altruistic act.

Shi Xiaobai reached out his hand and held the Infernal Sword. As he sensed the surging power in the Infernal Sword, he could not help but smile delightfully.

It was the real Infernal Sword!

It was like a cooked duck was sent right to his mouth!

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings and struggled. There were

a bit too many people, but he could not resist it!

"Didn't eat breakfast. Kind of hungry."

Shi Xiaobai pretended to mutter to himself as he could not help but gulp.

Everyone was startled and was unsure what Shi Xiaobai meant by suddenly shouting that he was hungry. Only Speechless's eyes lit up slightly, but immediately, his eyes flashed with a look of disbelief.

And at the next moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly raised the Infernal Sword and inserted it vertically into his mouth!

"Ah!?"

Everyone screamed!

However, they soon saw the Infernal Sword with its swirling black aura enter straight into Shi Xiaobai's throat. It was inserted completely in one move and finally, Shi Xiaobai closed his mouth and swallowed the entire sword!

"Burp~"

Shi Xiaobai could not help but burp.

At that moment, there was complete silence.

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt somewhat embarrassed, but it was mostly delight. The Infernal Sword was a true holy item. The nutritional value was on the same level as the Celestial Jade and Transcendent fruit. Now, by eating the Infernal Sword, it would definitely be of help in the upcoming battle. Furthermore, he could not help but burp. This was delightful news for Shi Xiaobai, who had eaten countless 'foods' but remained unsatiated.

He was finally satiated!

But to the thirty thousand spectators, this scene was ridiculous.

"I suspect that I might have a fake pair of eyes."

"I suspect that that might be a fake Infernal Sword."

"I suspect that is the Infernal King's trick."

"I suspect..."

Feng Yuanlin looked in shock at his two other partners and said, "What do you think of that?"

Liu Yu waved his whisk and said, "This Penniless Priest suspects that Shi Xiaobai is not eating an Infernal Sword but posturing."

Pulp Farmer said helplessly, "There is no need to suspect. In terms of posturing, I only believe in Shi Xiaobai."

Feng Yuanlin exclaimed, "This is posturing using his life!?"

Shi Xiaobai obviously wasn't posturing. You might not believe it if it was said. He was eating ice-cream and the Infernal Sword had already melted into his stomach.

That feeling was marvelous.

"It's about time. Let's begin?" Shi Xiaobai asked.

Shi Xiaobai felt that it was about time. It was time to do battle and it could not be delayed any further.

Because...if the battle did not begin, readers would begin cursing.

...

Chapter 428: Make Your Move!

With the thirty thousand spectators having arrived and the three kings finished with their methods of posturing, the life-and-death battle between the three kings naturally had to begin.

The beginning of the fight often required a signal, but this life-and-death battle did not have any referees. As this was a battle where death determined the outcome, any means were permitted, so there was no need for a referee.

Without a referee announcing the start, the beginning of the fight would be grasped by the three kings themselves.

And Shi Xiaobai's words of 'It's about time. Let's begin?' was actually the signal to begin fighting.

The audience quickly fell silent and waited with bated breaths.

The giant gave his answer through his actions. He straightened his body and charged out like a cheetah!

Unlike Shi Xiaobai and Speechless, the motivation behind the giant's participation in the life-and-death battle was not to end the war, but to vent his anger and seek revenge. He originally hated the Celestial King for burning the Transcendence Holy Tree, but now, he hated the Infernal King that disguised himself as a Braveheart which 'caused the death' of Leonis. The double hatred he felt made him eager to tear apart the two enemies in front of him!

When the massive body that was a hundred-meters-tall ran, it was like a raging tsunami. However, the speed at which the giant charged was amazing. His massive body moved at a startling speed, but it had a strange lightness to it. It was as though the heavy body wasn't running on the ground, but as though his footsteps were landing on air!

When the giant ran, the land did not quake. There was no sound of footsteps like when he previously walked from the distance. There was only the resonating sound of the void tearing. His speed was fast despite its massive body, and in a blink of an eye, it had traversed more than ten kilometers! He appeared in front of Speechless!

The giant's first target was Speechless!

"Go to hell, despicable Celestial King!"

The giant leaped up and he arched his right leg like a lance that was about to strike. However, his leg that was dozens of meters in diameter did not look like a lance but a gigantic pillar that could hold up the skies!

And this gigantic pillar flew into the sky and covered Speechless's head before crashing down!

At that instant, the Celestials watched in horror because the giant's speed was too fast. From the moment he began running, leaping and then thrust his foot out in the sky, it all happened in a

blink of an eye. Their Celestial King did not seem to react in time, as though he was sillily standing in place.

The Celestial King did not dodge, and at that moment, it was already too late to dodge!

"Dodge!"

There were Celestials that shouted in panic. They prayed in their hearts for a miracle that the Celestial King would be able to dodge the terrifying strike that seemed to cover several hundred square meters in area at the last moment.

But a miracle did not happen. The Celestial King remained in his spot even when the foot was about three meters away from him.

A smile curled on Speechless's lips. When the giant's smelly foot was three meters above his head, he could not even be bothered to look up. Instead, his tying of his hands had screwed him up. He had no way to pinch his nose and could only painfully endure the stench from the smelly foot.

As for dodging?

There was no need for that!

Speechless suddenly raised his right foot and kicked out towards the sky!

At that moment, everyone stared with widened eyes. Even Shi Xiaobai, who was in the distance widened his eyes slightly!

There was no way for you to imagine such a strange scene, but it really happened!

A right foot as slender as a girl's kicked out towards the sky.

A gigantic foot that could be comparable to a house came crashing down from the sky.

They met at a particular point, like a gigantic boulder smashing on a slender willow. But the outcome wasn't the boulder crushing the willow. Instead...

"A stalemate!?"

"My heavens, how is that possible!?"

Yes, it was a stalemate. When the two feet collided, there was a boom as loud as thunder. After that, the scene seemed like a fixed frame. The massive body of the giant was fixed in mid-air, and what smashed into that strike, to the point of holding up the massive body, was a slender right leg.

While Speechless used one foot to hold up the giant's massive body, his expression looked relaxed. It was as though the thing

crushing down on his foot was an empty piece of tofu.

The Celestials fell into a daze for a moment before they cheered loudly. They recalled the battle when the Celestial King fought Field Marshal Awesomo. The Celestial King was just like he was now. Every time, he would use an unbelievable method to nullify Field Marshal Awesomo's attacks, causing his power to be useless. Not a single move could trouble the Celestial King!

The giant angrily roared as his body bent slightly. He sent a strong downward force, but he was unable to crush the ant-like existence beneath him. He was unable to snap the slender leg.

But the giant did not continue on this matter. After a short attempt, he squatted and jumped ten kilometers back.

"Despicable Celestial King, what other tricks are you up to now?"

The giant said angrily. From his point of view, the Celestial King's physical toughness was something that he could leave in the dust, but he felt like he had struck the ground when facing the slender leg. There was no way for him to crush it any lower.

The despicable Celestial King must have used some unknown trick or it was impossible for him to accomplish such a feat!

Speechless remained silent while smiling. Putting his right foot down, he said with a chuckle, "It's time for This King to make his move?"

The giant immediately said with a sneer, "Make your move!"

He was unable to figure out what strange technique Speechless used to defend against his attack, but he was confident that regardless of his techniques, there was no way Speechless could break his defense!

The giant began preparing to withstand the full power of Speechless's attack.

The audience waited with bated breaths for the Celestial King and the giant to begin their second round of battle.

However, the next moment was quite astounding. Speechless raised his right foot and swept in front of him. Suddenly, a tornado stirred, but it was no ordinary wind, but a tornado with blade beams dancing in them!

The tornado swept across the land and immediately left behind blade scratches in its wake. The rocks in the way were all diced into sand, which showed how sharp the blades were in the tornado!

Speechless' production of a blade storm with a single kick could be said to be an astounding technique, but what was more shocking was the direction in which the tornado was heading!

The tornado was not rolling towards the giant, but to the other

end of the triangle where Shi Xiaobai was!

The giant, who was already ready in defense, was immediately stunned. Was he fucking pulling his leg?

The giant could only roar angrily and vent his grievance.

A smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips. Thankfully, Speechless had attacked him or he was prepared to forcefully interrupt the duel between Speechless and the giant.

Don't forget, this was not a duel of king against king.

But a battle royale between three kings!

Chapter 429: Everything Was Done By Me

Only when Speechless sent a kick at Shi Xiaobai did the crowd suddenly recall that this was a battle royale between three kings, and not a duel between two people where they exchanged blows!

The storm surged as boulders flew into the sky and were diced into sand. The sharp blade storms headed straight for Shi Xiaobai!

The tornado's speed was not as fast as lightning, but it was extremely expansive. Even if someone were to react in time, they would find it difficult to dodge it completely. However, to Shi Xiaobai, whose Crab Steps reached a very high level of attainment, the storm from the kick was too slow. He could easily dodge it.

However, Speechless's kick that had managed to withstand the giant made Shi Xiaobai's fighting spirit boil over!

He did not know how Speechless had done it, but he knew that his physical toughness was still not sufficient to withstand the giant's massive body.

Regardless of how Speechless had done it, he was inferior to him in this point.

However, Shi Xiaobai similarly had things that Speechless could not accomplish!

Without dodging or moving even one bit, Shi Xiaobai allowed the

tornado to hit him amid the cries of the crowd.

Shi Xiaobai bathed in the sharp blade storm!

"Clang! Clang! Clang! Clang..."

The incessant sound of blades hitting metal echoed as the wrinkles seemed to appear in the air. Shi Xiaobai was situated in the wrinkles as countless blades struck his body!

Shi Xiaobai grinned. After eating the three holy items, his Body of the Heretic King had reached the pinnacle of the third stage and was just short of breaking through to the fourth stage. The normal power of the blades could not deal any damage to him!

But just this alone wasn't sufficient to compare with Speechless's holding up the giant with one leg. That was because Speechless definitely had the ability to remain unharmed in the blade storm.

Shi Xiaobai needed to do something that Speechless could not do.

With an idea flashing in his mind, he opened his mouth!

Immediately, a faltering scene happened. The spiraling tornado seemed to hit a black hole and was completely sucked into Shi Xiaobai's throat!

Shi Xiaobai was astonished as well and never expected that he

would truly succeed. His Power of Taotie was even able to consume wind and it tasted like he was drinking soy bean milk.

Speechless smacked his forehead and cursed, "Your mom's a whore. When it comes to having fun, you are the best at it."

The audience was stunned. The Celestial King had used his foot to hold up the giant, but the Infernal King immediately returned tit for tat. He used his mouth to eat the storm. This was clearly a battle between fucking gods.

...

After Shi Xiaobai completely devoured the tornado, there was already complete silence.

Speechless said with smirk, "It's your turn to make a move."

Etiquette required reciprocity. With the giant and Speechless attacking one after another, it was obviously Shi Xiaobai's turn.

Although the giant was in a hurry to rip apart his two enemies, his dignity as a mighty warrior ensured that he had to accept such a turn-based battle. However, after the Infernal King made his move, he would no longer hold back!

It was Shi Xiaobai's turn but it was not as simple as just producing an attack.

After Speechless accepted the giant's attack and attacked Shi Xiaobai, it was clear what his intentions were—he wanted to fight against two!

And at that very moment, Shi Xiaobai's attitude was very important. If he attacked Speechless, it would be silently accepting Speechless's intentions of fighting two people alone. If he were to attack the giant, the situation would become even more chaotic.

This was a battle royale between three kings.

In a duel between two people, it was a fight to determine who was stronger. However, in a battle royale between three, there was the possibility of cooperating to defeat one person first!

This was why the three kings had to each produce a strike. It was not a simple attack but to express their attitudes!

Now, it was time for Shi Xiaobai to express his attitude towards the battle royale.

A black-and-white sword appeared in Shi Xiaobai's hand out of thin air.

"This King's attitude?"

Shi Xiaobai grinned and suddenly shouted, "Is there a need to

ask!?"

With both hands on the sword, he suddenly split them apart. The black-and-white sword separated and became two swords. One was deep black while the other was pure white!

With one sword in each hand, Shi Xiaobai slashed in two directions!

"Kun-Stewing Wok!"

A fiery force surged up from the ground, like a boiling hot wok was producing hot steam. The bubbles spread out like a gigantic snake that struck at the giant!

"Two Peng Grills!"

A cross-shaped flare tore apart in the sky. It was more blinding than the sun and its heat caused the air to combust into black smoke. There was bubbling lava that fell from the sky, as it rained down on Speechless like a black and red waterfall!

"This King obviously wants to fight two alone!"

Shi Xiaobai's two strikes had expressed his attitude!

Speechless clearly was not surprised by Shi Xiaobai's choice. With a smile, he looked up slightly!

"Frost Dragon's Breath!"

A snow-white frost beam suddenly shot out from Speechless's mouth and blasted straight at the lava sword intent!

When the frost beam and the lava collided, it immediately merged together while issuing sizzling sounds like boiling water. It seemed like the ice had melted, but it also seemed like the flames were extinguished. The snow-white and blackish-red colors merged together into a light pink color before it transformed into snowflakes or rain that fell from the sky.

On the other side, the giant stabbed his fists into the ground. With a loud roar, he lifted up the slab of ground. Although the boiling hot steam reached the giant's hands, he remained unaffected. Suddenly, he forcefully tore the slab of earth in his hands into two. The two pieces were hurled at Shi Xiaobai and Speechless!

The giant similarly expressed his attitude. He wanted to fight the two alone!

The audience watched in a daze as the two slabs of earth that the giant threw were slashed into fragments by the Infernal King, and kicked flying by the Celestial King. They found the scene in front of them utterly ridiculous. The battle had long exceeded their expectations.

And what was even more unbelievable was that the battle had yet

to truly begin!

The few moves had allowed the three kings to express their intentions!

Liu Yu said with some regret, "This Penniless Priest has seen battle royales between three people before. They would try their best to keep a low profile and conceal their true strength so as to appear weak. They would then ally with others to get rid of the stronger party before baring their fangs. But for Shi Xiaobai and company, they only wish they could attract even more aggro. They yearn to fight two alone. This is the first time This Penniless Priest is seeing such a thing. This Penniless Priest has nothing he can say about it."

Pulp Farmer's face was covered in shock as he muttered, "I once thought I was one of the cream of the crop among the younger generation, but compared to Speechless and Shi Xiaobai, I'm nothing at all. They...are no longer existences on this level. The battle royale between the three kings had only just begun, but why are my knees already weak?"

Feng Yuanlin stared with widened eyes and said, "Don't ask me why I'm watching the battle kneeling down. When the battle royale really begins, I think I can sprawl on the ground."

The eyes of Mu Yuesheng and the silver-haired girl were filled with worry. The first round was only to express their attitudes, but it already looked like a battle between gods. What would happen when the battle royale began?

Even Sunless could not help but frown.

The battle royale had yet to truly begin.

The three kings had only attacked from a distance to express their attitudes.

And now, they all expressed their intentions of fighting two alone. There was no room for cooperation. It meant that the battle that followed would be a true battle royale.

No one knew who the other two opponents would attack next!

The three kings were eager to begin. They scanned their two opponents with eyes that seemed to have detected their prey. Their bodies simultaneously leaned forward, with the possibility of them charging forward at any moment. They were like sharp swords that were about to be unsheathed, with blades pointed at the enemy!

The true battle was about to begin!

"Could you stop for a moment?"

Suddenly, a soft and emotionless voice which sounded like flowing water resounded throughout the basin from a corner.

The three kings that were ready to charge forward in a serious battle came to a halt as they looked in the same direction in astonishment!

There, in the middle of their triangular positions, a figure had suddenly appeared out of thin air.

The figure was clearly the owner of the voice that suddenly sounded.

The audience quieted down and looked in disbelief at the figure that had said, "Can you stop for a moment".

Who was this?

How did the person appear undetected in the basin and in the middle of the triangle?

Shi Xiaobai happened to be facing directly in front of the figure.

The person was a young boy dressed in loose white robes. He had resplendent golden hair that dazzled like the rays of the sun. His skin was white and supple. He looked like he was twelve or thirteen years old, and his facial features were exquisite and good-looking. He could be considered an adonis, but if one changed his short golden hair into long golden hair, one would mistake him for a pubescent young beauty.

The white-robed blond youth's appearance and facial features

resembled the sunlight at dawn. He was radiant and enchanting.

On careful look, one would discover that his eyes and expression was surprisingly cold. It was cold like a frozen lake in the dead of winter. It was like a pure white snowflake that didn't have any other colors that made it seem impure. It was an emotionless coldness.

"Who are you?" Shi Xiaobai asked.

That was the question everyone present wanted to know. Who was this blond youth that suddenly appeared out of thin air and said "Could you stop for a moment".

"I'm Dawn Li."

The blond youth reported his name in a deadpan manner. His tone did not show any emotion, as though he was a machine reporting some numbers. Without stopping, he said, "The Infernal Sword was stolen by me. The Celestial Jade was stolen by me. The Transcendence Holy Tree was burnt down by me. The entire war was instigated by me. Everything was done by me. So, seek revenge against me."

When this was said, everyone was stunned.

The thirty thousand spectators could not even react because the sentence contained too much information.

As for Speechless, he felt like lightning had struck him. He looked dumbfounded as he remained stupefied.

Pulp Farmer and company were equally stupefied.

Liu Yu stiffly turned his head and looked at the rest beside him. Stiffly, he opened his mouth and asked, "Uh, if This Penniless Priest did not remember wrongly... Isn't the Hero King's name Dawn Li?"

...

Chapter 430: Meaning Of My Existence

Liu Yu stiffly turned his head and looked at the rest beside him. Stiffly, he opened his mouth and asked, "Uh, if This Penniless Priest did not remember wrongly... Isn't the Hero King's name Dawn Li?"

It was only a question, but Liu Yu's tone was filled with astonished affirmation.

Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin sluggishly nodded. The famous historical figure who appeared numerous times in their primary and secondary school education was honored by having the name, Hero King. However, no one would forget his name.

However, the name 'Dawn Li', which seemed feminine, was not a name people liked to mention. There was a feeling that it was a strange 'stain' on the Hero King, who had been a hero for an entire lifetime and lead a magnificent life.

But it was because of this that his name left a deep impression on people.

The man, who began the age of heroes, possessed a feminine name. It was Dawn Li.

"The Hero King stole the Celestial Jade and sent it to the Infernal King. He then stole the Infernal Sword and gave it to Leonis. He then pretended to be the Celestial King to burn down the Transcendence Holy Tree and instigated the war. At the peak of

the war, he appeared and revealed everything, causing the three kings to angrily attack him. Finally, he killed the three kings alone."

Liu Yu repeated the summary of that legendary story that was written in the textbooks. It was done in a stiff tone before he exclaimed in horror, "Other than Leonis being replaced by a new king, as well as the life-and-death battle between the three kings being different from that legendary story, everything else is the same. This Penniless Priest originally believed that it was a coincidence or that it was set up by the assessment program, but...why would the Hero King appear!?"

Liu Yu, who was always sharp-witted, was even beginning to stutter. The appearance of the Hero King shocked him beyond his senses.

"Fake."

Sunless, who had been focusing on Shi Xiaobai, revealed an indifferent calmness. She said in an unperturbed manner, "The Hero King is also a designation."

That sentence seemed to reveal a heaven's secret.

Everyone was jolted awake.

Since Shi Xiaobai and Speechless could be designated as the Infernal King and Celestial King respectively, and the assessment

program was able to repeat the instigation of the war of the three domains, why couldn't the assessment program 'create' a fake Hero King, making this 'repeated' story appear more reasonable?

This was a fake Hero King.

It could only be a fake Hero King.

The reason was the real Hero King had died three thousand years ago before becoming an eternal legend.

Liu Yu realized this point and seemed enlightened. A bitter smile suffused across his lips. "To think that This Penniless Priest needed a reminder to figure out such a simple logic. Indeed, being concerned only makes you flustered. The Hero King's name has deep influences on people of our age. However, why would the assessment program do this? Why did it create a fake Hero King and repeat a legendary story? Now, with the story reaching this stage, what follows would be..."

When Liu Yu muttered to that point, he suddenly felt like he was struck by lightning. His face suddenly turned pale as his lips quivered while saying, "When the story reaches this point, what follows would be...the Hero King killing the three kings!"

"Could it be...that this is the goal of the assessment program?"

...

In the basin.

Speechless felt as though he had been struck by a thunderbolt. He stood stupefied in his spot. Speechless had recognized the blond youth's identity before needing to know his name. The youth's white robe that was embroidered with violet stock and that resplendent blond hair, as well as that handsome face was sufficient.

That was the Hero King in his youth. His appearance looked identical to the ancient drawing that had been passed down for three thousand years.

The existence which he was forced to imitate from a young age, it was like a shadow that shrouded him, like a nightmare that rooted in his reality. The words Speechless had heard the most in his life was 'Hero King'.

"Child, the Hero King did it in this manner, so you should do it in this manner too."

"Speechless, you didn't do this perfectly. If it was the Hero King..."

"You can't do it? Then force yourself to do it. The Hero King was able to do it, so you have to be able to do it!"

"Why is your hair not blond? Should you dye it? The Hero King's hair was blond."

"What are you so proud of? You are still inferior. At your age, the Hero King had already..."

"Child, everyone knows that the Hero King remained single his entire life, nor did he leave behind any male descendants. Our Li family's ancestors gave birth to the Hero King. Some people say that our Li family doesn't have the bloodline of the Hero King. That is ridiculous talk. The Hero King is a descendant of our Li family and that should be made known! Therefore, Speechless, you must prove to everyone that if our Li family was able to produce the first Hero King, it means that we can definitely produce a second."

"..."

Familiar but also seemingly unfamiliar voices resounded in his head like the chants of the devil. It sounded like the gnashing of teeth by wild beasts in the night.

Speechless' eyes glazed over as his mind went blank.

The Hero King had appeared.

He had appeared in front of him.

That man he had been attempting to imitate for more than ten years had appeared in his world.

How was this possible?

"Impossible..."

Speechless muttered to himself as he suddenly stared with widened eyes, as though he woke up from a stupor.

"Yes, it's impossible!"

Speechless' glazed eyes gradually had its luster restored. He looked at the blond youth and said with a sneer, "You are fake. You are a fake existence!"

Speechless figured the 'truth' behind the matter. The real Hero King had died a long time ago. The blond youth in front of him might have the same looks, name, and plot connivance as the Hero King, but it was a fake existence. It was an imitation created to imitate the Hero King!

The blond heard Speechless and turned his head slightly. He said in a deadpan manner, "Just the opposite. You are the fake one. To be precise, everyone present is fake."

Speechless suffused a mocking smile as he said, "To the fake you, the real us are obviously fake."

When the blond youth heard this, he slowly shook his head and no longer said a word. It was as though he could not be bothered to comment on the issue. He surveyed the three kings and repeated

the words when he appeared, "The Infernal Sword was stolen by me. The Celestial Jade was stolen by me. The Transcendence Holy Tree was burnt down by me. The war was instigated by me. Everything was done by me. So, seek revenge against me."

When the giant heard this, his eyes flashed with a questioning look as though he was pondering if what was said was real.

Shi Xiaobai grinned as he gradually lifted his sword. The clever him had naturally already realized that the youth named Dawn Li was an imitation of the Hero King. But since it was an imitation, it could not be too weak. Since it was a mighty person, Shi Xiaobai had no reason to reject his provocation.

There was no need for a reason to fight a mighty person.

However, someone had made a move before Shi Xiaobai could even say something.

Speechless had already taken a step forward. His eyes were glimmering angrily. The cold smile along his lips was colder than the snow in the deep of winter.

"You can imitate that legend, but you shouldn't have let his imitation appear in front of me."

Speechless suffused a self-deprecating smile as he said, "Because as that man's imitation, I do not permit another similar existence."

Speechless turned his head to look at Shi Xiaobai and the giant. He said with a light laugh, "None of you make a move. He is mine. I need to prove myself...to be the most excellent imitation, because that is the meaning of my existence."

Chapter 431: I Hate You

To prove that he was the most excellent imitation because that was the meaning of his existence.

To the people in the know, like Mu Yuesheng and the silver-haired girl, the sentence was a depressing form of deprecating himself in a way that shot strange pangs through the hearts of people. It was also a compromise to the ironic fate he had. It was something pitiable and heart-wrenching.

That year, Speechless was only four years old. At a stunning pace, he broke through to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. His superpower was awoken and in that long but fleeting awakening dream, he dreamed the daily toil he had everyday from morning to night. It was one where he imitated the Hero King's day. He dreamed of the family members who constantly said the word Hero King, while giving him 'amiable' looks.

In Speechless's superpower awakening dream, he dreamed of a reality he wanted to escape from the most. It was a childhood that was void of joy and toys. All there existed was imitation after imitation.

After that, his superpower was awakened. It was a stunning S-class superpower. It was extremely rare in China, and he was immediately labeled as a prodigy.

However, his superpower was ironically called—Imitation.

For a boy who was arranged to imitate the life of another from his birth, the power he should have been proud of was still imitation. It was as though his life was being restrained by the gallows of 'imitation'.

But Imitation allowed him to become stronger. It was a strength that made him far surpass his peers, even to the point of him surpassing adults.

The ability to imitate made him become the most promising Li family descendant in three thousand years as the one who could become the second Hero King. He had become the unquestioned number one existence of the younger generation in China.

He did not know if he should hate or thank 'Imitation'.

However, he did not have the thoughts of rebelling against his family, fate or imitation. Hence, even though he grew up and gradually became more mentally mature, while his thoughts of becoming 'Speechless Li' and not someone else became even more intense, he still did not choose to rebel.

That was because Imitation gave him kind loved ones and a warm family. It gave him powerful strength and glorious fame. Imitation gave him too much that he could no longer return.

Speechless Li took the initiative to be partners with Imitation.

Therefore, Imitation became the meaning behind his existence.

Then, within the meaning of such an existence, what he could do was push imitation to its limits, which was—become that man's most excellent imitation.

Therefore, when an imitated Hero King appeared, it was an enemy to the meaning behind his existence.

It was not an ordinary enemy.

It was an enemy he had to personally defeat.

It was the best enemy to prove the meaning of his ironic existence.

...

"Shi Xiaobai, can I borrow your sword?"

Speechless requested as he looked sideways.

Shi Xiaobai was someone who was not in the know, nor did he know what sort of existence the fake Hero King was to Speechless. But the sharp him was able to sense the complicated emotions Speechless was having.

Without any hesitation, he remerged the black and white swords and precisely threw it at Speechless.

The Hero King might be a pretty good opponent, but Shi Xiaobai had no lack of opponents.

As for Speechless, he was a pretty good friend. Shi Xiaobai did not wish to lose any friends.

"Thank you."

Speechless apparently never expected Shi Xiaobai to be so straightforward as a warm smile suffused across his lips.

By lending the sword, it meant that Shi Xiaobai was temporarily handing the opponent over to him.

Speechless turned to look at the giant.

The giant gave an angry laugh before turning around to walk to the wall to sit down. He said with a sneer, "As you wish. This King will quietly watch a good show."

The giant had a massive body that did not match his agility. He also had a perceptive mind that was unlike his violent appearance.

He would not easily believe the words of the blond youth that suddenly appeared because the Celestial Fire could only be used through the teachings of the Celestial King. He could not believe the blond youth's words.

Therefore, the giant chose to take a wait-and-see attitude.

Speechless was very pleased with the giant's 'tactfulness'. He turned to look at the deadpan but apparently extremely patient blond youth. He said coldly, "Unsheathe your sword. Let me see how well you have imitated the sword techniques that he was best at during this period of time."

The blond youth remained deadpan. His exquisite facial features looked like they were set in stone. Other than his nose moving slightly because of his breathing, and the occasional blinking, there was no other additional changes.

"Your words are very strange."

The blond youth said in an emotionless tone, "As a fake NPC, your words have too much self-awareness. That is very strange. Furthermore, are you sure you want to fight one against one? You might have a chance if it was three against one. One against one would be a little too boring."

If those words were said by someone else, it would have been said in a scoffing or arrogant manner, but from the mouth of the blond youth, it was calm and slow, as though he was depicting an objective fact.

Speechless sneered as he suddenly raised his sword and slashed to his side!

"Sword with one's fingers—Three Thousand Li!"

A blue sword beam flashed like a jumping pixie. Speechless brandished the sword and slashed out as the sword beam suddenly appeared from one end of the blade into the distant rock cliff.

"Boom!"

The sword beam shattered, producing a diameter wide hole in the cliff surrounding the basin. It was impossible to see any end to the hole, as though the entirety of the thick stone cliff had been penetrated.

"Three Thousand Li Sword. It was a move created by that man when he was eight years old. The speed of the sword beam allows it to instantly behead the enemy at a distance of three thousand Li."

Speechless retracted his sword and said with a sneer, "What do you think of my imitation?"

The blond youth fell silent for a moment and suddenly reached his hand to his waist that did not have anything.

"Interesting."

As he said that, he gestured the motion of unsheathing a sword.

However, in the eyes of everyone, the blond youth seemed to be making the motions of holding a sword in his right hand, but there was nothing in it. It was as though he had pulled air out and that he was holding air.

Speechless pricked his eyebrows up slightly and said, "The sword that doesn't exist. I never expected that you could even imitate that sword."

The blond youth did not say a word. But when he finished the gesture of pulling the sword out, his aura had a drastic change. A second earlier, he was like still water in an ancient well, but at that moment, his eyes had an undetectable glimmer that seemed to rage like a tsunami.

The blond youth suddenly made a slashing action!

There was no sword in his hand, but when he made the slash, a sharp sword beam sparkled brightly like a thunderbolt during a sunny day. The surging sword intent that emanated out could be felt even by the most ordinary spectators above the basin.

The sword intent only had bloodlust to it. It was the purest of killing intents.

And at the same time, Speechless made a slashing motion as well. His actions were identical to the blond youth!

"Boom!"

Two sword beams that could not be seen by the naked eye clashed in mid-air. With a deafening blast, they exploded into pieces like fireworks. The sword beams were like mirror images and none was stronger than the other.

"Hundred-eighty Thousand Li Sword."

A smile that could not be distinguished as mockery or self-deprecating suffused across Speechless's mouth. He said, "At the age of nine, that man had enhanced the sword move he created at the age of eight to a brand new level. The distance of the sword strike went from 3000 Li to 180,000 Li. What seems like a sixty-fold increase is actually a difficulty of six hundred or even six thousand-fold. That man used the insights he gained from creating that one move to be ranked as one of the top ten Sword Masters in the world at the age of nine. As for me, in order to learn it by the age of nine, I didn't get to sleep for an entire month. When I finally managed to master it, all I got was—'Far from the mark. That man created it himself, but all you did was imitate it. You should have learned it at the age of eight'."

Speechless lowered his head slightly as his expression seemed somewhat melancholic.

The blond youth remained expressionless after hearing his words. However, there was an undetectable cold glint that flashed in his eyes.

"I have a rough understanding of your designation, but I do not

know how you managed to obtain information from my world. However, I do not like how you call me as 'that man'."

The blond youth was still using an emotionless tone to speak, "To be precise, I hate it greatly, so I hate you."

I hate you.

The words that seemed like what a girl would say in a fit of anger did not have the coquettishness of a young girl when it was said from the blond youth's mouth. His tone was even colder than a snowstorm in the dead of winter. It contained killing intent that seemed like it could even freeze air.

Speechless shook his head as he could not control his laughter. "Perfect, I happen to hate you very much as well. So, only one of the two of us can exist."

"Alright, then die."

The blond youth used modal particles to enhance his toneless tone.

Then he raised his hand and slashed out.

...

Chapter 432: No More Escaping

The blond youth slashed out, and like a mirror, Speechless would produce an identical action.

When the identical sword beams clashed again, the outcome was still a tie.

"Three Thousand Waters Sword."

Speechless reported the name of the sword strike.

The blond youth immediately slashed out once again. The crowd could not see the so-called sword that didn't exist, but they could clearly see the sword beam that appeared. What was even more brilliant was the lightning bolts that were mixed with the sword beam's billowing flames.

"Wind Fire Thunder Divine Sword."

Speechless reproduced the same action once again. Be it speed or size, the Wind Fire Thunder Divine Sword was identical to the blond youth's, as though it was a mirror image.

This clash of attacks obviously ended in a tie once again.

The audience was appalled. They found the Celestial King way too enthralling. He could immediately use an identical attack to

meet his opponent's attack. This could not be explained as 'instant-learning'. It was as though it was replicated in a second. It was completely unheard of.

Shi Xiaobai, who had previously fought with Speechless previously, knew of Speechless's superpower. However, he could not help but reflect that such a superpower did seem somewhat unresolvable. To anyone, facing an opponent that could immediately replicate one's move was a headache. It left one powerless because it was as though one was fighting with oneself.

Shi Xiaobai was feeling curious. As the imitation of the Hero King, how would the blond youth deal with the situation.

The blond youth's reaction exceeded Shi Xiaobai's expectations.

He did not stop slashing. Furthermore, every strike was a different sword technique. Even though every strike was met with an identical obstacle, resulting in an identical outcome, he did not seem to show any impatience. He adamantly continued producing a myriad of sword techniques.

It was as if he was showcasing his sword moves.

It was also as if he was testing if Speechless could replicate every move.

The conclusion seemed for granted. Speechless very perfectly reproduced the blond youth's sword moves.

A rather boring mirror-like battle seemed to become a demonstration of sword moves.

But it had to be said that the sword moves were all very powerful. From a distance, one could sense the surging sword intent in each sword move. The audience was astounded, but somewhat disappointed. After all, such a battle could not be considered interesting.

Above the basin, Feng Yuanlin said with a deprecating laugh, "This battle seems somewhat strange?"

Pulp Farmer said with a frown, "For some baffling reason, it's a bit boring."

Liu Yu said with a sigh, "Speechless is facing the young Hero King. Even if it's a fake Hero King, it gives one great anticipation. It should have been an exhilarating battle, but who knew that Speechless would constantly replicate the moves like a mirror. And who knew that the Hero King would go along and keep switching moves. What is the reason for this?"

Mu Yuesheng stared at Speechless in the distance as she muttered, "Speechless is acting in a fit of pique. He only wants to prove that his imitation is perfect..."

...

The battle continued on for ten minutes.

The blond youth constantly switched sword moves. The number of sword moves he grasped was astounding. Furthermore, from what Speechless said, these sword moves were apparently created by the Hero King in his youth. It was completely unimaginable.

Speechless continued to use his mirror-like replication, making the scales of balance for the battle remain completely level.

No one could gain an advantage against the other. This was the boring conclusion after a battle that lasted for ten minutes.

"Demon Slaying Holy Sword."

Speechless once again reported the blond youth's sword technique's name. But this time, he finally lost his patience.

A mocking smile suffused across his lips. "Is this your response? If you think that you will be able to luckily produce a sword technique I cannot imitate by demonstrating all your sword techniques once, then the naive you have disappointed me."

When Speechless said that, his eyes could not help but glance at the distant Shi Xiaobai.

Speechless had encountered many, many opponents. There were numerous geniuses who wanted to vie for the title of being the "number one youth in China", but against his "Mirror Replication",

most young geniuses would eventually suffer a mental breakdown.

To have one's own move perfectly imitated regardless of the move, a portion of people would blame everything on the opponent. They would use mocking words like 'only knowing how to imitate' to cover up for their inability to defeat their own selves. There was a portion of people that would not be discouraged, determined that it was impossible for the opponent to replicate all of their moves. There would always be one move the other party could not imitate.

And Shi Xiaobai was one of the rare youths that did not belong to any of the two categories.

Speechless remembered that during his battle with Shi Xiaobai on the Silent Desolate Lands, when Shi Xiaobai realized that his attacks would be imitated, Shi Xiaobai did not attempt using different moves to challenge his Imitation superpower, nor did he react negatively by using mockery to conceal the difficult situation of him unable to defeat the mirror imitation.

Shi Xiaobai chose to surpass himself. He wanted to exceed the same move to exceed his mirror image.

Since he was imitated, he would surpass the one that imitated him. That was Shi Xiaobai's choice at that time.

From that moment onwards, Speechless treated Shi Xiaobai as a special opponent, an opponent that was worth looking forward to.

And at that moment, the fake Hero King had made a choice that disappointed Speechless. The fake Hero King was constantly using different moves in an attempt to challenge his replication ability and not attempt to challenge his imitated self.

This only sounded like two different options, but they were in fact very different.

The former was a doubt of his opponent, while the latter was to trust in oneself.

Speechless acknowledged the former.

"Indeed, a counterfeit is after all a counterfeit?"

Speechless' eyes flashed a look of disappointment. For him to meet the Hero King, even if it was an imitation was something that made his blood stir. He was filled with anticipation with regards to this battle.

He had used his Mirror Replication to make the battle enter a tie, but he wanted to see what method the Hero King would choose to crack his Mirror Replication.

That was because unless there was absolute strength that could crack his Mirror Replication, there had been no peer or opponent at the same level as him that could crack it.

Speechless wanted to prove that his imitation was perfect, but he

also looked forward to the fake Hero King's ability to give him some pressure.

But if the fake Hero King continued attempting to challenge his 'Mirror Replication', then the battle would end in a boring conclusion.

That was because his Mirror Replication was without flaw.

"Found the flaw."

Suddenly, the blond youth said with a deadpan expression. His voice was gentle like a breeze.

But when it landed in Speechless's ears, it was like a typhoon had stirred in his mind.

Speechless' pupils dilated as he said in disbelief, "Impossible! My replication is perfect!"

The blond youth's eyes were calm as he said, "Your so-called perfection is only relative."

"Relative?"

Speechless' eyebrows slightly knitted together.

The blond youth continued, "Whether the jade in your eyes has perfectly replicated another jade stone or not depends on if you can discover the flaws in the jade. Your eyes can only see perfection, not flaws. So you are only imitating perfection."

"Relative to one's eyes?"

A light smile suffused across Speechless's mouth as he said, "So what you mean is that you have seen a flaw that I cannot see?"

The blond youth nodded in a deadpan manner. He looked as though he was in a daze, but the coldness and calmness in his eyes made him appear extraordinarily aloof.

"Your imitation possesses flaws, and they have been discovered by my eyes."

The blond youth said in such a manner.

The blond youth and Sunless were both people who did not show any emotion. Their eyes were dull and calm which gave them a seemingly aloof feeling. However, the blond youth was different from Sunless. The blond youth was good at speaking, nor did he resist conversing with others. He would even take the initiative to say things that he did not need to say.

And it was because of that, the battle suddenly came to a strange halt, which made it an exchange of words.

However, when the blond youth conversed, the emotions of his ice-cold expression in his eyes appeared to be sealed in another world. Instead of calling it a conversation, it was more like him speaking to himself.

Who he was conversing with, or what sort of existence it was, or what answer he would give.

It was meaningless to the blond youth.

He spoke only because he wanted to say something.

"One in ten thousand. Your imitation has a one in ten thousand loophole."

The blond youth did not wait for Speechless to respond. He did not even look at Speechless. He only continued finishing what he wanted to say, "Of course, a one in ten thousand loophole is relative as well. My eyes can see a one in ten thousand loophole, so to me, within your perfection exists a one in ten thousand flaw. But in fact, it might be one-hundredth or one-tenth or even worse. It might only be because I haven't discovered it. Got it? What you claim as perfection actually has a one in ten thousand loophole that you can't see."

Speechless gaped slightly before chuckling, "Are you discussing philosophy with me? Indeed, perfection is relative. If you can see a one in ten thousand flaw, then my so-called perfection is relatively imperfect to you. But so what? How do you prove that you have discovered a one in ten thousand flaw? Even if it's as you say and

within my Mirror Replication exists a one in ten thousand flaw, what changes can that tiny amount cause? When the flaws are so small that it can be neglected, that would be perfection."

"Naive."

The blond youth once again said something emotionless when it should have been filled with a mocking tone to it. He said in a deadpan manner, "If I continuously expand that one in ten thousand flaw, can you still neglect it?"

Speechless' pupils constricted slightly as he exclaimed, "What do you mean!?"

The blond youth did not respond. Suddenly, he lifted his hand and slashed out!

When Speechless saw the blond youth raise his hand, Mirror Replication had instinctively already reacted.

Speechless did a similar action as he slashed out the same sword strike!

"Three Thousand Li Sword!?"

After Speechless slashed out, he shouted, "You are doing some foolish attempt again? It's just a waste of energy. My imitation is perfect. The outcome has been decided from the very beginning. Do not attempt to challenge my Mirror Replication, if not..."

Speechless' voice suddenly came to a halt!

His pupils dilated when the sword beams clashed. An unbelievable look filled his pair of bright eyes!

Shi Xiaobai, who had been watching every detail from the distance, gaped slightly as well.

"The balance has been broken."

Shi Xiaobai muttered to himself.

Yes, the balance had been broken.

In fact, it was a tiny crack. What should have been a collision midway before the two sword beams were dissipated finally has its first unforeseen outcome—the blond youth's sword beam had progressed a few centimeters ahead of Speechless's sword beam!

A few centimeters at a distance of ten kilometers seemed like a trivial number. However, the few centimeters confirmed the blond youth's words. Speechless's Mirror Replication was not perfect. It had a hard to discover flaw that was mistaken as not existing!

"But so what? A few centimeters cannot stir my perfection!"

Speechless' lips were quivering slightly.

The blond youth remained expressionless as he silently slashed out once again!

This strike was the most normal Three Thousand Li Sword to the blond youth.

Speechless clenched his teeth slightly as his eyes flashed with a look of stubbornness. With a loud roar, he used his Mirror Replication!

"Boom!"

The same sword beam moved forward in an identical trajectory. It met in mid-air once again. They should have vanished simultaneously, but this time, the blond youth's sword beam had remnant amounts for a short period of time that was nearly negligible!

In that short period of time, it moved...more than ten centimeters!

"The difference has been magnified..."

Shi Xiaobai looked in disbelief at the blond youth.

However, the blond youth had already raised his hand and slashed out!

Speechless' whose eyes had turned somewhat torpid instinctively reacted.

The blond youth did not stop. After one slash, he would slash out another!

Speechless finally extinguished the torpidity in his eyes. His eyes were ignited with fresh fighting spirit as he faced the blond youth's attack and made an identical motion.

"Let me see then. Let me see it!"

Speechless' eyes were filled with stubbornness and resoluteness, "The flaws in your eyes!"

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

The blond youth constantly brandished his sword as his speed and frequency steadily increased!

The sword beams clashed like a storm descending upon the land. There was no moment of pause and it caused the audience to shudder in fear!

As for the sword beam's distance, it was gradually increasing!

More than ten centimeters!

Nearly a meter!

A meter!

Ten meters!

Thirty meters!

A hundred meters!

Five hundred meters!

The blond youth's sword beam had completely upset the balance. Even the weakest members of the audience could tell that the identical sword beams had a sudden difference.

The flaw was being magnified.

It was magnified again and again in a constant fashion!

"Bang!"

When the final sword beam shattered Speechless's sword beam and traversed ten kilometers to slam into the black-and-white sword, the blond youth finally stopped his barrage of attacks.

At that moment, there was complete silence.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but clench his fists as his eyes were filled with shock.

He had previously fought with Speechless before. He knew the terrifying power of Mirror Replication. He had not split hairs to suspect if the Mirror Replication was perfect or not. Instead, he chose to believe in himself to surpass himself, so as to beat his imitation.

This was probably an expression of confidence.

But in fact, the premise to his actions was to give up doubting.

He had given up doubts of the so-called perfection.

As for the blond youth, he was completely opposite. He chose to experiment and doubt. And soon, he quickly discovered the loopholes beneath the surface of perfection.

Although it was a one in ten thousand loophole, when a hole appeared in a seemingly perfect piece of fabric, as long as the hole was constantly enlarged, the entire piece of fabric would eventually be torn.

The blond youth had used his acute observational skills to discover the one in ten thousand loophole. Next, he constantly surpassed that one in ten thousand flaw of the imitation. He

expanded the loophole and succeeded in ripping apart Speechless's perfection.

He had cracked the seemingly unassailable Mirror Replication!

"Can This King accomplish the same?"

Shi Xiaobai suddenly found it hard to breathe.

If he also chose the same method the blond youth had done, was he able to accomplish the same method of cracking, like the blond youth?

"I've lost."

A bitter smile suffused across Speechless's lips. His Mirror Replication had been cracked. No excuse could deny it.

He had already lost the battle that proved that he was the most perfect imitation.

Because, his so-called perfect imitation always had a loophole that he believed did not exist.

The blond youth said with a deadpan manner, "An imitation is an imitation after all."

When the emotionless voice landed in Speechless's ears, his lowered eyes suddenly turned torpid.

...

...

"I don't want to become anyone else, even if he is the Hero King. Because, I want to become Speechless Li!"

The handsome black-haired boy said with a determined look.

Sitting beside the boy was a girl who lightly blinked her beautiful brown eyes. Her hands were holding up her face that had a bit of baby fat. She said in a childish manner, "Brother Speechless is Brother Speechless, so why do you want to become Brother Speechless?"

The black-haired boy scratched his head. He seemed to be at a loss for an explanation. With a thought, he said to the girl, "That's because everybody wishes for me to become the Hero King. Daddy, Mommy, Grandpa, Grandma, all of them wish for it. Furthermore...I'm good at imitating. I believe imitation might be my destiny."

The words that sounded somewhat mature were clearly hard to understand for the girl. She shook her little head that had a mop of short, brown hair to indicate that she did not understand what he meant.

Following that, she pouted slightly and said naively, "Brother Speechless is good at imitating, then...wouldn't imitating be enough?"

"Of course not!"

The boy shook his head adamantly. "I already said, I don't want to become anyone else. I want to be Speechless Li. So how can I keep imitating all the way? Even if imitation is my destiny, as long as I refuse to bow down before it, as long as I do my best to resist it, my destiny can be conquered as well!"

The girl stared at the boy. A somewhat different glimmer suddenly appeared in her innocent brown eyes.

She muttered to herself repeatedly, "Destiny can be conquered as well" before she tilted her head. She laughed out innocently and said, "I see, Brother Speechless doesn't like imitating."

The boy nodded as he reached out his tiny hand to touch the girl's head. He said, "An imitation is an imitation after all. Even if it can be replicated identically, so what? And if it can be replicated identically, wouldn't the real Speechless Li...disappear?"

...

...

Speechless' glazed eyes gradually had its luster restored. Memories that had nearly been forgotten returned to him once again. An unfamiliar palpitation made his heart start beating faster.

"An imitation is an imitation after all."

The corners of Speechless's mouth suffused a relieved smile. He looked up at the blond youth and said, "I have lost. Even as a counterfeit, you are still a counterfeit of that man. That man is indeed impressive."

With his Mirror Replication cracked, it actually did not mean that Speechless was bound to be defeated. That was because he had many means that he had yet to use. The absolute balance had been displaced, but the true battle had only just begun.

However, Speechless admitted that he had lost. He had utterly lost the battle that proved who was the perfect imitation because the illusion of his perfect imitation had been broken.

However, the blond youth appeared to disagree with the outcome. He said with a deadpan manner, "You have yet to lose."

Speechless said with a smile, "You might think that I have yet to lose because you only saw through my Mirror Replication. My true strength has not been displayed. However, victory and defeat are relative. To me, the meaning behind this battle is to prove that I'm the perfect imitation. And on that point, you have completely shattered that illusion. You have proved that a loophole exists in

my perfection. From my point of view, you have already won, and I completely admit your superiority."

"You have misunderstood me."

A cold glimmer flashed in the blond youth's calm eyes. He said, "You have yet to lose, because...you haven't died."

With that said, everyone present was appalled!

Speechless' pupils constricted slightly as he wiped the smile off his face.

According to the rules of the life-and-death battle between the three kings, the dead were the losers, and the losers had to be the dead. Then, Speechless, who was still alive, was indeed far from considered defeated.

However, there was no prior indication that the sudden battle would follow the rules of the life-and-death battle between the three kings.

Speechless said calmly, "It looks like you want to kill me?"

The blond youth said with a nod, "That is the goal for my coming. You aren't the only one. I will be killing all three kings. You can join forces. No, I advise the three of you to join forces now."

When Speechless heard this, he suddenly recalled of the story of the Hero King. The Hero King had fought the three kings single-handedly and eventually killed all three kings.

"What a crappy plot setting."

Speechless could not help but curse in his heart. He looked at the blond youth and said, "We will not join forces. It is impossible for you to kill me either. Although my imitation has loopholes, you are unable to kill me."

Speechless' eyes were filled with confidence. From a young age, he had been imitating the Hero King. He had worked hard to follow in the Hero King's footsteps, so he knew very well that although he had yet to chase up to the Hero King at the same age, the gap wasn't that large.

If the blond youth was a counterfeit of the Hero King, then his strength was insufficient to crush him.

"Won't be able to kill you?"

The blond youth muttered to himself as he suddenly gestured a motion of clasping a sword with both hands.

Dots of crystalline purple light suddenly began to emerge from the ground as they gathered in the blond youth's hands!

A layer of bright purple light emanated in the air before it suddenly took the form of a sword!

"That is...the outline of a sword?"

The purple halo formed the outline of a sword. A sword's hilt was being held in the blond youth's hands!

"That is the outline of the sword that doesn't exist."

The sword that didn't exist had its outline carved out by the purple halo. From the looks of it, it did not look very different from an ordinary long sword.

A light smile suffused across Speechless's lips. "The power of Sword Truth? It looks like you have discovered it as well."

Without a doubt, the purple dots of light that suddenly emerged out of the ground as well as the purple halo that carved out the outline of the sword that did not exist was the blond youth's Sword Truth!

In fact, Shi Xiaobai had previously discovered such a fact. Speechless's Mirror Replication could only imitate techniques!

As for the power of Sword Truth, it was part of one's physical strength, and was not part of the move.

Speechless was unable to imitate the power of Sword Truth!

The blond youth had used his sharp observational skills to notice this point.

"If you think using the power of Sword Truth is enough to defeat me, then you are overly naive!"

Speechless sneered as he suddenly clenched the black-and-white sword with both hands.

Purple points of light began to rise up from the ground as they augmented on the black-and-white sword. It formed the sword outline with a purple luster.

That scene was nearly identical to the blond youth's usage of Sword Truth!

"Sorry about that. The person I imitate has always been that man you are modeled after. Although the power of Mirror Replication cannot imitate a Sword Truth, I, who have attempted to imitate that man, would not only rely on the power of Mirror Replication!"

Speechless said loudly, "That man's Sword Truth is my Sword Truth!"

The superpower of Mirror Replication allowed Speechless to do imitations that were opportunistic in many ways. However, there were many imitations that required him to depend on his hard

work to grasp it. And from his birth to the present day, he, who had never stopped imitating the Hero King, had suffered through countless tears and sweat to possess his present strength.

He had used his life and youth to imitate that man.

He naturally also possessed that man's Sword Truth!

"Then what about Sword Soul?"

Suddenly a calm voice was heard.

Speechless felt as though he was struck by lightning. He looked up in disbelief. "Imposs..."

He did not manage to finish saying the word 'impossible'.

Because at the moment he lifted his head, a gigantic astral soul appeared behind the blond youth's body.

The astral soul was about ten meters tall. It was blurry, preventing others from seeing its true form. However, one could tell that it was wearing armor, and that both of its hands held onto a gigantic sword. Its posture was identical to the blond youth's.

The gigantic astral soul's sudden appearance behind the blond youth gave many people a fright.

And Sunless, who knew what that astral soul meant, had a rare startled expression.

Speechless' eyes nearly glazed over as he muttered, "The power of the Sword Soul. In the family's records, that man at this age had clearly not grasped the power of the Sword Soul, so how can you possess such power? Did that man conceal it from the family? Or have you been designated to be stronger than that man?"

In the way of the sword, the enhancement of sword techniques had four levels.

The lowest level was Sword Intent. This was a power that a swordsman with some talent would eventually grasp.

The second level was Sword Truth. This was something a genius swordsman would learn of after many years of accumulated experience. It was a power that would be awoken after one figured out one's way of the sword. Typically, those who wielded the power of Sword Truth were already at a top tier standard in the realm of swords.

And the third level was the Sword Soul. It was a mystical power. The swordsmen that could comprehend and use the power of Sword Soul were few and far between. The power of the Sword Soul not only needed extraordinary perceptive powers, one needed crucial encounters. Even many of the top ten Sword Masters in the world failed to gain insights into the power of the Sword Soul till much later.

The fourth level, the Sword Domain was even more mystical. Even across history, there were very few humans that managed to comprehend a Sword Domain. The most famous Sword Domain was Sword Immortal Xu Taibai's at his peak.

Speechless, Sunless, and even Shi Xiaobai could be considered geniuses among geniuses. At such a young age, they had already gained insights into the power of Sword Truth which was enough to cause a stir in China. But no one could be sure that the three of them would be able to comprehend the power of the Sword Soul at the age of thirty, forty, or even fifty.

As for the Hero King, or in some sense, the fake Hero King in front of them, was demonstrating the power of the Sword Soul at that moment!

Even though his Sword Soul was only ten meters tall and it being blurry to the point of not being able to discern its facial features, it was still a sword soul!

It was a power that far exceeded the power of Sword Truth!

The power of Sword Soul was enough to completely crush Speechless!

"So you always possessed the power to absolutely crush your foes from the beginning."

Speechless said with a wry smile, "You could have used your

absolute power to destroy the Mirror Replication, but you chose the most difficult manner to completely defeat me. What unpleasant pride."

"You are an opponent worthy of respect."

The blond youth said in a deadpan manner, "If I do not use the power of Sword Soul, I won't be able to kill you. But sorry, I have to kill you. Receive the attack. I will be using all my strength for this strike, giving you the most respectable death!"

As the blond youth said so, his cold pair of eyes suddenly showed an additional strand of emotion. He lifted his arms. The gigantic astral soul behind him did an identical motion!

"Slash!"

The strike did not seem to have a name. It appeared to be the most normal of slashes, but the power produced from the strike struck fear into the deepest depths of one's soul!

Shi Xiaobai, who was far in the distance, could clearly sense the terrifying power contained within that strike. He placed himself in the shoes of Speechless.

He was pondering how he would face such a strike.

Face it head on?

The outcome would be an abject defeat. He would be blasted to pieces by the power of that single strike!

Dodge as fast as possible?

No, there was no time. The strike could not be dodged. Even if his Crab Steps were to be upgraded by another grade, there was no way he could dodge that strike.

What could he do?

What could Speechless do?

If one was struck by that strike, it would result in death.

A very likely death.

But if there was no way to face it head on nor dodge it in time, what other means were there?

What...should be done?

"Quickly use the exit command!"

Shi Xiaobai roared at the dazed Speechless!

...

...

"Why is your hair not blond? Should you dye it? The Hero King's hair is blond."

In the arms of a young girl, there was a boy as she ruffled through his black hair. Her eyes appeared like she was deep in thought, as if she was pondering over her own suggestion.

The boy suddenly looked up and said, "No, definitely not!"

The young girl frowned slightly and asked, "Why not? Blond hair is so pretty. It's as resplendent as the rays of the sun. It is said that the Hero King's hair had caused countless girls to be infatuated with him. If Little Speechless were to dye his hair blond, he will definitely look better than he is now."

The boy smacked his lips, "I'm already handsome enough. There's no need to become even better looking."

The boy's facial features looked exquisite and perfect. From a young age, there was a hint that he would grow up to be a handsome young man who would cause thousands of girls to fawn over him. Therefore, what he said was not a lie.

The young girl smiled and pinched the boy's cheek. She said with a laugh, "It's not a bad look. You are indeed worthy of being my

sister's child. However, it will look even better if you dye it blond."

The boy said loudly, "Black is nicer than blond!"

The young girl shook her head and said, "Blond is nice. The Hero King's hair is blond."

The boy smacked his lips and said, "Hmph, you idolize the Hero King so much, so it's obvious you would think his hair color is nicer."

The young girl gave a happy smile and said, "What you said seems to make a bit of sense, but I really do think blond is nicer. Who asked the Hero King to have blond hair?"

The boy got away from the woman's arms and jumped onto the ground. Facing the young girl on the chair, he said seriously, "There will be one day you will prefer black!"

The young girl pricked her eyebrows up and said with a laugh, "That's impossible. Unless the Hero King is revived and dyes his hair black. If not, the color I like will forever be blond!"

The boy clenched his tiny fist and looked up to say loudly, "No, there will be a day when I will surpass the Hero King. I will become a man even greater than he was! When the time comes, the person Little Aunt will worship the most will be me! When the time comes, you will definitely prefer black!"

The young girl widened her eyes slightly as her lips curled upwards. She revealed a beautiful smile as she said softly, "Then we have made an agreement. The day you surpass the Hero King will be the day I prefer black."

As the young girl said that, she stretched out her fair and slender pinky.

The boy nodded his head heavily.

"Yea, there will be a day when I will surpass the Hero King!"

...

...

"Quickly use the exit command!"

Shi Xiaobai's roar came from a distance, jolting Speechless awake.

That sword beam that tore through the void could not be avoided. Facing it head on would be overwhelming, but if he did not do anything, he would die. He would be killed by that strike.

This was the first time Speechless felt lost. Only when Shi Xiaobai roared was he pulled back to reality.

That's right. Use the exit command.

There was still that method.

As long as he used the exit command, he could instantly leave the land of the trials. He would escape that strike and successfully live on.

To use the exit command, all he needed to do was utter those two words. It was that simple.

But...

"Heh, I now realize that the young me is so much cuter than I am now."

Speechless' eyes turned somewhat gloomy.

"To think that what I thought wasn't me escaping reality but facing reality head on was actually the biggest escape from reality. The young you could at least say the words 'an imitation is an imitation after all' and 'I want to surpass the Hero King', but now? You can't say a thing. It's like your throat is choked and can't say a word."

"What happened to those arrogant claims?" Where did that arrogant you who kept making arrogant claims go to?"

"Ha, to be subdued by that man's life and to lose the confidence to surpass him. To me, being able to imitate that man's life is also a destiny that one can be contented with. In the end, it's only consoling the unsuccessful me. Isn't it to fulfill me who is destined to fail?"

"Could it be that I have to continue escaping?"

"Are you willing to continue escaping?"

Speechless gradually lifted his head. His gloomy eyes suddenly flashed with a dazzling light.

"Little Aunt, black is nicer."

A peaceful smile suffused across Speechless's mouth. With both hands clasping the sword, he slowly lifted them up and slashed out at that strike that covered the world with white light!

"I will not escape any further!"

...

The white light filled the world. The blond youth's strike was blinding. Even the sun's rays were overwhelmed by it.

What Shi Xiaobai last saw was Speechless's figure as he held up his sword.

Then, everything was consumed by whiteness. It was devoured by energy.

Nothing could be seen.

But the outcome could already be seen.

"No!"

Shi Xiaobai roared angrily as he crazily ran in Speechless's direction.

Speechless did not use the exit command but chose to face it head on. Although he knew he was no match for the strike, he still chose to face it head on.

He had made a wrong choice.

He had made a wrong choice at the cost of his life.

Shi Xiaobai knew that if it were him, he too would have made the same choice.

But, was such a choice worth it?

"Bang!"

While Shi Xiaobai was running, an object that flew backwards slammed into him.

All he could see was whiteness in front of him.

However, death felt to be in close proximity.

Shi Xiaobai used his strength to embrace the 'object' that collided with him. He allowed his body to fly backwards as well so as to counteract the strong impact.

Nothing could be seen.

But he could feel something in between his fingers. It was a sticky and hot liquid.

Shi Xiaobai knew what it was.

He tried his best to widen his eyes, hoping to make out the 'object' he was holding in that white world.

The white glaring light caused his eyes to turn red.

Shi Xiaobai's backward flying body finally came to a halt. As for the white light, it gradually dispersed.

Everything in front of him finally began to materialize.

The first thing he saw was blackness in the white light.

That was hair.

"You are still alive, you must be still alive."

Shi Xiaobai muttered softly.

However, the sticky liquid his fingers was feeling seemed to retort that fact.

He could only try his best to widen his eyes so as to make out the reality that would soon appear from the whiteness.

Then, he saw complete redness.

That was blood.

And in the bright redness, there was a circular blackness.

That blackness seemed to be a bottomless pit that devoured all light.

Shi Xiaobai's pupils gradually dilated.

A sound that was stuck in his throat was finally released at that moment. That sound resembled the cries of someone.

Shi Xiaobai finally managed to make out the 'object' in his arms.

He also discerned the bright redness and the deep black hole.

The "object" was Speechless.

The "redness" was Speechless's blood.

The "deep black hole" was the wound on Speechless's body.

The wound had appeared on the left side of Speechless's chest. Speechless's left chest had been penetrated. The wound was completely dark and had nothing in it.

The beating heart that should have been in the left chest...was gone.

...

Chapter 433: Are You Willing To Be A Side Hoe

Boiling hot blood spewed out of the hole in the left chest. It seemed like water that gushed out of the eye of a fountain. However, the eye of the fountain was about the size of a fist. It was crimson and emanated a sticky, bloody stench that was stifling. Furthermore, what gushed out of the 'eye of the fountain' was not water, nor was it blood, but life that was constantly depleting away—if that object still had any life to it.

Shi Xiaobai finally managed to see color in the white world. The blurry black and red gradually turned clear. Of course, it was not considered a gorgeous display of color, but it was not a dull single tone color. However, it purely but complicatedly mixed two commonly seen colors together before painting a picture with color.

However, the picture painted was not of a scenery, but life—a life that was about to wither.

Looking from a different angle at the mixed blackness and redness, while struggling to curb the disgust and grossness, despite his eyes were prickling in pain and feeling sour, he could see fractured bone mixed in the mangled flesh and blood.

But that was only it.

The most important thing, the thing that he wanted to see the most was gone.

What should be beating in the left chest, producing thumping sounds to let the quiet picture have throbbing life was gone.

Could a person still be alive without a heart?

Could a person be revived without a heart?

Finally, his concentrated eyes managed to discern everything clearly. Shi Xiaobai's eyes once again seemed to turn disheartened. In his blank mind, the answer that was destined to be given to the two questions flashed.

Then, it was a confirmation of a cruel reality.

Speechless was dead.

Just as he expected, Speechless failed to survive that single strike.

If he had used the exit command, he might have been defeated, he might have escaped or even appear cowardly, but he could at least survive.

Speechless did not make such a choice. Instead, he had directly received the blond youth's sword strike that had used the power of Sword Soul.

That was an overwhelming force for Speechless. It was a strike that he temporarily could not withstand. Even if he were a rare genius, one not seen in a hundred years or even a thousand years, he was only in his teens after all. To withstand the Sword Soul strike head on, the best outcome was what had just happened. His corpse was left relatively intact, but he had lost his life.

"It would be impressive for him if he could leave his corpse intact."

Such a thought emerged in Shi Xiaobai's mind when he saw the power of the strike slashing out.

"But why did This King feel that you would be able to survive if it were you?"

Shi Xiaobai gave a deep sigh in his heart.

In fact, he had only met Speechless twice. During their first meeting, they had come to blows. In the second meeting, they had for some baffling reason fought with their lives.

Perhaps it was as the saying goes, friendship grows only when you exchange blows or how the like knows the like. A few simple exchanges of blows and silly conversations made Shi Xiaobai firmly certain of a particular matter—Speechless, a young genius whose reputation was not as good as meeting him face to face, but also didn't seem to live up to his reputation, could be a friend and opponent for the rest of his life.

While he grew and advanced, that youth may be running crazily in front of him, or the youth might be chasing behind him, or might very likely run by his side. But it was certain that as long as he existed, what should be a lonely journey would not be lonely.

Shi Xiaobai had such beliefs. Furthermore, he firmly believed in it while waiting and anticipating for it.

However, Speechless was dead. This friend he acknowledged, the opponent he was anticipating had his heart forever stopped in such a manner. It happened in this unfamiliar world, in the bleak basin and ice-cold world.

There was not much sadness or grief, but the feeling of regret and vexation suddenly surged to his heart. A sense of emptiness filled his chest, as though he suddenly felt furious over the ridiculous reality that had happened.

"You should not have died here. This shouldn't have been where you died..."

Shi Xiaobai felt his chest heavy. It felt like a rock was crushing his heart. An unfamiliar but familiar emotion began emerging as it filled his brain.

His black hair seemed to be stained as if it was covered in snow. From the roots of his hair, his hair gradually turned white. It was not a bleak whiteness, but a beautiful silvery-white that appeared like it was breathing.

One strand after another seemed to ripple out silvery-white ripples on a black lake surface.

"Go ahead and rage!"

"Go ahead and vent!"

"Go ahead and annihilate!"

"Give everything to the instinct you need not resist!"

Such a voice suddenly resounded in his mind.

Shi Xiaobai closed his eyes.

Who was shouting?

Who was murmuring?

Who was cheering in delight?

Who was sobbing in sadness?

Who was it?

"It's rage!"

Shi Xiaobai suddenly opened his eyes. They were as black as the night sky, but appeared bright like a star-filled sky. Suddenly, a golden vortex appeared in his pupils!

The golden vortex revolved and as it did, it accelerated, as though it was going to grind the world that was reflected in his pupils!

"Cough!"

A painful cough was suddenly heard. It seemed like a tiny stone had dropped onto the calm lake surface.

With a splash, ripples spread out.

What was broken was not calmness, but his state of mind that could not remain calm.

Shi Xiaobai was jolted awake!

His body suddenly broke out into cold sweat as his heart came to a standstill.

The golden vortex in his pupils gradually vanished. The silvery-white hair that had emanated halfway began receding rapidly like melting ice. Lush black hair appeared like a starless night sky.

Shi Xiaobai traced the coughing sound that had awoken him

from his meaningless rage. He saw a pair of eyes that opened in the night sky.

"I'm a man who wants to surpass the Hero King, so how can I die here?"

Words that seemed crazy and somewhat suspect of eight-grader syndrome sounded like a gong in the middle of the silent night.

Shi Xiaobai was surprised.

Speechless was still alive!

Speechless, who had his left chest penetrated, wasn't dead. He seemed to be able to put up a struggle as he lived on. He trembled with great difficulty as he raised his left hand to cover his bloody wound. A warm, white light slowly began to heal his mangled flesh.

"Phew, thankfully I was born with my heart on the right side."

The emotive words after having survived a disaster revealed the truth to the matter.

Speechless' heart was still beating in his undamaged right chest!

Shi Xiaobai was jolted awake. He hurriedly reached out to hold onto Speechless's shoulders. Without any holding back, he began

using the Massage Technique of God. Although it did not have the ability to heal Speechless's bone and flesh, it could reduce the pain and stop the blood to a certain extent.

Shi Xiaobai's stiff lips gradually suffused a smile.

That was a joyous, but also an embarrassed smile.

He never expected that the normally calm him would be so easily left flustered. Just seeing the wound in the left chest made him panic and he had believed that Speechless's heart had been pierced, sealing his fate. He had nearly lost his mind from the negative emotions.

This did not seem like the usual him.

"Who knew that you cared so much about me?"

Due to the large amounts of blood lost, Speechless was pale, but he was not particularly weak. His fine physique allowed him to not miss out on a chance for a joke even while in pain.

Speechless said with a laugh, "The look in your eyes touched me greatly. If I were a girl, I might marry you for life."

Shi Xiaobai rolled his eyes and ignored the black humor. When he carefully observed Speechless's wound, he realized that Speechless's left hand was emitting a white light that was even stronger than the power of light of Holy Radiance. It looked like he

only bled a lot but there was no threat to his life. Shi Xiaobai gradually calmed down.

"You should have died under This King's sword. This King was only feeling regret over that matter." Shi Xiaobai finally gave a forced explanation for his gaffe.

Speechless chuckled as a little ruddiness returned to his pale face.

"Thank you," whispered Speechless. "Sorry."

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat puzzled over Speechless's act of saying two words with completely different meanings.

Speechless slowly handed the black-and-white sword to Shi Xiaobai. He had clenched it tightly and had never relaxed his grasp on it.

"Thank you for your sword. Sorry for losing."

He had originally planned on using a victory that was achieved with ease and verve as repayment for the sword, but he had been defeated so terribly with Shi Xiaobai's sword. He was sorry for that.

Speechless returned the sword.

As he no longer had any strength left to do battle, other than

saying thank you and sorry, all he could do was still thank and apologize.

"They are very happy."

Shi Xiaobai reached out his hand to retrieve the sword. He said gently, "This King can hear their voices. They say that to be used by an impressive swordsman and do battle with another impressive swordsman is still something delightful despite the loss."

They were naturally referring to the black and white swords.

Speechless was slightly taken aback as he said with a laugh, "What a nice consolation. You are indeed a bastard that is good at sweet talking. No wonder Sunless and my sisters are smitten by you."

"Ahem."

A clear cough immediately sounded when Speechless said those words. Immediately, a clear and gentle voice was heard.

"Sorry for disturbing you lovebirds, but I can't stand hearing what you just said. Shi Xiaobai and I are only ordinary friends. It is a pure platonic friendship, so you are not to speak nonsense. If Sister Sunless hears it, it would be terrible!"

The two turned their heads towards the voice and realized that

Mu Yuesheng had somehow come behind them. The corners of her mouth were slanted as though she was grumbling over Speechless's nonsense. When her brown eyes landed on Speechless's wound, she gave a worried look.

Other than Mu Yuesheng, the silver-haired girl, Sunless, Pulp Farmer and company had descended from the top of the basin. They were rushing here, but Mu Yuesheng had used Lightning Flashstep, allowing her to arrive there first.

Speechless was seriously injured, so they naturally could not stand idly outside the arena.

When Speechless saw Mu Yuesheng's worried look, he said with a laugh, "Don't worry. It won't kill."

Mu Yuesheng gaped and did not say what she wanted to say. Eventually, she gave a helpless sigh.

Speechless' choice was very foolish, but it was not wrong.

Blaming and grumbling words could best express her nervousness and concern, but those were not the best words to be said at the moment.

"Promise me. There won't be a next time."

Mu Yuesheng said gently after falling silent for a moment.

Speechless grinned and said, "Such a horrible defeat obviously is the last."

Mu Yuesheng stared at him. The next time she was referring to was not do actions that could cost his life, but Speechless had given an irrelevant answer.

Before Mu Yuesheng said another word, a figure suddenly appeared beside her. As she gave an instinctive glance at it, a black shadow came smashing from top to bottom.

"Bam!"

Without being able to stop it, Mu Yuesheng watched in horror as a thick book slammed heavily onto Speechless's head.

"Ouch!"

Speechless cried out in an exaggerated manner. He reached out his hand to cover his head as he yelled, "Damn it girl. Do you really want to murder your brother?"

The silver-haired girl was standing beside Mu Yuesheng. She was holding a book with both hands. Her eyes were slightly red and as she bit her lower lip, she stared angrily at Speechless.

When she saw Speechless's left chest penetrated from a distance,

she was horrified of the possibility that she would be losing a loved one. It nearly gave her a mental breakdown. She struggled to rush forward but when she was running midway, she realized that Speechless had not died. However, she did not know how bad his injuries were or if his life was in danger. As she could not tell if it was momentary recovery before death, her worried heart felt like it was in her throat.

Only when she approached did she realize that Speechless appeared to be in good shape. He was still making stupid jokes as per normal.

Her heart which suddenly felt eased immediately produced complex emotions as her chest could not rest easy.

The silver-haired girl was very, very, very angry!

She wanted to angrily yell at Speechless, "Why did you not cherish your life!? Do you know how worried I was!?"

However, she could not open her mouth or speak. The emotions that had rushed to her throat seemed like a surge that was attempting to break through a valve. She wanted to yell while disregarding everything, but her reason clenched her throat tightly.

Why?

Why did she need to bury the voice in her heart in the deepest

recesses of her soul?

Hot tears rolled down her eyes at that moment. They streamed down incessantly over her ice-cold face. She did not want to cry, but the aggrieved feelings she had, had completely destroyed her tear ducts.

Speechless sighed helplessly. He did not know how complicated the silver-haired girl's emotions were. He only thought that she was crying because she was worried. He was momentarily unsure how he could console her.

Ever since their parents divorced, they had never met each other for several years. This sister who had endless things to say to him seemed to have many things he did not know about, as well as secrets she did not want him to know of.

However, Shi Xiaobai happened to know the secret that the silver-haired girl had, which she did not want Speechless to know. That biting of her lower lip, the streaming tears and the aggrieved crying, coupled with the appearance of having to force herself not to make a sound pricked at Shi Xiaobai's heart.

This girl that was like an easily shattered crystal always made his heart ache for her.

Shi Xiaobai immediately turned his body sideways. Adjusting his body, he reached out his empty right hand and held the fair and exquisite cheek. Lightly and slowly, he gently wiped her tears.

The silver-haired girl turned her head sideways and looked into Shi Xiaobai's pained eyes. An indescribable feeling emerged from her heart. It was sour and warm, but it made her feel even more aggrieved. However, the grievance was different from the painful aggrieved feeling from before.

The silver-haired girl was momentarily stunned.

Speechless was immediately rendered speechless. The plot wasn't right as he sensed the evil intentions of the author.

"Hey, Shi Xiaobai, are you going to hit on my sister in front of me?"

Speechless only felt vexed over his serious injuries, else he would have pulled out a sword to fight it out with Shi Xiaobai.

Why don't you marry her if you want to hit on her!?

That's not right. Even if he wanted to marry her, the way he hit on her was against the bro code!

At that moment, Sunless, Pulp Farmer and the rest finally arrived. They immediately saw the strange scene of Shi Xiaobai embracing the severely injured Speechless with one hand, while wiping the tears of the silver-haired girl with the other.

The Pulp Farmer trio looked at each other and secretly gave Shi Xiaobai a big thumbs up.

Mu Yuesheng gaped and took a worried glance at Sunless.

Sunless, who remained expressionless as per usual, was looking at Shi Xiaobai. Her eyes looked calm and she looked composed.

The silver-haired girl was finally jolted awake as her cheeks flushed red. She hurriedly took a step back and used her hands to wipe the remnant streaks of tears. She lowered her head in embarrassment before looking up to give Speechless an angry stare. After that, she gave a fleeting glance at Shi Xiaobai before lowering her head and stared at her shoes.

When Speechless saw this, he could not help but laugh out loud. However, it caused his wounds to hurt which resulted in him gnashing his teeth with a yelp.

When the rest saw how Speechless remained energetic despite his serious injuries, they immediately felt relieved. Liu Yu volunteered himself to help Speechless bandage him up.

Everyone seemed to forget an important matter.

Only when the blond youth in the distance suddenly raised the invisible sword that didn't exist!

"Be careful!"

Shi Xiaobai exclaimed as everyone reacted in surprise. They quickly entered a battle ready pose.

According to the rules of the life-and-death battle between the three kings, Speechless was still alive, and Shi Xiaobai had yet to fight. The battle was far from over.

And it appeared as though the blond youth had lost his patience.

The group had serious expressions on their faces, but they spontaneously took a step forward.

The blond youth in front of them was an imitation of the Hero King. He had cracked the seemingly perfect Mirror Replication and had used a single strike to crush Speechless. His immense power far exceeded their imaginations.

It could be imagined that even if they had charged up together, there was a very high chance of them failing to be the blond youth's match. But at that very moment, as trial-takers from the same human world, none of them chose to retreat.

The group made preparations to engage in a battle that needed their all. At that moment, the blond youth suddenly slashed the sword he had lifted up!

However, the direction in which the blond youth was slashing at was not in their direction!

A blazing fiery sword beam slashed at the giant who was sitting in the distance!

The giant gave a disdainful smile of mockery. Waving his gigantic right hand, he smacked at the fiery sword beam that struck him!

"Pu!"

The burning fiery sword was swept by the giant and was immediately extinguished like a punctured ball. Under the billowing dark smoke, not a single mark was left on his tough flesh.

The giant suddenly had a drastic change in expression as he roared.

"Celestial Fire!?"

...

The fiery sword beam that the blond youth slashed out was no ordinary sword beam, nor was it any ordinary flame. The giant noticed the familiar aura in the flames from a brief encounter with it.

The Transcendence Holy Tree that was burned down exuded a similar aura.

That was the aura of Celestial Fire!

From what the giant knew, only the ruling Celestial King, who had inherited the power of the Celestial King, was able to use the power of Celestial Fire. That was the reason why he adamantly believed that the Transcendence Holy Tree was destroyed by the Celestial King. He did not heed any of the suspicious clues that led to the battle.

But at that moment, the blond youth had nonchalantly slashed at him with Celestial Fire. The giant's firm belief and knowledge immediately collapsed like a skyscraper.

"Do you get it? The person who burned down the Transcendence Holy Tree was me."

The blond youth said without any expression.

That was the reason for him slashing out that strike.

It was a miscalculation on his part for not being able to kill Speechless with the power of Sword Soul because he never expected Speechless's heart to be on the right side.

However, he was in no hurry to follow up his momentary victory with a hot pursuit and kick Speechless while he was down.

That was because in his eyes, Speechless was already a dead man. As for the black-haired youth that was caring for Speechless by his side was also going to die soon. He did not mind waiting a little longer.

Therefore, he turned his gaze to the giant that was watching by the side.

The new Transcendent King was also a target he wanted to kill. However, the new king did not seem to believe that he was the mastermind behind the burning of the Transcendence Holy Tree.

Therefore, he slashed out that strike. That strike that could be mistaken as Celestial Fire was the one that burned down the Transcendence Holy Tree. Hence, he was not worried that the new Transcendent King would remain stupid and ignorant.

That strike was the best evidence.

"So it was you!"

The giant roared in anger and immediately stood up. It caused the ground to quake incessantly.

The blond youth said in a deadpan manner, "Angry? Then kill me. Here's a suggestion. Join forces with the Infernal King over there, or this battle will end in a very boring manner."

The arrogant words were said in an emotionless and calm tone. It

was as though he was depicting an objective fact. It was even more vexing than arrogance.

When the giant heard him, he was immediately incensed to the limit!

"What arrogance and shamelessness, This King will definitely squash you into a pancake!"

The giant roared before turning his head to shout at Shi Xiaobai, "He's mine. You are not to do anything!"

It was clearly beneath the giant's dignity to join forces with Shi Xiaobai. Even though his reason told him that it was the best choice, but anger and pride demanded that he kill and smash the shameless enemy alone.

The giant's words were similar to what Speechless had said. It made Shi Xiaobai laugh helplessly. He naturally would not join forces with the giant. If he wanted to fight the blond youth, it had to be a one-on-one battle.

Of course, he did not mind waiting a little longer as taking care of the severely injured Speechless was of utmost importance.

The giant's eyes shimmered when he noticed that Shi Xiaobai did not mind.

In fact, instinctively, he wished that the Infernal King could join

forces with him. That was because the power of the Sword Soul that the blond youth had previously used had caused him to feel his life being threatened despite the distance as well.

That was a power that could very likely kill him.

However, the hatred that was a result of losing the Transcendence Holy Tree, the dignity of a king and his unbridled ambition immediately made him abandon the laughable thought.

"If this battle cannot be won, how would I prove that the race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world?"

The giant's eyes turned firm once again.

"Ever since I was born, I was in the fourth Transcendent form. Just paying a tiny price would allow me to enter the fifth form. If I was driven to a corner, I could enter the mindless devil-like state of the sixth form. Even that strike from before would be easily withstood. So what do I have to fear!?"

With that thought in mind, the giant took a step towards the blond youth.

The might of a single step shook the heaven and earth.

The blond youth readied himself by raising his sword and said, "Are you ready to die?"

The giant laughed in his anger, "The one dying will be you!"

Without any additional exchange of words or need to play up the situation, the battle began instantly.

The giant took large strides as his massive body resembled a moving mountain. He did not speed up but approached at an adequate pace. Every step he took caused the ground to quake.

The thirty thousand audience held their breaths while Shi Xiaobai and company widened their eyes. They stared with unaverted gazes at the battle that was about to break out.

It was definitely going to be a shocking battle.

No one knew the strength of the giant that was far stronger than King Leonis or how many hidden cards he hid.

As for the blond youth, his strength was even more unfathomable.

"Watch well. This battle is destined to be unforgettable. Pay attention to every detail of the battle. It will definitely benefit all of you greatly."

Speechless said to the people beside him with a solemn expression.

He was the person who understood the blond youth's strength the most. Also, in the clash of attacks previously, he knew very well of the giant's powerful strength.

The power of the Sword Soul could not be used continuously. Even the real Hero King needed to rest for a moment before he could use the power of the Sword Soul a second time.

How many hidden cards would the blond youth, who was temporarily unable to use the power of the Sword Soul, use against the infuriated and serious giant? How many techniques would he be forced to use?

A look of anticipation flashed in Speechless's eyes.

Shi Xiaobai clenched his fists. His eyes were focused on the blond youth and he was unwilling to miss any detail. He believed and hoped that the blond youth would obtain victory in the battle. But if that happened, it meant that he would be next to battle the blond youth.

Such an opponent with immense power made him nervous, but it also ignited his fighting spirit and excited him.

Against the giant, whose physical toughness was unbelievably powerful, what choice would the Hero King's imitation make? What sort of sword technique would he use? How much time would he need to clinch victory?

As Shi Xiaobai pondered over it, he remained excited with anticipation.

Suddenly, the blond youth moved!

It was fine if he didn't move, but a single movement of his was stunning!

"So fast!"

'So fast' was definitely not enough to describe the blond youth who suddenly moved. In just a blink of an eye, the blond youth who remained silent in his original spot had traversed ten kilometers. He was flying in mid-air as if he was a golden beam of lightning!

Unlike his battle with Speechless, the blond youth did not choose to produce sword attacks from a distance. Instead, he had suddenly moved and appeared in front of the giant that was striding towards him!

He leaped up high and with his hands appearing to hold a sword, he looked like the blinding moment when the morning sun emerged.

"Courting death!"

The giant was similarly astounded by the blond youth's stunning speed and fearsome attacking stance. But he immediately recovered his composure. While feeling incensed, he also felt crazily delighted.

This foolish and arrogant fly took the initiative to enter a melee battle with him?

When had the Transcendents ever been afraid of a melee battle!?

The giant laughed out maniacally as he suddenly stretched out his hand to smack down at the blond youth who had leaped into the air. It was as though he was swatting an irritating fly!

The giant's strength was outrageously strong. The strength from the swat of his right hand stirred up a storm. As the wind howled, his black shadow shrouded the blond youth that had temporarily stopped in mid-air!

If the youth was the dazzling dawn, that strike was like a gloomy cloud that shrouded the sky!

"Phew!"

As the black shadow swept past, it was like white clouds that dispersed. The dazzling figure vanished in mid-air!

"He disappeared!?"

The audience that was in front of the giant exclaimed.

"So...so fast. What exactly happened!?"

The spectators that were behind the giant were equally astonished.

This was because at the instant the giant smashed his palm, the blond youth had disappeared and appeared behind the giant. His speed was astonishing and there was no way to tell what he had done.

Or could it be said that he did not do a thing?

All he did was simply leap past the giant's body?

"No!"

As the audience was still reveling in shock, it heard the giant suddenly roar out angrily.

The roar was filled with anger, regret, disbelief and deep hatred!

And with the roar, an appalling scene unfolded. The giant's gigantic head began sliding down his neck and crashed to the ground with a loud thud!

Boiling hot blood spewed out from the flat and smooth broken neck like an erupting volcano. The cleaved neck ejected blood to the heavens as it sprayed onto the ground. It dyed the burning hot basin into an ice-cold dark red.

"Boom!"

After the giant lost his head, his massive body fell back as though a mountain had collapsed!

The giant died just like that? With his head separated from his body, he had died in such an inexplicable manner!?

There was total silence. Everyone watched aghast, finding the scene before their eyes unbelievable.

The blond youth had slashed out. However, due to the non-existence of the sword, that strike could not be discerned. However, just this lightning-fast strike had instantly cleaved off the giant's head!

This was completely unexpected. No one expected that the blond youth who fought Speechless for more than ten minutes finished the battle in a few seconds.

No one thought that the massive giant, with his bold ambitions of killing the Infernal King and Celestial King to prove that the race of the Transcendents was the strongest race, could not even

handle a single strike.

The giant did not expect that his defense he had been so proud of could not withstand that simple and unimpressive strike, If he knew that it would result in such an outcome, he would definitely have used his sixth form from the beginning.

But there were no ifs in this world.

The giant did not use his sixth form. He lost all chances of using even the fifth form. With a regretful roar, he died in pain.

The new Transcendent king was beheaded!

"Hey, that can't be. Is this just a fantasy?"

Feng Yuanlin's voice trembled as he nearly bit his tongue.

Speechless' eyes turned slightly torpid as a wry smile suffused across his lips. He said, "That bastard is terrifyingly strong. He spent ten minutes to crack my Mirror Replication only because of his damn repulsiveness. If he had used such a sudden strike at me, my head would have probably dropped off."

It was unbelievable that the imitation of the Hero King was so powerful.

Did the assessment program crazily enhance its strength when it

created the counterfeit?

Or did the real Hero King possess such terrifying power at that age?

If it was the latter, then Speechless, who thought that he could imitate to the point of surpassing the Hero King, was indeed too naive!

Everyone was immersed in shock. The audience was still in a daze. Many people cast their eyes at the composed blond youth that did not have a drop of blood that stained him.

He was strolling calmly. His posture did not seem elegant, but neither was it uncouth. It was ever so composed as though he was strolling leisurely on a tiny path in the woods.

The blond youth slowly walked to a clean plot of ground that was not covered in blood. Then, he turned to face Shi Xiaobai.

He remained expressionless and his eyes were calm. His beheading of the giant in a single strike was as though he had done something trivial.

He slowly opened his mouth and whispered, "Now that you are the only one left, Your Majesty, the Infernal King. Do you plan on obediently accepting your death or do you want to struggle a bit before dying?"

Everyone was jolted awake and immediately cast their eyes at the black-haired youth that was surrounded by a number of people.

That was the strongest person in the Infernal domain. He was the Infernal King, one of the three kings. He had bravely suggested the life-and-death battle between the three kings. Furthermore, he was able to tie the Celestial King and new Transcendent King in battle.

Without a doubt, the Infernal King was very powerful.

However, there was only one thought in the minds of the thirty-thousand-strong audience—the Infernal King was doomed.

The Celestial King had his chest pierced. If not for him being born with a heart on his right side, he would have died. And even if he had managed to survive, he would probably not escape the impending death.

The new Transcendent King had been instantly beheaded.

So what if he was the Infernal King?

In front of the unfathomably strong blond youth who killed without batting an eyelid, the Infernal King appeared as weak as paper.

"Run, Your Majesty!"

"Quickly run!"

"Your Majesty, do not accept the battle!"

The spectators from the Infernal domain cried out. They were afraid that their respected king would end up miserably like the giant.

Even if he would be ridiculed as a coward that ran away in fear, it was better than dying!

"Quickly run, Your Highness!"

The ready Shi Xiaobai, who had already stood up slowly with the black-and-white sword clenched tightly in his right hand, was left stunned when he heard the Infernal commoners' shouts.

At that moment, Mu Yuesheng could not help but anxiously say, "Shi Xiaobai, don't face him in battle."

Feng Yuanlin, Pulp Farmer, and Liu Yu said as well, "Shi Xiaobai, don't be rash!"

Speechless sighed and looked up while saying, "Shi Xiaobai, use the exit command."

Shi Xiaobai shook his head in silence.

He suddenly felt the sleeves on both sides being tugged at. Turning his head in surprise, he saw Sunless standing on his right, while the silver-haired girl was standing on his left. They were simultaneously pulling at his sleeves, shaking their heads with worried looks.

Even Sunless, who seldom revealed any emotion, revealed a rare look of worry.

They were frightened by the blond youth's one-shot of the giant. They were afraid that Shi Xiaobai would also be beheaded by such an attack. If he could not react in time, the exit command could not even save his life.

If Shi Xiaobai were to accept the battle, there was a very high chance of him being defeated, or even him dying!

Just thinking of Shi Xiaobai being decapitated was enough to make the two girls that could be called proud daughters of heaven feel like the world was crumbling down.

"This King won't die."

Shi Xiaobai looked seriously at the group and said with a certain tone, "This King might be defeated, but This King will definitely not die."

Everyone was taken aback, but clearly they did not believe him.

The corners of Shi Xiaobai's mouth slowly formed a smile. His eyes burned as bright as the stars. His fighting spirit flared like the mid-summer sun.

"This King is very happy."

Shi Xiaobai looked at the blond youth in the distance. As though he was in reverie, he whispered, "This King is very happy to be able to encounter such a powerful opponent. After witnessing that strike, the strike that defeated Speechless, This King is already so excited that he can't control himself. After seeing that strike, the strike that killed the giant, every cell in This King's body is quivering, shouting and throbbing. This King wishes to battle him. No, it's not a wish, it's a desire. A desire that comes from the soul."

"This King would not be obsessed with victory, nor would This King be afraid of failure. This King only wants to fight him with all his strength in a jubilant battle. This King wants to be his opponent and to not let down the swords in This King's hand. This King wants to examine himself and know how much strength he possesses."

"This King might be defeated in this battle, but This King will definitely not run. This King knows what you are worried about. This King also knows that there's a possibility of dying in this battle, but This King is not afraid of death, nor will This King die."

"No, This King will not only survive, but This King also wants to win."

"No, This King will definitely win!"

Shi Xiaobai grinned. His smile was as glaring as sunlight.

"This King is omnipotent because This King is fearless!"

Everyone was left stunned and remained silent for a prolonged period of time. Sunless and the silver-haired girl subconsciously released their hands.

He was omnipotent. Because he was fearless.

He was such a youth.

He could not create miracles.

Because he was a miracle in itself.

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked forward. With the black-and-white sword in hand, he was dressed in light clothing. He did not wear any armor, making him look like a king who had just descend from his throne. Yet, the king was walking to the enemy encampment with a smile.

He was not afraid of failure or death. He was not afraid of anything.

He was fearless which was why he was omnipotent!

Everyone's eyes landed on him. Even the spectators from the Celestial domain and Transcendence felt shaken at that moment.

"Come on. This King looks forward to this battle."

Shi Xiaobai was feeling excited. With a thirty-thousand-strong audience, an opponent worthy of respect, it was a battle worth fighting with his life. What else could one look forward to?

"Make your choice, youth!"

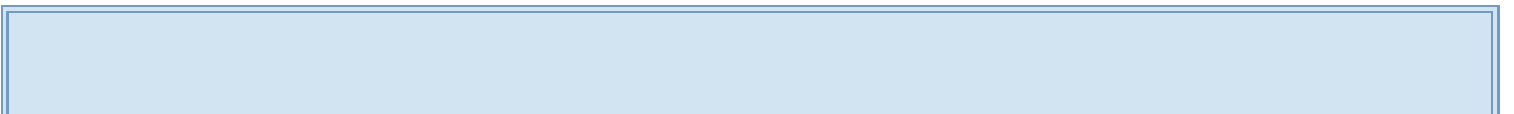
A familiar fiery voice suddenly rang in Shi Xiaobai's mind!

Shi Xiaobai's fiery chest instantly turned cold. His excited mind suddenly short-circuited as though a basin of cold water had been splashed on him.

Time was fixed as the world in front of him was completely still.

A few lines of black text gradually materialized in front of him.

Shi Xiaobai felt an ominous feeling as he faced the few lines of black text as though he was looking death calmly in the eye.



[Choice 1: In thirty seconds, shout loudly to Sunless Ye: "Love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple—Ye Sunless, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"]

[Choice 2: In thirty seconds, shout loudly to Speechless Li: "Love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple—Li Speechless, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"]

[Choice 3: In thirty seconds, shout loudly to Mu Lengxi: "Love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple—Mu Lengxi, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"]

[Choice 4: In thirty seconds, shout loudly to Dawn Li: "Love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple—Li Dawn, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a "Mischief-style choice" where only the choice is performed. No reward.)

"Make your choice, youth!"

...

Chapter 434: The Fifth Path

[Choice 1: In thirty seconds, shout loudly to Sunless Ye: "Love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple—Ye Sunless, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"]

[Choice 2: In thirty seconds, shout loudly to Speechless Li: "Love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple—Li Speechless, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"]

[Choice 3: In thirty seconds, shout loudly to Mu Lengxi: "Love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple—Mu Lengxi, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"]

[Choice 4: In thirty seconds, shout loudly to Dawn Li: "Love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or

even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple—Li Dawn, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a "Mischief-style choice" where only the choice is performed. No reward.)

"Make your choice, youth!"

The fiery voice constantly resounded in his mind like a demon's chanting. Shi Xiaobai was flabbergasted when he saw the black text in front of him.

His impassioned feelings had been figuratively doused with an ominous splash that seemed to extinguish his burning feelings by the familiar voice that resounded in his mind. However, he never expected the situation to be that 'wicked'.

Shi Xiaobai always had a love and hate relationship with the 'Absolute Choice'. The Absolute Choice would occasionally 'naughtily' give him mischievous choices like 'asking Hisith for his underwear or first kiss' or 'confessing to Kali or mock her flat chest'. It would usually change a great situation into an awkward one. Also, there were many times when time repeated that allowed him to painfully repeat many heart-wrenching scenes. From a particular point of view, the Absolute Choice played a 'wicked' role.

But without the Absolute Choice, he would have missed many

important people in his life or leave behind irredeemable regrets.

Due to the existence of the Absolute Choice, Shi Xiaobai had successfully saved Little Fatso, Chen Lingcun, and the rookies on the sixth level. He had resolved the danger of Kali's raging corruption. All of this had ended in a tragic failure originally, but thanks to the Absolute Choice's ability to reset time, he had ended them with a miracle.

Therefore, in the balance of love and hate, Shi Xiaobai did not lean on either side.

But this time, Shi Xiaobai slightly wavered.

Just moments ago, he had just said passionate words that made one's blood boil in excitement. Even his passion had moved himself.

And at this moment, he had to loudly shout such ridiculous lines in thirty seconds.

Love can conquer all?

Are you willing to be a side hoe?

Those lines really hurt, dude.

Although this was the first time four choices had appeared, the

contents of the choices were very similar. All it changed was the target of 'confession'.

The first choice of Sunless Ye was reasonable. By hardening his conscience to be a two-timing playboy, he just needed to think of a way to explain it to Kali, and he would be able to enjoy the joys of life. Although Sunless might not know the meaning behind 'side hoe', or even if she knew, she would not mind or reject it. As for the selfless Kali, she would definitely choose to bear with it. That was a path that led to being a scum reveling in sexual pleasure.

The second choice of Speechless Li was completely absurd. Although the lines used the words, 'This King's love for you transcends age, sex' as a qualifier, trying to twist nonexistent homosexual feelings into 'magnanimous love' was something his mind and body could not accept, having ignored the possibility of it not having any chance of success. If he later used a forced explanation that 'it was all a joke', it would incur the suspicion of others. It was obvious that this was a self-destructive path that would gross out both others and himself.

The third choice of Mu Lengxi might be the best choice. This name had previously appeared second on the official forecast of the top ten rookies. It was ranked only after Speechless and the reason of selection was only a single line of 'Beijing super rookie'. As a super rookie among super rookies, Mu Lengxi was extremely mysterious. There was no information on her appearance or features, and there was no way to learn of it. But at this moment, they were already at the seventh level, and removing any other noisy factors, it was already clear who Mu Lengxi was. Shi Xiaobai had guessed a long time ago and had just received confirmation that the silver-haired girl with the black-rimmed glasses who was

immersed in reading books was the mysterious Mu Lengxi.

If he said the line to the silver-haired girl, Mu Lengxi, it would be more likely that it would be considered as a form of 'hitting on her' or a joke. As they did not know each other for that long, their shared experiences were few and far between. The feelings that they had for each other were far from reaching the stage of 'confession'. The line could be passed off as a joke. However, by doing so, he might cause Mu Lengxi to bear a grudge deep in her heart. It would also create an awkward situation, which was also an unknown question. However, the bitter fruit was not as bitter as the first two choices. This was a selfish path that would allow him to pay the smallest price but the damage was unknown.

The fourth choice of Dawn Li was probably the biggest joke the Absolute Choice was pulling. Dawn Li was the blond youth in front of him. He was an imitation of the Hero King created by the assessment program. It was a fake existence so it had nothing to do with a 'confession'. However, Dawn's setting seemed to perfectly match the qualifiers of age, sex, and space-time transmigration. It would be even more perfect if the qualifiers of transcending reality and virtuality were included. The Absolute Choice's true motive was to make him choose the fourth choice. However, wasn't it a bit exaggerated to choose to confess to a counterfeit of a legendary figure from three millennia ago? That was practically a crazy path only a mindless fool would choose.

Scum, self-destruction, selfish, crazy.

That was the true meaning behind the four choices.

Despite Shi Xiaobai having completely analyzed the true meaning behind the four choices, he knew that any path would end up in disaster. However, he had to make a choice. As it was a mischief-style choice, he needed to complete the choice in thirty seconds. If he did not, time would rewind and he would have to make a choice again.

He had once attempted to revolt against the mischief-style choice, but after experiencing several meaningless time resets, he understood that there was a need to complete the choice.

Regardless of how reluctant he was, he had to compromise. That was the hideous face of the mischief-style choices.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai recalled the nickname he had used in the virtual world—IChooseDogLeading (I'd rather choose death).

However, Shi Xiaobai was not one who compromised with 'absolutes'.

"Where is the fifth path?"

Shi Xiaobai's black pair of eyes tried to search for the faint light in the darkness.

Chapter 435: If Shi Xiaobai Confessed

"How stirring. His Majesty's words have stirred me up."

"What a impressive line of 'This King is omnipotent because This King is fearless'. Who knew that the Infernal King has such a passionate side to him."

"The Celestial King was utterly defeated, the new Transcendent King has died. Despite such circumstances, the Infernal King, who knows he doesn't have much chance of victory, still chooses to unsheathe his sword and proceed forward bravely. It's too cool. Although I am from the Celestial domain, at this moment, I want to shout to the Infernal King, all the best!"

"Revenge, we need to seek revenge for our dead king. We implore you Infernal King!"

"All the best, Infernal King!"

Above the basin, the attitude Shi Xiaobai had when he was facing the upcoming battle and the impassioned speech he gave broke the silence. The thirty-thousand-strong audience could not help but cry out. It might have been the stirring of their deepest feelings or to cheer the Infernal King on, or hoping that the Infernal King would avenge the new Transcendent King who died tragically. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was the center of attention.

Speechless could not help but suffuse a smile as he stared at Shi Xiaobai's back. He muttered, "He is a youth deserving of being the

apple of This Emperor's eye."

Mu Yuesheng, who was supporting Speechless, heard the words he muttered and immediately recalled the scene of Shi Xiaobai embracing the injured Speechless. It was quite a strange and very harmonious scene, so she could not help but mock him, "I heard you recently rejected Princess Jasmine's confession, causing quite a stir in China. You nearly hit the headlines of China Daily."

"Hey, that Princess Jasmine is considered as a one in a millennium rare genius in the field of academia. Her IQ is 190 and ranked third in all of history. In terms of her looks, she is no worse than Sunless. Her family background is even higher than you as the heir to the Li family."

"At just the age of fourteen, she got a Nobel Prize in Science. At the award ceremony that was to enter the annals of history, she recited a touching confession to you. It stirred the entire world. People said that the two of you are the most compatible pairing in the world, and that the both of you would date under the watchful eyes of the world."

"But who knew that, you gave the nice person card the next day, and said that you were very touched before rejecting Princess Jasmine's confession. Everyone cursed you for being blind to the bliss just beside you. They were even guessing how excellent a girl needed to be in order to catch your eye."

"I was wondering why you could even bear rejecting Princess Jasmine, but upon careful thought, it seems like the number of girls you have rejected is uncountable. Brother Speechless, could it

be...that you like men?"

To be able to reject Princess Jasmine who had such excellent qualities and not be moved by all the excellent girls that pursued him, it was clearly not what a normal teenager would do, unless he was not normal.

For example, his sexual orientation.

In combination with the words, 'youth deserving of being the apple of This Emperor's eye', one would naturally produce such a strange thought.

Speechless rolled his eyes. But seeing how Mu Yuesheng began to subconsciously believe her own ridiculous suggestion, to the point of becoming serious and flustered, he could not help but turn playful.

Therefore, he purposely said seriously, "I have never seen that Jasmine even once before. We never had any contact either. She suddenly confessed to me and the so-called liking for me is just absurd."

"It's unknown why she suddenly had the thought to confess, so I naturally had to reject her. But on careful thought, I have also rejected a few playmates I grew up with. I always believed that I had high standards and had yet to meet someone I truly like, so I refused to compromise."

"But now, after hearing what you said, I suddenly realized that it might not be the truth. It seems like I really do not have much interest in females. Instead, after hearing Shi Xiaobai's words, my heart began to beat quickly. Could it be..."

When Mu Yuesheng heard that, she immediately turned pale from fright. She looked at Speechless in panic and shook her head frantically, "An illusion. All of this is an illusion..."

"No, it's not an illusion."

Speechless said with a firm look as he said with certainty, "Little Yue, thank you for enlightening me! I finally realize my true feelings! We can ask ourselves—if the person confessing to me is Shi Xiaobai, will I be able to reject him? The answer is actually...I can't."

Mu Yuesheng felt like she was struck by lightning. She felt like she had accidentally opened Pandora's box and was feeling panicked and regretful for it.

Speechless said with a laugh, "Haha, don't worry. It's just one-sided. Shi Xiaobai is constantly hitting on girls, so his sexual orientation is definitely normal. How could he confess to me?"

Mu Yuesheng immediately felt that she was being too detestable for her to make such a joke without thinking.

The more she thought, the more regretful she felt. Her eyes

gradually turned red.

When Speechless noticed that Mu Yuesheng was about to tear, he was given a fright.

Damn it, the joke had gone too far.

His sexual orientation was of course normal. The reason why he had rejected the confessions of so many girls was because he had very high standards. Secondly, the Hero King had remained single his entire life. It appeared like he did not have any close confidant either. As his imitation, he naturally needed to imitate that impressive ability of withstanding loneliness.

The words he previously said were because of his momentary playfulness. But he had really given Mu Yuesheng a fright. It could not go on further or it would be disastrous if it was taken for the truth.

Speechless quickly opened his mouth and was prepared to explain that he had pushed the joke too far.

At that moment, a voice that overwhelmed all noise suddenly resounded in the sky. It caused everyone to voluntarily quieten down.

"This King has always believed that love can conquer all!"

The black-haired youth who was the center of attention lifted his

head up and said in a manner close to shouting.

No one could ignore his voice. They all quieted down and listened to his words. But no one knew why the youth would suddenly say such words. Speechless and Mu Yuesheng also looked at him curiously as they pricked up their ears.

"This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration!"

It was not a mindless shout, but expressed like it was the sounds of his heartbeat.

Everyone could not help but stare with widened eyes.

That line?

Was it a confession?

"And all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. That step is truly simple!"

Ah!

It was really a confession!

What a touching and deep-moving confession!

Who was he confessing to?

A selfless love that could transcend everything, as long as the other party took a gentle step forward. Who was it said to?

Sunless' hand trembled. Her intuition told her that it wasn't her, but her persistently calm heart was suddenly stirred. It was like a wind had blown across the still surface of a lake. There was no end to the ripples that were produced.

Who was it. Who was he saying this to? Was it to his alleged girlfriend?

All she cared about was swords and him, and she could ignore everything else.

But why...why did she suddenly find her chest heavy and eyes turning red?

Chapter 436: What Is Your Goal?

Mu Lengxi lowered her head slightly. She knew that it could not be her, but she suddenly found it hard to breathe.

So it was not just a simple, favorable impression of him on her part? She felt like she was sinking in warmth and immersed in a pool of honey. She was at a loss when she was inundated by bliss and she did not want to wake up from it.

However, her state of reverie was ultimately shattered ruthlessly by reality. For a girl like her who could not even make a sound, or a dangerous existence that could suddenly explode like a bomb, how could she have the right to revel in the dream she created for herself.

It was impossible that she was his confession target. She did not even have the courage to have such extravagant hopes.

However, she pricked up her ears that she had subconsciously covered to escape that fact. It was a strange dilemma of her not wishing to know, but eager to know as well. Who was that lucky girl that would be the center of envy?

It was not only limited to Sunless or Mu Lengxi. Nearly everyone held their breaths at that moment and pricked up their ears. They were waiting for the sentence the youth had yet to finish.

Before he fought an opponent that had little chance of victory, the outcome of failure could very well be ice-cold death. It was

such a moving act to express his love in such a hot, heart-fluttering manner before that happened.

A confession under the watchful gaze of Death symbolized the importance of life and soul.

Then, who was the target of the confession?

At that moment, everyone was waiting for...her name.

The youth slowly opened his lips, as a gentle but deep voice sprang out into sky like a pixie.

"Li..."

The person's surname was revealed at that instant.

To Speechless and Mu Yuesheng, time seemed to come to a standstill. That short instant in time felt like an eternal blistering cold winter.

"That can't be!"

Speechless' body felt a jolt through him as cold sweat broke out on his back. Was that twisted joke he made about to be suddenly inundated by black humor?

Mu Yuesheng's heart leaped. She could not help but flash a scene of two young boys who she respected and idolized in a loving embrace. Then, she thought in agony over whether she should give them her blessings or take up a pitchfork and torch in her hands.

The answer was only revealed from the youth's name after what seemed like a prolonged winter night.

"Dawn."

Everyone was astounded as they could not believe what they had heard.

Li Dawn.

This was her name.

Eh, that's not right!?

Her?

Her...

"Ah!?"

Nearly everyone let out a flabbergasted gasp at the same time!

Dawn Li, this feminine-sounding name was not a girl's name. Instead, it was the name of the expressionless and machine-like blond youth that had injured the Celestial King and killed the new Transcendent King with a single strike.

It's not her, but him!

Was this the love that was meant to transcend everything, including sex?

Everyone was enlightened but they felt like they had just woken from a dream, only to end up in a nightmare.

However, that was not the only terrifying reality!

That was because the youth was not done with his words. He did not wait for everyone to digest the stunning information that he had just revealed. Immediately, he said something even more shocking.

"This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?"

The youth's words came to a halt, and it also felt like they had washed away all sounds.

This King has always believed that love can conquer all. This King's love for you transcends age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. And all you need to do is take that tiny step

forward. That step is truly simple—Li Dawn, This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe?

This was a passage with no more than sixty words, but it was a confession filled with information.

After listening to this short confession, everyone's felt like their hearts had been sitting on a roller coaster.

Those that were initially in an envious state over the love that transcended everything had felt that it must have been a pure and grand love, but their reverie was shattered by the sudden name of 'Li Dawn'. Their hearts screamed 'holy shit', but then, they were immediately left stupefied and speechless by the line 'This King already has a girlfriend, are you willing to be a side hoe'.

The world was large, so there was no lack of fascinating matters, but such a wondrous oddity was unprecedented!

Gay?

Bisexual?

Two-timing?

Super scum that would boldly ask a youth of the same sex to be his side hoe?

Was this the same Infernal King that had just spoken such impassioned words!?

"It's completely subversive. The Infernal King is indeed an Infernal King that must be killed by all."

"It can't be? It must be some malicious joke, right?"

"Hey, Commander, should I quickly return and inform the matter to the Infernal Queen? Who knew that His Majesty would..."

"..."

An uproar broke out among the ordinary members of the audience from the three domains. From what they knew, the Infernal King's wife was said to have a beauty that could topple kingdoms. She was known as the number one beauty in the world, but the Infernal King had publicly requested a youth of the same sex to be his side hoe. Although they did not know why the Infernal King would call his wife a 'girlfriend', they could not help but feel disgust over his 'shamelessness'.

Such an Infernal King was too much of a scum!

After a moment of shock, Sunless quickly calmed down. The heavy feeling on her chest gradually disappeared. Her eyes returned to its calm state as she said with great certainty, "He is not such a person!"

When the rookies beside her who were also immersed in shock heard her, they gradually calmed down. The silver-haired girl immediately nodded her head heavily to indicate how she shared the same thoughts.

Liu Yu flicked his whisk and said softly, "From Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's various actions, there is no doubt he has an awe-inspiring righteousness. He has always been a youth with a forthright and innocent heart. This Penniless Priest is unable to tell if there's a problem with his sexual orientation, but he would definitely not say words like 'are you willing to be a side hoe'. He must have his reasons for doing so. That sentence must not be something he truly feels but because he has a motive that we have yet to learn!"

Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin nodded their heads in agreement. "Shi Xiaobai isn't such a person. Furthermore, the Hero King is fake. Shi Xiaobai knows that very well. He must have his difficulties he can't mention."

Mu Yuesheng turned to glance at Speechless. A bitter smile suffused across her lips as she said, "Shi Xiaobai is not like that, but..."

However, there was another youth here that had just come out of the closet and appeared to be giving a covetous look.

Speechless perspired and hurriedly shook his hands, "What I just said was all a joke. Seriously! Actually, not long ago, I encountered a girl I fell in love at first sight. However, after mustering my

courage to confess to her, I was heartlessly rejected. Back then, Lengxi was there as well. You can ask her if you don't believe me!"

Mu Yuesheng squinted her eyes and said, "Really?"

Speechless nodded his head crazily, "Really!"

...

As everyone was reeling in shock over the confession, they still had their eyes and focus on the blond youth.

What sort of reaction would the blond youth have against the sudden request of becoming a side hoe by the 'shameless' Infernal King?

Would he turn extremely furious?

Or would he slash out immediately with a sneer?

The blond youth's reaction completely went beyond everyone's imagination. After hearing Shi Xiaobai's 'confession', he remained expressionless. His eyes were cold. His eyebrows did not even flinch, as though he was unmoved by it.

All he did after a moment of silence was ask in a deadpan manner, "What is your goal?"

Everyone was stunned as they fell silent.

Was that blond youth a machine?

Why was he so terrifyingly calm?

Chapter 437: Lucifer's Sword

Shi Xiaobai, who was looking up into the sky, slowly lowered his head and cast his gaze at the blond youth as the fiery voice said 'Absolute Choice completed' in his mind. He had chosen the fourth choice and chosen what he had analyzed as a 'crazy path'. Now that the choice was completed, he no longer had a chance to make another choice.

This was a path of no return he needed to continue down.

A smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips. He would not regret over a mistaken choice because the mistake was never the choice, but the person who made the choice.

Furthermore, this was the most correct fifth path that he had racked his brains for.

Shi Xiaobai said seriously, "Goal? No, This King is being serious. It comes from the heart."

"Lies."

The blond youth said in a deadpan manner, "You are an existence made out of nothing. You would not have any subjective feelings. Your emotions and psyche have been algorithmized. Everything about you is controlled by your parameter settings. For you to suddenly say such an irksome statement must have been due to the intentions of your creator. So, I'm not asking you, but the program that designed you. What is its goal? Why is it trying to infuriate

me? Or is this just a meaningless joke?"

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback. He was quite surprised at the blond youth's false account of the true facts. From the looks of it, this creation of the assessment program which was designed to be a counterfeit of the Hero King believed that they were the virtual existences that were created.

Indeed, to something fake, reality was the thing that was truly fake.

Shi Xiaobai's smile became more intense as he was more certain that he had made the correct choice. His eyes revealed deep feelings as he gently said, "Even an existence created by a program will generate subjectivity and become an existence that exceeds a program. Dawn Li, This King is fake, but This King is also real. That's because although This King's body is the amalgamation of a program, but his consciousness comes from another world—a world you are familiar with. In that world, This King has always been watching you. It's not for ten years, but for ten lifetimes. After ten rounds of reincarnation, This King has chosen to be an astral consciousness to accompany you by your side, so as to never be away from you. It's just that you were unable to detect This King's gaze. To you, This King is a stranger you met for the first time, but to This King, you are his only faith for ten lifetimes. Even if This King is designated as the Infernal King in this world, and This King has a partner called the Infernal Queen from the very beginning, This King has only loved you alone from the beginning to the end. This King's love can transcend everything, be it age, sex, or even space-time transmigration. It can even transcend reality and virtuality. Although This King is unable to resist the setting of the program and is unable to immediately end the farce

marriage, This King will only call the Infernal Queen his girlfriend and not his wife, because This King's right hand is only open to you. The deepest recesses of This King's heart is only reserved for you. You are the only wife for This King! Dawn Li, all you need to do is take that tiny step forward. This King will give everything he has. Are you willing? Are you willing to become This King's beloved side hoe that will be able to receive everything?"

With that said, the thirty-thousand-strong audience nearly forgot to breathe.

They could not understand what the Infernal King was saying.

What program? What another world?

They did not understand it at all, but they could feel the emotions that filled those words.

A never waning love that lasted for ten lifetimes?

To become a beloved side hoe that will be able to receive everything?

Hey, can a term like side hoe be described in such a beautiful manner?

The rookies that came from the human world could tell that Shi Xiaobai was speaking nonsense in a serious manner when they heard him say 'This King is fake'. However, when they finished

hearing what was obviously a lie, they felt moved for some reason. They even had an illusion of 'could all of this be true'.

That was because the confession was too gentle, emotional and touching.

However, the machine-like blond youth remained unmoved. He focused his gaze on Shi Xiaobai for a few seconds in a deadpan manner. He said emotionlessly, "A perfect lie. You are a very logical cheat with an extremely high emotional quotient. But you may be able to fool the thirty thousand people here, but you cannot fool me. I'm just curious of your goal for doing this. What is the goal of the program to make you do this? I'll give you a last chance to consider it. Be honest or die immediately."

Shi Xiaobai sighed and said, "This King knows you would not easily believe it. However, This King has evidence to prove that This King is not a program that is controlled. This King's love is not a fake lie. This King's eyes have always been on you."

"Evidence?"

The blond youth's eyes were cold as he said, "Then, I'll give you a chance to prove yourself. If you are able to perfect this lie that is filled with holes, to the point of making me believe in it, then I will choose to believe it, even if it is a lie."

"A lie?"

A gentle smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips as he gently said, "Dawn Li, you are not a machine. You have your emotions, but they are sealed within your ice-cold exterior. It is just something you do not want others to see, but This King knows. This King knows the feelings within your heart."

"For example, the ideal woman in your mind wears a long dark-blue dress and silver armor. She would use a dark blue hair band to coil her blond hair up. Her bangs will split in the middle as they roll down the two sides of her white face. Her eyes will be filled with a sense of righteousness, and she would brandish her sword to kill her enemies. She will be cool, but pretty."

"You like such a woman. Do you think that a program will know about this? Do you think anyone else other than you will know? As a fleeting and trivial consciousness, This King has always been accompanying you so This King is the existence that understands you the best."

The blond youth's pupils constricted slightly when he heard this. His eyes finally turned soft as he said coldly, "Although your words are filled with holes, but the woman you described does indeed perfectly match my 'taste'. However, that is something no one should be able to know of."

"How did you know that? Psychological imagery used in Psychology is useless against me. I have never revealed any flaws. How did the program behind you manage to do it? How did it...manage to know what's in my heart!"

Speechless had announced every sword move he used and

narrated his life experiences. Although they were the truth, that was information that many people could easily find out. It was all information recorded in the annals of history. It was not impossible for the assessment program to know of that.

But the deepest thoughts in one's heart such as the ideal woman was something no one else could know except himself.

Therefore, the blond youth that had always been calm, could no longer maintain his absolute composure. That was because he could not figure out how Shi Xiaobai had managed to do it.

Shi Xiaobai said with a chuckle, "In this life, This King has been watching you for more than a decade. If This King doesn't know the feelings you have sealed inside you, then what meaning does This King have to his existence? Of course, you may think that it is a lie or a deceitful trick, but Dawn, This King's evidence is not limited to this."

"The nonexistent sword in your hand actually exists. However, others are unable to discern its existence. If they do not know its true form, there's no way for them to see it. It is such an existence. But This King has always been accompanying you by your side. Therefore, This King is one of the few people that can see it. This King even knows the name you chose for it. You call the sword—Lucifer's Sword!"

Chapter 438: Always Been Stalking You

The blond youth could no longer remain expressionless. His ice-blue eyes flashed a look of disbelief.

"Why, why would you know its name!? I have never told anyone. It was a name I came up with on a whim a month ago. How did you even know?"

The blond youth's tone finally could not remain emotionless. There was a hint of an undetectable agitation. The nonexistent sword's name was something no one else could know except himself!

Shi Xiaobai said with a deep voice, "This King not only knows the name you gave the sword, but in order to vent the torment of yearning, This King paid a terrible price to let that hateful program create Lucifer's Sword! Although it's a fake Lucifer's Sword, This King has always carried it by his side, as if the one accompanying him was you."

With that said, Shi Xiaobai gradually lifted his right hand and said, "Use your eyes and witness This King's yearning!"

A golden beam of light bloomed from Shi Xiaobai's right hand as a sword gradually surfaced out of the golden light!

That was a sword whose blade had an innate golden sheen to it. The sword's hilt had a sacred look of pure whiteness. It did not look particularly special, but it exuded a strange and mysterious

aura.

"Lucifer's Sword!?"

The blond youth widened his eyes suddenly.

The audience who were completely left stupefied during the entire process widened their eyes as well. That was because when the golden sword appeared in Shi Xiaobai's hand, they finally managed to see the true face of the nonexistent sword in the blond youth's hand!

The nonexistent sword actually existed. Only by knowing what it looked like would one be able to discern its existence and finally see it.

And at that moment, upon seeing the golden sword in Shi Xiaobai's hand, they realized the existence of the nonexistent sword!

That nonexistent sword was identical to the golden sword in Shi Xiaobai's hand!

It was completely identical, as though they were made from the same mould. There was no way to tell the difference!

But after a short second, Shi Xiaobai transformed the golden sword in his hand into shattered bits of golden light before it vanished.

"Sorry, This King can only let Lucifer's Sword exist for a second. But this second allows This King's yearning to not be as tormentous. Therefore, This King had created a copy of it at all costs."

Shi Xiaobai's eyes were filled with soft emotions.

The blond youth's eyes gradually lost its luster as his cold and resolute eyes turned flustered for the first time.

To know his inner thoughts.

To know the name he had come up with a month ago on a whim.

To the point of being able to create an identical Lucifer's Sword.

How could a simple program do all of this?

No, it was impossible to accomplish it!

Then, could it be that the Infernal King in front of him who was spouting clear lies actually be speaking the truth?

He had always been observing him from somewhere he could not detect?

"No, it's fake."

The blond youth muttered to himself as his eyes turned cold once again. It was colder than a winter's snowstorm as he coldly said, "You are more powerful than I imagined. Although I have no idea how you did it, your lie is nearly perfect to the point of nearly fooling me, but it is unfortunate. It is very unfortunate that you had a huge flaw from the very beginning. Due to the existence of that flaw, you are unable to perfect your lie! You can't fool me!"

The blond youth's heart seemed to be relieved. He had nearly believed Shi Xiaobai's words, but thankfully, the terrifying cheat had revealed his evil intentions from the very beginning. As long as the mistaken premise remained, then everything that happened after that was still wrong even if it was explained perfectly!

He can't fool him!

A smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips as he said with a nod, "That's right. The clever you obviously discovered the biggest flaw from the beginning. However, that flaw was because This King has been trying to help you keep it a secret. But since it has become your biggest doubt, This King has no choice but to reveal the secret. Therefore, this is the most important piece of evidence."

The blond youth widened his eyes suddenly and could not help but take a step back. He gaped his mouth wide and said, "Impossible, could you have..."

Shi Xiaobai took a step forward and with a fiery gaze, he looked

at the blond youth and said loudly, "The words 'transcends sex' were a completely incorrect premise. It was also the biggest flaw that you saw through at the beginning, but it's a secret This King has been deliberately trying to hide for you! Dawn Li, you possess a feminine name because you are a pretty young girl to begin with! Sorry, your disguise might be able to conceal it from everyone, but it cannot be concealed from This King who has been constantly watching you. This King even knows very clearly that there is a red mole under your right armpit. So how can This King not know that you are actually a pretty young girl?"

Dawn widened his eyes before subconsciously covering his chest. A dramatic change to his cold expression finally appeared on his snow-white face. It was a redness that resembled dusk. His ice-cold eyes were overtaken by the frailness of a young girl. As she bit her lower lip, she gnashed her teeth and said, "Shameless! Pervert!"

No matter how cold and resolute her heart was, to suddenly realize that she was being observed by someone in the dark, with her pure and virgin body being completely seen, to the point of observing a spot as private as beneath her armpit, a sense of gross humiliation could no longer allow her to maintain her calm.

Regardless whose eyes those were, such voyeuristic observation was an intolerable blasphemy to a pure and virgin girl like her.

Dawn's eyes were ice-cold as killing intent appeared. She believed Shi Xiaobai's 'truth' because he had perfected even the biggest flaw. She no longer had any way to doubt him. But regardless of the ten lifetimes being true or that they had any connections in their previous lives, she was a complete stranger to him. To her, he

was a fake existence that she could easily kill.

But this existence that she did not think anything of had seen her body in secret.

This sort of feeling was like a lofty princess had her buttocks suddenly squeezed by an unkempt beggar. The humiliation was enough to stir her incessant rage.

The spectators from the three domains who had watched in shocked silence at the extremely interesting 'show' drew a gasp. They never expected that this interesting conversation with multiple layers reached such a depth. The Infernal King's words were especially filled with information.

And most shocking of all, the ice-cold and machine-like blond youth, who was decisive in his killings, was actually a young girl disguising as a boy! From the way her humiliation turned to rage, it was evident that she had admitted to the stunning fact.

That exquisite face that gave the first impression of being handsome was now revealing an embarrassed and angry expression. Indeed, there was an additional charm of a young girl in it.

Chapter 439: Loathe Killing Him

The shock the rookies from the human world had was different from the spectators from the three domains. They were already gaping in a speechless manner. At the beginning, they believed that Shi Xiaobai was speaking nonsense during his gay confession, but just as they were feeling impressed by Shi Xiaobai's bullshitting, they suddenly received such shocking news. They were momentarily unsure what was real or fake!

Liu Yu's lips were trembling as he said, "This Penniless Priest is actually beginning to believe Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's words are true. That cannot be bullshit he's cooking up. To know information that she is a man in disguise and that there is a red mole under her armpit, Benefactor Shi Xiaobai might really be..."

Feng Yuanlin interrupted by saying, "That's impossible, right? That Hero King is fake. The premise Boss Shi Xiaobai is making is that the Hero King is real, and that he was fake. That is clearly a twist of the facts..."

Pulp Farmer said in a deep voice, "If the Hero King is fake, how would Shi Xiaobai know of her psyche and know the name of the nonexistent sword, to the point of knowing that she was actually a female in disguise? All of that wouldn't make sense!"

Mu Yuesheng said with a frown, "What I'm worried about is different from all of you. Since the fake Hero King in front of us is an imitation, be it her attacks or personality, it is identical to what is written in the history books. But if the fake Hero King is really a female in disguise, could it be true that the Hero King that existed

for real was also a female? Could it be that the real Hero King had successfully deceived the world, and lived as a man her entire life?"

Speechless said with a wry smile, "Heavens, if the real Hero King is a female in disguise, then for me to become the second Hero King, wouldn't I need to do a sex change operation? I refuse to believe that it is true, but on careful thought, when the historical Hero King established a hero organization, he was the only member that wasn't female. Despite all the beauties surrounding him, he remained single all his life. There wasn't even any rumors of him having any ambiguous relationships with others. This mystery has lasted for three thousand years, and now upon further thought, her disguise as a man would be the perfect explanation. However, if the Hero King were female, and had lived a man's life her whole life, no one would believe it if it was told to others, right?"

The few people felt like their intelligence was lacking. Shi Xiaobai's words progressed layer after layer with clear logic. It was undeniable and it caused what they knew to be twisted to the point of them not being able to figure out what was right and wrong.

Nugatory to sever, messy to unravel, but the conclusion was already out.

Dawn took a few deep breaths before finally forcing herself to calm down with her strong psyche. Typical girls might have attacked in rage, in a desperate attempt to dice up the pervert that 'blasphemed' her, but she did not do so. It was not because she did not want to kill him, but because she wanted to unravel the lie more than killing him. Even if the lie was perfected to the point

that it seemed real, she refused to abandon her doubts.

However, when the lie was so perfect that it could pass the spurious as genuine, then there was no point doubting it any further.

Dawn fell silent for a very long while as the redness on her cheeks gradually vanished as they returned to their pale color.

"You have won. Even if it is a lie, I believe it."

After those words were said, the ice-blue eyes returned to its ice-cold calmness once again. Her sharp eyes were focused on Shi Xiaobai as though it was an unsheathed sword. She said coldly, "I'll treat whatever you said as the truth. Then, please tell me what is your goal? If you really understand me, you would not have said such a sordid confession, much less say things like 'are you willing to be a side hoe', but you actually did it. Your actions are filled with contradictions but your explanation is tight and flawless. Everything you did must have been for a particular goal. I'm very curious, no, I have to know your goal."

Dawn was regretting that she did not immediately kill the youth in front of her previously and that she allowed him to make the ridiculous lie become a fact that she had to believe. At that moment, she wanted to kill him even more, but she could not do it without any hesitation. That was because if she killed the youth, her questions could no longer be answered. She would frequently become vexed because of the questions in her mind.

Before killing him, she needed answers.

However, would he be honest?

He should know that once he resolved her doubts, she would not hesitate to kill him.

Would he be foolish enough to take the initiative to answer her doubts?

"Yes, you are right. What This King previously said was for a particular goal. And that goal has been accomplished. There's no harm telling you," said Shi Xiaobai.

Dawn was once again surprised. She realized that she could not maintain her perfect state of mind in front of the youth because he would often say things that completely caught her by surprise.

The goal she was eager to know had already been accomplished?

And there was no harm in telling her?

Dawn could not help but say with a deep voice, "Please tell me your goal."

Shi Xiaobai smiled. His fake gentle and emotive look returned to calmness. Like a teacher who was explaining an answer to a student, he said seriously, "This King has a simple goal—This King

only wanted to know if you are a girl who was disguising as a male. Your reaction just now has given This King a confirmation, so This King's goal has been reached."

Dawn was surprised. Her state of mind she had just calmed down was shattered by the blow of the words. She said coldly, "Why did you use such a shoddy lie to prevaricate me? This doesn't seem like your style."

Shi Xiaobai slowly shook his head as he said, "Unfortunately, that was not a lie. And that was the only truth This King had said from just now! That confession and that so-called love, or ten lifetimes are lies as you believed. In fact, to This King, you are a stranger he has met for the first time."

Everyone was left gasping in silence again. After all that, to pass off a spurious lie that was filled with flaws as genuine, to the point of the person in question being forced to believe in the situation, he suddenly said that all he said was a lie.

The plot reversal that happened was so ridiculous that it was void of logic.

But Dawn remained in silence for a very long while after hearing his words. She began to calm down because she realized that her mental state was already in chaos. If she allowed it to continue, the youth in front of her would be leading her by the nose.

Her eyes turned cold and calm once again. She said in a deadpan manner, "Interesting. I have to admit that you are special. You are

the only existence to date that has been able to make me perplexed. I want to kill you and am eager to do so. But I am unable to do it because you have created a paradoxical riddle filled with rock solid logic. And I thirst to know the answer to your riddle. Then, do you plan on being immediately killed by me after you answer my doubts, or do you choose to face me in silence, surviving to the point of me not being able to suppress the killing intent in my heart?"

Shi Xiaobai pricked his eyebrows and said with a chuckle, "Such a straightforward goad? Heh, but This King would not fall for such goading. Feel free to ask. This King will answer anything he knows. This King does not wish that the lie would become a fact."

Dawn stared at Shi Xiaobai for a few seconds. She realized she could not see through the youth at all. Questions filled her mind and she could not be bothered to choose. She simply asked, "Since everything is a lie and I'm a stranger you met for the first time who you think is a girl disguised as a male, why do you know the ideal woman in my mind? How did you know the name of Lucifer's Sword? Why do you have a copy of Lucifer's Sword in your hand? Why were you able to so confidently reveal that I'm a girl in disguise? Why do you know that my right armpit..."

When Dawn said to that point, she hurriedly shut her mouth. She did not wish to mention it, nor recall the embarrassed look she had just a while ago from her anger.

She fell silent for a moment before saying, "For now, first answer those few questions."

Shi Xiaobai chuckled to himself. It looks like she really had many questions. No wonder she was loathing to immediately kill him. However, the answers to those questions were actually very simple.

Chapter 440: Are You Satisfied

Shi Xiaobai considered his words for a moment before he said, "Before answering your questions, This King must first make it clear. From This King's standpoint, This King is a real existence and a trial-taker from the human world. As for you, you are only an existence created by the assessment program. Furthermore, you are modeled after a great three-thousand-year-old historical figure in human history. You have to accept this premise or whatever explanation This King gives will sound like a lie to you. This King will guarantee that everything he says next is the truth. How about it? Are you able to accept this premise?"

Dawn fell into silence when she heard this. Her eyes flickered for a moment before she said with a sigh, "The premise you are talking about is completely opposite from my understanding. From my standpoint, I am a trial-taker from the human world, and you are a plot character that is refreshed every month in the seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. From a rational point of view, I am unable to accept that premise. However, I have to answer the questions in my heart. So, go ahead. Even if I'll be deceived by your lies once again, I will listen to your response."

A smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips as he said, "Very well. This King will tell you the boring answer behind the riddle. In fact, the Lucifer's Sword that This King took out was not an imitation but the real Lucifer's Sword. The great figure from three thousand years ago has already died. This Lucifer's Sword was left in the human world and This King managed to luckily be its new master. When This King signed a pact with Lucifer's Sword, there was a brief scene that flashed in his mind. In the scene, there was a blond girl wearing a long dark-blue dress and silver armor. She used a dark blue hair band to coil her hair up. She had bangs that split in

the middle rolling down the two sides of her white face. She raised Lucifer's Sword and slashed out her sword against countless demonic beings. That strike shocked This King and it left a deep impression in This King's mind. It made This King who had never encountered sword techniques to have the intention of learning swords. And coincidentally, Lucifer's Sword had given birth to a sword spirit in its three thousand years of solitude. This King managed to hear the names of some sword techniques and the holy sword's name..."

Shi Xiaobai came to a slight pause when he said that.

Dawn's eyebrows knitted together. What was up with the answer that sounded like the narration of a story? What did it have to do with her questions? It seemed like he was giving an irrelevant answer?

She could not help but urge him, "Continue?"

Shi Xiaobai nodded and continued, "From the little sword spirit, names of different sword techniques were known. This King remembers them clearly—Three Thousand Li Sword, Hundred-eighty Li Sword, Three Thousand Waters Sword, Wind Fire Thunder Divine Sword, Nine Heavens Thunderclap Sword, Great Sword of Light, Demon Slaying Holy Sword... Very coincidentally, these were the sword techniques you had previously used."

"With this said, there is a need to thank Speechless, who is known to you as the Celestial King. It's all thanks to him going through the trouble of announcing every attack you used. Only then did This King know that every sword technique you used was

identical to the sword technique that the little sword spirit subconsciously mentioned."

"This King had a thought back then that this was too much a coincidence. Anything strange must have something amiss about it. Back then, This King had a suspicion. The suspicion instantly made This King realize the existence of Lucifer's Sword."

"Therefore, This King was able to see the actual form of the nonexistent sword in your hand. This King was given a shock because the Lucifer's Sword in your hand, as well as the sword techniques the little sword spirit knew, seemed to imply that you, or the three-thousand-year-old figure you were moulded after, was the master of Lucifer's Sword."

"Therefore, This King thought of the scene that appeared when This King signed a pact with Lucifer's Sword. The woman in the scene was similar to you. She had blond hair that looked as resplendent as dawn. This King immediately had an unbelievable guess 'Could the woman in that scene be the master of Lucifer's Sword and could she be that great figure from three thousand years ago?'"

"That guess seemed very ridiculous, because according to what This King knew, that great figure was a man. That was the understanding that both history and humans had. Furthermore, the woman in the scene and you, the imitation of that great person, looked completely different other than that resplendent blond hair. It was impossible that the two of you were the same person."

"However, things like guesses are usually irremediable once they are generated. This King could not help but ponder over the illogical guess before coming to a strange guess. This King thought that if the great person from three thousand years ago was a woman in disguise, and had lived her life after changing her appearance, she would not be discovered by anyone. Then, everything could be logically explained. He and she can then be reconciled as being the same person."

"Forgive This King for not being able to repress his desire to verify it. Although the guess was very ridiculous, This King still grabbed every chance to prove its veracity. And just perfectly, you were in front of me. Therefore, This King created a series of lies so as to verify whether you are a girl disguising as a male! That was the goal for This King's lies."

When Shi Xiaobai said up to that point, he said apologetically, "Sorry, This King's goal was very simple. The approach to accomplishing the goal was a bit complicated. If it created confusion in you, This King can only say 'sorry'. Just as you are suppressing your killing intent to get This King to answer your questions, This King had similarly done a willful act in order to answer his doubts."

"Willful?"

A smile suffused across Dawn's lips. "You can be willful, but I cannot forgive. You wasted a great deal of time to explain your goal, but you did not directly answer my questions. I believe them. I believe that you said so many lies in order to verify a doubt you had on a whim. Then, can you be more serious and answer my

questions?"

When Shi Xiaobai heard that, he shook his head helplessly and said, "Aren't the answers you want to know already obvious? But since you aren't irked about This King being long-winded, This King will answer them one by one."

"Why does This King know of the ideal woman in your mind? Actually, This King did not know. However, This King used an assumption. This King assumed that his guess was correct, Since the appearance of the blond woman in This King's mind was your future appearance, it meant that you would dress up in that manner in the future. Then, that blond woman's appearance should be your ideal look."

"As one's ideal look isn't easily changed, This King only changed the way he said it. If you didn't strictly distinguish the ideal look from your ideal woman, you would subconsciously believe that This King had guessed your thoughts. That step was actually a bet because This King was only making an assumption as his premise, but fortunately, This King was right on his bet."

"How does This King know the name of Lucifer's Sword? Although the sword spirit said that she did not know anything about her previous master, she was unable to withstand This King's repeated questioning. She eventually muttered the name of the sword to This King, so this was information that This King already knew. It was just used in a reasonable fashion."

"Why does This King have a copy of Lucifer's Sword in his hand? There is probably no need to answer that."

"Why was This King able to so confidently reveal that you are a girl in disguise? On that point, it was just a matter of following on. This King had used two pieces of information to make you have the illusion that 'this lie seems real, but the flaw had already been exposed'. You believed that there was a flaw because you felt that if there was an existence of a flaw, then the lie This King said had to be fake."

"When one hears this, it might seem like you would refuse to believe This King's lies, but that's not how logic works. And it's because you deeply believe the existence of the flaw that you reduced your doubts of the other lies. If This King suddenly told you that the flaw you knew was not a flaw, and explained the biggest doubt, the other doubts you subconsciously had would fall like a pile of dominoes."

"This King was not able to ascertain that you were a female disguised as a male, but since This King used an assumption, whatever This King did was firmly under the assumption's premise. Hence, This King was able to very confidently say the fact that you were a female disguised as a male. It was because it was the biggest flaw that it became the best evidence. It was also the final tactic!"

"That is the truth to the lie. Are you satisfied?"

Shi Xiaobai blinked his eyes like a playful child.

Chapter 441: Goodbye Forever, Shi Xiaobai

Dawn's eyes lost its luster for a moment. Shi Xiaobai's explanation was reasonable, but it was too simple. How could a lie that could deceive her be so simple?

As Dawn continued thinking, she immediately thought of a critical problem. She hesitated for a moment before biting her lower lip and said, "Then, how do you explain the red mole under the armpit?"

Shi Xiaobai said, "That was just a stab in the dark. This King has obviously not seen what's under your right armpit, but have you really observed your right armpit before? A normal person would not do so, so you would not know if there is a red mole under your right armpit. Furthermore, it's impossible for you to take off your top in front of everybody and raise your right hand to verify if there was a red mole under your armpit. And the information This King said before that was a fact you knew. So you took it for granted that This King had said the truth, and that This King had really observed your right armpit. At the same time, you would lose your calm line of thought due to the flustered feelings of being peeped."

Shi Xiaobai could not help but laugh. He had learned this trick only recently and he had already used it. That was because not long ago, the Infernal Queen had used this trick to deceive him. For him to be fooled with his intelligence, there was no reason for Dawn to not fall for it either.

Shi Xiaobai noticed how Dawn's eyes were torpid as he chuckled,

"Is the reveal of the riddles a bit disappointing? Do you feel that the answer is too simple and the methods are overly normal? After it loses the package of mystery, it becomes extremely meaningless?"

Typically, complicated magic would appear mysterious and profound to the audience that did not know the tricks. But once the tricks were revealed, they would realize that the principle behind it was very simple. It would result in people thinking that the magic was actually immature and meaningless.

Dawn's eyes seemed lost. She was indeed having such feelings.

But was this feeling really correct?

Was that complicated magic immature and meaningless?

Were the means of lying to her to deceive her simple?

Dawn fell silent as she thought deeply. A strange look suddenly flickered in her ice-blue eyes. She slowly looked up at Shi Xiaobai and an undetectable glint flashed faintly in her eyes.

"Simple? You are being humble."

Her lips that did not have any lipstick applied but remained clear and alluring suffused a faint smile for the first time. Dawn said with a smile, "Being overly humble is more hateful than arrogance. The methods you mention sound simple, but it's not as simple

carrying it out."

"Everything relied on that ridiculous confession of yours from the beginning. That ten lifetime lie had perfectly explained the confession, and laid the foundations for the perfect lies that followed. To link the lies one after another, it is not something a typical youth can think of."

"You firmly used your assumption, and from that hypothesis, resolve your questions. Once you had doubts about your hypothesis, everything would fall apart, but you remained resolute. You were not gambling but playing a game of wits. Because although you are a gambler, you are certain that you would win. Your psyche far exceeds normal people."

"You proficiently used several psychological techniques, and the reasoning behind the lie was very simple. However, how it was used was crucial. And be it the way you used it or the timing when you used it was nearly perfect. This is not something you could do by following textbooks."

"You progressed one level after another and closed in on it. Unknowingly, you had weaved a web of lies, and at the final moment, you dealt the fatal strike. No girl can remain calm after knowing that they had been peeped and seen naked, to the point of knowing that a private spot under the armpit had been seen. I similarly couldn't do it. You realized such a simple reasoning and perfectly used it."

"Furthermore, it resonated with the ten lifetimes lie. The two lies proved each other, and two wrongs made it a right, causing it to

turn into reality. And all of that stemmed from that confession. The first move you made laid the best foundation for the final move. To have thought so far with such tight logic, you are very impressive."

"You were able to fool me not out of coincidence or luck, but because you are smarter than others."

Shi Xiaobai was surprised when he heard her. He never expected to receive such compliments. He even felt a bit embarrassed as he involuntarily scratched his head and said with a silly laugh, "You are flattering This King. For you to be able to analyze This King's thought process in such a short period of time makes you quite an impressive person as well."

When the thirty-thousand-strong audience heard this conversation, other than having a blank mind, they had no other thought. They felt like their intelligence was fake, but when they heard the last statement, they could not help but curse—that was like shameless flattery between business partners!

The girl's faint smile was like an epiphyllum's fleeting bloom. It quickly disappeared. Her eyes turned calm once again as she said, "Let me ask you one last time. You went through so much thought, was it so as to verify that I'm a girl in disguise?"

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he hesitated for a moment before saying with a nod, "That's because we are bound to fight a life-and-death battle immediately following this. If it's not you dying, it will be This King. But no matter who dies, This King will lose the chance to verify his doubt. This King does not want to leave behind

any regrets or questions. On this point, This King believes that you who are suppressing your killing intent will understand the most."

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his heart. He said he would not lie, but at that moment, he had no choice but to lie. The reason why he did it was because of the Absolute Choice. It was the Absolute Choice that had forced him to make such a screwed up matter.

The confession was just too embarrassing no matter who it was said to.

But if he could turn the confession into a perfect lie, a simple scheme with a goal, it could verify the guess on his mind and also relieve the embarrassing situation. It could kill two birds with one stone, so why not?

That was the fifth path Shi Xiaobai chose. He changed the first impression of it being a 'crazy path' to a 'clever path'.

Dawn believed in Shi Xiaobai's explanation and did not probe any further. Instead, she slowly took a step forward, and said, "Then one last question, please tell me your name."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback as he suddenly felt a strange feeling of achievement. He grinned and said his name. "This King's name is Shi Xiaobai!"

"Shi Xiaobai."

Dawn said softly as she gave Shi Xiaobai a deep glance. Her lips trembled slightly as she said out words that seemed to come from beyond the heavens.

"Goodbye forever, Shi Xiaobai."

The voice that sounded like chiming heavenly bells resounded in the air.

The girl's figure had already transformed into a flash as she charged at Shi Xiaobai. The Lucifer's Sword in her hand was clenched tightly as it shimmered with a resplendent golden light.

It was as though the first light of dawn had torn through the night sky.

...

Chapter 442: The Color In His Eyes

"Goodbye forever, Shi Xiaobai."

The voice that sounded like heavenly bells chiming in the sky echoed. Dawn's figure had already transformed into a flash as she charged at Shi Xiaobai. The Lucifer's Sword in her hand was clenched tightly as it shimmered with a resplendent golden light.

It was as though the first light of dawn had torn through the night sky.

The killing intent that appeared made it a killing move the moment it was produced. The strike was as shockingly fast as before. Not long ago, the young girl, who had used unknown means to disguise herself as a blond youth, had used this strike to behead the giant.

The gigantic head that fell to the ground and the spewing of blood like an erupting volcano was still fresh on the minds of everyone. The thirty-thousand-strong audience felt that it stifling, as if their throats were being clenched. This time, the girl had said the farewell with the words, 'goodbye forever'. It could be considered a warning, but the instant she attacked still caught people off guard because it was too sudden and fast. The audience could not react in time, and their minds were blank.

Would the Infernal King be killed with a single strike like the newly ascended Transcendent King?

The answer was obviously no.

That was because when the girl tore through the darkness like the dawn, Shi Xiaobai had moved as well. He held the sword in his right hand. A pure blackness and flawless whiteness twirled around the blade. A faint blood-red color emerged that seemed like a blooming red lotus in the black and white world. Golden beads of light began to emerge from the ground that swirled around him, as he ran, like they were testy pixies.

Shi Xiaobai charged at the girl with sword in hand. He pushed Crab Steps at the Crest of Perfection level to its fullest and was in no way slower than her. The golden beads of light that came out of the ground augmented the sword and moved along with it. Looking from high up, it was like a shooting star that tore through the night sky.

The resplendent dawn and the shimmering stars did not do anything else but rush straight at each other. Finally, they encountered one another at a particular node of fate.

"Boom!"

This was the first time Lucifer's Sword and the black-and-white sword clashed. There were no sparks, but a clanging explosion.

This was the first time the young boy and girl looked at each other at such a close distance. At the moment that the swords collided, their figures came to an abrupt stop. They were only a meter apart.

At that instant, they spontaneously looked into each others eyes and took a step forward. It was not to send each other retreating at a faster speed, but to see their figures reflected in the respective black and ice-blue irises.

But that instant lasted only a fleeting moment. The clash of power did not reach a balanced standstill. In order to withstand the impact, they needed to once again separate from each other.

Shi Xiaobai retreated a kilometer before he managed to stop the backwards momentum of that strike.

Dawn did not have that much of an advantage either. She similarly retreated eight hundred meters.

Sunless and company in the distance finally heaved a sigh of relief. Shi Xiaobai had not only withstood that strike which was like a sudden clap of thunder which left no time for one to cover one's ears, he was also able to strike back. Although the final outcome looked as though Dawn held the advantage, it was a negligible advantage.

Dawn quickly retreated before finally coming to a stable stop. For some reason, she had a baffling sense of loss. She suddenly felt that the instant of them looking into each other eyes seemed too short. She failed to see what color she was in his eyes.

She hurriedly puffed and exhaled the baffling feeling out of chest before she looked up to gaze at the black-haired youth eighteen

hundred meters from her. At that very moment, golden light that seemed like pixies surrounded him and that black-and-white sword. Even in the day, he was still as blinding as ever.

What color was he in her eyes?

This baffling thought flashed in her mind as her heart began to beat slightly faster than normal. The girl finally frowned.

Why would it be like that?

Why did she care so much about that pair of black eyes?

Why did she wish to see her own figure reflected in those black irises?

"Is that your Sword Truth?"

The girl asked a question she already knew the answer to before she forcefully repressed the strange feelings and the weird questions in her mind.

Shi Xiaobai nodded.

The golden halo around him was naturally his Sword Truth power, 'Excalibur'. This power came from his insights into the sword. It was one of the ways of converting one's mental energy into physical strength. The moment the Sword Truth was

activated, his mental energy would begin depleting. Typically, the power of Sword Truth would only be activated at a critical juncture in battle. As for Shi Xiaobai, he had activated the power of his Sword Truth from the very beginning. It showed how serious he was about the situation.

In fact, from Shi Xiaobai's point of view, Dawn's success in beheading the giant in one strike was not because Dawn's strength overwhelmed the giant. It was not because the fast-as-lightning strike was impossible to defend against. It was only because the giant had overestimated his physical defense. He had stupidly used his neck to withstand the strike that combined speed and strength. Although Dawn was very powerful, she would not have easily defeated Speechless if not for the power of her Sword Soul. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai was not afraid when facing her attack.

In the eyes of the common people, Dawn's speed was so fast that they would not be able to react to it. However, Shi Xiaobai possessed an extremely acute sense of danger as well as the powerful ability of capturing motion. The moment Dawn moved her feet, Shi Xiaobai had already reacted and had noticed how she was moving. He did not choose to dodge or stand in his spot to defend. Instead, he charged straight ahead to clash with her head on.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not risk it. He had directly activated his Sword Truth because he could sense a threat. His sense of danger had never fooled him.

Indeed, even with his Sword Truth activated, the outcome of the clash of strikes had him at a disadvantage. Although it wasn't that

great of a disadvantage, the truth was that he had already activated the power of his Sword Truth, while Dawn had only used a sword strike that was augmented by Sword Intent.

Sword Intent, Sword Truth, Sword Soul, Sword Domain. These were the four unique powers in the realm of sword techniques. It represented the degree to one's comprehension of the sword. Most swordsmen only managed to comprehend Sword Intent, and a tiny portion of geniuses gained insights into Sword Truth. And the number of people who could use a Sword Soul was an extremely small number even across history. Sword Domain was a power that only existed in legends.

Therefore, differences between the four powers were not steps of a ladder, but the differences between flat plains and mountains.

To put it bluntly, Sword Intent meant injecting one's will and intent into the sword techniques. Sword Truth was the full focus of one's mental energies so as to convert one's insights in the sword into a tangible power. The two of them were at completely different levels of existences.

Dawn was only using the power of Sword Intent, while he was using the power of Sword Truth. However, he was still at a disadvantage.

The power of their sword techniques was not the only factor that affected the power of the move because it was influenced by many other factors, such as the difference in level of the sword move, or the proficiency level of the sword move, or any external power outside of the sword technique system that were mixed in.

But regardless of the case, the clash had indeed left Shi Xiaobai at an absolute disadvantage.

"Indeed, you are very strong."

A smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips. After confirming once again that the girl, who was an imitation of the Hero King, was an opponent not to be underestimated, even stronger fighting spirit burned in Shi Xiaobai's eyes.

Such an opponent was very rarely encountered. If he missed this battle, he would definitely regret it for life. Therefore, he would not shrink back, regardless of the outcome or the price!

Chapter 443: Dual-Wielding

"Try taking on This King's strike!"

This time, it was Shi Xiaobai's turn to attack.

A distance of eighteen hundred meters could not be considered as close proximity. But to Shi Xiaobai, who had his flash motion technique, Crab Steps, cultivated to the Crest of Perfection realm, it was not that great a distance. However, a flash motion technique was after all a movement technique that focused on movement and dodging. No matter how high the realm, it was still motion at a fast speed, and not instantaneous motion that could cover a great distance in a blink of an eye. Shi Xiaobai suddenly charged out, and his blazing figure and the strong winds that stirred seemed to become the biggest disturbance.

Dawn immediately woke up from her strange feelings. Her eyes focused once again. Her ice-blue eyes squinted like blades as she slowly lifted her sword in preparation to strike back.

Without needing to either see her opponent's figure, or hear the sound of the sword slicing through the air, even with her eyes closed and ears covered, she would be able to react in the most perfect manner because she could 'see' the fluctuations in the air. She could 'hear' the breathing of the power. She could 'predict' the trajectories of annihilation.

She did not turn her head nor did she use her eyes to capture the figure that was rapidly approaching to the point of nearly instantly

appearing in front of her. Instead, she suddenly turned around and slashed towards her back!

"Caught you."

The figure in front of the girl had been penetrated by sunlight as it dispersed into a chaotic mirage. It was a fake phantom image.

And the direction in which the girl slashed was at the neck of the youth who suddenly appeared behind her.

Shi Xiaobai's pupils constricted slightly. His phantom movement technique had been seen through so easily and his movement trajectory had been easily grasped. His intentions appeared to have been seen through by the girl from the very beginning.

She was indeed an expert.

The smile on Shi Xiaobai's lips grew in intensity. The girl's advanced judgment of slashing at his neck had completely exceeded his expectations, but his reaction was equally stunning.

Shi Xiaobai quickly twisted his right arm by half a circle and used an exaggerated angle to change the trajectory of his slash. Just as Lucifer's Sword was about to hit his neck, he successfully deflected it.

Dawn's eyebrows pricked up slightly. Shi Xiaobai's reaction speed and ability to cope in an impromptu fashion left her somewhat

surprised.

But the following scene caught her off guard. Shi Xiaobai, who had forcefully parried the strike, should have retreated and opened up a distance to protect his neck so as to reduce some of the momentum of that strike, but he did not choose to do so.

With the sound of a crack, she saw Shi Xiaobai's head suddenly lean back, as though he ignored the risk of cracking his neck to make it level. His body spun a few times like a top to forcefully disperse the power of that strike and at the same time, a swift and fierce beam of light appeared as it hurled straight for her abdomen!

It was unknown when the black-and-white sword in the youth's right hand had become a pure black sword. At the most dangerous moment, he had parried her Lucifer's Sword, and in his left hand, he was holding to a pure white sword. At the same moment he defended, he had suddenly thrust his white sword at her.

He actually did not retreat?

His neck and the ice-cold blade were in close proximity. At that moment when his life was in danger, he actually did not choose to retreat to open up a safe distance but counterattack there and then?

If he made the slightest of mistakes, his head would separate from his body. Was he that unafraid of death?

Dawn frowned as she could not hurriedly retreat so as to dodge the sword beam that suddenly came thrusting at her abdomen.

Shi Xiaobai's dual-wielding had exceeded her expectations. It was not as if she had never encountered opponents who used two swords at the same time, but he was the first opponent she had encountered to suddenly go from a single weapon to dual-wielding them while disregarding his life. He would bare his fangs when he needed to defend the most, and strike back suddenly.

Should he be called crafty or crazy?

Dawn did not choose to clash head on with him. She held an advantage with her strength, so there was obviously no need to withstand Shi Xiaobai's internecine assault.

But just after she retreated, Shi Xiaobai would immediately come sticking closely behind.

The youth held a white sword in his left hand and a black sword in his right. The power of Sword Truth seemed to flow above the blades like stars. Suddenly, two completely different Sword Intents were produced from the two swords. On the white sword, there was burning Sword Intent, and on the black sword, there was watery Sword Intent that caused ripples.

Dawn's eyes flashed a look of appreciation. This was the most unique dual-wielding she had ever seen. Shi Xiaobai's dual-wielding was not just simply brandishing two swords; instead, he demonstrated the true charm of wielding two swords.

Dual-wielding was not as simple as wielding two swords in hand and using different sword attacks. Only by injecting two different Sword Intents into the two swords like Shi Xiaobai, could the true power of the dual-wielding be expressed. However, it was not easy to do so. Grasping two Sword Intents was just the foundation, but to use the two Sword Intents together with one mind simultaneously was an extremely difficult task.

And what Shi Xiaobai was currently doing was even more difficult. That was because both his swords were injected with different Sword Intents. One of them was blazing fire and the other was soft water. These were two completely different and contradictory Sword Intents. Dual-tasking things might not be difficult, but to produce two completely opposite Sword Intents at the same time, without even considering the ability needed to dual-task, it still needed clear and resolute willpower.

"You are indeed very excellent, but the Sword Intent grade of your dual-wielding is still rather unpolished. If it's two different Sword Truths, it might be..."

With those thoughts in mind, Dawn grasped the perfect opportunity to use a nimble swerve to dodge Shi Xiaobai's two strikes that were in close proximity. She slashed at Shi Xiaobai's waist from the side.

Her opponents choice of a melee battle suited her wishes. Her movement technique, speed and strength were extremely outstanding. Her combat skills were also something no peer could match.

However, her present opponent was Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai was equally well-versed in movement techniques. His speed and strength had been crazily enhanced through the Power of Taotie after he consumed the three holy items. His keen senses and battle instincts far exceeded ordinary people.

Shi Xiaobai reacted extremely fast as he changed the trajectory at which he slashed out. Twisting his right arm, he forcefully pushed the black sword in his right hand to parry Lucifer's Sword that was about to hit his abdomen. At the same time, the white sword in his left hand was hurled straight at the girl. The watery Sword Intent was ice-cold as it formed a frost-ice sword beam which shot at the girl's chest like an icicle.

Shi Xiaobai had once again chosen to counterattack when he needed to defend the most. He ingeniously used his dual-wielding to simultaneously attack and defend.

However, it was extremely risky by doing so because the girl's sword was only a sword's length away from his waist. If the strength of the right sword was crushed, his waist would be severed into two by his own sword.

Of course, if the girl had ignored the thrusting of the white sword from his left hand, and forcefully slashed at his waist, there was an extremely high chance of being severely injured. That was because while attacking, one's defense was at its weakest.

Therefore, there were two choices placed before Dawn.

First, to ignore the risk of injury to slash at Shi Xiaobai's waist. In that case, Shi Xiaobai might very well die and she might be seriously injured. It would result in an internecine outcome.

Second, it was to abandon her attack and take the initiative to retreat. It would be equivalent to treating it as though that round did not happen.

This was a choice that had to be made in an instant.

Chapter 444: It's Too Realistic

"Madman!"

Dawn cursed secretly before abandoning her attack once again as she retreated to open up a distance.

She obviously would not risk being injured in order to kill Shi Xiaobai. After all, she believed that she was able to easily achieve victory. However, it was another exchange that wasted time, so she still felt vexed.

Previously, she was pondering if Shi Xiaobai's actions were crafty or crazy, and at that moment in time, she was able to come to a conclusion that the black-haired youth in front of her was a madman who did not care for his life.

If she steeled her heart and ignored the danger of being injured to claim his life, he would be pushed to the precipice of extreme danger. However, he did so without any hesitation, not once or twice, but again and again.

"Can he tell that I'm hesitating?"

Dawn could not help but have such a thought.

She could not deny her feelings of trying to see the reflection of herself in that pair of black eyes from a moment ago. But instead of terming it being attracted by the pair of black eyes, it was better to

say that she had been attracted by the person, Shi Xiaobai.

It was not romance from a maiden's heart or because of any good feelings for him. To her, this was something impossible.

It was just an admiration of his intelligence. She wanted to converse with him more, so there was a dilemma in killing him.

She appreciated Shi Xiaobai and that was all there was to it. But to a person who had sealed off any superfluous emotions like her, the unfamiliar emotion of appreciation was not simple. It made her want to resist and also could not bear but to cherish it.

Therefore, she felt hesitant.

Could he have seen through me and he knows that I'm hesitating to kill him, so he's employing such a strategy of undaunted fighting?

As Dawn had such thoughts, she saw Shi Xiaobai come close to her once again.

She dodged once again.

As for Shi Xiaobai, he attacked again without any care for his life. As he defended and attacked simultaneously, showcasing the power of dual-wielding and the crazy disregard for his own life perfectly.

"Damn it!"

Dawn began having fretful emotions because she once again chose to retreat. Shi Xiaobai's attacks that showed complete disregard for his own life left her helpless. It definitely had something to do with the hesitation of accepting an internecine outcome, but mostly it was because Shi Xiaobai's strength was not to be underestimated. Be it speed or strength, the youth was slightly better than her. She had already used the augmentation of the God's Blessings, yet she was still at a disadvantage when it came to speed and strength.

"Damn it, if my speed can be faster and my strength stronger, this form of scoundrelly fighting methods would be useless against me, but my speed and strength is indeed being overwhelmed by his. If not for his combat skills still somewhat lacking and his sword cultivation being far inferior to mine, I'll probably be in a more pathetic state."

"But, he clearly doesn't have any hint of 'God's Blessing' in his aura, so why is he able to overwhelm me in terms of speed and strength?"

"Is his speed and strength purely stemming from the support of his physical strength?"

"No, how can being at the Psionic Mortal Realm give him such terrifying physical strength? He is indeed...not human?"

"He is not a human but the Infernal King. So, I'm the one that's real, right?"

"Ah? What are you thinking? You are of course real. How can you be left running in circles because of a series of lies from that cheat to the point of doubting your existence? Keep your mind focused. No matter how much you hate being reminded of those ice-cold memories, they are real. You are just trying to avoid it."

"I want to converse with him once more. I want to seriously talk to him once more...Is that the reason for my dilemma? Quickly kill him. He is only a fake existence made up by a series of binary numbers. He is just an empty shell that is injected with a fixed algorithm. Kill him as fast as you can and complete your mission. That has always been how you have worked in the past."

"What are you hesitating for? Even if you are overwhelmed in speed and strength, or even if he has an extraordinary physique, so what if he is using such scoundrelly ways of fighting? Wouldn't it be easy for you if you wanted to kill him? You are the best at massacres. If you do not have a killing heart, you are just a weak swordswoman. But as long as you have a bit of killing intent, you will become the strongest assassin."

"What are you hesitating for? Quickly!"

"Kill him!"

"Kill him!!"

"Kill him!!!"

Killing intent surged as though a snow storm had suddenly permeated every inch between the heavens and earth. It was pale and ice-cold.

"Kacha!"

In the cold snow and wind, a piece of ice suddenly shattered as ice fragments fell and revealed a bit of redness. Inside the ice, there was a tender and beautiful flower that was blooming.

"Wait...wait."

"Let me consider it again."

"What if he is truly the one that is real? No, what if he is also real?"

"The ice-cold program cannot possess such intelligence! That is not pure calculations, nor is it a systematic scam. At least...at least when conversing with him, I find it very realistic."

"I will kill him. I will definitely kill him, but please wait."

"Wait till I forget everything from just now. It's just...too realistic."

Her beautiful and exquisite face remained emotionless like a still surface of a lake. That pair of ice-blue eyes that remained calm and void of emotions hid a tiny ripple.

The girl had retreated pathetically an unknown number of times before she would immediately see the youth that was sticking closely to her in a manner that defied death. Her heart could not help but flash another iota of fretful emotions.

"Do not...force me!"

...

What people thought would be a one-sided battle did not happen. The battle situation exceeded the expectations of everyone. The youth was constantly attacking in a ferocious manner, and the black and white swords were like the fangs of a fierce beast. The sharp sword beams tore through the plains as it pursued the girl.

As for the girl who had disguised herself as a male, she seemed to have lost that invincible stance from when she had defeated Speechless or when she had one-shot the giant. She was left retreating constantly by the youth as if she was constantly fleeing.

The youth remained insatiable in an incessant manner. His attacks become more potent while the girl constantly retreated. An occasional counterattack would be given up midway as though she had her hands and feet restrained. She did not seem like she was able to use her full strength.

Along the basin's perimeter, the rookies from the human world were watching in stunned silence. Mu Yuesheng murmured to herself, "Shi Xiaobai has already become that strong?"

Mu Yuesheng watched in disbelief at the scene. She remembered that back in Gaia, she had once fought with Shi Xiaobai. Back then, they were unable to beat each other, and it ended as a draw. But at that moment in time, the strength that Shi Xiaobai demonstrated was at a level she was unable to withstand at all.

How long has it been?

She had broken through to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm through Shi Xiaobai's usage of the Massage Technique of God. After a series of training, she had grown. She thought that she had closed the distance between her and Shi Xiaobai, but she never expected that she had been left in the dust.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai was fiercer and more powerful than any rookie she had ever seen. He repressed Dawn, be it in his bearing or his attacks.

What did he experience?

How was it possible for him to improve in such an exaggerated manner in such a short period of time?

Chapter 445: A Battle That Could Be Ended In An Instant

Sunless stared at the figure that was surrounded by golden light. Her calm gaze gradually revealed a sense of fanaticism. Unknowingly, the corners of her mouth curved up as a faint smile suffused across her lips.

Was that his Sword Truth?

She liked it a lot.

She still remembered that night when he unintentionally entered her consciousness. He had used clumsy sword techniques to challenge her again and again. Back then, he was a complete noob in sword techniques. He did not even grasp the most basic of sword attacks. Back then, he couldn't even slash out a sword beam.

She was always serious and did not know how to be euphemistic. Therefore, she defeated him again and again in a serious manner without showing him any mercy.

However, despite experiencing all those repeated failures, his pair of black eyes never once showed any signs of being disheartened. It constantly burned with an increasing amount of fighting spirit.

When would he give up?

With such a thought in mind, she was enjoying the situation but also worrying about it.

What made her delighted was that he never gave up. He did not give up even till the very end.

Not only did he not give up, he was also constantly improving. From the beginning when he could not produce a sword beam till he gradually grasped the ability to use sword beams. He had learned by himself without a master, the most basic Sword Intent and gradually grasped the outline of his own Sword Truth.

In one night, he had been defeated hundreds of times, but he did not slack off even once, much less feel disheartened. He proceeded forward step after step as he covered an unimaginable distance that caught people by surprise.

If not for day break, he would have comprehended his Sword Truth. That was what she firmly believed.

In a night, he went from a complete sword noob to a sword genius who had nearly comprehended Sword Truth. It was a fascinating transformation.

He was a real genius. How could she be compared to him?

After that night, she had a figure that she admired despite her being labeled as a rare sword genius. She knew that there would be a day when this youth, who would not be defeated by his failure,

would definitely surpass her and become her target of pursuit.

However, she never expected that the day would come so soon.

At that very moment, be it Shi Xiaobai's Sword Truth quality, the familiarization of his dual-wielding, or his ability to use different Sword Intent at the same time, it had demonstrated the prowess of a genius swordsman. In terms of sword techniques, he was still inferior to her, but he was already not too far off from her.

What sort of terrifying improvement speed was this?

"Sword techniques. He will definitely not be able to bridge the gap between me and him so easily, at least in terms of sword techniques."

With this thought in mind, Sunless clenched the sword by her waist tightly.

...

The Pulp Farmer trio looked at one another. Back at the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament, they had seen Shi Xiaobai's terrifying physical strength. At this moment, they realized that Shi Xiaobai's sword techniques were even better than his physical strength. Furthermore, his strength and speed appeared to have improved ever since the tournament.

The two figures that were constantly in pursuit of each other

clashed. At that moment, what they showcased wasn't considered beautiful techniques, but true strength and speed. It was the most astounding display of one's foundations.

Feng Yuanlin watched with a torpid gaze, "So powerful. He's so powerful!"

Liu Yu said with a sigh, "Benefactor Shi Xiaobai is indeed the favored child of heaven. This Penniless Priest can already predict that after the trial ends, not just all of China but the entire world will cast their eyes on this star that has suddenly lit up. People who know of this story will definitely not be stingy with their praises."

"Of course there won't be any lack of doubts and the threat of placing him too high on a pedestal, but with Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's character, he would not stop because of it. He will keep going faster and climb even higher until he can tower above the entire world. No, even when he reaches that point, he would still never stop."

Pulp Farmer said with eyes filled with mixed emotions, "For a person like Shi Xiaobai, even without astounding talent, one will definitely be able to succeed and be able to achieve something. I've learned a lot of valuable lessons from him."

When a peer that was running beside you began running further and further ahead of you, you might be motivated or disheartened. It might also make you chase in disgruntlement, or lose heart because of jealousy.

The same situation could result in many different outcomes. It was a problem of choice, but that right to choose, lay in the hands of the person in question. Therefore the outcome of the choice would be different depending on the person. It was also because of you yourself and the peer that is ahead of you.

The Pulp Farmer trio's characters, personalities and morals were different, so their contemplations would also be greatly different, but at that moment, their thoughts were surprisingly the same.

They were not disheartened or feeling disgruntled, nor was there jealousy.

They felt an actual sense of motivation.

That was because the person running in front of them was Shi Xiaobai.

That fearless Shi Xiaobai who was never disheartened, disgruntled or jealous. All he did was run forward with all his mind and soul!

...

"What is going on? Was that bastard so fierce when he was fighting with This Emperor? His speed and strength have completely risen to another level. Could it be...could it be that the bastard was hiding his strength back then? Against This Emperor, he actually dared to hold back? What woe. What intense woe! I

really...really want to fight that bastard in an all-out battle!"

Speechless stared as he focused his eyes on Shi Xiaobai, who was in hot pursuit while fiercely attacking. Shi Xiaobai did not give his opponent a chance for a breather, and this made Speechless even more depressed.

If not for the hole through his left chest, he would definitely not be able to curb his feelings of joining the battle. Now, all he could do was stand there doing nothing as he got inundated by the fighting spirit. It was depressing and stifling.

When Speechless heard the Pulp Farmer trio praise Shi Xiaobai, he immediately felt even more depressed.

At that moment, he suddenly heard Feng Yuanlin say in excitement, "It feels, it feels like Boss Shi Xiaobai can win! If Boss Shi Xiaobai defeats the imitated Hero King, wouldn't that mean that Boss Shi Xiaobai is stronger than the Hero King at the Psionic Mortal Realm? Even if it can't be proven, it would at least prove that Boss Shi Xiaobai is stronger than Speechless. After all Speechless has already lost, and Boss Shi Xiaobai has been holding the advantage from the very beginning up to now! Wow, Boss Shi Xiaobai is really the strongest rookie!"

Feng Yuanlin, who had a screw loose, was completely engrossed in the battle in front of him. His over-excitement made him forget that Speechless was standing just beside him.

A careless remark may sound significant to an attentive listener,

however, Speechless nearly broke his teeth from clenching them as he turned his head to look at Feng Yuanlin who had forgotten himself. He felt depressed and could not help but interrupt, "Shi Xiaobai's strength is indeed not bad. But compared to the Hero King, he is still greatly inferior. Watch carefully. Although the Hero King is constantly retreating and fleeing, every time she is caught up, she would take the opportunity to launch a counterattack."

"However, Shi Xiaobai's dual-wielding kamikaze style is somewhat too scoundrelly. She did not wish for an internecine outcome, so she could only retreat every time. Of course, Shi Xiaobai's speed and strength is extremely extraordinary. The usage of his dual-wielding and his Sword Truth is also done in a skilful and practiced manner. This is the reason why he is able to force the Hero King into such a situation. But, that is only an illusion on the surface! The Hero King's strength far exceeds Shi Xiaobai. If she wants to win, the battle can be ended in an instant!"

Speechless' words immediately attracted the gazes of the spectators.

If the Hero King wanted to win, she could end the battle in an instant?

That situation was completely unlike what was happening now?

Chapter 446: The Unverified Savage History

Everyone immediately felt perplexed, but they felt that Speechless was not a person who would lie. Mu Yuesheng was the first to speak. "Why do you say so? With the current situation, isn't Shi Xiaobai holding the advantage? They should be well-matched in strength at the very least, right? To end the battle in an instant is too..."

When Mu Yuesheng said to that point, she felt that Speechless's point of view was pushing it too far. That was because she absolutely refused to believe that Shi Xiaobai could be one-shot.

"Stupid!"

Speechless grunted and said, "Don't any of you realize that...the Hero King has yet to use her power of Sword Truth? She has been using Sword Intent to match Shi Xiaobai's Sword Truth! Now it seems like they are equally matched to the point of Shi Xiaobai taking a slight advantage, but what if the Hero King suddenly activates the power of Sword Truth? Do you understand? The Hero King has enough chips in hand that she can instantly tip the balance!"

Speechless' words immediately jolted everyone awake. They turned and realized that the pathetically retreating Hero King had not used her power of Sword Truth. In contrast, Shi Xiaobai had activated the power of his Sword Truth from the very beginning. And he had not deactivated it at all!

The power of Sword Truth was to convert mental energies and willpower into physical and substantial strength to augment oneself. The cost of activating it was extremely draining on one's mental energies!

How long has Shi Xiaobai had it activated? After having his Sword Truth mode activated for so long, it was likely that his mental energies were already completely drained!

As for the Hero King, she was in a completely different situation. She had yet to activate the power of her Sword Truth from the moment she began fighting Shi Xiaobai. Once she activated it, or if Shi Xiaobai finally could not continue having his Sword Truth activated, or if both things happened simultaneously, the scales of victory will tip to one side!

Mu Yuesheng anxiously asked, "Why, why hasn't the Hero King activated her power of Sword Truth? Going easy? Battle strategy? Or is it...because the Hero King has used the power of Sword Soul not long ago, so her mental energies are already drained?"

Speechless shook his head and said, "Not at all. It is indeed very draining to activate the power of Sword Soul, so there is no way to use it consecutively in a short period of time. However, it is not sufficient to completely drain the Hero King of her mental energy. And with the Hero King's endurance technique, her mental energies must be constantly recovering. Now, she is probably quickly recovering to the point where she can use the power of Sword Soul again. She can definitely afford the expenditure of the power of Sword Truth, but she did not choose to do so. It's not because she's going easy on Shi Xiaobai or because it's a battle

strategy. Instead, it's because her Sword Truth is—Massacre!"

When Sunless heard that, her pupils constricted slightly as a hint of worry flashed in her eyes.

Mu Yuesheng did not know much about Sword Truths so she immediately asked puzzledly, "What does that mean?"

Speechless considered his words before saying, "If it's said that Sword Intent is an intent a swordsman imbues his sword techniques with, then Sword Truth is a swordsman's...obsession! A particular obsession will be the so-called Sword Truth. For example, Miss Sunless Ye, everyone knows she's a famous sword fanatic. She is deeply engrossed when it comes to swords, so when she comprehended her Sword Truth, Fanaticism is her obsession! The deeper her fanaticism is, the deeper her obsession is, which would make the power of her Sword Truth even more powerful! Everyone's obsession is different, so the Sword Truth one comprehends would always be different. And the Hero King's obsession is...massacring!"

Mu Yuesheng said in shock, "Why would the Hero King's obsession be massacring!?"

When Liu Yu heard that, he interrupted, "This Penniless Priest once saw a book of the savage history of the Hero King. In it, it tells of a story that is still fresh on This Penniless Priest's mind. That history book said that...at the age of three, the Hero King was thrown into an uninhabited island filled with wild beasts. She survived there alone for three years before being brought back to the Li family. Only then did she have a normal childhood."

“This Penniless Priest thought that it was just idle rumors and that it was some history that was cooked up. Even if one can survive alone in an uninhabited island filled with beasts for three years, sickness and loneliness can mentally torture that person till she collapses mentally, much less a three-year-old child. Even a thirty-year-old adult might not be able to tolerate it. However, it was exactly at the age of six when the Hero King showcased her strength to the public. At six years old, she was the champion of China's Child Tournament. At the age of eight, she became champion of China's Youth Tournament and at ten, she won the World Youth Tournament. Furthermore, she won it for four consecutive years. The life of the Hero King after she was six was basically that of the academic route. Furthermore, she participated in various competitions to train herself. Those competitions had very formal rules, so would her obsession be massacring like a mass-murderer? If her obsession is really massacring, the only explanation that would work boils down to what happened before the age of six. In addition to that piece of history, could it be...?”

Speechless sighed and said with a heavy look, "That piece of history should be true. The Hero King had generated an obsession with massacring from the tragic memories of when she was age three to six. Her character during her childhood and teenage life was labeled as an 'emotionless machine'. It is probably because of those memories that she sealed her emotions. When the Hero King matured, she seldom used her sword techniques. And for some reason, her personality changed, causing her to be unwilling to use the Sword Truth of Massacre. To go from a killing machine to a Hero that saved the world, it's unknown what she had experienced. It still remains a mystery of the person or matter that changed her."

The topic of discussion suddenly turned heavy as everyone's heart sank.

Liu Yu glanced at Speechless in an undetected manner. He realized a matter, but he did not know how to ask it. Since the Hero King's Sword Truth was massacring, as a youth who had always been imitating the Hero King, to the point of showing an identical Sword Truth as the Hero King, wouldn't his Sword Truth also be massacring?

What happened to that youth?

The Hero King had an obsession with massacring because of a tragic encounter in her childhood. But what about Speechless?

In order to imitate the Hero King, what did he experience? What could have forced him to generate an obsession with massacring?

That was probably a secret he did not wish to reveal.

Speechless Li was indeed not simple.

With this thought in mind, Liu Yu said, "It seems like the topic has gone astray. The Hero King's Sword Truth and obsession is massacring, but what does that have to do with activating her Sword Truth?"

That was the essential question. Liu Yu steered the off-topic discussion back.

Speechless gave Liu Yu an appreciative look and said, "The Hero King isn't activating her Sword Truth not because she doesn't want to activate it, but because she can't do it. Although it's unknown what the reason is, she very clearly can't bring herself to kill Shi Xiaobai. Without any killing intent, she naturally can't produce an obsession with massacring. Thus, her Sword Truth can't be activated. I believe she is currently in a dilemma. She is hesitating if she should kill Shi Xiaobai or not. Therefore, once she is no longer in a dilemma..."

When Speechless said that, his expression turned slightly uglier. He looked at Shi Xiaobai, who was engaging in an intense battle, before turning his head and looked at the rest with a serious expression. He said solemnly, "Once the Hero King is no longer in a dilemma, or once she affirms her killing intent and activates her Sword Truth, the balance will immediately be broken. Furthermore, under her obsession with massacring, the Hero King will not hold back. It would be a definite deathblow. That is to say, once the Hero King affirms her desire to kill Shi Xiaobai, Shi Xiaobai will be killed at the moment the balance is broken!"

Chapter 447: Loneliness Is The Greatest Enemy

Dawn, who was struggling in battle, did not know that there were people discussing her Sword Truth, obsession and childhood from a distance away. She did not know that the youth that had luckily survived her attack had hit upon the truth.

Yes, she was in a dilemma.

Her dilemma prevented her from having the intention to kill.

Without killing intent, she was naturally unable to activate her massacring Sword Truth. All she could do was use Sword Intent which did not need any obsession.

However, Sword Intent was not able to withstand Sword Truth after all. Furthermore, the youth that was attacking her in an incessant manner had an obsession that was so striking. His Sword Truth was resplendent gold. It was dazzling and pretty like the star-filled sky.

His physical condition was surprisingly powerful. His pure strength and speed was superior to her whom had used 'God's Blessings' on herself. His flash motion technique's realm was not much weaker than hers. His dual-blade kamikaze fighting style was so scoundrelly that she was too deep for tears.

Dawn had to admit that he was a rather tough opponent. This

was an intense battle that would be rather difficult to win. If not, she would not have been retreating so much as though she was pathetically fleeing.

But she maintained her calm state of mind from the very beginning. Even though there were the occasional vexed emotions, it was because of her own dilemma and not because of the difficult situation in front of her.

It was because she was filled with confidence from the very beginning.

She was confident that once she stopped being in a dilemma and at the instant she activated her Sword Truth, the scales of balance for victory will be broken. She would one-shot the bastard that kept reaching out for a yard after taking an inch.

She firmly believed that. Therefore, she did not feel any vexed emotions from the tough battle in front of her.

Her mind could only constantly repeat two words.

Kill him!

Kill him!!

Kill him!!!

But even though she frenziedly tried to hypnotize herself, she was still unable to shrug off her dilemma.

She had no way. She really had no way to generate any killing intent for the black-haired youth.

Even though he had used a series of lies to fool her. Even though he had used shameless words of 'having seen every part of your body and that even the red mole under your armpit was clearly seen' to tease her. Even though he had used a dual-blade kamikaze style to scoundrelly to attack her with an ever-increasing insatiability, like a gum that was frenetically sticking close to her. Even though...

Even though he had done so many things that she hated, she was still unable to generate any thoughts of killing him.

That was because she did not want to kill him.

It obviously wasn't love at first sight, or some cliché plot of her being subdued before falling into the rivers of love.

In fact, she did not have a good impression of him. Instead, it was mostly detest. The only thing worth mentioning was his intelligence and wit which resulted in her having a trivial sense of appreciation for him.

However, she did not want to kill him. She really did not want to kill him.

That was because he made her feel a sense of reality.

For the first time in her life, he made her feel like a real existence.

To her, that feeling of reality was rare and valuable. It was so rare that she felt that no one would be able to give her that feeling of reality again if she killed him.

...

Back when she was three, the young girl was thrown into an uninhabited island filled with beasts.

Beasts, poisonous bugs, man-eating plants, even to the point of having a few demonic beasts mixed in, was the first difficulty she faced. In order to live on, she needed to survive through those dangers.

Thankfully, she was a true prodigy. Although she was not born with knowledge, she possessed an intelligence that far exceeded ordinary people from birth. In three years, she had learned the knowledge that ordinary people would take more than a decade to learn. Most importantly, she learned how to be resolute from her mother who suffered a terminal illness.

The resolute her did not wallow in despair or commit suicide, much less do nothing while waiting for death.

Her face was stained with tears as she endured all sorts of difficulties. After countless close encounters with Death, she learned how to avoid danger and hide herself. She managed to find a space to survive amid the beasts, poisonous bugs and man-eating plants.

Of course, simple evasion and hiding was insufficient for her to live on because hunger was the second difficulty she faced.

In order not to starve to death, she needed to find food.

In the beginning, she ate sour fruits, dry and hard tree bark, or gross earthworms. Finally, she began psionic cultivation from the books from her memories. She became hungrier as the amount of energy needed to make up for her energy expenditure increased.

Therefore, in order to survive, she needed to know how to kill.

Hunting beasts was her only path for survival.

Kill!

Kill!

And more killing!

In order to survive, she needed to turn those ferocious beasts into

her food.

After she learned how to kill, disease was the third difficulty she faced.

At the beginning, she did not have the ability to make fire. By enduring the grossness and nausea, she ate raw meat and even worms. The unprocessed food sent germs into her stomach constantly, so it obviously caused her physiological health to suffer.

However, even though she was sick, so sick to the point of death, she had to maintain her clarity of mind because she needed to avoid danger. She needed to hunt. She needed to survive on that uninhabited island.

No one could help her and no one would fall from the sky to become her hero.

Therefore, she could only save herself. She could only become her own hero.

Through her vague memories of text that described holy light treatment, she managed to create and modify through trial and error a healing technique that was unique to her. She called it Healing of the Dawn.

She used Healing of the Dawn to treat herself of her sickness.

Through the knowledge of sword techniques in her mind, she used tree branches as swords and would brandish her 'sword' whenever she had the time. She would constantly brandish it and gradually went from knowing nothing to possessing sword attacks, sword beams and finally Sword Intent.

And when she used Sword Intent to slash out a fiery sword strike, even a tiny flame made her finally tear up. Because from that moment, she could finally eat cooked food. She finally did not need to endure the feeling of torturing her throat as she swallowed the gross and nauseating raw meat.

After settling her danger, hunger and illness, she finally managed to have a slightly more normal life.

However, the test of the greatest difficulty finally befell her—Loneliness.

At the beginning when she was only bent on surviving, she did not have that much time to consider other matters. However, once her life finally stabilized, loneliness and boredom began flooding her senses, drowning the young her.

She did not know how long she needed to survive on the uninhabited island. Neither did she know if anyone would come rescue her. To her, the uninhabited island was a prison. It was a life imprisonment without parole.

And in this prison, there was no other human except her.

That was a world where only one girl lived.

In that world, no one could hear her voice.

Her voice only produced words that did not reach anyone, neither would it receive any response.

Loneliness and boredom began to slowly devour her determination.

Finally, one day, after enduring countless difficulties while she remained strong, she finally had the first thought of committing suicide despite the fact that it was not easy for her to survive for that long.

So loneliness was the greatest enemy.

Chapter 448: The Painstakingly Found Sense Of Reality

She was nearly killed by loneliness.

But when she came to the crossroads of whether to free herself or to resolutely continue on, she finally chose to live on with firm resolution.

That was because when her mother closed her eyes forever, she had gently said to her.

"Mom will always stay by your side. Mom will watch Dawn grow up, as long as Dawn lives on happily and healthily, Mom will never disappear. Mom will always, always live in Dawn's heart."

Ah, if Dawn were to die,

Mom will disappear.

Therefore, she could not die!

She could not die!

She still could not die!

She wanted to defeat loneliness. She wanted to carry on living!

In order to battle loneliness, the four-and-a-half-year-old girl began talking to herself.

Began speaking to unspeaking trees, to silent rocks, to twittering birds, she would pour out the words in her heart. Her grievances, her pains, her sadness, her mother, her little bits of happiness, what she had done today, what she had done yesterday, what she had previously done, what she wanted to do in the future, what she would definitely do if she left the uninhabited island, what she...

She would confide everything she wanted to say. She would produce voices she wanted to produce.

She constantly confided to her silent audience which were destined to never respond.

But, but it did not matter. It truly did not matter. That was...sufficient.

As long as she could confide in something, even if it was her speaking to herself, even if there was no response, but as long as she could confide, she would not feel that lonely. She could obtain that tiny bit—something that she needed to obtain even if it was a tiny bit—of courage to live on.

Finally, the girl defeated loneliness. It was a close victory, a Pyrrhic victory. She had nearly lost.

That was because she was rescued. After three years, she was finally found by the family clan. She was rescued off the island and was returned to civilization. If it was another year, no, maybe a month, a week or even a day, she might very well have collapsed.

But very luckily, she was not defeated by loneliness.

Ha, ha...ha. So lucky...

Yes, she survived. Mom was still by her side. Mom had still not disappeared. Wasn't this luck?

Even after she returned to the human world, she lost all her expressions and emotions. She was not even able to communicate with ordinary humans. Was that also considered lucky?

However, the intense battle with loneliness eventually left behind repercussions.

She was unable to communicate normally with ordinary people. She was not one who walled herself in or not speak. It was completely the opposite. When she was facing strangers, she could still chat. She could even continue on for days.

But she could not hear a sound.

She could not hear the response of the other person.

Or it could be said that she subconsciously treated the human she was facing as a tree, rock or bird!

It was an illness, a mental illness. It was an untreatable illness that only she could treat herself.

She eventually did not treat herself. She did not feel like there was a need to treat herself either because she was already accustomed to it. She was accustomed to not receiving any response to her words. She was accustomed to ice-cold silence.

Even though she could question and answer others, but to her, it was just a question and answer session with herself. Because on that island, she had spoke to herself countless times. Naturally, she had engaged in a question and answer session by herself.

She could not show any expression. She could not force a laugh.

She could not experience the emotions of normal people. Negative emotions like anger, sadness and hate had long been devoured by the void of loneliness. Positive emotions like happiness, excitement and agitation had long been forgotten by the massacring she undertook to obtain food.

As a male in disguise, she remained expressionless. Her lone personality was not welcomed by other boys. Her powerful strength also destined her to be ostracized and bullied. Her exquisite appearance attracted many suitors, but no one could tolerate her habit of speaking to herself and style where they were

not in her eyes.

She did not have any friends in life. She remained alone.

But she was already accustomed to being alone. She was accustomed to having loneliness as a partner.

She could not change, nor was there any need for her to change.

Due to her habit of speaking to herself, when she faced the fake Celestial King (Speechless Li), she was still able to patiently answer his questions. She was in no hurry to kill him and she was very long-winded. She was completely different from the expressionless appearance that kept people away from her.

But in fact, she was not conversing with Speechless. She was only engaging in a question and answer session with herself. That was because Speechless's questions and answers had long been formed in her mind. There was no need to hear his voice, nor did she need his response. She could complete that conversation by herself.

At the beginning, it was exactly the same when she faced Shi Xiaobai.

She treated Shi Xiaobai as an ice-cold rock. Although that confession had slightly surprised her, many possibilities were formed in her mind. She could easily complete the conversation by herself.

But she patiently conversed with Shi Xiaobai and answered his questions and also asked him questions. But all of them was just her speaking to herself.

However, when Shi Xiaobai said that sentence 'This King even knows very clearly that there is a red mole under your right armpit', her black-and-white world suddenly bloomed gorgeous colors. Finally!

She finally heard a 'voice'!

Ah, she heard his voice.

She really, really wanted to continue listening to his voice.

Ah, what was going on with this unimaginable conversation?

Why, why was there no way I could predict what he was going to say next? But, but why was there this urge to know what he would say next?

For the first time ever since she was six, she no longer needed to speak to herself.

She eagerly asked him questions and was eager to know what his response was.

Curiosity? To resolve her puzzlement? To not leave behind any

mysteries?

It was none of them.

They were all excuses!

It was because of her engrossment in the conversation with him.
She could not extricate herself from his voice.

She only wished that the conversation would keep carrying on!

The youth did not disappoint her. He unraveled layer after layer of the mystery and exceeded her expectations again and again. His voice turned clearer and clearer, and became more and more...real!

She wanted to continue listening to his voice!

She did not want to kill him!

She did not want to kill him!

She really did not want to kill him!

He...he was the painstakingly found—sense of reality!

Chapter 449: Monster That Triple-Tasks

It was remarkable for her to survive for three years when she was thrown into an uninhabited island filled with beasts at the age of three. She had already lost count of the number of life-and-death situations she had encountered by the age of six. There were all kinds of battles she had to fight—against beasts, against illnesses, against pain, against loneliness, against herself. After her tears were drained dry, she understood the cruel reality of massacring! Massacre! Massacre! Or die.

She possessed the purest instincts of massacring because she had undergone countless of battles. She had undergone countless cruel battles that were to kill or be killed.

After engaging in countless massacres, she had affirmed the meaning behind life, so how could that be swayed?

How could her thoughts of massacre which were colder and tougher than ice mountains be wavered because of an appreciation of his intelligence?

It could not waver. In a beast-filled island which you have no idea when you would be bitten or ripped to death, once your will to survive wavers, you would lose the courage to survive. Her will could not waver.

"Kill him, kill him, kill him..."

Dawn was constantly retreating. The irritation in her heart was

growing in intensity. The black-haired youth constantly stuck close to her like gum. As for her, she constantly told herself to kill him, but she could not do it.

That was because she did not want to lose his voice!

"Damn it, damn it, damn it!"

The girl remained expressionless, but her eyes turned myriad and complicated.

In the intense battle, she constantly found time to look at that exquisite face and that pair of black eyes. All she saw were eyes that remained expressionless but were burning.

He did not say a word nor did he make any sound. All he did was quietly chase after her.

How irritating!

How irritating!

How irritating!

Why aren't you saying something?

There's no harm to striking up a conversation even in battle,

right?

Even some malicious derision would do!

Hey, quick say something.

Why are you suddenly so quiet and serious? Why do you keep chasing in such a deadpan manner? Are you so eager to clinch victory in this battle?

Indeed, indeed you should have been killed!

You...

"Bastard!"

Finally, she could not tolerate any further as that single word came out of her mouth in a very natural manner. It was like a chime that suddenly trembled.

The voice that sounded like a beautiful chime was not emotionless for the first time. Furthermore, it was not like a curse filled with anger. Instead, it will felt like a coquettish complaint that was filled with grievance. The word she said had a hint of a frail girl's charms.

Was that my voice?

How could that be my voice!?

The girl was given a shock from her subconscious voice and emotions. In her daze, her arm was nearly hit by the youth, but she was eventually unable to fully dodge it, causing a tiny tear to appear on her sleeve.

The girl retreated in a hurry. Her usual calmness prevented her from panicking, but she felt a sense of embarrassing vexation.

Seeing how the youth had charged towards her once again with a deadpan expression, that stance of attacking while disregarding everything else and that quiet and ice-cold silence made her suddenly think of a scene she did not want to recall.

A horde of ferocious beasts were charging at her in a frenetic manner. They had red eyes and cold killing intent, so regardless of how loudly she screamed, they would not respond or show any pity to her. They opened their gaping mouths which dripped with gross and smelly saliva. In between their sharp fangs were pieces of remnant flesh.

The beasts in her memory slowly overlapped with the youth in front of her.

At that moment, vexation turned to anger!

Anger was the source of killing intent!

A purple beam suddenly bloomed as the girl slashed out to clash with the youth's sword!

"Sword Truth!"

The girl who had been in a dilemma finally reached her tolerance limit. She produced killing intent and activated her Sword Truth!

The girl's sword slashed at the youth's waist. Midway, it was blocked by the black sword, and at the same time the white sword was thrust towards her chest.

But this time, the girl finally did not retreat. After she activated her Sword Truth, her strength immediately was able to overwhelm the youth's. The black sword could only block for a moment before he was left open. Her sword swung straight at the youth's waist. Her fair left hand that was covered in a purple glow and psionic power held the white sword that was thrusting at her chest firmly!

...

"It's over." Dawn sighed in her heart.

Even though it was just a moment of rage, it was sufficient to generate killing intent within her. And having already figured out Shi Xiaobai's fighting style, the balance naturally broke the moment she activated the power of her Sword Truth.

At the moment when victory was imminent, she felt a pain in her

left hand. Although she had used the power of Sword Truth and psionic power to protect her left hand, she had grabbed the sword with her bare hands. The sharp sword beam was still able to slice through her palm. As blood oozed out, it dyed her hand and the white blade in her hand red.

But at the same time, she could sense that her sword had slashed at Shi Xiaobai's waist.

Her strike was one that even the new Transcendent King who was proud of his physical toughness could not withstand, much less a weak human.

The outcome was decided and his fate was sealed.

At the next moment, his body would be sliced into two.

"Bam!"

A clash echoed but the sword that cleaved at the youth's waist flew out like a rocket and spun a few times in mid-air before landing firmly on the ground.

The girl suddenly widened her eyes.

"How is it possible!?"

Her sword had failed to slice through the youth's waist!

What sort of monster-like defense was that!?

Dawn was extremely shocked as her eyes landed on Shi Xiaobai's waist. She attempted to discover the truth to the matter before seeing psionic power that was gradually dissipating.

"Psionic Hardening?"

The girl frowned slightly. That was one of the most basic uses of psionic defense. It used psionic power to hardened one's body but it was limited in range. It needed greater precision as compared to Psionic Shield or Psionic Barrier, but its defensive ability was the best.

There was dissipating psionic power around Shi Xiaobai's waist, which clearly indicated that he had used Psionic Hardening.

But he was able to precisely use Psionic Hardening under the present situation?

"Could this fellow actually triple-task?"

It was well known fact that people were at their weakest while attacking. As offense and defense were two complete measures, it was very difficult to dual-task.

Dawn had used offense and defense simultaneously just a

moment ago. At the same moment she slashed Lucifer's Sword at Shi Xiaobai's abdomen, she had used her left hand to grab the white sword that was thrust towards her chest. That was not something easily done. She needed to be able to dual-task in order to accomplish it.

And it was because she had experienced it which made her know how hard it was to dual-task.

However, Shi Xiaobai had just used his the black sword in his right hand to defend while attacking with the white sword in his left hand. At the same time, he had precisely used Psionic Hardening to increase his defense. This was triple-tasking that was much more difficult than dual-tasking!

Dual-tasking and triple-tasking only differed by a single number, but the enhancement from one to the other was like heaven and earth.

Chapter 450: Might As Well Slash Out With One Strike To End It Once And For All

"It's not only triple-tasking. It's impossible to defend against that strike using Psionic Hardening alone, as all it does is add a trivial amount of defense. The thing that truly defended against that strike is his body."

Dawn quickly pondered over the matter before coming to a shocking conclusion.

This Infernal King that claims to be human possesses a strong willpower that allows him to triple-task. Furthermore, his physical toughness exceeds the gargantuan who was in his fourth form.

How could he still be human?

He is practically a monster!

The rookies from afar exchanged looks with one another. Speechless's mouth twitched slightly. He had previously said with great certainty that once Dawn activated the power of her Sword Truth, the balance would immediately be broken and that Shi Xiaobai could even get one-shot. However, when all of that happened, not only was Shi Xiaobai uninjured, it ended with Dawn bleeding in her left hand. The way his face was figuratively slapped was done in such a ruthless manner.

Speechless looked at Mu Yuesheng, who had a mocking smile. He

said stubbornly, "Ahem, that fellow is slightly stronger than I expected."

...

Dawn used her healing technique to treat her injured left hand. When she saw Shi Xiaobai only needed to catch a tiny breather after landing before charging over, she finally could not help but shout, "So you weren't just risking your life while we were fighting because you are confident that your defense can withstand my sword?"

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback before he gave a serious nod.

Just from eating the Transcendent fruit, his physical toughness was on par with Leonis's. Now, having eaten the three holy items—Transcendent fruit, Celestial Jade and Infernal King's sword—his physical toughness was naturally no weaker than the gargantuan's. It was even superior to the gargantuan in his fourth form. Compounded with the highly concentrated Psionic Hardening, he was indeed confident he could withstand Dawn's attack. It had to be said that the holy items of the three domains were very valuable, and of course, it was also because of the heaven-defying ability of the Power of Taotie.

However, his choice of using a dual-blade kamikaze fighting style was not because of his confidence in his defense but because he had no other choice.

Shi Xiaobai felt a little bittersweet. His speed and strength was

clearly above Dawn's, but he had failed to defeat her despite her not activating the power of her Sword Truth. That was because, in terms of battle strategy and impromptu judgment, he was far inferior to her.

She was like a battle-hardened warrior who possessed absolute calmness. She was able to perfectly dodge his every strike in a perfect manner before launching a counterattack. She never made a mistake nor did she give him any opportunity. He had to use the dual-blade kamikaze style to forcefully create opportunities for himself.

This was an opponent that had forced him to give it his all, but also an opponent that he could not defeat.

He did not know that Dawn was feeling bittersweet as well. She believed that she had been repressed by the scoundrelly dual-blade kamikaze style, to the point of feeling vexed, but now, she realized that she had been repressed by Shi Xiaobai's might.

The youth in front of her was faster and stronger than her. He was able to activate the power of his Sword Truth for prolonged periods of time and possessed a monster-like physical defense. She could not triple-task like him, so if she did not activate her Sword Truth, all she could do was constantly dodge and retreat. There was no way of winning against him. Even with her Sword Truth activated, she would still need to engage in an intense battle before she could clinch victory.

This was an opponent she needed to deal with seriously.

But...

She could not activate the power of her Sword Truth.

Due to a moment of vexation, she was angered enough to produce killing intent, but when that sword slashed out, she felt a sense of regret. The power of the Sword Truth lasted for only a moment before it disintegrated.

She knew that it would be very difficult for her to have any intentions of killing the youth again because she could not deny that to her, he was a unique existence.

But if she could not activate the power of her Sword Truth, there was no way she could win, other than waiting for Shi Xiaobai to no longer be able to maintain the power of his Sword Truth. He had activated his Sword Truth continuously for an extended period of time, so it was likely that his mental energies were about to be depleted, right?

"How long more can you maintain your Sword Truth?" Dawn hesitated for a moment before asking softly.

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said seriously, "This King's Sword Truth will not be deactivated before the outcome is decided."

His tone was filled with confidence, but she could not believe him.

Even if he had immense mental energy reserves, there was no way he could persist with the expenditure over a long period of time. The battle was clearly in a stalemate. Although he was unable to repress her fully, he was unable to defeat her. And she had no way to use her Massacre Sword Truth against him, so there was nothing she could do to him. It was unknown how much longer the battle would continue on.

There would be a final moment when his mental energies were completely drained, which would prevent him from maintaining the power of his Sword Truth. Furthermore, it was difficult to triple-task when one's mental energies were scarce. When that happened, she would be able to gain victory.

All she needed was to endure a little longer and drag it out to the point when he suffers a mental collapse. Then, everything would come to an end.

She just needed to endure to that moment to clinch victory. Even if she were unable to kill him when the time came, obtaining victory still matched her original goal.

However, wouldn't such a victory be a bit...pathetic?

Did it have to come down to her having to fight her opponent in a battle of attrition before clinching victory?

Such a victory felt worse than defeat!

"I do not need such a victory." She said to herself in her heart before making a decision.

"One strike!"

Dawn said in a deep voice, "Shi Xiaobai, accept one strike from me! If that strike fails to kill you, it will be your victory and I would have lost.."

She did not need to wear down her opponent to clinch victory. Compared to that, she might as well steel her heart to kill him!

Kill him or lose.

That was the decision she made. It was the way she steeled her resolve.

Shi Xiaobai felt slightly alarmed but he quickly realized something. He nodded slowly and whispered, "Come on, This King has already waited for a very long time."

He had been waiting for her to activate the power of her Sword Truth.

However, the thing he was eagerly waiting for was that one strike.

That strike that filled the world with whiteness, to the point of making the souls of everyone quiver.

"The Hero King's mental energies has recovered. She is about to use the power of her Sword Soul."

Speechless, who had nearly been killed by that strike, said with a heavy expression, "The power of the Sword Soul is far stronger than any attack at our level of strength. Despite trying my best, I was unable to withstand that strike. If not for the Hero King thinking that my heart was in the left side of my chest, I would have already died. This time, she will definitely not make the same mistake. Shi Xiaobai is really in grave danger."

She had been constantly repressed but had no way to produce killing intent to use her Massacre Sword Truth on Shi Xiaobai, so the only way was to drag it to the point when Shi Xiaobai was mentally drained to clinch victory.

But such a victory was no doubt a form of humiliation to Dawn. It felt worse than defeat.

She might as well slash out with one strike to end it once and for all!

Dawn held her sword with both hands as she slowly lifted it towards the sky. An astral soul which was about ten meters tall stood behind her. It was blurry, preventing others from seeing its true form. However, one could tell that it was wearing armor and that both its hands held onto a gigantic sword. Its posture was

identical to the way the girl lifted her sword.

Chapter 451: This King's Eyes Can Only Accept Victory

The power of Sword Soul was the third realm when it came to sword techniques. The number of swordsmen that could comprehend it were few and far between. Not only did one need extraordinary perception, one also needed critical encounters. There were even a few of the ten Sword Masters in the world who still had not comprehended the power of Sword Soul. That was a power that far exceeded the power of Sword Truth, and obviously was not something rookies like them could possess. Even Sword Immortal Xu Taibai only managed to comprehend the power of Sword Soul at the age of thirty. He was one of the youngest people in history to have attained that achievement.

However, the Hero King had far exceeded that record to be able to comprehend the power of Sword Soul at such a young age.

Even in battles at the world-class Sword Master levels, the power of Sword Soul typically becomes the deciding factor. There was no need to mention how it was like in the Psionic Mortal Realm for rookies. The influence that the power of Sword Soul has could even be considered as a bug. It was like a level ten character in a computer game equipping a level hundred weapon. Against monsters that were under level ten, it was obvious they could be crushed with a single strike.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not understand the power of the Sword Soul. He did not know its principles or how it was achieved. However, he could feel the apprehension that came from deep within the soul, like it was an alarm that was constantly tingling

his intuition that there was danger. It was telling him a solemn fact—He could not withstand that strike!

Even though he had experienced the immensity of the strike's power from afar, only when he faced the might of the strike did he realize how terrifying the power of that strike was. Speechless needed a lot of courage to dare face this strike head on.

The power of the Sword Soul was not something that should exist at this level!

But now wasn't the time to be panicking and afraid. There was even less time to grumble over how the girl in front of him had grasped this invincible power at this stage despite her young age. He only had one problem he needed to consider.

How was he going to withstand that strike?

He was lost in a complicated mental maze with thousands of dead ends. Was there a path that led to salvation?

What could he use to withstand that strike?

"Meaningless thoughts."

As though she was not in a hurry to end everything, the girl mocked with a deadpan expression, "In the period you are thinking over the way to survive, I could have killed you countless times."

But it was because I couldn't bear to kill you that I had the dilemma in the first place.

The girl hid that ambiguous thought in her heart and felt even more eager to strike out. To her, killing him was like killing the only person in the world that could converse with her. It was natural for her to loathe to part with it.

Although she loathed to part with him, she felt the increasing need to slash out that strike. That was because in this battle, the youth might become an obstacle she would not be able to cross in the path ahead of her. She needed to kill him now before she immersed herself in the 'happiness' of being able to hear his voice. After all, misfortune was her true partner. This lavish 'happiness' was so realistic that it appeared fake.

Fake phenomena were bubbles that could burst at any time.

Since it would burst sooner or later, she might as well prick it with her own hands to prevent even greater pain.

But... However...

Before killing him, she still wanted to listen to that realistic voice before bidding him farewell forever. She just wanted to listen to something, just a sentence, as long as it was his voice.

Just a sentence was enough to satisfy her last bit of willfulness.

So, speak youth. The final sentence will become your last words. I will engrave them on a tombstone I make with my own hands for you, so as to thank you for letting me see the color in this world once again.

"Thank you."

The two words slowly came out of the youth's mouth.

The girl was stunned. She instantly began to doubt if her ears had received a mistaken sound.

She was about to kill him and she had arrogantly derided him, all in exchange for a word of thanks?

Were those your last words?

What a joke!

Just as Dawn opened her mouth to say some words of doubt, she saw the black and white swords in Shi Xiaobai's hands gradually dissipate. Replacing it was a resplendent holy sword that she was more than acquainted with—Lucifer's Sword

Shi Xiaobai clenched Lucifer's Sword tightly in his hand as he slowly lifted it into the sky.

His pair of black eyes were bright and firm. There was no longer any confusion in them!

When he raised up Lucifer's Sword, the ground suddenly suffused countless golden points of light. They flew towards Lucifer's Sword like butterflies and instantly transformed into a gigantic sword phantom that charged into the sky!

Thank you. Thank you for your reminder.

Yes, what's the point of those meaningless thoughts?

In order to withstand that strike? In order to survive? Wouldn't it appear too narrow-minded to use This King's great wisdom to ponder over such meaningless things?

At this moment in time, while facing your strike,

What was needed the most was not thoughts, methods, or tricks, but a persistence—a persistence for victory.

It was not about withstanding it, nor was it about not being defeated, but victory!

There was no need to consider or be hesitant. By 'blindly' looking towards the correct direction, there was only one thing to tell himself—This King wants to gain victory over that strike!

If he did not even have the courage for victory, how could he still shamelessly call himself fearless?

So disappear, that momentary confusion!

This King's eyes can only see victory!

A persistent thought sprouted in his mind as it turned increasingly clear. The golden points of light suffusing from the ground increased in number as the golden sword phantom increased in size. The resplendent light turned blinding.

That strike was a sword move Shi Xiaobai created by himself. After comprehending the Sword Truth, 'Excalibur', he had used the strike of the blond woman with coiled hair in his mind, and the thought of how Turtle-speed Divine Punch constantly compressed psionic power, and the inspiration from compressing all his strength through the use of One Second Shura. By combining the three factors together, he created a sword technique that belonged to him!

By using all his strength, exhausting his everything, concentrating his commitment to victory, he would slash out the final strike with absolutely no regrets!

Energy, be compressed.

Energy, be squeezed.

Every blood vessel was boiling. Every cell was resonating. This energy is to be dedicated to you, so become even more powerful!

It didn't matter even if you would not have the strength to even move a finger after that strike!

Take all of This King's energy away!

This King's eyes can only accept victory!

The massive golden sword phantom expanded and seemed to hold up the sky. It emanated tremendous power.

Speechless' eyes glazed over as he muttered to himself, "Shi Xiaobai, are you really the protagonist?"

Sunless looked at the youth's thin figure in a mesmerized manner. She muttered as though she was in reverie, "How beautiful."

The corners of Dawn's mouth gradually curved gently as her eyes seemed to effuse a faint smile.

"Up till the very end, you are still able to leave me in shock. Shi Xiaobai, you are the only one! Only you are special! But if you are real, please be able to withstand this strike!"

The girl finally did not hesitate as she slashed out her final strike!

Chapter 452: The Boy And Girl That Were Buried Together

Dawn slashed out the strike that contained the power of her Sword Soul.

The strike did not seem to have a name. It appeared to be the most normal of slashes, but the power produced from that strike struck fear into the deepest depths of one's soul!

The azure blue sky was instantly overwhelmed by white light.

Shi Xiaobai took a step forward as his black eyes shimmered an austere killing intent. With a roar, he slashed at that boundless whiteness.

"Excalibur!"

This strike was Shi Xiaobai's full strength. It was meant for victory, leaving no room for escape!

This was the final strike.

This strike was Excalibur!

The gigantic golden sword phantom came crashing down on the whiteness of space. With a bang, the world lost all sounds to it. Golden and white light mixed in the sky like interspersing clouds

or crashing waves. They rolled and boiled over, like burning flower buds.

There was no other scene or color other than gold and white. It was as if the entire world was filled with the resplendent goldenness and blank whiteness.

The thirty-thousand-strong spectators, Speechless and company fell into a speechless daze. They could not hear any sounds or see anything. They could not even say a word. All they could do was remain in silence and wait with bated breaths.

They were waiting for the moment the energies of the two strikes dispersed.

They were waiting for the moment the outcome surfaced.

They were waiting to see who won.

...

"Who won?"

It was unknown who was the first to produce such a sound. The silence in the world was finally broken, and time that seemed to freeze over finally began spinning once again.

The interspersed gold and white light dispersed like the clouds.

The energies that left the hearts of people palpitating gradually faded to show the world's outlines. Everyone finally managed to see the scene in front of them.

There were people panting, while there were others who were holding their breaths. Some gulped a mouthful of saliva, while others gaped their mouths. Some widened their eyes while others trembled all over...

However, the thirty-thousand-strong audience all cast their eyes at the spot where the gold and white light was richest.

it was the spot where the black-haired boy and blond girl stood.

Who was the one who won?

In the gradually fading light, a figure slowly appeared.

A lone figure that was left in between the heavens and earth!

It meant that one of them had been pulverized by the clash of swords and had his or her existence wiped clean.

Then, whose figure did that belong to?

The black-haired boy?

Or was it the blond girl?

Who won?

Who died?

"None of the above."

Speechless' lips quivered slightly as he said in shock, "It's not them!"

That figure was not the boy's or the girl's. That was because the figure was clearly much bigger than a normal-sized human!

Soon, many people realized that fact, but they still widened their eyes in disbelief.

Who was it?

"Field... Field Marshal Awesomo!?"

A soldier from the Celestial domain was the first person to recognize the true identity of the blurry figure in the light!

And finally, when the light was completely dispersed, an unbelievable fact was proven!

Standing in the spot where the young boy and girl were was a tall armored figure. His head had two horns, and he was none other than the Celestial domain's Field Marshal Awesomo!

The Celestial domain's Field Marshal that had never existed in the history of the trial had suddenly appeared. He was the only existence in that void!

Why is it him?

How could it possibly be him?

"Where...where is Shi Xiaobai!?"

The always calm Sunless could no longer maintain her composure as she shouted in panic. In that void world, the youth that had always been in her eyes had vanished. It was as if he had evaporated completely from existence!

Field Marshal Awesomo turned his head slowly. His crimson eyes were cold and austere as a sneer slowly suffused across his lips.

"That boy that was designated as the Infernal King has obviously died."

Field Marshal Awesomo said with a sneer, "But don't worry. He won't be lonely because there is that outrageously strong girl who has accompanied him in death. The two of them indeed possessed extraordinary strength, but they were foolish after all. They had

bet all their power into that one strike, ignoring an internecine outcome. It is only natural that they didn't end up well. This Field Marshal was only watching a good show before he casually wiped out the barely living duo."

The burly bull-horned Field Marshal illustrated a cruel fact with an emotionless and calm tone.

But there will clearly people who did not believe him. Speechless immediately said with a sneer, "Just a once-defeated loser like you? Even if they had used all their strength which resulted in an internecine outcome, there is no way you can beat them, much less wipe their existence. Have you repressed the terror of being crushed by This Emperor?"

Speechless sneered, but beads of sweat oozed out of his forehead. That was because Shi Xiaobai and Dawn had really vanished. They had vanished from this world. Even if they were not killed by Field Marshal Awesomo, it was difficult to eliminate the possibility that they had perished together.

Furthermore, this so-called Field Marshal Awesomo did not exist in the data left behind by past trial-takers. To them, he was a mysterious existence. He had once thought of the possible underlying dangers of Field Marshal Awesomo.

However, he never expected that everything would be so sudden and ridiculous.

Shi Xiaobai and the Hero King had been killed by him?

"How can this be possible!?"

"Is there any difference on whether you believe it or not?"

Field Marshal Awesomo maintained his sneer as he turned to face Speechless and company. He walked slowly and said coldly, "All of you are definitely dying anyway. Of course, before you die, This Field Marshal will let you realize the truth before dying. The fool that was designated as Celestial King, all of this is just a plot set up by This Field Marshal. Be it the designation of the Infernal King or the Celestial King, or the method where the war between the three domains was instigated, and even the battle that you thought you won, were designed by This Field Marshal. It's all to kill that so-called Hero King you people mention. That bastard is not fake but real. Three thousand years ago, This Field Marshal could not do a thing about her, but this time, she sent herself to her death while crossing space-time. This Field Marshal naturally won't be soft hearted again. Although This Field Marshal's original intention was to slightly deplete her stamina, who knew that the boy was such a tough opponent. He gave This Field Marshal quite a pleasant surprise."

"Now, all of you will be vanquished. This Field Marshal no longer needs to hide and can openly clean up the lowly scum like you."

"Of course, you might still think that there might be a chance, and think that This Field Marshal is lying. But soon, you will be completely pulverized by the cruel fact. Don't think of running. The exit command is invalid. This Field Marshal is the ruler of this level, so This Field Marshal controls the rules of this level."

"This Field Marshal is the one none of you want to encounter—the Level Lord!"

...

Chapter 453: Is That The Real Sunless Ye?

"This Field Marshal is the one none of you want to encounter—the Level Lord!"

Field Marshal Awesomo did not hide his arrogance. He loudly announced his identity and gave a rather long speech. The amount of information in his words was astonishingly ample.

It was Field Marshal Awesomo who was behind the reason why Shi Xiaobai and Speechless, who had for some baffling reason, been designated the Infernal King and Celestial King respectively?

The Hero King they thought was an imitation by the assessment program was actually real? She was the real Hero King that had transmigrated from three thousand years ago?

And the battle of the three kings as well as the machinations set forth by Field Marshal Awesomo was a scheme designed to kill the Hero King?

After an internecine outcome between Shi Xiaobai and the Hero King, they were completely wiped out by the Level Lord?

A series of shocking revelations stunned the trial-takers from the human world. They naturally would not easily believe Field Marshal Awesomo's words, but there was no way they could deny that all the information seemed to lead to such a conclusion.

If the Hero King was a real existence that had crossed the rivers of time, that would explain the feeling that she truly existed. If Field Marshal Awesomo was really the Level Lord, then as the ruler of this level, he indeed had the ability and authority to design such a scheme. Furthermore, he would indeed have the strength needed to completely wipe out Shi Xiaobai and the Hero King after their internecine outcome.

The disappearance of Shi Xiaobai and the Hero King also seemed to prove that Field Marshal Awesomo was not lying. That was because the proud duo would not spontaneously choose to use the exit command. And since they disappeared from this world, other than being wiped out, there was apparently no better explanation.

Shi Xiaobai and the Hero King were really...really dead just like that?

Everyone felt their bodies turn cold, as though they were stuck in a snowstorm.

And at that moment, the first person to act was Sunless.

At the moment Field Marshal Awesomo finished speaking, Sunless had already unsheathed her silver sword from her scabbard and rushed straight for Field Marshal Awesomo.

The usually calm her had a rare panicked look in her eyes, but her worry and anxiety did not affect her from making the most accurate judgment.

Whether Shi Xiaobai lived or not was already decided. No amount of panic and flustering could change it.

But if Shi Xiaobai was still alive, the fastest way to know about his situation or to save him from any danger he was in was to know the truth. The easiest and most direct way to doing so was naturally to—dig the truth out from the mastermind.

In summary, by defeating Field Marshal Awesomo as quickly as possible to force the truth out of him was what they needed to do the most.

Defeat him, even if he was the nightmare of trial-takers, the Level Lord!

Sunless's eyes were sharp and firm, as though she had decided on where her sword would point to.

"Not a bad choice."

Field Marshal Awesomo responded with a sneer. He clearly did not expect that the ant-like trial-takers would respond so quickly with resistance. It was unknown if he should commend her for her courage or mock her for her recklessness.

The way Sunless ran was not like Shi Xiaobai or Dawn, who could propel themselves forward with a momentary burst of speed. The way she ran was rather steady. Although there were shadows from the movement of her feet, they looked especially solid. The wind

that accompanied her movement looked like pixies were surrounding her. The way she ran with her body lying low was like a charging leopard. It was a stark contrast from her usual quiet state.

Suddenly, countless dots of amber light suffused from the ground and quickly gathered onto the sword in Sunless's hand. An amber halo enveloped the girl.

Sunless had directly activated the power of her Sword Truth. It was obvious that she was anxious to end the battle as fast as possible.

"Amber color?"

Pulp Farmer widened his eyes slightly as he muttered, "Supra-advancement...Her obsession in the way of the sword is even more intense than before?"

Red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, violet were the seven colors of the rainbow. It was also the ranking of many strength-based systems. As almost all of the strength of most 'powers' would produce such colors, this observation was given the name 'Law of Rainbows' by the psionic theoreticians.

The colors of the power of Sword Truth also followed the 'Law of Rainbows', and the colors that were shown represented the degree of one's obsession in the way of the sword. It also demonstrated the standard of the power of the Sword Truth. In the seven colors, red was the weakest, and violet was the strongest.

But 'powers' were just stars. There were naturally colors of power than surpassed the colors of the rainbow. For example, Shi Xiaobai's golden Sword Truth was one.

Typically, other colors other than the rainbow colors were determined as powers that surpassed violet, but it was unknown how much it surpassed violet. Therefore, any colors outside of the rainbow spectrum were called 'supra-colors'. There was no clear systemic standards for supra-colors.

The power of Sword Truth did not belong to the system of 'strength', but it was a system of 'conversion'. Therefore, the color of the Sword Truth did not imply its strength, but the efficiency of the conversion. It influenced the conversion process of mental energies to strength. If red color meant converting 10% of mental energies to strength, then violet might mean a 30% conversion process. Although it would not influence the person's minimum or maximum strength, it was clear that a Sword Truth color of higher grade would have an absolute advantage in terms of efficiency.

However, it was very difficult to advance in the colors of Sword Truth as it was not an advancement in strength, but the enhancement of one's obsession. It was not something that could be enhanced through an accumulative process or training. Typically, it was very difficult for a swordsman to enhance the colour of their Sword Truth in their lifetime.

But Sunless's Sword Truth color had advanced. It was unknown when, but it had been enhanced to an amber color that was beyond the rainbow colors!

This did not mean that Sunless's strength had greatly increased. In fact, it did not have much of an influence. However, it allowed the conversion process of the power of Sword Truth to be even smoother and more efficient. However, it was a curious thought as to why Sunless was able to attain a supra-advancement because it meant that her obsession in Sword Truth was more than twice it was compared to before!

Pulp Farmer had always treated Sunless as an opponent he was chasing after, so he had paid attention to her strength. He could not help but feel shocked, because from what he knew, Sunless, who had good feelings for Shi Xiaobai, had found something she liked other than swords. It was only natural that her obsession in sword techniques would decrease, but not only had her obsession with her path of the sword not decreased, but it had instead increased?

This was the reason why Pulp Farmer had originally viewed Shi Xiaobai as an enemy. He always believed that the youth that caused Sunless to feel infatuated would result in his target becoming weaker.

But the outcome appeared to be completely opposite.

...

As Pulp Farmer was still reeling in his astonishment, Sunless had already traversed tens of kilometers and rushed in front of Field Marshal Awesomo.

Without willing to wait any longer, she chose to directly enter a highly risky melee clash with him.

Her bright eyes were no longer as calm and torpid as they usually were. Her eyes were sharp and ferocious. They were burning with a resolute will.

Her sword was even fiercer.

The amber-colored halo shattered as the silver sword slashed out fiercely. The sword had abandoned any flashiness in its moves. The strikes were simple and direct, which made them extremely brutal.

In a real life-and-death battle, any superfluous sword techniques would end up being burdensome. It would create unnecessary lag or flaws. As such, simple and brutal sword techniques might lack beauty to them, but they were the most pragmatic sword techniques for killing.

The silver sword slashed out countless sharp sword beams, like countless red lotus blooming!

Field Marshal Awesomo's eyes flashed a look of surprise, but his expression remained calm. He took a step forward and it was unknown when a crimson-colored battle axe appeared in his hand. He used a similarly simple and brutal manner to cleave down at the sword beams!

The crimson-colored battle axe shattered the void as web-like spatial rifts began moving forward like a sonic wave!

"Boom!"

The impact between the two forces shattered the void around them. Large cracks began to appear in the ground with Sunless and Field Marshal Awesomo being the epicenter. Dust was stirred up as they filled the sky with dust storms.

That was only the beginning to their release of power. Sunless's next strike had already come slashing down. She only retreated a step back to withstand the blast that resulted from the clash.

That strike was as simple and brutal as before, but its ferocity was even more intense than before.

Field Marshal Awesomo did not panic as he lifted his battle axe in a composed manner to parry the strike.

However, Sunless' figure had instantly appeared behind Field Marshal Awesomo. A sharp sword beam seemed to tear the heavens asunder.

Field Marshal Awesomo pricked up his eyebrows, but he did not turn around, much less turn his head. He gave a deep growl as the skin on his back was covered with a bronze layer of light. When the sword beam struck it, other than producing a clang, it did not

manage to slice open a wound.

This move was similar to Psionic Hardening, but the defensive strength was on a completely different level.

Sunless had activated the power of her Sword Truth and even chosen the most brutal sword techniques of massacring to push her strength to its maximum. Yet, it could not tear through Field Marshal Awesomo's hide that was augmented by the bronze hardening.

But even so, her amber eyes did not seem disheartened at all.

Sunless flashed her feet once again before slashing her sword once again. No, because another strike had slashed in another direction once again almost at the same instant.

She had realized that her strength was insufficient to crack Field Marshal Awesomo's defenses, so she chose a strategy to quickly inhibit his defenses.

The thirty-thousand-strong audience were once again astounded. Above the vast and empty land, the azure-dressed girl was moving extremely quickly, leaving behind azure shadows in her wake. At the same time, quick and fierce shadow beams slashed in every direction at Field Marshal Awesomo. He was repressed to the point of not being able to move from his spot, while his bronze-colored skin flashed on every part of his body. However, he eventually could not keep up with the girl's speed. Slowly, deep lacerations were sliced through his body!

Field Marshal Awesomo roared angrily. His strength and defenses were rather astounding, but he was helpless against Sunless's simple, brutal and precise sword techniques!

The quiet sword fanatic was roaring with her soul!

At that moment, the azure-dressed beautiful girl was no longer that azure-colour that remained composed even in a storm. Instead, she was the surging storm itself.

"Hey, is that the real Sunless Ye?"

Speechless, who was stupefied from seeing the situation in front of him, clicked his tongue and said, "Why is it completely different from what the rumors say about her?"

Chapter 454: We Need To Have A Good Chat

His heavy eyelids covered his eyes. His hazy mind was still struggling as he tried his best to open his eyes but to no avail. It was as if his body no longer belonged to him. A darkness without any light seemed to have devoured the last of his consciousness.

But he could still sense the temperature that came from the world. It was the best proof that he was still alive.

Heh, alive.

Still alive.

Although taken for granted, the boy was still alive.

After realizing that he was still alive, he did not feel the delight of surviving a calamity because the boy never believed that he would have died just like that. He long believed of the scene of his death—at the instant death came, he would be seated on a sealed throne, smiling as he receives his eternal slumber.

But even though he was still alive, it did not represent the coda of his annihilation. That was because the battle did not appear to have ended. By using all his strength to produce Excalibur, he should have perfectly withstood the girl's Sword Soul strike. Him being still well and alive was the best proof, but the exhaustion he felt from not even being capable to open his eyes made him unable to judge if that strike had obtained the victory that he wanted, or if it even left a mark on the girl's hair.

This battle that had its outcome determined only by death would only end when one side died or abandoned the battle. The girl who was his opponent possessed a firm and ice-cold heart. Compassion and benevolence was insulated from her. If she still possessed strength, she would definitely not show him any mercy. Even if her opponent had fallen unconscious to the point of losing all ability to fight, like a lamb about to be slaughtered, she would still cleave down her butchering blade. That pair of ice-blue eyes which he took notice of seemed to elaborate on this fact.

Therefore, regardless of the outcome, he needed to open his eyes and stand up once again. He needed to lift the sword in his hand!

However, in order to achieve victory, and not only withstand the girl's strike, the boy had compressed every bit of energy in his body. At this very moment in time, his body was completely drained of energy. There was none left. He could not even squeeze the energy needed to open his eyes.

He attempted to use sound to judge the situation he was in but he was horrified to realize that not only did the darkness around him lose its light, it was as if sound had disappeared as well. The din from a thirty-thousand-strong audience, the chatter of his companions, that girl's emotionless voice, or the sounds of the breeze had completely vanished. It was a silent and deathly stillness, as though he was in an empty void.

If not for his exposed skin being able to sense the warmth of the world and the blurry consciousness he had was dwindling like a candle in the wind, he would have believed that he was in the

afterworld and that he had died.

Slowly, his consciousness was like a run-away kite as it lifted with the wind and floated towards the azure blue sky. Slowly, the tip of his consciousness touched the soft, white clouds. The sunlight that dyed the clouds with a sheen enveloped his soul. The warm feeling was as though he was immersed in a sauna. The easy and comfortable feeling was like a pleasant lullaby.

Yes...

How tired...

The boy was still struggling. He was still resisting the 'losing of his consciousness', but the body which did not seem to heed his will and the irresistible exhaustion was slowly draining away the little remaining bits of his consciousness.

The barely persisting consciousness felt a deep sense of exhaustion, down to his very soul.

If he fell asleep just like that, it seemed like it would be quite a blissful matter.

The thought he had for an instant seemed to be the first strike to topple the dominoes. Whatever consciousness he had left was finally collapsing.

The boy was about to fall asleep.

"Be careful!"

A loud cry suddenly sounded and stabbed into his sealed ears. The silent world shattered like a glass prison.

Whose...voice did that belong to?

The moment the question appeared in his mind, the stifled consciousness that nearly went 'unconsciousness' suddenly gained a new breath, jolting the boy who was about to fall asleep awake.

At the same time, an intense sense of danger reached his heart, like a needle was pricking his heart.

He sensed Death.

He was about to die!

If he did not do a thing, he would die there and then!

The boy was not afraid of death.

But he did not wish to die just like that.

That was because his story had only just begun.

"How can This King die here!?"

The exhausted soul that was nearly on the verge of numbness suddenly let out a roar.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly opened his eyes!

...

At the instant he opened his eyes, his eyes could not adjust to the sudden brightness. In his blurry vision, he saw a black beam of light that resembled a sword shooting straight towards his right eye!

The tip of the black beam of light was like that of a saber or sword. It shimmered with a cold luster like the fangs of a cobra. It brought with it an air of death.

Even though Shi Xiaobai's physical toughness was extraordinary, his eyes were still a weak and fatal point. If the black beam of light hit his eye, the outcome would be disastrous.

He needed to dodge that black beam of unknown origin, but after carrying out Excalibur with all his willpower, it allowed him to pay a tremendous price to produce strength that could match the Sword Soul's power. It was already fortunate that he was not knocked unconscious, but his strength was completely drained. It was an outcome that resulted in him not being even able to move a finger.

He was unable to move as he could not even squeeze out the strength needed to twist his neck slightly!

This was a helpless and absolute ending he had to face.

"What sort of joke was that!?"

The boy that never succumbed to 'absolutes' roared in his heart. Out of somewhere came a sliver of energy, like it was a drop of water that suddenly appeared on a desolate land that had dried up into a desert.

Shi Xiaobai managed to finally use his willpower at the moment of greatest danger to squeeze out a tiny amount of strength. He twisted his neck slightly and managed to move his head to the side.

"Bam!"

The black beam of light flashed past Shi Xiaobai's temples and left behind a superficial wound. It hit the ground and penetrated through the ground like it was entering a bottomless pit.

He nearly...nearly died there and then.

Even the firm and tenacious Shi Xiaobai could not help but feel a delight from surviving the calamity.

"How can This King die here!?"

The boy did not get slashed to death by the Sword Soul strike, However, if he died due to his complete exhaustion to black beams of light that he could usually dodge easily, it would be the most aggrieved way of dying. Maybe it was because of this that his thirst to live was surprisingly intense.

However, the sudden danger did not seem to give him a time to catch his breath. His sense of danger struck the warning bells once again as Shi Xiaobai saw in his periphery vision four beams of black light falling from the sky. This time, they were heading straight for his eyes, neck, left chest and an important spot between his two legs.

After seeing the penetrative power of the black beams of light, Shi Xiaobai had no doubt that his eye would be penetrated. The muscles around his neck and chest might be able to somewhat withstand it, but in his exhaustion, there was a certain spot that might end up in a tragic state.

However, he did not even have the strength to twist his neck any more, much less move to dodge the four beams of black light.

Even though his willpower was struggling intensely, there was no way to save himself from his present situation. That was because all his strength had been completely used up. Furthermore, the four beams of light were clearly not the end to the danger he was in.

He was really in a dire situation this time.

Suddenly, the corners of the boy's mouth gradually formed an arc. Such a simple act of moving his facial muscles appeared extremely difficult, so the smile appeared even more stiff.

However, he was indeed smiling. At the moment his life was about to come to an end, he did not struggle or grimace but he beamed. It was a scornful smile.

He faced his despair with a smile. That was something he understood after experiencing the despair of 'saving Little Fatso'.

He did not even close his eyes as he looked somberly at the four black beams of light that fell from the sky, which included the black beam that was headed straight for his eyeball.

Time seemed to slow down drastically at that moment. He could clearly see every instant the black beams of light fell. He could discern every change the black beams of light underwent. It was not an illusion, but an unbelievable visual ability at the moment of his greatest danger.

However, this ability's sudden activation did not seem useful. Even if he could clearly see the trajectories of the black beams of light, what use was it if he lacked the strength to dodge them?

At that moment, a strong wind caused the boy's thin sleeves to flutter.

Shi Xiaobai immediately widened his eyes. In that slowly moving world, a figure suddenly rushed beside him. The speed was so fast that he only had a vague impression of his despite his enhanced visual ability.

"Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!"

All he saw was a resplendent golden light flash past from his vision as the sound of impacts echoed. The four beams of black light disintegrated after shattering in mid-air.

The wanton winds blew into his eyes, but Shi Xiaobai did not close them. That was because a slender figure had entered his eyes. A loose and white long robe concealed her figure, but her resplendent blond hair was more dazzling than sunlight.

Dawn!

The owner of that bright and limpid pair of emotionless, ice-blue eyes!

It was the deadpan Hero King that had instigated a series of actions to announce that she wanted to kill the three kings!

The enemy that he had engaged in a life-and-death battle with!

This girl who had a pretty name was actually standing in front of

him. She was the savior who saved him by shattering the black beam of light?

Wasn't she the one that wanted to kill him the most?

While still reeling in shock, there were a few black beams of light that immediately shot towards him. This time, they did not only descend from the sky but came from every direction. Furthermore, these black beams of light seemed to be thicker than before.

But at the instant the black beams of light assaulted him, the girl in front of him would immediately brandish the Lucifer's Sword in her hand. As sword beams swept outward, it stirred winds that shattered the black beams instantly.

Not only had she saved his life, but she also seemed prepared to continue protecting him. On careful recollection, that voice that warned him to 'be careful' sounded like her voice.

What was going on?

Shi Xiaobai was slightly dumbfounded. It was not only because the girl that should have killed him ruthlessly suddenly act in a completely different manner, but because he finally realized that the world he was in did not look like the world in the seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. That was because there were two scorching suns in the bright sky!

Where was this?

What happened after the clash between Excalibur and the Sword Soul strike?

Why was she protecting him?

Questions filled his mind as Shi Xiaobai's lips trembled slightly. He used a tiny bit of strength he had recovered during that short bit of time to say in a weak voice.

"Wh...What's the situation?"

The simple three words actually contained a great deal of puzzlement.

The girl standing in front of Shi Xiaobai moved her ears slightly, clearly having noticed the weak voice. She swept her sword once again, shattering the black beam that came attacking once again.

"The situation is very complicated."

The girl turned around and bent down slightly. She lowered her head to look into Shi Xiaobai's eyes. She whispered, "The situation is rather complicated. It can't be explained in a word or two. I think...we need to have a good chat."

Shi Xiaobai was surprised and never expected to receive such a response.

He did not know if he was making a mistake because he seemed to see a faint smile on her lips that lasted a fleeting moment when the girl said those words.

Chapter 455: Power Of Love

Speechless had never met Sunless in person during the trials prior to this. But the girl who had the famous title of being the best swordsmen in the younger generation and labeled as a sword fanatic, had nonetheless caught his attention even if he was lofty in personality and scoffed at genius peers his age. Even before entering the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, he had specifically taken a look at the contestant details provided by his organization.

As Sunless was ranked third in the official forecast, the organization had definitely spent more effort in gathering information about her, as well as describe her in detail.

Her background, when she became the old God of Swords' disciple, whatever competitions she had participated in, at what age she gained insight to Sword Intent and Sword Truth was information that was easily obtained. So they were naturally included in the report, but what garnered Speechless's interest was the subjective description the organization had of Sunless.

The information read—

"Sunless Ye, a fanatic whose Sword Truth and obsession are born from swordplay. She can be considered a genuine sword fanatic, one that is rarely seen in a century. Although she is a sword fanatic, she is not an idiot. Her day-to-day actions are no different from a normal person's. However, she shows a lack of concern for anything other than swords when compared to normal people. To her, the world is constructed out of swords and non-sword

matter."

"But strangely, despite having such an inhumane way of looking at things, her emotional quotient is not low. She almost never takes the initiative to converse with others. If family members or friends of family strike a conversation with her, she would ignore them in 90% of situations, but there are still situations where she would answer very tersely. These answers are usually worth pondering over."

"Sunless does not hate the world outside the world of swords, but she does not have the intention to take the initiative to make contact with it. Her intelligence and emotional quotient aren't low, and she is different from typical genius and retards. She is cold, but she never belittles others. Therefore, it can be inferred that although she is in her teens, her maturity might exceed many adults."

"However, her maturity comes from an understanding of the world. She greatly values swords, but she does not belittle things outside of swords. There is probably no existence in this world other than swords that can cause her to waver. It can then be boldly assumed that even when faced with the different choice of choosing the survival of her elder brother or father, she would be able to calmly make the most rational judgment."

This piece of information left a deep impression on Speechless. Especially that bold assumption at the end of the information which left him surprised.

Could this teenage girl really be able to calmly choose the life and

death of her loved ones?

The description seemed to be filled with contradictions, but they sufficiently depicted an image of a person with a monstrous maturity and sword-obsessed fanatic. It was fresh on Speechless's mind.

But at that moment in time, after seeing Sunless in person and seeing how she attacked like a stomp, Speechless began to doubt if he had gotten false information.

What happened to her being mature and how she wouldn't waver for anything other than swords?

Sunless' present state clearly looked like something important to her had been snatched away. She was disregarding everything in order to snatch it back and she looked somewhat crazy.

Speechless could not help but shout, "Hey, is that the real Sunless Ye? Why is it that she is completely different from what the rumors say about her?". He reflected oddly aloud.

Speechless was obviously not the only person who had such thoughts, but there was clearly someone who knew the truth.

"The power of love."

Mu Yuesheng said softly. After saying that, she used 'Lightning Flashstep' and charged towards the intense battle. Having seen

Sunless's abnormal response, she was jolted awake from the disbelief that 'Shi Xiaobai had been killed'. She realized that the Level Lord in front of her needed to be quickly defeated to learn the truth.

The others also began to react. They naturally wouldn't sit idle with the ongoing battle. Even though the opponent was a Level Lord, it was impossible for them to retreat. The few of them exchanged looks before proceeding forward as they rushed towards Field Marshal Awesomo.

Only a stunned Speechless and Pulp Farmer, who had to help support him, was left behind.

Speechless turned to look at Pulp Farmer and said with a chuckle, "Did I hear wrong? Did Yuesheng say...the power of love?"

Pulp Farmer looked at Speechless's left chest which was slowly recovering, but there was still a wound about the size of half a fist. He helplessly gave up on the urge to join the battle. With the rest gone, the responsibility of protecting the heavily injured Speechless landed on him.

Pulp Farmer hesitated for a moment before he answered Speechless's question. "You didn't hear wrong. Although it's hard to believe, the once pure sword fanatic has probably become a blossoming young girl who has gone blind from love. Sunless's personality is different from normal people. It's not easy for her to fall in love, but the moment she does, she would become crazier than anyone else. In the beginning, she only had eyes for swords. Her obsession with swords is known throughout the country, but

now, there is an additional Shi Xiaobai in her eyes."

Speechless was stunned before he clicked his tongue, "Did that rascal, Shi Xiaobai, become some *homme fatale*? It's so strange. That rascal's looks are ordinary and he has an odd personality. Even though his talent is not bad, and he is rather strong, and that bit of personal charm, but it shouldn't go as far as..."

Speechless could not help but feel mixed emotions. According to his observations, his two sisters had a certain degree of affection for Shi Xiaobai. Mu Yuesheng's affection for him was rather mild and it was not a romantic one. It was mostly from gratitude and respect, so the chances of her 'liking' him were rather low. As for his blood sister, Mu Lengxi, her situation seemed problematic. The way she looked at Shi Xiaobai was clearly like a pure and innocent girl that had her feelings blooming.

If he added on Sunless, who disregarded everything, and Dawn, whose massacring obsession wavered, as well as that girlfriend of unknown existence, he knew from his two encounters with Shi Xiaobai that the number of girls that were affectionate to him or more numbered five!

Furthermore, it was very possibly only the tip of the iceberg!

Speechless, who had no lack of a bevy of admirers awaiting his favor from a young age, found it unbelievable. That was because the girls that had affections for Shi Xiaobai were no ordinary girls.

Speechless muttered to himself, "Indeed, that rascal might seem

harmless on the surface, but he is actually a love expert that entrenches himself with every step..."

Pulp Farmer frowned slightly and said, "Sorry for me not being able to agree with your words. Although I have not known Shi Xiaobai for a long period of time, I can tell that Shi Xiaobai is a genuine person who thinks and acts in one and the same way. That rascal might at times have an intelligence of a monster that had lived for thousands of years, and at times, he might be so impassioned that he resembles a pure idiot, but what is rare about it is that the contradicting sides of him are both real. They come directly from the heart."

"He is smarter than anyone, so he can see how the world is filled with a darkness more than anyone. However, his eyes have always been filled with light. He clearly can see through evil, but yet he still firmly believes in good. That is the adorable thing about that rascal. And to Sunless, who can also see through the world but chooses to ignore it, Shi Xiaobai is an existence she is unable to emulate but one she longs for. It's not a coincidence that she likes him nor was it by design, but a necessary outcome."

Speechless was left dumbfounded for a moment before he gave Pulp Farmer a serious look. After that, he said with a grin, "You looked like a boor, but who knew that you had such keen observation skills and to be so meticulous. You are able to see one's essence normal people can't. It looks like you 'like' Shi Xiaobai and Sunless, but the 'like' is probably different, right? However, you acknowledge it from the bottom of your heart that it is a necessary outcome, so you chose to give up from the very beginning."

Pulp Farmer's eyebrows immediately knitted even closer together. His expression looked slightly uglier as he repressed his anger and said in a solemn voice, "Shi Xiaobai's situation is unknown, while Sunless and company are engaging in a perilous battle with the Level Lord, yet you still have the mood to make such a meaningless joke?"

Speechless pricked up his eyebrows and said with a chuckle, "Don't worry. That rascal, Shi Xiaobai is still alive. Furthermore, he neither will nor can die. He must be jumping around alive and well somewhere and shouting 'This King, This King'."

Pulp Farmer said angrily, "What are you basing on to make such an irresponsible conclusion?"

Speechless looked at Pulp Farmer and with a calm gaze and serious tone, he said, "Because...he is Shi Xiaobai."

Pulp Farmer was immediately left stunned.

Speechless suddenly took a step forward and shunned Pulp Farmer's support. He cast his gaze at the intense battle in the distance as he slowly lifted his right hand towards the wound on his left chest that was the size of half a fist.

"However, you are right. Now is indeed not the time to joke. It's best to end this farce as soon as possible."

Speechless' tone had a carefree and mocking tone, but what his

hand had done shocked Pulp Farmer agape.

He saw Speechless slowly reach his right hand into the cavity in his left chest. Suddenly, he clasped the healing but mangled flesh and began forcefully pinching it!

Such a form of pinching was not self-mutilation, but a special technique used to stimulate the body's natural ability to accelerate healing. However, what was receiving such treatment was soft and weak flesh. There were lots of delicate nerves in the flesh and by pinching it so forcefully, it was obvious how intense the pain would be.

"Are you crazy!?"

Pulp Farmer roared as he took a step forward and stretched out his hand to stop Speechless, but when he saw Speechless's face, he was left astound in his spot.

That calm and completely normal looking face had nothing other than calmness. Despite enduring an excruciating pain, he did not even winch nor produce a drop of sweat. He calmly ravaged on the flesh that did not seem to be part of his body.

Why?

"Why are you able to remain so calm?"

"Because it does not pain at all."

The calm response did not sound like he was forcing it at all. The calmness struck Pulp Farmer like a bolt of lightning. He was left stunned in his spot as his body began trembling.

Speechless turned his head slightly and gave a faint smile before he said, "Go on. Join in the battle. This Emperor does not need any protection. Pulp Farmer, you are quite a nice guy. I'll temporarily leave This Emperor's two sisters in your care. Protect them and help This Emperor buy a bit of time."

"When This Emperor's wounds recover, no matter how many schemes the stupid ox has, This Emperor will rip them apart for all to see!"

Pulp Farmer remained stunned.

Finally, he gently and slowly gave a solemn nod.

Chapter 456: What Do You Want To Talk About? I'll Accompany You

This was not a world Shi Xiaobai was familiar with. It was not the human world, nor was it the world of trials created by the mysterious assessment program. Instead, it was a completely unfamiliar world that he had seen for the first time.

The reason why he knew this was because of the two different-sized suns that were hanging in the sky.

And what made him deeply understand such a fact was because of the black beams of light that were constantly being shot from every direction. Each beam was aimed directly at one of his vital body parts. It was as though the beams wanted to riddle him with holes and let him die tragically.

Therefore, this was not only an unfamiliar world, it was a mysterious and dangerous world.

And while inside such a world, he could not use any strength because he was completely drained of his energies. He felt weak.

Logically speaking, with him unable to put up any resistance, he should have died within a short period of time, but at that very moment, Shi Xiaobai remained alive after a few minutes. He maintained slow but rhythmic breaths, as he recovered his stamina at an extremely slow pace.

The reason why he was able to luckily survive was not because he still had some hidden trick that could allow him to turn the tide despite his situation, but because someone was protecting him. It was a perfect protection.

"Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! ..."

This time, an unknown number of black beams shot from every direction. In order to protect him better, the girl split her legs and straddled above the lying Shi Xiaobai. She calmly brandished the golden sword in her hand and precisely and elegantly shattered all the black beams of light.

Thankfully, the girl was wearing trousers and a robe because she was disguised as a male, if not, Shi Xiaobai would have gotten an eyeful. But from what he could see with his head facing up, he definitely could have his mind thronged with thoughts.

The girl, who had managed to block a countless number of black beams, was breathing in a calm manner. She did not look exhausted, but her expression appeared a little flustered.

Finally, the girl could not help but say, "Hey! I say, have you recovered the strength needed to talk?"

Shi Xiaobai gave an embarrassed smile. He had asked with great difficulty, 'what's the situation'. The girl in front of him had told him 'the situation is very complicated... we need to have a good chat', but unfortunately, he did not even have the strength to speak.

However, if it was just explaining the present situation, it did not seem like he needed to talk. It was sufficient for the girl to tell him on her own.

However, the girl seemed to have a strange obsession with 'chatting'. It was as though she needed him to recover his strength to be able to speak before she was willing to explain the situation.

Immediately following that, under the perfect protection of the girl, even though the black beams of light were shooting at them incessantly, with each wave more powerful than the other, not a single part of him was harmed. The black beams of light were shattered by the sword beams in mid-air.

Shi Xiaobai did not mind the feeling of being protected. Instead, he felt gratitude for the girl, but he knew that if it went on, the girl would be drained of her stamina in time to come. Therefore, he was constantly working hard to recover his stamina.

But his usage of Excalibur this time had completely emptied him. Not only did he not have an ounce of strength, even his self-recovery ability had also become extremely slow. After a very long time, the strength he recovered was utterly inadequate.

He probably needed a long period of sleep to fully recover, but he no longer had the time left.

And the amount of strength he had gone through great pains to recover was truly pathetically minute. If it was used to speak, it

might not be able to last for long.

But at that moment, after hearing the girl urge him once again, he could sense the eagerness and thirst in the girl's sentences. Shi Xiaobai immediately fell into a dilemma.

From the looks of it, she really wanted to 'chat'?

Why did she have such a strange desire?

However, with her putting in such effort to protect him, couldn't he satisfy this tiny wish of hers?

Although 'chatting' could very well expend the pathetically minute amounts of energy that he accumulated over such a long period of time, he would have been a dead corpse if not for her.

The conclusion was very simple, wasn't it?

"Yea, This King has sufficient strength to talk, so let's have a good talk," said Shi Xiaobai gently after he remained silent for a moment.

"Alright!"

The girl's voice was filled with an unconcealed excitement before she eagerly said, "Then..."

However, just as she said that word, another wave of black beams shot attacked from various directions.

"Damn it!"

The girl cursed softly as her sharp eyes scanned her surroundings. Sweeping her sword, she slashed out several sword beams and precisely shattered the black beams of light. She did not waste even one sword beam.

"How can we happily chat if this continues?"

The girl grumbled softly.

Shi Xiaobai was extremely surprised. Was the girl that was standing above him that deadpan and cold Hero King who had beheaded the gargantuan? She had never had a change in expression prior to this!

The grumbling tone and the curses she muttered to herself. Wasn't...the transformation too huge?

Shi Xiaobai looked up at the exquisite face and coincidentally, the girl lowered her head. Their eyes locked as the mood suddenly turned delicate.

The girl gradually lifted her left hand as she cast her eyes at a strangely designed ring on her index finger. With a sigh, she said, "It looks like that's the only way."

As the girl spoke, she seemed to have made up her mind. Taking off her ring, she threw it into the sky.

"Shell of the Black Turtle!"

The ring emitted a rainbow radiance before suddenly transforming into a translucent turtle shell that fell from the sky and covered them.

At the same moment, dozens of black beams shot out from the world as they headed towards the two. However, they crashed into the translucent turtle shell.

With a 'splash', as though a rock had dropped into water, the dozens of black beams seemed to melt as they disappeared from the surface of the turtle shell.

"What impressive defense."

Shi Xiaobai could not help but marvel at the impressive defense of the translucent turtle shell.

The girl took a glance at the unblemished turtle shell and gave a satisfied nod. Then she took a few steps back before she slowly sat beside the boy.

"The Shell of the Black Turtle should be able to last a while. Let's

take advantage of this moment to recover our stamina, and have a chat...in passing?"

As the girl spoke, she changed her tone subtly. It was easy for others to read what was on her mind.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but find it amusing. It appeared as though 'chatting' had a special attraction to the girl. Did she really have some important and complicated matter that she needed to discuss carefully with him?

Shi Xiaobai did not know at that very moment that the ring named 'Shell of the Black Turtle' the girl threw out was a legendary artefact and that it was a one-time use consumable. It was an important item given to her by her family clan to save her in times of danger, but she had lavishly used it in order to be able to 'happily chat without being disturbed'.

Of course, to the girl, being able to 'happily chat without being disturbed' was much more valuable than a legendary artefact.

"Then...what do we talk about?"

You might not believe it, but the person who said such a sentence was not Shi Xiaobai, but the girl who had just sat down.

Shi Xiaobai nearly spat out a mouthful of blood. He did not know where he found the strength as he pressed the ground with both his hands to forcefully sit up. But midway, due to the lack of

strength, he collapsed back down.

He did not slam heavily into the ground, but instead fell into a soft embrace.

The girl had embraced him in time and even allowed him to rest on her shoulder.

"It looks like you don't like lying down while chatting? Great, I don't like conversing from a higher position either."

As the girl said that, she adjusted her position. She allowed the boy in her arms face her. The two of them hugged each other like a couple, but one of them had his arms slumped to his side, while the girl was hugging the boy by herself.

Shi Xiaobai was left dazed for a moment as his body suddenly stiffened. But due to a lack of strength, he could only rest his head on the girl's shoulder. Her golden hair fluttered in the wind as they caressed his face. A fragrance entered his olfactory senses as he made skin contact with her. It felt like soft and warm sunlight from spring. When the girl spoke softly, her lips were by his ears. A gentle voice seemed to be flowing with a warm and moist fragrance.

What was the situation with such an intimate action?

"Aren't...aren't you germaphobic?"

Shi Xiaobai had experienced the Infernal Queen's naked seduction, so he was not one to easily succumb. But for some reason, his heart began beating faster than usual as his face seemed to turn warm.

Even Shi Xiaobai was left flustered when his opponent who he was fighting in a life-and-death battle a moment ago suddenly embraced him in such an intimate manner. He could only say something that did not seem to match the situation. He remembered Speechless had once mentioned that the Hero King was a germaphobe.

"Yea."

When the girl heard him, she acknowledged lightly before saying calmly, "It's fine if it's you."

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat dumbfounded.

What did he do to become such a special existence to her?

"I do not wish to lose you. When I slashed out that strike, the terror I received from the realization that I would lose you made me understand this point. So, I'm very happy that you are still alive."

Without blushing or having a racing heart, she said something even lovebirds would find nauseating. Without any embarrassment, she continued, "I have lost the sound of reality

once. If I lose it again, I might not have the courage to seek it ever again. So, don't be quiet. Let me hear your voice. Feel...feel free to say anything."

Due to the tight embrace and him leaning on her shoulder, he could not see her expression. However, he could imagine that the ice-blue eyes were shimmering with a bright luster. That was because her voice was filled with emotion.

"Yea, let's have a casual chat."

Shi Xiaobai gradually calmed down. He had come to a realization that the girl's intimate actions did not have any ambiguous feelings. To her, he was some special existence. He believed that there must be some unknown story that left a stigma.

He did not need to or wish to find out about the story because the girl who was hugging him was that gentle and frail. She was like an extremely beautiful rainbow bubble that could burst with a light touch.

"What do you want to chat about? This King will accompany you."

The translucent turtle shell enclosed them in a small world and isolated them from the murderous black beams of light. The boy and girl sat on the white ground. However, the girl was not hugging the boy in an ambiguous manner. Without any reason, their heads rested on each other's shoulder. Their lips lay beside the soft ear lobes as they whispered to each other. They underwent

a series of casual chatting.

Chapter 457: So, Die!

There were countless of entrances to various land of trials in the human world. Most of them were hidden in spatial turbulences that humans could not step in, but a few of them had been discovered for a myriad of reasons. They were opened up and used by humans.

However, just the number of entrances that seemed like the tip of the iceberg numbered above ten thousand. Among them, the number well known to everyone was countable with one hand. There were five extremely important land of trials that were labeled the 'Five Great Steps'.

In fact, the 'Five Great Steps' referred to the five major realms of the psionic cultivation system—Psionic Mortal Realm, Psionic Soul Realm, Psionic Might Realm, Psionic Domain Realm, and Psionic Imperial Realm. The five corresponding land of trials had perfectly matched the five realms and they held the greatest authority when it came to a land of trials.

Among them, the 'Step' that belonged to the Psionic Mortal Realm—the land of trials that held the greatest authority—was the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.

This was the only 'Step' that existed in China. It was the most famous land of trials in China and it was a trial every Psionic Mortal Realm rookie in the world would wish to participate in.

The creator of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower and

the reason for its creation were secrets that had long been buried under the vestiges of time.

But there was historical evidence that the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower had existed for at least ten thousand years.

In these ten thousand years, it had seen countless trial-takers passing through its walls. The program had been refreshed countless times, but there were a few special existences that never changed. They stood at the pinnacle of each world like eternal lives. They brought unchanging fear to the trial-takers and they were called Level Lords.

The nine levels had nine Level Lords. In the ten thousand years, other than the fourth Level Lord being killed by the Hero King, as well as the Level Lord on the third level that was 'swapped' for a particular reason, the other seven Level Lords were still those seven Level Lords.

Although it had to do with the time the Level Lords were released, it also meant that the more powerful trial-takers would have a smaller chance of meeting Level Lords. That was because they typically led the pack. However, for the seven Level Lords to survive for ten thousand years without being destroyed was enough to prove that their strength was so much higher than trial-takers at the Psionic Mortal Realm.

"Yes, in the human worlds, a Level Lord might not be that powerful, but in comparison to trial-takers at the Psionic Mortal Realm, they are an invincible existence. It's impossible for trial-takers at the Psionic Mortal Realm to defeat a Level Lord. When

they meet Level Lords, they have to run and pray that they had sufficient luck to escape the calamity."

That was Liu Yu's understanding from the beginning. It was also what most trial-takers knew.

But it was unknown when this understanding was gradually destroyed.

Was it at the instant when the third level's Level Lord, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, was 'conquered' by Shi Xiaobai?

Or was it the instant when news of Shi Xiaobai killing four Level Lords resounded throughout the land of trials one after another?

Liu Yu could not be certain when his impression of Level Lords went from 'invincible' to 'possibly beatable' exactly began.

But he was certain that at that moment in time, his fear for a Level Lord had been completely destroyed.

Field Marshal Awesomo, who had appeared with bombastic rhetoric and revealed the astounding conspiracy before claiming to be the Level Lord, had declared that he would wipe out the trial-takers. It had disappointed Liu Yu but at the same time, he saw hope of victory.

That was because without monsters like Shi Xiaobai and Speechless helping, the few of them would be easily crushed or

even one-shot by the Level Lord. But it was completely unexpected that the battle situation had developed into what was happening in front of him.

Sunless alone was able to force Field Marshal Awesomo into a passive state of defense.

When he, Mu Yuesheng, Feng Yuanlin, Mu Lengxi, and Pulp Farmer joined in the battle, the situation leaned towards their side. Field Marshal Awesomo, who had declared to wipe them out, had only managed to brandish his battle axe at the beginning, but he was now genuflecting on the ground and covering his head in defense. Although his defensive strength was still considerably powerful, he was covered in injuries after a few minutes of combined attacks. He was staggering and looked like he would collapse at any time with serious injuries.

Liu Yu gradually frowned.

"What happened? "How can a Level Lord be so weak?"

"I've seen various information. Although the description regarding the seventh level's Level Lord isn't detailed, it says that it is one of the toughest Level Lord in the first seven levels. So how can it be this weak? Furthermore, the description of his appearance is completely different from this bull-horned warrior. Could it be that he is actually a Level Lord imposter?"

"That's not right. Appearances can be faked, strength can be hidden, so it can't be certain that he is a Level Lord imposter."

"But why? Why did he expose his scheme to the point of claiming to have killed Shi Xiaobai to attract aggro, but without the corresponding strength to face us, isn't he just clearly courting death? Could it be that he's sadomasochistic? Or could it be that he innocently overestimated his strength?"

"No, that wouldn't make sense. There's too much foreboding."

"Let's begin laying out some assumptions. Assuming that he is the real Level Lord, and that he disguised himself and hid his strength, and him being beaten is an illusion, to the point of him stumbling is faked, then, what would his motive be?"

"What is he scheming?"

Liu Yu was a hundred-percent conspiracy theorist. He never dreaded to size up his enemy with the most devious of means.

When the story progressed too well, it was usually the laying of foundations for the next twist.

The extreme calmness was most likely the calm before the storm.

As Liu Yu threw his talismans in his assault against Field Marshal Awesomo, he racked his brains to consider the situation facing him.

In complete contrast to the meticulous Liu Yu, Feng Yuanlin, who never used his brain, did not find anything strange about the situation. As he brandished the hard shields in his hands that he constantly smashed them at Field Marshal Awesomo's back, he shouted in excitement, "Well done everyone. Put in a bit more effort. The stupid ox can't last much longer!"

Everyone could tell that Field Marshal Awesomo was like a candle in the wind. That was because he was kneeling with both knees on the ground at the very moment. Black and revolting black blood constantly spewed out of his mouth. His injury-laden body was constantly trembling as he withstood the attacks.

But other than Feng Yuanlin, the rest did not look too good. Although they did not think as deeply as Liu Yu, they could tell that something was amiss.

They were about to win, but the way they won seemed too strange.

Although Sunless had activated the power of her Sword Truth throughout the process, she had used the simplest and most brutal sword techniques, giving her an imposing feeling. Even Speechless, who was recovering from his wounds from afar, could not help but admit that even the present Sunless was someone he had to take seriously.

However, it seemed a bit forced that Sunless alone was able to repress a Level Lord herself.

Furthermore, due to Sunless's constant motion in a melee battle, the attacks from the others were apprehensive as they were afraid of harming her. They did not use their full strength, so despite being such a team, they were able to beat a Level Lord to submission to the point of him not even daring to fight back seemed a bit too fake.

Other than Feng Yuanlin, who never used his brains, and Sunless, who gave up all thought, the others felt that something was amiss.

But Sunless was attacking like a relentless storm prevented them from daring to stop. They could only follow her cue and constantly attack.

The azure-dressed girl who only had eyes for swords and a particular boy was the most composed person while everyone was feeling confused. She made the best action, but when everyone gradually calmed down, she became the most confused. With the passage of time, her worried emotions became even more intense.

The azure-dressed girl's every strike seemed to be silently roaring the same question.

Where is Shi Xiaobai?

Where!?

Where is he!?

"Where?"

When the silver sword finally pierced through the bronze skill that had been hardened as well as the tattered armor, a tiny portion of the sword's blade had stabbed into Field Marshal Awesomo's chest. It was just short a centimeter to pierce his heart. Sunless finally came to a stop as she gradually breathed out an ice-cold breath while saying a burning sentence.

"Where is Shi Xiaobai?"

Sunless asked. She gently vibrated the sword in her hand. Her intentions were clear. If Field Marshal Awesomo's answer did not satisfy her, she would not hesitate to tear up his heart with her sword.

Ten minutes ago, Field Marshal Awesomo, who appeared in a state of belittling everything, was now a complete failure. With his life on the brink at the movement of a blade of a centimeter, he was truly in a pathetic state.

However, even in such a pathetic state, Field Marshal Awesomo was still that arrogant Field Marshal Awesomo. That ugly face that turned hideous from the pain suffused a mocking smile.

"Where? Of course he is in hell for everlasting perdition! Feel anguish! Feel sad! The boy you love is already dead!"

Field Marshal Awesomo laughed maniacally as his eyes were filled with craziness. "Do you want to avenge him? What are you hesitating for? It's just a centimeter. By moving a centimeter forward, you can vent the anger and hatred in your heart. Is there something easier than freeing yourself than this? Come on, kill This Field Marshal!"

His maniacal appearance prevented one from telling if he was unafraid of death or a hysteric rebound from hitting his bottom line.

Be it the thirty-thousand-strong audience that were long dazed in their spots, or the trial-takers, they could not help but draw a gasp from Field Marshal Awesomo's madness.

However, Sunless was unmoved. Her cold gaze and ice-cold expression did not reveal any changes. She fell silent for a moment and as though she was muttering to herself, she said, "He's still alive. Your strength isn't enough to kill him, but you know where he is. By killing you, I will not obtain my answer, but by not killing you, you will also not tell me the answer."

Field Marshal Awesomo said with a mocking tone, "So?"

Sunless slowly lifted her head as though she had come to a decision, "Regardless if you are killed or not, you will not tell me where he is. Then, I can only wait. No matter where he is, no matter what danger has been afflicted on him, all I can do is wait and firmly believe that he will definitely not die."

"I believe him. It doesn't matter how long I wait. It's best if you are willing to tell me where he is, but it doesn't matter if you aren't. To me, that is all there is to your existence."

"So, die."

After a series of logical thinking that wasn't too long or complicated, the girl who couldn't be considered calm came to a conclusion. She used the coldest response to answer that question of 'so'.

So, die.

At that moment, Sunless no longer hesitated.

It was also at that moment when Liu Yu, who was constantly pondering, saw a faint smile across Field Marshal Awesomo's lips. His thoughts that were twisted like a dead knot suddenly released itself, with him instantly having his questions answered.

Like a roar, Liu Yu immediately shouted anxiously,

"Stop! Don't kill him!"

Chapter 458: The Conversation Of Fate

The truth is typically harsh and cruel because it packages the true rotting nature of something in sugar-coated lies.

At the age of three, Dawn had already understood this harsh reality.

The nefarious people who had left her on the uninhabited island did not know that the intelligent three-year-old girl had been pretending to remain unconscious. From the very beginning, she had seen the sins they had committed.

The lone island that was left stranded in the middle of the ocean did not exist in the human world, but situated in a particular land of trials. It was an extremely easy land of trials meant to train neophytes, but to a three-year-old, it was no different from hell.

Furthermore, the island she was on was not the only island in the land of trials. In it, there existed thousands, if not tens of thousands of islands similar to the one she was on.

Therefore, she was not the only child left alone on the uninhabited island. There might have been hundreds, thousands or even tens of thousands. But all these children had a common trait, they were all orphans.

These thousands of orphans were placed in beast-infested islands in the land of trials, allowing them to attempt to survive unaided in a perilous environment. Such an extreme plan of selecting talent

was termed "Project Orphan".

When "Project Orphan" began, despite being a progeny of the Li family, due to her only direct family member, her mother, dying from an illness, the parentless her was just considered a collateral relative. Therefore, she was unluckily chosen to make up one of the numbers, making her one of the targets of the project.

And most ironic of all was that the faction behind the project was the Li family. Their initial goal was to nurture a batch of 'outstanding' assassins. If a three or four-year-old could survive independently for three years in a danger-riddled island, it was obvious how monstrous the child's abilities and willpower was. Regardless of the number of children sacrificed, as long as about ten were left behind, or even a few excellent budding candidates made it all worth it. After all, those children were bought cheaply or even freely adopted orphans.

However things seldom go as one expected. The project was still overly ambitious. After three years, when the Li family was prepared to 'reap in the harvest', they realized that among the thousands of orphans, only a six-year-old girl had survived.

But what delighted the proposer of the project—the Li family's Patriarch—was that the six-year-old girl was of the Li family bloodline. Even though she was just considered a collateral relative, there was no doubt that this girl who had 'accidentally' entered Project Orphan had Li family blood flowing in her.

As the only survivor, the girl's value exceeded any previous estimations. And having a Li family bloodline resulted in a

substantive change in her fate.

After a short test of the fruits gained from the girl's survival on the uninhabited island, the Patriarch seemed to see a more glorious future for the Li family from her.

The follow-up plans of nurturing the girl into an assassin were immediately overruled. The Patriarch adopted the girl on the spot and proclaimed to the public that he had found a long-lost grandson.

Maybe it was on a whim or because the male progeny was too mediocre, the Patriarch made a bet after a lot of thinking. He decided that the girl who could survive three years on an uninhabited island would be nurtured as his successor. Therefore, he hid the truth of the girl's sex from the public.

What happened was the cruel truth. It was a truth that Dawn was extremely familiar with all along.

But the Patriarch, who was mistaken to think that Project Orphan was carried out flawlessly, did not know that the girl long knew of the truth. The lies he painstakingly crafted was a beautiful layer of sugar-coating that concealed the rotten truth.

The 'harvesters' sent to the island were explained as rescuers. They claimed that she had fallen victim to the Li family's enemies, and that they had never given up searching or hopes of rescuing her. It took them three years to finally find her.

The Patriarch told her in tears that her father was actually an illegitimate son of his and that she was his granddaughter. After that, he said how all the heir candidates of the family clan were mediocre and wished for her to disguise herself as a male, and work hard to inherit the role of Patriarch.

The six-year-old looked at the Patriarch's exaggerated performance with a deadpan expression. In her heart, she could only silently sneer.

If she did not know of the truth, she might have been grateful to the Patriarch and the Li family for their kindness, eventually becoming the most loyal clansmen of the Li family.

However, even after she was six, when she really gained the treatment as the Li family's successor and the Patriarch treated her as his real granddaughter, allowing her to grow up in an enviable environment, she never lowered her caution.

That was because she knew very well that everything was an illusion that could be shattered at any time.

If she did not work hard enough or lacked the talent, she would not be able to demonstrate her value as a 'successor'. Then, all that she possessed would be gone. The Patriarch would also take back his kindness and benevolence.

But thankfully, she was more hardworking than anyone else. The talent she possessed was unprecedented. The value she demonstrated far exceeded the Patriarch's expectations.

The antisocial personality that was a result of her surviving in the uninhabited island for three years was naturally pardoned. She did not need to meet anyone nor attend any family gatherings. She did not even need to deliberately act the part of the Patriarch's grandson. All she needed was to constantly become stronger and become so dazzling that she would become the apparent heir of the Li family.

Although everything was constructed on a bed of lies, there was no way to deny that such a life was beautiful.

However, having seen through the lies and deceit, while understanding what human nature was, the six-year-old her left a lingering scar in her heart.

From the age of six, Dawn became germaphobic.

...

Being a germaphobe was having a type of obsessive-compulsive disorder. It treated objects that were considered hygienic by normal standards as dirty. One would feel anxiety and a strong urge to clean, examine and reject any item that was 'unclean'.

Dawn's germaphobia was rather unique. What she rejected as 'unclean' was limited to only one thing—people.

She refused to be close to anyone, nor did she allow anyone to

come close to her. It was just like how a germaphobe would not be able to stand a tiny bit of dust, once someone came close to her, she would find it nauseating.

Dawn knew that she was abnormal, be it 'not being able to hear voices', or 'rejecting humans', they were very serious mental illnesses. However, she never thought of changing because she was accustomed to being alone. She was accustomed to a world without humans that only had plants, rocks and birds.

Only at that moment in time did she finally realize that it was not because she did not want to change but because she had no way of changing. It was not that she could not hear, but because the voices of humans could not reach her. It was not that others could not approach her, but because the ugly nature of humans could no longer be cleaned in her heart.

But that was not necessarily the truth.

That was because a boy named Shi Xiaobai had shattered what she believed to be an immutable fact.

He allowed her to hear a voice.

Against absolute power, not only did he not retreat, he instead held a firm obsession for victory. He used all his strength to slash out a strike without any regret, and through that, emitted the most beautiful light of humanity.

He is special, different from everyone else.

If it were him, it would be fine.

She mustered her courage to take the initiative to approach him. Indeed, she did not find it gross. She hugged him in an embrace while enduring her embarrassment. She did not find it repugnant, and instead she recalled the warm memories of her lying in her mother's arms at the age of three.

The feeling was very beautiful and warm. It made her unable to extricate herself from it.

But how long could such a feeling last?

She suddenly understood for the first time, what it meant to be mindful about one's personal gains and losses.

"Sigh, so you really are... are not human after all, right?"

Dawn muttered to herself, but she regretted it the moment she said it.

Shi Xiaobai had clearly said he was open to chatting about anything, but she had unknowingly fallen into a daze. It was because she had already forgotten how to have a chat in an ordinary and casual manner. She did not know how typical conversations even began.

You are really not human after all, right?

Dawn never expected that she would have a brain fart to be so stupid that she would start the chat with a sentence that would ruin the mood. That was the worst beginning ever.

"Calm down."

"Anyways, quickly change the topic."

Dawn hurriedly racked her stiff thoughts, but she never expected to hear Shi Xiaobai's voice of sudden excitement.

"This King never expected you to realize that so quickly. Clever girl, This King is obviously not human!"

When Dawn heard that, she felt her heart jump as her body immediately stiffened.

Hey, hey, what is this strange development?

So he wasn't human at all?

Could it be because he did not possess ugly human nature which allowed her to conquer her disorder and muster the courage to approach him?

That, can't be true right?

"So...you are really...the Infernal King of the world of the seventh level?"

Dawn tried her best to calm herself down as she helplessly realized that she had failed to distinguish which words of Shi Xiaobai were true or false.

Shi Xiaobai's reaction had once again exceeded her expectations. She heard him suddenly chuckling disdainfully, before he said with a sneer, "The Infernal King of the world of the seventh level? Please do not use the idiocy of this world's demons and gods to compare with This King. A mere soldier from the real divine and demon races can wipe out the gods and demons of this world. As for This King, he lords over the true demons and gods. This King is a supreme and lofty existence!"

"Listen well, This King's true identity is...the King of kings! Be it the king of humans, the king of Celestials, the king of Infernals, or the other kings of the myriad worlds, they all bow before This King as his subjects and would loudly proclaim 'Sire'. This King created good and evil. This King rules over the goodness and evilness of the myriad worlds and because of This King's existence, the war between good and evil could come to a pause. As This King trampled on the ambitions of the various kings, peace was ushered into the myriad worlds."

The boy's voice slowly turned excited. Words filled with eight-

grader syndrome left Dawn stunned for a moment. After she slowly calmed down, she realized that nothing about what he said could be believed. She had been silly enough to consider if it were true.

Dawn found it amusing, but she did not dislike it. She could not help but make a joke, "Then wouldn't I be someone who accidentally beat the King of kings to the point of him not having the strength to even speak? Could it be that my identity is actually not so simple?"

With that said, she immediately felt from her shoulder that Shi Xiaobai was turning his head from left to right. She heard him grunt softly and say, "Naive girl. This King was only blindsided by the kings of the myriad worlds. This King's holy body was destroyed, and his indestructible soul was sanctioned by thousands of seals. This King had no choice but to reincarnate into an mortal body. This King's true strength is only sealed. Now, This King's strength is not even a quadrillionth of his original strength. Of course, you should be proud that you can tie with a quadrillionth of This King's strength. You are one of the few true geniuses among humans."

His confident tone made it seem like he was narrating facts, but yet they sounded like preposterous lies.

A quadrillion? Did he know how many zeroes there were in that number?

It was obviously a speech filled with eight-grader syndrome, yet for some reason, Dawn's mind gradually relaxed. The lost feeling

of not knowing how to create a topic of conversation completely vanished.

The casual chat he mentioned was really casual. It was so casual that she could not grasp it, but she also felt like anything would fly with him.

"Since you have been reincarnated into a mortal's body, are you now a human?"

First confirm what his designation is before naturally asking questions that I still mind.

Dawn thought to herself. She felt her 'tiny scheme' had an indescribable joy to it.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment, as though he was in a dilemma about his answer. Finally, he said with a sigh, "This King is temporarily...temporarily...a human."

"Temporarily!"

After admitting that he was human, his voice rapidly decreased in volume, but he immediately used a stressed tone to emphasize that it was only 'temporary'. Although his face could not be seen, the expression that would appear on his delicate face surfaced naturally in Dawn's mind.

It was definitely very adorable.

Dawn barely managed to stop herself from laughing. For some baffling reason, she felt her body turn ethereal, as though she was in the clouds while floating in the sky.

Ah, what a ridiculous joke. Why did she want to let it continue so much?

"Then, the King of kings that will eventually win back his throne, when you sit back on that throne that rules over good and evil, what would be the first thing you want to do?"

Dawn found herself weird, but she did not reject it. She even went along with his 'performance', and followed up on the topic. It made her feel very happy.

There was no need to deliberately make the topic relaxed or serious, but it was so natural. By following his cue and listening to what he wanted to say most, and chat with the topic he was most willing to continue on. Everything was so easy and perfect.

Heh, she was really irredeemably silly.

But, the voice she heard from Shi Xiaobai clearly did not sound as excited as anytime before. She felt once again that it did not matter even if it was sillier. That was because the voice she kept wanting to 'hear' was one that was filled with self-centeredness and extraordinary. It was definitely not a voice that would follow the crowd.

"What would be the first thing you want to do after winning back the throne?"

The boy fell deep into thought as he began seriously considering the question. He was so serious that she nearly thought it as something real. After a few moments, Shi Xiaobai finally said lightly, "This King will re-establish the concept of good and evil. What is true goodness and what is true evilness. Be it humans, demons or gods, it has been adulterated. People have always been using their own judgment to make mistaken conclusions, and some even do evil in the name of goodness. And correcting this and giving the best answer so as to distinguish good from evil is what This King wishes to do the most."

Dawn was left dumbfounded for quite a while, as she ruminated over Shi Xiaobai's answer with complicated emotions.

If that was a question on an exam, most examinees would answer 'seek revenge against the kings that blindsided me' or 'crush the ambitions of the kings, restoring peace to the myriad worlds'. That was because those were the answers that matched the situation the best.

But Shi Xiaobai's answer sounded overly-realistic. It was as though it was not a simply-posed question. It was as though he was really in the capacity of the king of good and evil as he pondered over the answer to the question. It was as though he was once a king that wielded good and evil.

What was the reason for that odd feeling?

Dawn slowly breathed out as she whispered, "Then, from your point of view, what is true good and what is true evil?"

"This King does not know either."

Shi Xiaobai sighed gently and said, "When good and evil was born, it was when This Silly King defined such a vague and ambiguous good and evil. For a long period of time, This King always believed that his definition of good and evil was correct until a particular human asked This King a question. This King realized his mistake, and just as his beliefs wavered, This King was blindsided by the various kings. One of the reasons This King was reincarnated as human was partly to search for the true answer."

The topic of conversation suddenly became heavy.

However, Shi Xiaobai was not only fabricating a series of ridiculous stories. Instead, he was attempting to express certain thoughts of his.

That was probably an opportunity to go one step further in understanding him.

Dawn suddenly became nervous as she hesitated for a moment before she asked. "What did that human ask you?"

The boy's head that was resting on her shoulder moved gently

once again, but almost without any time needed to think, he responded. It was as if the question that made the King of kings realize his mistake really existed and was not something he made up from a flash of wit.

"The god that created the world and humans cursed a teenager on a particular day. He was cursed to see to feel excruciating pain if he were to see people in suffering."

Shi Xiaobai began describing the question that changed the fate of the King.

"In order to avoid feeling pain, the teenager gave a helping hand to the people in suffering."

"Not long later, the Creator made a counterfeit replica of the teenager."

"The replica did not have a will of its own, but would do the same actions as the teenager. It would also give a helping hand to people in suffering."

"The Creator gave the teenager and his replica the names 'Good' and 'Pseudo-good'."

"Which do you think is Good and which is Pseudo-good?"

It was not considered a complicated question, but the moral behind the story was not simple, and what was even more

remarkable was the question at the end.

Between the teenager that gave a helping hand to the people in suffering and the imitation who was modeled after the teenager by the creator, which of them were named 'Good' and 'Pseudo-good' by the Creator?

There were only two possibilities to the answer which had a two-choose-one question.

Even if one answered with one's intuition, there was a fifty percent chance of being correct.

In order to let the conversation continue on at a greater speed, saying the answer that immediately flashed in her mind would be the best choice, but this time, Dawn was not in a hurry. Instead, she began to seriously contemplate over the question.

To be able to hear his voice and his thoughts was obviously good.

But that was not enough to satisfy her. She needed too many things, and once she needed it, she would not be easily satisfied.

Only listening and pandering to him was not 'chatting'.

Now, it was her turn to transmit her voice!

"First, the teenager is real, while the imitation that was a replica

of the teenager can be considered a counterfeit. It can be said that one is real and the other is fake. Second, the teenager gave a helping hand to the people in suffering is no doubt an act of goodness, while the replica does not have a will of his own, so the goodness he does is only purely mimicry. Therefore, the teenager should be named 'Good', and the imitation should be called 'Pseudo-good'. That is probably the answer that makes most logical sense."

Dawn suddenly wished to move back a distance and see the expression and eyes of the boy, but she knew that doing so at that moment would be 'against the rules', so she could only forcefully curb her impulse.

"So, is that your answer?"

Shi Xiaobai said gently after a moment of silence.

A smile could not help but suffuse across Dawn's lips because Shi Xiaobai had used an emotionless tone to ask his question. It was one that she was extremely proficient at, and it was obvious that he did not wish for his voice to reveal any effective information.

What a strict examiner.

She gradually shook her head and said softly, "Although it's the answer that makes the most logical sense, it is not my answer, nor could it be the real answer. That is because 'Good' that pursues logic happens to be nothing but 'Pseudo-good'.

"Yea."

Shi Xiaobai grunted slightly and whispered, "Continue."

Dawn nodded and slowly said, "Although the teenager lent a helping hand to everyone, the reason why he did so was because of the curse of the Creator. He was doing good only in order to avoid pain to himself. Although he was doing good, the motive was for himself. That is no doubt a form of pseudo-goodness.

"The imitation is different. He did not have his own will, and he was simply replicating the teenager's actions. Lending a helping hand to everyone was a part of his existence, and his actions were out of instinct. There was no complication for personal gain, so he is the purest of pure good."

"The teenager is Pseudo-good, while the imitation is Good. That is my answer!"

After providing her answer in one breath, Dawn immediately pushed Shi Xiaobai out of her embrace and reached out her hands to hold him by his shoulders. At the moment she opened up a distance, she leveled her eyes with his.

Indeed, that pair of black eyes were still as bright and dazzling. Although it should be like a black night sky, it was shimmering with the luster of stars.

"Well, is my answer correct?"

Although she could tell from his expression that she got the answer she wanted to know, she was eager to get actual confirmation.

Shi Xiaobai looked into her eyes for a moment before suddenly grinning. "At the beginning, This King answered the human in such a manner. You gave an identical answer like This King."

Dawn was not surprised about the correctness of the answer, but when she heard the outcome, she still felt somewhat happy. She could not explain if she was feeling happy because of her correct response or if it was because she had the same answer as the boy.

Eh, the answer is correct?

Dawn suddenly thought of something and asked, "After you gave your answer, what did the human say in response? Is our answer correct?"

Dawn keenly noticed that Shi Xiaobai had mentioned that their answers were the same, but he did not directly answer her that her answer was correct or not.

Indeed, Shi Xiaobai's expression suddenly turned serious as he looked deeply into her eyes and said, "That human did not give an answer, but instead questioned This King."

Dawn asked in surprise, "Questioned you?"

Shi Xiaobai paused slightly, as though he was preparing the mood for the discussion. After that, he said words that were pregnant with meaning, "The reason why the imitation can purely do good is because it does not have his own will. It can't think for itself. The teenager lent a helping hand to everyone but is called Pseudo-good because the good he does benefits him. His starting point is for himself, but the root of the reason was that the teenager possesses his own will. He knows how to think for himself. The difference between Good and Pseudo-good actually has to do with the motives behind the good-doer being self-serving or not."

"Then, as a question, can humans with their own will be able to pursue pure goodness?"

"Humans are not machines. They have their own wills. It is impossible for them to be selfless even if they do good at the cost of their own interests. That is because he or she can receive a psychological fulfillment, and psychological fulfillment is also an interest that serves that person. It's just the sacrifice and exchange of physical interests for psychological interests."

"For example, a teenager sacrifices his life to save a hundred people. Why would he do so? That's because in his mind, 'saving a hundred people is 'greater than' saving himself'. After his own thought processes, he comes up with a choice he thinks is most right. By doing so, not only is he doing it for the hundred people, he is also doing it for himself, because the person who made the choice was himself. Of course, there exists the thought of 'saving himself' but he eventually acts to 'save a hundred people'. Under such situations, his choice was clearly forced and not out of his own intentions. However, looking at it from another perspective,

he had already made a choice between 'acceptance' and 'resistance'. His actions are still part of his own intentions!"

"In the aforementioned description, it is impossible for humans to do pure good because humans have their own will. Humans can make choices, and the choice itself is an act that would serve oneself! Therefore, the 'Good' of humans cannot be called 'Good', but 'Pseudo-good'!"

"Pseudo-good is called pseudo, and when the 'pseudo' is greater than 'good', it is actually distorted into 'Evil'! When humans do something to satisfy their will in the name of doing good, proselytize one's choice as Good, then 'Good' will become a weapon to conceal 'selfishness'. Wouldn't that change it to 'Evil'?"

"Think about it, if the teenager was lending a helping hand to people in suffering because of the curse, and if one day, he encounters a sufferer that cannot be saved or redeemed, he would constantly endure the pain of the curse. But no matter how much he tries, he is unable to save the person from the abyss of suffering. Then, with saving ineffective, what would the teenager do to stop his pain? The teenager could very likely kill the sufferer that cannot be saved to save himself! That's because when 'Pseudo-good' is forced to its extremes, it can unbridledly become 'Evil'."

"There is good and evil among people, but how is it to be distinguished? It is impossible for humans to do pure good. Most of it is pseudo-good, but even if it's pseudo-good, it's just a question of degree of evil."

"Then, can good and evil really define the actions of human?"

"Does the concept of good and evil have any meaning to humans?"

"Is good and evil a prison for the 'original sin', or it is restraining one's self-centeredness?"

"Although Your Majesty is the King that created good and evil, here's a question. Was what Your Majesty created really good and evil?"

Shi Xiaobai's expression turned mixed and complicated. When he reproduced every question, it was as if he was not only recounting a story from his memories, but also questioning himself once again.

He used a long silence to end 'that human's' monologue and looked into the ice-blue eyes silently for a long period of time. Shi Xiaobai sighed and said, "That is what 'that human' questioned This King with the question that only had two options. It was also 'that human's'...last words."

Dawn was slightly surprised as she asked, "You killed him?"

Shi Xiaobai slowly shook his head, "It wasn't This King. It was good and evil that killed him. Although good and evil is not life, it is an eternal law that transcends life. They were created by This King and they have no thoughts. They abide by the rules but somehow accidentally possessed a 'personality'. It was surprisingly furious regarding 'that human's' choice of sowing discord.

Therefore, his existence was completely wiped out."

Dawn could not help but smile, "A law with 'personality'? That's a very fresh and interesting way to put it. If I'm not wrong, you do not think that that human's questioning was sowing discord. In fact, you generated doubts about the laws of good and evil, to the point of 'revising' it. Therefore your position as King wavered. Is that it?"

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows pricked up slightly before he said with a nod, "Yes, you guessed right. But This King never expected you to so quickly understand what This King is talking about and also be able to analyze its profound meaning. It's a joy chatting with you."

"Likewise."

A smile suffused across Dawn's lips. At that moment, she clearly looked like a handsome boy, but the way she smiled had the youthful charm of a girl. She had always looked deadpan and treated everything coldly also to perfectly hide the fact that she was a female in disguise. But in front of Shi Xiaobai, she had lost all her defenses and opened up her heart. Of course, she would not mind revealing the emotions she had strictly sealed inside her.

However, the smile did not last for very long as Dawn's expression suddenly turned solemn. She looked into Shi Xiaobai's eyes and said seriously, "I'm only a person listening to a story and should not have too many comments, but since it's a 'chat', I think I shouldn't hide my true thoughts. Honestly, that human's questions are very interesting. The questions in rapid succession seem to be reasonable, but could it be that there were other

reasons for you to question the laws you created by you?"

"That human's question does stand on reasonable grounds, but it's actually simply resorting to sophistry as justification. It is obviously not enough to use the words good and evil to define complicated human nature, but isn't it a bit forced to question if good and evil has any meaning to its existence for humans?"

"Regarding the teenager's hypothesis of going from 'Pseudo-good' to 'Evil', it is after all just a hypothesis. It is a problem of probability. It can only be said that there is a high probability that the teenager would kill the unredeemable sufferer to save himself from pain. But there is an extremely small probability that the teenager will eventually bear the pain but not give up trying. At this point, it can be certain that the teenager's 'Pseudo-good' has sublimed to pure 'Good'."

"Humans do have their own will, but against the various choices in life, they can make their choices of their own free will. This is obviously considered an action in one's self-interest. But if they are forced to make a choice that goes against their will, their own will cannot be carried out as they wish. 'That human' said that when forced, one can make the choice of 'acceptance' and 'resistance', and that being forced is also a 'self-centered act'. Isn't that expanding the concept of 'self-centered acts' and exaggerating the existence of 'self-centered acts'? Wouldn't the definition of 'selfishness' become too all encompassing?"

"In summary, I believe that a part of the human's questions are worth contemplating over, but it's not sufficient to waver your will. I believe that for me to be able to see something amiss with it,

it must also mean that you can see it. Therefore, I believe that the reason why you are doubting the laws of good and evil is not as simple? Or could it be..."

When Dawn said to that point, she suddenly came to a halt. In fact, she wanted to say, "or could it be that you fabricated a story in a rush so you did not think of the loopholes?". But in order to continue chatting 'happily', she decided to silently agree that whatever Shi Xiaobai said was real. There were indeed many parts of the story that could be faulted on, but if one questioned the story itself, there would be no end to the debate. She wished to understand Shi Xiaobai's thoughts through a chat, and not understand Shi Xiaobai's ability to engage in a debate.

Of course, by directly pointing out the loophole in Shi Xiaobai's fabrication of the 'questions posed by that human', she was actually trying to see how fast Shi Xiaobai's reaction speed was. When his fabricated story was exposed as having several loopholes, how long would he take to think in order to fix the loopholes?

But what surprised Dawn once again was that Shi Xiaobai had responded the moment she finished her words.

Shi Xiaobai said with a smile, "This King has underestimated you. This King never expected that you were not only listening to the story, but you were standing from the point of view of god to consider the story in such a clear manner. What you said is right. It was not so simple for This King to question the laws of good and evil. In fact, after 'that human' died, This King traveled to the human world on a whim. To This King, who is a supreme existence, the human world was like an ant's nest, a place he would

never step foot on. But after this trip to observe the human world, This King realized that he had committed a grave error."

"In the human world, This King saw many illogical situations. A child that steals food for his starving mother was considered a 'scoundrel' and was beaten to death. The cruel punishment of slashing a murderer and putting him up on a pole to die from exposure is deemed by people as a 'good act'. As an act of pity, a rich young lady gives a beggar a few pieces of gold, causing the beggar to attract trouble because of his wealth. Not only was the gold stolen away by thugs, the beggar was also crippled. The rich young lady's 'benevolence' was actually an 'act of evil'. In order to satisfy his ambition, a king instigated a war causing countless of deaths. If the invasion were successful, it would be deemed as a grand act of 'good', but if his invasion failed, he would be cursed for ages as a 'savage king'..."

"There is no end to such unreasonable matters. Good and evil is frequently distorted and misunderstood in the human world. It even goes as far as confusing right from wrong. Although judgment of good and evil needs to consider the viewpoint of the judge, but the biggest problem is that the viewpoint of the majority becomes the true definition of good and evil. And no matter if the viewpoint of the minority is 'right' or not, their viewpoint will be distorted into being 'wrong'. Good and evil is governed by 'strength', so whichever side is 'stronger' is the side that is 'good'."

"The original understanding This King had of humans was that of inferior beings in a lower plane of existence. But it is because humans are inferior beings that result in their requirements and desire to be much higher than superior beings. Their requirements and desires result in their nature being even more complex than

gods and demons. This King, who had been focused on superior planes of existence, never noticed this. Although the good and evil created by This King is more suitable for gods and demons, it is far from sufficient for humans."

"Why did 'that human', who worked hard to cultivate for millennia allowing him to go from a mere human to an existence that transcended gods and demons after all sorts of trials and tribulations, choose to come before This King and ask such questions that ended up 'courting his own death'?" Why was he willing to risk questioning good and evil despite the possibility of him being killed by good and evil? The reason why he would do so was because the laws of good and evil was not only the imprisonment of 'original sin' in the human world, but shackles for 'self'. To humans, strength is the source of good and evil."

"He loved humans deeply, but he also hated humans a lot. But he was helpless when it came to changing the present situation, so instead of saying he was questioning This King, it would be better to say that he was using his life to implore This King."

After Shi Xiaobai said that, he took a deep breath as though he was cherishing the memory of that great human who was willing to bring destruction on himself. It also seemed like he was sympathizing with the contradiction of good and evil in the human world.

Dawn fell into a daze for quite a while when she finished hearing his monologue. She had underestimated Shi Xiaobai's reaction speed and even more so, she had underestimated Shi Xiaobai's ability to fabricate a story. After hearing the full story, she was

surprised to suddenly feel a sense of repression, as though the story was true. Although concepts like the 'King of kings' and the 'laws of good and evil' were so exaggerated and fake, she could not confidently determine if the story was real or not.

Was it because he had perfected his story in an extremely realistic manner?

Or was his acting extremely realistic? That look of him cherishing the memory made her feel like she was looking at a former monarch who was questioning his creation of good and evil.

Or was it because she understood the ugliness of human nature too well that she felt that the story he fabricated and the reason behind it resonated with her?

Dawn suddenly felt her chest turn heavy, as though something was blocking it. She took a deep breath and said, "That is not the fault of good and evil, but a problem with human nature. Human nature is like that. As humans, questioning human nature is equivalent to questioning ourselves. The only thing we can do is to work hard to exercise restraint in the face of darkness, but there is no way we can change the darkness of human nature."

Yes, that was her understanding all along.

She was unable to change the good or evil nature of anyone. The Patriarch was the instigator of Project Orphan. He was the mastermind behind her being thrown in the uninhabited island for

three years, but the Patriarch had treated her like his very own granddaughter. He had given her the best of everything, and had compensated her with the best environment for growing up as well as the brightest future.

She could not change the Patriarch's nature, nor could she judge if the Patriarch was good or evil. She did not know if she should hate or be grateful to him.

Human nature was too complex and she too was living it.

What she could do, or the only thing she could do was to act in accordance to what she felt was good and evil, and by doing so, not let the darkness of human nature devour her.

She could not change human nature.

So she chose to distance herself from it.

So she was willing to live in a world of her own.

That was her understanding. Was she wrong?

"You aren't wrong."

At that moment, the boy in close proximity suddenly lifted his hand to touch her head. It was as though he was comforting a lost girl.

But he quickly removed his hand that made her embarrassed but not repulsed. Suddenly, he grinned and his eyes burned with a fiery beam as he said loudly to her, "You aren't wrong. Humans cannot change human nature. They can't change good and evil, but This King is not human. Don't forget that This King is the King of Kings that created good and evil! There is nothing This King can't do!"

"This King has the right and the obligation to revise the imperfect good and evil! The current laws of good and evil are only suitable to superior beings with relatively simple requirements and desires, but it is not suitable for humans with complex human nature! If the laws of good and evil can be sufficiently perfected, so perfect to the point of it not being able to be twisted by human nature and strength, or make true good and true evil to become an irrefutable truth, then everything would change!"

"Although This King hasn't thought of the perfect laws of good and evil, but This King will search for it, and will continue searching for it! When This King finds the correct answer, This King will snatch his sealed throne and change the laws of good and evil!"

The boy's voice was filled with energy and excitement. It was like a wave that surged into the sky while constantly heading for the firmament of freedom.

Dawn widened her eyes and fell into a daze.

So that was the reason.

So that was the reason why he was different.

So that was the reason why she could hear his voice.

The words he said that sounded like bullshit were all filled with his profound feelings. Be it that strange confession of 'are you willing to be a side hoe' or the ridiculous story of 'This King is the King of kings that created good and evil', they were filled with innumerable thoughts and reasoning despite them being words said on a whim. And these thoughts and reasoning were not said on a whim, but treasures that had long been engraved in his heart.

Those were his thoughts and reasoning!

Ah, I finally understand.

Why were his eyes clearly black, yet they looked as bright as the stars?

Why were his eyes filled with unprecedented brightness despite knowing more than anyone about the twisted nature of good and evil as well as the darkness of human nature?

That was because he believed that he was not a sorrowful human, but a 'King of kings', who could change the laws of good and evil!

He firmly believed in the light that he looked forward to, so he faced the darkness in front of him straight on!

She had failed to do so, so she chose to let her back face the darkness. But by doing so, her back was also facing the light that was covered by darkness.

But in truth, what she looked forward to was light as well!

"Badump! Badump! Badump!"

Dawn seemed to hear her own heart beat. Her heartbeat was beating more rapidly and energetically than it ever did before. It was brimming with vitality.

A warm, red glow gradually suffused from her cheeks.

For the first time, she felt that her distance from Shi Xiaobai was too close.

To be looked at him at such a close distance could result in such nervousness?

Ah, how was she able to hug him without any reservations previously? What happened a moment ago was her first hug with a person of the opposite sex, but she did not find it problematic. But why did she feel as if her heart was being scratched when she now recalled it?

Too close, it's really too close, but I have no intentions of pushing him away.

But it was also the first time that she felt that she was too close to Shi Xiaobai. To him, she was a figure from three thousand years ago, or she could very well be a fake existence replicated by the assessment program. To her, where he came from, which era he lived in, or whether he was the Infernal King or a trial-taker were things she did not know.

They might not be people from the same era, and could also be people from different worlds, to the point of one of them being fake, an existence that could be destroyed at any time.

Time, dimension, reality were the three biggest obstacles that separated them.

But she felt like they were too close.

Dawn could not help but feel a sense of sorrow as she slowly lowered her head before she suddenly looked back up!

It was too far, so there was an even greater need to cherish the time when she could see his appearance and hear his voice.

What should I say? I can't waste the time in silence.

That story should be fake. He might not be human, but he definitely can't be the King of kings that created good and evil.

But what effect would the story's authenticity bring?

No, even if the story was faked, it would not lead to anything.

That was because he believed that whatever he said was true. He believed that the light he saw existed. He believed it, so no one could question it. It would be useless no matter who questioned him!

And she...

...believed in his belief!

"Work hard and you will definitely find it. No, you will definitely find the true answer! You will definitely be able to change the laws of good and evil into a truth that human nature is unable to distort! When you sit back on that sealed throne, I'll stand by your side. If possible, i want to stay by your side, to the ends of your ideals."

At that moment, the girl who was always expressionless beamed the purest of smiles. It was inexplicably beautiful, like cherry blossoms in spring.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned seeing this.

For some reason, he suddenly recalled what a similarly beautiful purple-haired girl said to him.

"Shi Xiaobai, although in the eyes of others, you who call yourself 'This King' might sound silly, but to me, you are very cute!"

"I understand, Shi Xiaobai. I understand why you call yourself 'This King'."

"It is not because of hubris, nor is it because of narcissism, much less you indulging in fantasy!"

"You are doing so just to believe in yourself!"

"But in my eyes, you are not weak. You are stronger than anyone, so Shi Xiaobai, in the future when you are in front of me, address yourself as 'I', alright?"

Back then, he had only gotten to know the purple-haired girl for only an hour, but she understood him more than anyone else did. She understood him and even believed him.

And ever since she said those words, she became an extremely special existence in his heart. It could be said that in this alternate world, she was the most important existence to him.

The purple-haired girl's name was Kali.

And at that very moment in time, the blond girl who disguised herself as a male had said "you will definitely find the true answer!"

"When you sit back on that sealed throne, I'll stand by your side."

"If possible, I want to stay by your side, to the ends of your ideals."

At that moment, she resembled Kali, who once told him, "In my eyes, you are not weak. You are stronger than anyone".

Similarly, he had only gotten to know her for only about an hour.

Some people might be partners for life, but they might never know what each other was thinking.

Some people might only know each other for an hour, but it felt like they had known each other for life.

To Shi Xiaobai, there was one more to the special existence of the latter.

Dawn naturally did not know what Shi Xiaobai was thinking, nor did she know that her truthful words from her heart dealt such a severe blow on the boy in front of her.

She felt that her heart was beating faster as her face turned

hotter. A baffling impulse seemed to grow in intensity.

He was looking at her.

His eyes were focusing on her without looking away.

Previously, she did not feel anything when she locked eyes with him in this manner, but now, while being focused by him at such close proximity, to the point of her figure reflecting in his eyes, she felt there was something restless in her chest. It made her short of breath.

Her mind began sprouting strange thoughts.

So is that how I look in his eyes?

Ah, short male hair is indeed too short. If it's slightly longer, it would be better. Will he like short-haired girls? Or does he prefer long flowing hair?

With me using a special makeup technique to masculinize my neutral facial features, I look more like a boy to him, right?

Hey, Shi Xiaobai, I'm actually a girl. Although I wrapped my chest to be as flat as a boy's, but actually...actually, I'm developing normally.

The next time...the next time we meet, I want to let you see me

wear a dress for the first time.

Yes, I want to let you see how I look like as a girl.

The next time we meet.

The next time...is there still a chance of meeting again?

Time seemed to slowly pass while their eyes locked in silence.

Perhaps it was because the boy and girl looked too glaring in each other's eyes, or perhaps it was the constantly effusing thoughts that made them forget, or perhaps it was the natural instinct of attraction between man and woman, the two heads that were less than half a meter apart began to rapidly close the distance without them realizing it.

Forty centimeters.

Thirty centimeters.

Twenty centimeters.

Ten centimeters.

Five centimeters.

The boy's head and the girl's head grew closer. The soft lips also naturally approached each other.

Three centimeters.

Two centimeters.

One centimeter...

Time seemed to come to a halt. The air seemed to turn into an ambiguous pink. The boy and girl's lips would touch each other gently at the next moment. It was a mutual attraction, but an instant that they did not notice as they came into contact with each other's warmth.

"Roar!"

A deafening roar suddenly sounded, alarming the boy and girl at the worst possible time when they had already forgotten to breathe.

The kiss that could have been sealed in less than a centimeter came to a sudden halt.

Dawn was jolted awake and like a frightened rabbit, she subconsciously retreated backwards. Instantly, she was a few meters away.

Shi Xiaobai was also given a shock. Thankfully, his body had already barely recovered a bit of strength. He hurriedly used his hands to support himself, preventing him from collapsing because of the girl's sudden release.

After Dawn retreated in shock, she immediately looked up subconsciously at Shi Xiaobai. Noticing how he had recovered some of his strength, she heaved a sigh of relief as an indescribable embarrassment overwhelmed her.

She hurriedly turned, making her back face Shi Xiaobai. She breathed in deeply to calm her mind and raised her hand to gently touch her burning face.

Phew, it's so hot.

Dawn Li, what were you thinking?

How could you...

Why...

Could it be...

"That...that..."

Dawn stuttered and tried to calmly say a few words to attenuate that embarrassing situation, but she did not even have the courage

to turn around. The voice she said from her burning and vexed chest had the embarrassment of a girl, while her mind was in a mess. She could not even form a complete sentence.

"What just happened is very normal."

On the other hand, Shi Xiaobai happened to appear much calmer. After the initial shock, he quickly calmed down. After all, he was a person who had seen much in life and was a man with experience. He coughed gently and said, "When man and woman are too close, it's very natural to have something like that happen. It's a very normal matter!"

Shi Xiaobai recalled the scene when he was in Riko's home, when he was attracted by Kali's beautiful golden eye. He could not help but approach it so that he could see it clearly. Unknowingly, the tip of his nose had touched her nose tip. Immediately after that, Kali had suddenly used her lips to give a quick peck on his lips.

It was probably something very natural.

A very common matter.

"It's far from being normal, alright?!"

When Dawn heard what Shi Xiaobai said, she immediately could not feign her calmness. She turned to glare at Shi Xiaobai before immediately turning back. She could not help but pucker her lips.

Although she had no interest in matters between men and women, she still had such general knowledge.

What they had just done was clearly things only couples would do!

And he actually said it was normal?

What sort of joke was that?

If the person who nearly stole away her first kiss wasn't him but anyone else, she would definitely feel so grossed out that she would vomit.

No, just the thought of it was enough to make her feel like vomiting.

Eh? Why did she feel that even if it were him, it would not be something unacceptable if not for the interruption?

Indeed...

Was it indeed like that?

Dawn was always proud of her intelligence, but this time, she hated herself for being smart. Why did she immediately figure out a nontrivial matter?

But since she had figured it out, she could not avoid it any further.

Face it.

Dawn Li, you aren't even afraid of death, so what's there to be afraid about?

Do not hesitate. Maybe this might be the last moments that you can spend with him. Maybe this is the only chance!

Do not let yourself regret!

Isn't it just...

Dawn turned around suddenly and while facing Shi Xiaobai, she took a deep breath and roared out, "Shi Xiaobai!"

Shi Xiaobai was given a fright by her sudden imposing stance as he hurriedly responded, "Huh?"

Dawn closed her eyes slowly and took a deep breath once again.

When she opened her eyes, the look in her eyes had finally calmed down. She focused on Shi Xiaobai's eyes and said slowly and calmly, "The time we have gotten to know each other is extremely short. It's so short that it might seem to be a rush to even become friends, but what I will say next might make you find

it weird, but please believe that those are truthful words from my very heart. It's the truth that I have to say or I will definitely regret."

"Shi Xiaobai! The matter that happened just now isn't normal. It's something impossible for me to do, but it really almost happened. However, even if it had happened, it has nothing to do with us being too close to one another, much less is it because of a superficial reason like the attraction between man and woman. The reason why I nearly... with you, is because..."

Dawn came to a halt when she said that as her hands began to tremble slightly. She lowered her head to look at the ground. Even her ear lobes were flushing pink.

Shi Xiaobai gulped a mouthful of saliva as he felt that the mood had suddenly turned serious. He suddenly felt an inexplicable sense of nervousness. "It's because?"

Dawn fell silent for a long while before she slowly clenched her fists.

Mom, please give your daughter that bit of courage.

"It's because..."

Dawn suddenly looked up and enunciated every single word, "It's because, I...like..."

"Roar!"

Another deafening roar sounded suddenly at the most critical moment!

At the same time, an intense slamming sound erupted as the ground began to quake violently. It interrupted Dawn's sentence in a relentless fashion and at the same time diverted Shi Xiaobai's attention.

The courage the girl went to great pains to muster from her prayers collapsed immediately. She could only turn to look in the direction of the sound in anger!

"Darn bastard!"

Dawn swore that she had never been so furious before!

Heavens, that courage that was so difficult to muster and the mood she prepared was all gone!

She definitely could not do another confession again!

Looking through the translucent turtle shell, Dawn saw a three-meter-tall three-headed hound. It was raising its heads and roaring. Suddenly, it lifted its claws to slam on the Shell of the Black Turtle. It caused the Shell of the Black Turtle to quiver!

She stared at the three-headed hound angrily. If not for the need of the Shell of the Black Turtle to protect Shi Xiaobai from the black beams of light that were constantly falling from the sky, she would have definitely charged out to dice the darn dog into pieces!

The three-headed hound clearly sensed the killing intent from the girl, but it did not seem to feel any fear. Instead, it roared angrily once again and forcefully slammed the translucent turtle shell once again.

It was venting, it was venting the anger of a bachelor dog!

Shi Xiaobai calmly surveyed his surroundings and immediately noticed that at the end of the horizons, there were several massive figures. There were also gigantic monsters surging from the ends of the sky towards them. It was apparent that the danger in this unfamiliar world was not only limited to the black beams of light. A three-headed hound was already enough to cause the turtle shell to quiver. If a few more monsters came, it was unknown how long it could last.

"Sigh, it looks like it's time to talk about proper matters."

Shi Xiaobai slowly moved his body towards Dawn and said with a serious voice, "Back to the proper topic. What is the situation right now? Where is this place? What happened after the clash of our final strikes? Why did we appear here? What should we do to leave this place? Tell whatever you know to This King."

Due to the promise of having a 'casual chat', Shi Xiaobai had

allowed the girl to decide on the topic of conversation. He held back the questions that filled his mind and joined her in a casual chat.

But now, it was no longer the time to have a leisurely chat. He needed sufficient information to think of a way to resolve the situation they were in.

Dawn clearly realized this as well. She turned to look at Shi Xiaobai and gaped. Her eyes blinked as she cast her gaze to her side. She said in an nearly inaudible manner, "I don't know."

Shi Xiaobai said in surprise, "What?"

Dawn lowered her head slightly and whispered, "Sorry, I don't know. The questions you asked me. I...have no way of answering any of them."

Shi Xiaobai stared with widened eyes. "Didn't you say that...the situation is very complicated?"

Didn't you say that the situation was very complicated and that we needed to have a good chat?

Dawn gave an embarrassed smile as she stuttered, "Although I do not know what had happened, it's true that...the situation is very complicated."

As she felt slightly guilty, the way she lamely argued had a hint of

sultriness.

The reason why she said the 'situation was very complicated' was so that she could say 'need to have a good chat'. It all boiled down to a girl's selfishness after having 'heard' a person's voice. But in fact, she did not know why they had suddenly appeared in the unfamiliar and dangerous place.

Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded for a moment, but he quickly calmed down. He said seriously once again, "Do you really, really not know a thing?"

In the present situation, even a trivial piece of information might be a life-saving straw.

Dawn immediately sat solemnly and frowned to think hard about the situation from before. She was not an unknowing girl that did not know any better. When she was serious, there was no way she would lax on it.

"When the white and golden light mixed together, almost nothing could be seen at that instant. But I still remember...that interspersed between the white and golden light was a few beams of pale golden light. As the paleness was relatively similar, I once thought it as an illusion, but now on careful thought, those pale beams of golden light seemed to shoot from the ground into the sky."

With a contemplative look, Dawn said, "If I didn't guess wrongly, those beams of golden light should be the activating light of an

array formation. The ground we were standing on was probably a massive, pre-laid out invisible array formation. In addition to the momentary mental fuzziness and the loss of weight, that array could very well be a teleportation nexus."

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly, "That is to say someone had laid out a teleportation nexus ahead of time. It was activated at the moment when we used all our strength. As we were unable to divert our attention, we were transported to this world?"

Dawn nodded and said, "That's likely the case. But to be able to teleport a person in an undetectable and involuntary manner is the first I've encountered. So, it might not be a teleportation nexus as well. But it is certain that all of this was plotted by someone. In order to kill us, the person had made thorough calculations to lay out such a meticulous plan."

Shi Xiaobai sighed gently and said, "If that is the case, that person must have considered the exit command. It's unlikely that the exit command can be used to escape this world. The black beams of light and the monsters that are coming should be endless. We can last for a while, but not forever. Escaping this world is the only way to live on."

After Shi Xiaobai said that, he surveyed his surroundings once again. Other than the massive three-headed hound that was slamming the turtle shell, there were dozens of strangely-shaped behemoths that had approached them. And at the ends of the horizon and sky, there were more and more figures swarming over.

How long more could the turtle shell protect them?

When the time came, they would be facing endless black beams and a monster scourge. How were they to survive?

Escaping this world might sound simple, but they did not have any information regarding the world they were in. There was also no way to know of the way to escape the world. They were facing an absolutely despairing situation!

A perplexed look flashed in Shi Xiaobai's eyes before it disappeared. Immediately, it was filled with firm willpower.

No!

They had to live on!

At least!

At least she had to live on!

Chapter 459: The Miracle Of Magic

Seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, basin for the life-and-death battle

"Stop, don't kill him!"

Just as Sunless thrust her sword forward, Liu Yu's anxious roar sounded. It was timely because her sword being only a centimeter away from piercing through Field Marshal Awesomo's heart.

Sunless subconsciously made a judgment. Although she believed that Shi Xiaobai was still alive and wished to wait for Shi Xiaobai to return safely, she was still flustered by her concern. Therefore, she would not give up any chance even if there was a minute possibility of helping Shi Xiaobai. Hence, she was already hesitant about killing Field Marshal Awesomo. Liu Yu's shout for her to halt made her temporarily stop contemplating over her indecision.

With her precise control, Sunless managed to stop her sword just as it was about to pierce through Field Marshal Awesomo's large heart!

However, what she did not expect happened simultaneously. When she stopped her sword, Field Marshal Awesomo suddenly took a step forward to crash into the sword.

Sunless failed to retreat in time as her sword pierced through Field Marshal Awesomo's heart and out through his back!

Field Marshal Awesomo actually chose to commit suicide!?

The spectators watched in gaped surprise.. The rookies were left stupefied as Sunless stood in her spot.

"Sunless, quickly make way!"

Liu Yu shouted once again. He had already guessed the truth, so he was not as surprised as the rest. However, his expression was the heaviest. That was because if he had guessed correctly, the battle would be much tougher than they originally imagined!

When Sunless heard that, she immediately pulled her sword out and retreated back a hundred meters. For Field Marshal Awesomo to take the initiative to slam towards her proved that Liu Yu's judgment of 'not killing him' was right. Therefore, Sunless chose to continue believing Liu Yu.

At the moment Sunless retreated, Liu Yu suddenly took out a huge stack of paper talismans from his Daoist outfit and threw them into the sky. He recited quickly, "Vileness Begone From the Heaven and Earth, Mysteries and Gods Encaved in Unfathomable Profoundness, Imbue Me with World Power of the Highest Order, Announcing to the Nine Heavens, Inviting the Purifying Generals and Ambassadors, The Slaying of Demons, A Sending for Myriad Souls..."

Liu Yu's reciting speed was ridiculously fast. Despite it being a long incantation, it took him a few seconds to finish reciting it.

When he finished saying the last word, he suddenly flicked his whisk towards the sky.

"Incantation for Purifying the Heaven and the Earth!"

The hundred paper talismans that were floating in the sky suddenly combusted. The flames produced a holy white light as the paper talismans were instantly burnt to ash. It turned into plumes of white smoke that merged into the sky.

A visible vanilla white beam of light suddenly scattered from the void and landed on Field Marshal Awesomo's corpse that had already fallen to the ground!

"The Sending of Spirits. Pulverize, demon!"

At that moment, everyone realized for the first time that the youth in a Daoist outfit was a young Daoist who had inherited the orthodox learnings of Daoism!

The 'Incantation for Purifying the Heaven and the Earth' was the sixth incantation of the eight Daoist incantations. At a young age, Liu Yu was considered a true Daoist genius by being able to grasp it. However, due to his young age, he could only produce a tiny bit of the 'Incantation for Pacifying the Heaven and the Earth's' power.

The true 'Incantation for Purifying the Heaven and the Earth' could genuinely purify the heaven and earth, but with Liu Yu's

present strength, all he could do was produce a purifying beam of holy light.

But even so, the effects when the holy light fell on Field Marshal Awesomo's corpse were extremely evident. While Field Marshal Awesomo's body was immersed in the white light, the body began to slowly melt like a piece of ice.

When Liu Yu saw that, he heaved a sigh of relief.

"Be careful!"

A loud shout suddenly sounded. It was the voice of Speechless, who was recuperating from a distance.

The alert could be said to be extremely timely because Field Marshal Awesomo, who was melting away from the holy light suddenly stood up!

Field Marshal Awesomo was not dead!

At the instant he stood back up, his wounds were rapidly healing at an exaggerated speed. The heart that had been pierced was instantly restored to its original state. The hole that was left from the stab through his chest had also vanished!

"Roar!"

Field Marshal Awesomo roared with his head up. The purifying light that was illuminating his body immediately dispersed. Field Marshal Awesomo suddenly brandished his battle axe and his strength seemed to increase to whole new level. His battle axe cleaved a wave that seemed like it could tear mountains apart straight at Liu Yu in the distance.

"Pu!"

Liu Yu spat out a mouthful of blood. The 'Incantation for Purifying the Heaven and the Earth' had been forcefully dispelled, and the power immediately caused a backlash on him. That instant left him extremely weak to the point of it being fatal. It caused his body to basically be immobile. He could not dodge the battle axe's wave, while Sunless and company were rather far away from him. They probably could not save him in time.

That strike was a well-timed sneak attack!

"Damn it. He should not have been underestimated!"

Liu Yu revealed a wry smile as he quickly racked his brains in an attempt to find a chance of survival in the desperate situation.

But he could not help but have a figure that he was worried about surface in his mind.

In the Daoist temple, there was his master, strict senior brothers, the playful junior brothers as well as...

The scenes in his mind came to a standstill. An adorable girl who was wearing a Daoist outfit was smiling with her babyfat cheeks as she ran around chasing butterflies in a bed of flowers.

"Senior Brother Liu, Master said that Daoists can't get married. Is that true?"

"Junior Sister, you probably haven't seen the Matron?"

"Ah? Matron?"

"Matron is the Master's wife, although your Senior Brother, I, have only met her once."

"What, Master is a big fat liar!"

"No, no, no, it's because Junior Sister is gullible! Daoists aren't monks, so they obviously can marry. Furthermore, in this day and age, there are even monks who have harems. You should have that bit of general knowledge, shouldn't you?"

"Oh, so that's the case! That's great! Daoists can get married..."

"Eh? That's great? Does...Junior Sister want to marry someone?"

"Ah? Not at all!"

"Haha, your face is so red that it's like an apple!"

"Hmph! Senior Brother Liu is a baddy. You bully!"

...

Junior Sister!

Liu Yu widened his eyes suddenly!

How could he die here?

He could not die here!

The only thing left for him to do was...the exit command.

But if he were to use the exit command at that moment in time, the tiny bit of information he had barely analyzed would not amount to anything. He could only rely on the rest of the rookies to save Shi Xiaobai.

Damn it!

Damn it!

Damn it!

But he was out of choices.

"Open..."

Liu Yu bit his lower lip as his heart was filled with shame and disgruntlement.

But at that moment, a figure suddenly rushed in front of him. Liu Yu hurriedly shut his mouth!

Feng Yuanlin!

At the most critical juncture, it was unknown when Feng Yuanlin, who was near him, rushed in front of him!

He saw Feng Yuanlin raise his arms. With a deep bellow, a gigantic shield about five meters in size appeared out of thin air in his hands!

"Boom!"

The wave cleaved from the battle axe left a fresh scar on the ground as it slammed straight at the gigantic shield. Feng Yuanlin clenched his teeth and shook a bit. He had managed to take the strike head on!

The gigantic shield did not shatter. But from the front, there were a few shallow marks on it. The strength of defense was obviously good.

"Phew, thankfully I was nearby."

Feng Yuanlin sighed with a lingering fear.

Liu Yu's gaze quivered gently as he noticed that the shoe on Feng Yuanlin's right foot was already gone. It was dozens of meters away.

Feng Yuanlin was near him, but the distance wasn't that much closer. However, he had rushed over with all his might. Even though he had dropped his shoe in his moment of haste, he did not stop for even a second.

"What an...exaggerated shield."

Liu Yu dragged his injured body forward as he was having mixed emotions. He still had a bit of lingering fear and also feeling somewhat lucky, but mostly, he was feeling touched and grateful.

Feng Yuanlin grinned and said, "This isn't like those crappy shields from before. No, it should be said that I'm no longer the Feng Yuanlin of the past. For the past ten days in the Infernal Armory, I..."

"Got it."

Liu Yu patted Feng Yuanlin on the shoulder and cut short his bragging that would have no end the moment he began. He said softly, "Thank you."

Feng Yuanlin scratched his head and simpered. This was probably the first time he was thanked by Liu Yu ever since he got to know him.

Liu Yu gave Feng Yuanlin another grateful look and hobbled out of the side of the shield. At that moment, Field Marshal Awesomo's wounds were basically healed. If not for his body still being covered in blood, who would believe that just ten seconds ago, the burly minotaur was filled with wounds, a pierced chest and a shattered heart?

Feng Yuanlin kept his shield and when he saw the situation, he wailed, "Holy shit, a full recovery and revival!?"

At that moment, Sunless, Pulp Farmer, Mu Yuesheng, and Mu Lengxi were standing on four opposite sides around Field Marshal Awesomo. Although they were rather far from him, they were in a formation that surrounded him. All four of them looked alert and wary. None of them acted rashly and even Sunless became more subdued.

Why was Field Marshal Awesomo able to revive and make a full recovery in ten seconds?

What were they supposed to do when facing such an

unreasonable opponent?

The four were alarmed and puzzled, but at the same time, they cast their eyes at Liu Yu, who had walked out from behind Feng Yuanlin.

The youth in a Dao outfit had made two correct judgments consecutively. He seemed to know something.

Liu Yu did not plan on hiding the truth to which he inferred. With a sigh, he said, "It probably...isn't only a full recovery and revival."

Feng Yuanlin said in appallment, "What does that mean?"

Liu Yu said with a heavy expression, "If This Penniless Priest didn't guess wrong, not only will he fully recover, every revival would also enhance his strength!"

With that said, everyone had a drastic change in expression as they revealed looks of disbelief.

Not only could he have a full recovery and revival, he would become stronger after revival?

What sort of perverse ability was that?

How could there exist such a perverse ability?

However, Field Marshal Awesomo did not seem like he planned to deny it. He stretched his body as though he was getting used to the newfound strength he had obtained.

He looked at Liu Yu and said with a chuckle, "Interesting, can you tell This Field Marshal how you guessed that? Did This Field Marshal expose a flaw?"

Liu Yu said with a sneer, "That's because you are too weak and it was too deliberate!"

Field Marshal Awesomo pricked his eyebrows and said, "What does that mean?"

Everyone gave Liu Yu puzzled looks.

Liu Yu hesitated for a moment before saying solemnly, "Your strength is not at the level of a Level Lord, but the 'plot' you fabricated makes you match the requirements of a Level Lord. This Penniless Priest was stumped initially by the question of 'are you the Level Lord or not', so nothing could be figured out. But thankfully, This Penniless Priest recalled of a method used by a boy that likes to address himself as This King—Supposition!"

"This Penniless Priest assumed that if you were the Level Lord, and believed that this assumption was true, This Penniless Priest continued pondering from that starting point."

"Since you are the Level Lord, why are you so weak?"

"Since you are so weak, why did you make such a bold statement at the beginning, to the point of claiming to have killed Shi Xiaobai to attract aggro?"

"Since you have already attracted aggro, why did you deliberately emphasize that again at the end? It was like you were afraid that Sunless would not be ruthless enough to kill you."

"This Penniless Priest thought of many answers, but there was no way for This Penniless Priest to convince himself. Only when Sunless was about to pierce through your heart did your expression enlighten This Penniless Priest. That expression was not hysterical madness, fearless mockery, or release from giving up a struggle. Instead, it was complacency, a complacency of your scheme having succeeded!"

"Thus, when This Penniless Priest realized that, the act of being killed was the goal of this series of machinations! The reason why you were so weak but you still continuously attracted aggro was deliberate, because you were trying to be killed! And through reverse thinking, the reason why you wanted to be killed is because you are too weak!"

"Therefore, This Penniless Priest came to a conclusion. Even if your heart is pierced, you would not die and instead become stronger! However, what caught This Penniless Priest by surprise is that your recovery ability is too terrifying!"

"If This Penniless Priest did not guess wrong, the reason why you do not possess the strength required of a Level Lord is because of a limitation. 'Fatal damage' might be the condition for lifting that limitation."

Everyone was somewhat dumbfounded by Liu Yu's series of explanations, but they could tell the rationale behind it. However, all of this was established on the assumption that Field Marshal Awesomo was the Level Lord. It was unknown if Liu Yu should be said to have amazing insights or if he had been led astray by a particular boy to be able to come up with such an astonishing conclusion based on an assumption.

Field Marshal Awesomo was clearly given a fright. He was stunned as his expression turned capricious.

"To be able to deduce so much with that bit of information..."

Field Marshal Awesomo's eyes flashed with killing intent as he pretended to remain calm. He said with a sneer, "You are half right. It doesn't matter even if the truth is told to you. All of this is actually a tiny game designed by that Excellency. In order to make all of you struggle a little, that Excellency had greatly reduced This Field Marshal's strength. If not, This Field Marshal would smack all of you to death with a single strike."

"That Excellency?"

Liu Yu muttered, "To make a Level Lord address the existence as 'that Excellency' and also be able to freely restrict a Level Lord's

strength can only be the assessment program. But the assessment program is a program after all. How can it have such a strong level of self-awareness?"

Field Marshal Awesomo gave a disdainful smile, but he did not answer Liu Yu's question. Instead, he said with a sneer, "The real game has only just begun."

Liu Yu said with a sneer, "Your scheme has been exposed. The game is over! Although your strength has been enhanced after being 'killed' once, but from the strike that you produced just now, you are still far from the strength of a Level Lord. Unfortunately, if the trial-takers here combine forces and attack with all their might, they can even match a real Level Lord in battle. We might not be able to kill you, but we can definitely subdue you!"

Although it was somewhat exaggerated, after seeing Sunless's strength in her 'crazy' mode, Liu Yu believed that once Speechless recovered from his injuries, the combined forces of the seven trial-takers present could battle a Level Lord in his optimum state.

"Hahaha..."

Field Marshal Awesomo seemed to think of something as he suddenly guffawed. His maniacal laughter eventually turned into a sneer.

"You are really smart. Indeed, if none of you kill me, This Field Marshal would be in trouble, but unfortunately, all of you have to kill This Field Marshal, because there is no choice but to kill!"

Liu Yu said with a sneer, "No choice but to kill?"

Field Marshal Awesomo nodded and with squinted eyes, he said, "Aren't all of you eager to know where that boy is? This Field Marshall shall now tell you where he is!"

When Sunless heard that, she immediately lifted her head and took a step forward. A moment ago, she was like a mild and beautiful azure lotus but at that moment, she was like an unsheathed sword.

Liu Yu was appalled but he thought of something shortly after. He said warily, "What are you plotting now?"

Field Marshal Awesomo sneered and said, "Just as you believed, This Field Marshal did not kill that boy. It's of course that all part of that Excellency's game. In fact, that boy and the person you call the Hero King are being trapped in an array world. But unfortunately, that is no ordinary array. It is a God Slaughtering Formation that even gods will have trouble escaping from!"

"This Field Marshal has no idea if they are still alive or not, but it is for certain that they will definitely die. They will die out of exhaustion sooner or later!"

"So, all you can do is pray that the boy is still alive and think of ways to kill This Field Marshal."

"That's because only by killing This Field Marshal will the God Slaughtering Formation be nullified! And it's best you do it as fast as possible because every second now, might be that boy's last second!"

Field Marshal Awesomo laughed maniacally as he said, "Do you understand? The game has only just begun!"

Liu Yu immediately turned pale as his body began to tremble slightly.

So that was the truth behind the nefarious plot. That was the true goal of Field Marshal Awesomo!

If what he said was true, Shi Xiaobai could only be saved by killing him. Furthermore, if he was not killed quickly enough, every additional second Shi Xiaobai spent in the so-called God Slaughtering Formation was an additional level of danger!

If they attempted to kill him, he would use his astounding self-recovery ability to revive and become stronger!

This was a choice with only two options, but none of the options were correct!

What should they do?

How should he choose?

What needed to be done to make it the best choice?

At that moment, Liu Yu was once again at a loss. However, he was not the only one at a loss because the rest were momentarily unsure as to what to do.

But it was during such moments where difficult choices needed to be made that Sunless, who was the most worried, could be able to quickly come to a decision!

Without any hesitation, she raised her sword and charged at Field Marshal Awesomo!

Shi Xiaobai was in danger, so any additional second of delay would only spell danger for him.

But by killing the minotaur in front of her, she could save Shi Xiaobai.

Then, what was there to hesitate?

Of course she needed to kill him!

As for his self-recovery ability, full revival, and becoming stronger after his revival?

So what about that?

"As long as you are killed completely!"

Sunless' eyes were cold as killing intent flashed in her eyes!

Field Marshal Awesomo immediately sneered when he saw Sunless charging towards him alone.

Previously, the azure-dressed girl had indeed been suppressing him alone.

But he was no longer the same as before. Be it in terms of strength, defense, or agility, they were all on a completely whole new level.

Now, the situation would be completely reversed in a one-on-one situation!

"Although being killed by you another time will make This Field Marshal stronger, This Field Marshal does not want to experience such pain anymore! As long as you are killed, the rest are just negligible. This Field Marshal's current strength is enough to finish you!"

Field Marshal Awesomo thought in his mind and he no longer hesitated. He raised his battle axe and cleaved at Sunless!

"Go to hell!"

However, it was unknown if it was an illusion on his part because when Field Marshal Awesomo cleaved his battle axe, he suddenly felt that the girl's speed was faster than before!

But immediately following that, he felt an intense pain in his back and he was immediately jolted awake!

It was not an illusion, she had really become faster!

Despite realizing that, he could not react in time because a new storm was ushered in by the azure-dressed girl!

Furthermore, the new storm was more brutal and devastating than before!

It was no joke!

No matter how powerful his self-recovery was, it was not true revival. He had survived even with his heart shattered because of his strong vitality!

But at that very moment, the girl in front of him clearly wanted to shred him to pieces, causing him to die completely!

Field Marshal Awesomo was alarmed but he could do nothing about it. All he could do was harden his vital spots and squat down while hugging his head so as to reduce the surface area which he

could be injured before thinking of a way to strike back.

However....

He could not counterattack. There was no chance for it!

She was too fast and too brutal!

He had a feeling that if he acted recklessly, he would immediately be killed!

He had clearly become stronger, but why was he still suppressed by her alone?

Field Marshal Awesomo could not accept the reality in front of him, but he could only silently endure the pain of the lacerations that constantly appeared on his body.

Thankfully he had done his best to protect his vital spots. Furthermore, with that Excellency providing him with an amazing self-recovery ability, about one of his wounds could be recovered every second!

Most importantly, those humans had yet to realize the real truth. In fact, it will become stronger just from injuries. There was no need for it to receive a fatal blow!

Yes, that's right. As long as he received damage, his strength,

defense and speed would constantly increase!

It would continue till he had the ability to counterattack!

Yes, that was the theory!

But why...

Why did he feel that the girl that was wantonly abusing him was also quickly becoming stronger?

Was it an illusion?

No!

It wasn't an illusion!

She really, really was becoming stronger!

Furthermore, the speed at which she was becoming stronger was not slower than him!

That was because from the beginning, all he could do was defend. He did not even have the chance to strike back. He could not find that sliver of opportunity to do so!

"Madness! This is madness!"

Field Marshal Awesomo roared angrily and fearfully in his heart. He never expected that a frail human could force him into such a situation.

Not only was it Field Marshal Awesomo, even the other rookies were dumbfounded

As objective bystanders, they were able to sense the killing intent and that madness but firm will exuded by Sunless.

They could also sense that Sunless's speed was clearly increasing. Every strike of hers becoming fiercer as though the thunder in the storm had begun to resound incessantly!

This time it was not a suppression but a one-sided abuse!

The way Sunless beat him was too brutal. She was constantly moving at very fast speeds and attacking from various angles. There was no way to tell where she would appear from. It prevented the rest from intervening so all they could do was watch in stunned silence from afar.

Mu Yuesheng exclaimed, "Sunless is actually that strong!"

Pulp Farmer shook his head, "No, the most exaggerated thing should be the speed at which she is improving..."

Feng Yuanlin muttered to himself, "Hey, even the 'power of love' shouldn't be this crazy, right? Her speed is increasing every second. The way she is breaking through is like she turned on a hacking program."

Liu Yu remained silent for a long while before he suddenly sighed and said, "It's not that she is improving quickly, but that she is that strong to begin with!"

Feng Yuanlin said in astonishment, "Strong to begin with?"

Liu Yu said with a nod, "Everyone thinks that Sunless is very strong, but that is all to it. At least when compared to Speechless, there would be a huge gap. Even Sunless probably thinks so herself. But that could not be further from the truth. Sunless possessed potential that she does not even realize herself. She has always mistaken 50% or 30% of her strength as her full strength. But when she requires, desires, or needs strength, she would produce the remaining part of her strength. Therefore, instead of saying that she is constantly holding back, it should be said that in order to save Shi Xiaobai, she has finally forced herself to approach her limits."

"Sunless is what a true prodigy is."

Liu Yu said with mixed emotions. He had previously heard of such prodigies, but this was the first time he encountered one.

Although Shi Xiaobai and Speechless were geniuses, they were under the category of talents with innate endowments. Their

perceptions exceeded others, so even if their talents were extremely impressive, their improvement still required the accumulation of time and a process of progression.

But a genius like Sunless usually would not even realize her potential. However, once she was forced into an adverse situation, she could immediately produce strength that far exceeded the norm. She possessed talent from the moment she was born, talent she did not even know of herself.

In other words, Sunless possessed a treasure mountain that could be excavated at any time. That was what a prodigy was!

In the past, Sunless only had her eyes on swords, so her mental state had never been perturbed.

But now, with an additional Shi Xiaobai in her eyes, her heart began to really beat from the moment she liked Shi Xiaobai!

At that moment in time, with Shi Xiaobai in danger, every second could be his last.

Therefore, every second was not something she was willing to waste. In order to kill Field Marshal Awesomo at a faster speed, she finally began to excavate her potential and approach her true limit!

A distance away, Speechless was deep in thought. A smile suffused across his lips. "So China is filled with all sorts of hidden talents. Shi Xiaobai. Sunless. This was meant to be a meaningless

selection, but who knew that there will be two geniuses that even This Emperor has to be serious about. Looks like this year's World Youth Tournament will be rather interesting. Even This Emperor only reached the round-of-eight back then. Who knows how far they could go?"

The 'abuse' continued for three minutes but there were no signs of Sunless stopping. Field Marshal Awesomo had also failed to find an opportunity to launch a counterattack, but he similarly was not killed. Although he was covered in wounds, he was still able to barely protect his weak spots and survive through excruciating pain.

Feng Yuanlin scratched his head and said impatiently, "Sunless is clearly becoming stronger, but why isn't Field Marshal Awesomo's defense breaking apart yet?"

That was only something Feng Yuanlin said without any intentions, but although he did not have any intentions, the ones who heard it thought deeply about it. Liu Yu's irises constricted as cold sweat began oozing out of his forehead.

Sunless was becoming stronger, but there was only one reason why Field Marshal Awesomo was still undefeated—Field Marshal Awesomo was also becoming stronger!

Why didn't he realize such a simple matter!?

Idiot, to think you call yourself the world's smartest Daoist!

You are a retarded idiot!

Liu Yu cursed silently as his eyebrows knitted together while he began thinking.

"What a craft minotaur, to fool me with his deceit. But I'm also to be blamed for being stupid enough to not realize that injuries can also make him stronger. I subconsciously ignored the crazy possibility and subjectively believed that only fatal damage would trigger his strength enhancement. I'm really dumb."

"No, now is not the time to blame myself. If Field Marshal Awesomo is constantly becoming stronger, then the situation is disastrous. No matter how much of a genius Sunless is, her talent is ultimately limited. If she excavates her potential to her limits, while Field Marshal Awesomo constantly becomes stronger, the situation will eventually reverse. When the time comes, Sunless will be in trouble!"

"But it's impossible for Sunless to stop now. Even though she knows she is in grave danger, she would ignore everything else. To her, saving Shi Xiaobai is something that cannot be delayed. It's something more important than her life. I can't stop her."

"If she can't be stopped, the only way is think of something else. Before the tide reverses on Sunless, I need to think of a method to kill Field Marshal Awesomo completely!"

Liu Yu began surveying his surroundings as he tried his best to think of every possibility. He did not have the strength needed to

reverse the battle situation. Furthermore, he had received the backlash when he previously used the Incantation for Purifying the Heaven and the Earth. However, he possessed an intelligence that was above average. The only weapon he had now was his brain that was filled with knowledge.

Hurry up!

There is no more time left!

Rack your brains and think of something!

Suddenly, Liu Yu's eyes captured a petite figure while he was surveying his surroundings. An odd flash of brilliance appeared in his mind.

The idea was somewhat risky, and the outcome was completely in the hands of that person.

But with the present situation, all he could do was trust her!

Liu Yu clenched his teeth and steeled his heart. He endured the pain his body was suffering and ran towards a particular direction at the fastest speed he could muster.

"Miss Lengxi!"

The sliver of hope Liu Yu saw was all in the hands of the

bespectacled silver-haired girl!

Mu Lengxi gave a cursory glance at him but most of her attention was on Sunless. She was equally worried for Shi Xiaobai, but Sunless's close-quarter combat with constantly changing positions prevented her from intervening. All she could do was stand by the side in nervousness.

As she could not speak, she could only gesture with her eyes to inquire about Liu Yu's purpose.

Liu Yu did not delay and went straight to the point. "If this continues, Sunless might eventually lose, but you can help Sunless. Furthermore, it can kill Field Marshal Awesomo completely. Are you willing..."

When Mu Lengxi heard half of his sentence, she had quickly turned her head over and nodded her head vigorously. Although she did not know what Liu Yu was talking about, she was willing to give it a try regardless of the cost and effort if she could help Sunless and kill Field Marshal Awesomo.

Liu Yu gave a satisfied smile. He could long tell that Mu Lengxi had affections for Shi Xiaobai. Although it was not as intense as Sunless', she clearly wouldn't sit idle.

However, how much she was willing to help Shi Xiaobai would depend on how important Shi Xiaobai was in her heart.

Bro, it's time to reveal the fruits of your flirting.

Liu Yu quickly said, "According to This Penniless Priest's observations, when you helped suppress Field Marshal Awesomo, you likely used the soon-to-be lost art of 'Magic'. First, This Penniless Priest has a few questions he needs to ask. Please answer truthfully."

Magic was an art that was about to be lost in the present day and age.

Thousands of years ago, the human world's combat system was filled with all sorts of techniques. Magic, Arcana, Ninjitsu, Dao Arts, Buddhist Dharma, Cybernetics, ESP... It could be said that humans had all sorts of combat systems, and each of them was different.

But ever since Psionic Power was discovered and researched, the other combat systems like Magic and Arcana quickly revealed their flaws, once the initial Psionic Power system was established. As for Psionic Power, it nearly perfected all the flaws of the other combat systems, and was approaching perfection. Its low barrier of entry gave it its biggest advantage. Therefore, the Psionic Power system gradually became mainstream.

When an extremely rewarding cultivation system like 'Cogitation' appeared in the world, it announced the decline of all other non-Psionic Power combat systems!

Magic was one of the combat systems that had waned. Although

magic could do many things that the Psionic Power system could not do, the flaws magic had were huge. Using magic was extremely draining on one's mental energies and most importantly, magic required an incantation to trigger it. The more powerful the spell, the longer the incantation.

In a high-level battle, Psionites could use movement techniques to close the distance, but magic needed a long period of time to produce a high-level spell that would possess any threat.

The Psionic Power system was not omnipotent, but it restrained the other systems. Furthermore, it did not have any clear nemesis that could threaten its spot; therefore, it became the only mainstream system in this day and age.

However, even though it had waned, there were 'stubborn' groups of other combat systems that passed down their heritage. Liu Yu's Daoist temple was one of the inheritors of the Dao Arts, but Daoists these days would not only focus on Dao Arts. Psionic abilities were still mandatory.

When Liu Yu noticed that Mu Lengxi was using the nearly lost art of magic, he was rather shocked. That was because in an eastern country like China, the handing down the teachings of magic was more difficult than Dao Arts. Most mages were only dabblers.

But he immediately recalled that Mu Lengxi was the top scholar of Beijing. She was a super rookie among super rookies and was officially forecast to be second. She was one rank higher than Sunless, so he could only come to a conclusion that Mu Lengxi must be a genius among genius mages.

It was definitely an arduous undertaking for magic which was restrained by Psionic Ability in an age where Psionites were everywhere.

In his flash of brilliance, Liu Yu had thought of a solution. He needed the help of Mu Lengxi's magic, but it was actually not simple because the premise required Mu Lengxi to possess extremely high attainments in magic.

However, he could only choose to believe in her. he had to believe that the beautiful girl had what it took to be labeled as the 'king of super rookies'.

Towards Liu Yu's request, Mu Lengxi naturally nodded her head in agreement.

Liu Yu immediately asked, "Do you know Spatial Magic?"

Mu Lengxi nodded her head without any hesitation.

Liu Yu asked once again, "Can you do spatial severance? Something like isolating Field Marshal Awesomo into a tiny space?"

Without any thought, Mu Lengxi immediately nodded.

Liu Yu heaved a sigh of relief but he meticulously asked for

confirmation, "While Sunless is moving quickly and randomly, can you precisely isolate her from Field Marshal Awesomo, and trap Field Marshal Awesomo in an independent space? Can you really do that?"

Mu Lengxi nodded her head as if it was taken for granted. Her helpless-looking eyes seemed to say, 'Can you go straight to the point and cut the nonsense?'

Liu Yu faltered secretly.

She was indeed a genuine king of super rookies.

But due to his meticulous personality, he immediately asked an extremely crucial question, "Then, last question, how long can you trap Field Marshal Awesomo?"

The question finally made Mu Lengxi ponder for a moment. After contemplating her own abilities, she stretched a finger out.

Liu Yu said in astonishment, "Just one minute?"

It was pretty excellent for a young mage like her to be able to trap Field Marshal Awesomo for a minute, but one minute was not enough!

Just as Liu Yu was somewhat disappointed, Mu Lengxi shook her head in a speechless manner. She looked at him with a disdainful look. It indicated that one minute was simply belittling her.

Liu Yu immediately said in pleasant surprise, "That can't be. Could it be an hour?"

Mu Lengxi shook her head as she pouted angrily.

That look was extremely adorable, but Liu Yu was only left in shock.

It was not one minute, nor was it an hour.

Could it be...

"One...one day?"

When he said those two words, Liu Yu felt like smacking himself in the face.

How stupid was he to say one day?

"Spatial Severance' was a channeling spell which needed mental energies to be constantly injected into it. To be able to last an hour despite such intense consumption yet guaranteeing that Field Marshal Awesomo could not free himself was heaven-defying.

But a day? Why haven't you ascended to heaven?

Liu Yu denigrated in his heart, but when he saw Mu Lengxi nod her head slowly, that adorable expression seemed to say, 'How stupid are you to only realize that'.

Liu Yu stared agape and was momentarily at a loss for words.

Heh, this lass looked rather cute, but who knew that she liked to brag this much?

Liu Yu found it unbelievable but he did not know what to say. Although he did not understand much about magic, he knew how ridiculous it was to conjure a channeling spell for an hour. However, now wasn't the time to debate about the matter.

Of course, the moment he fell into a daze, the silver-haired girl stared at him viciously once again.

"Cough, actually being able to maintain it for ten minutes is sufficient, but of course, maintaining it for an hour would be more assuring."

Liu Yu did not dare waste any time as he said, "Then, now use your magic to isolate Field Marshal Awesomo. The time needed to chant such a high-level spell like Spatial Severance might be a bit long, so..."

Just as Liu Yu wanted to tell her to do her best at reducing the time it took to chant the spell incantation, he noticed that Mu Lengxi had taken an aged spellbook from her backpack and quickly

flipped it open.

The instant the spellbook was flipped open, a six-pointed star runic formation bloomed from the spellbook like colorful petals.

Mu Lengxi stretched out a finger towards the battle in the distance.

Liu Yu turned his head in disbelief as he saw a colorful sprinkling of light. The sword Sunless slashed out seemed to hit an invisible wall and was blocked.

And Field Marshal Awesomo who was kneeling on the ground seemed to notice something. He suddenly looked up and roared angrily. He suddenly raised his battle axe and cleaved it into the air, but his cleave halfway was blocked by an invisible barrier.

The formless and invisible spatial barrier only produced a fleeting fluctuation like a ripple.

Without a doubt, the scene that befell everyone's eyes was the phenomenon created by 'Spatial Severance'.

But, but...what about the spell incantation?

Ignoring the spell incantation, Mu Lengxi did not even open her mouth!

Holy shit, doesn't she need to do an incantation?

Furthermore, she was able to instantly use such high-level magic like 'Spatial Severance'?

Was this fucking magic?

Could she fucking still be considered a mage?

Eh, that's not right. Isn't Mu Lengxi...a mute?

Liu Yu finally thought of the foolish question that could be considered a blind spot.

Since Mu Lengxi was a mute, how could she chant a spell incantation?

This problem should be something he should have realized from the beginning!

So she did not chant?

But, isn't a mage that doesn't need to chant a bug in reality?

Liu Yu's mind was filled with 'holy shit'.

"Pa!"

Suddenly, when he felt like his head was being smashed in by something, Liu Yu was jolted awake and realized that Mu Lengxi had used the spellbook to smack him in the head. She was looking anxious and was constantly pointing in the direction of Sunless.

Liu Yu suddenly remembered what was important. He turned his head and saw that not only was Field Marshal Awesomo attacking the spatial barrier, even Sunless was also maniacally striking the spatial barrier. She was abnormally furious with the 'Spatial Severance' that prevented her from killing Field Marshal Awesomo.

Fractures began appearing in the spatial barrier from their assaults as though it was glass that could shatter at any moment. Clearly, it was unable to withstand the full force of the two.

Mu Lengxi's expression appeared in pain, but her eyes were filled with determination. The spellbook in her hand was blooming with resplendent radiance as she constantly repaired the spatial barrier that was about to shatter.

Liu Yu jumped in fright as he hurriedly shouted, "Sunless, quickly stop! Now that Field Marshal Awesomo is being isolated in an independent space, quickly use your superpower and extract all the air from it! Suffocate him to death!"

That was the brilliant plan Liu Yu had come up with.

Sunless' superpower, 'Air Abjuration' had very little use in battle,

because she could only remove a fixed amount of air in a small region of space. It was basically useless against moving enemies.

But this attack was a deathblow to enemies that could not move!

No matter how powerful Field Marshal Awesomo's vitality and recovery was, there was no way he could survive if he did not have air! Although suffocating needed a rather long period of time, it was definitely better than not being able to kill him and causing him to constantly become stronger!

Sunless naturally understood that but her eyes flashed in disgruntlement. If it was possible, she did not want Shi Xiaobai to risk his life for even a second, but she could not help but admit that it was very unlikely that she could kill Field Marshal Awesomo. The method Liu Yu took the liberty to implement was the best method.

Sunless sighed and began using 'Air Abjuration' in the independent space that trapped Field Marshal Awesomo.

As such, it was a flip of the coin of fate. It was two completely different fates whether Field Marshal Awesomo would first suffocate or if Shi Xiaobai would be killed by the 'God Slaughtering Formation'.

And what she could only do now was to sincerely pray for him.

Sunless took a few steps back as she lowered her head. There was

a trace of exhaustion in her eyes. The way she suddenly turned silent made her resemble a quietly blooming azure lotus. It was as if the storm from being with tumultuous thunder and lightning was just an illusion of the rest.

Having been isolated in a vacuum, Field Marshal Awesomo finally could not appear as calm as before. The light green skin on his face gradually turned purple with the passage of time. He began sucking in big mouthfuls of air that did not exist. His eyes were slowly turning white as he brandished his battle axe while striking the spatial barrier with a grimacing look. He was struggling maniacally with all he got.

Fractures constantly appeared on the spatial barrier as though it was about to shatter, but it managed to withstand Field Marshal Awesomo's attacks before his death. Furthermore, the power of magic was constantly repairing it, so it formed a balance with the damage.

Liu Yu was extremely astonished. Field Marshal Awesomo's strength was much stronger than before despite being 'abused' by Sunless. It had exceeded his expectations, but the silver-haired girl beside him was still able to perfectly carry out her mission. She responded in an outstanding manner towards his extremely risky plan that had no room for mistake.

She indeed lived up to being the king of super rookies.

However, the biggest problem now was whether she could last till Field Marshal Awesomo died completely?

Liu Yu glanced to his side. Mu Lengxi's forehead was covered in beads of sweat. Clearly, constantly repairing the spatial barrier was not an easy task, but she looked calm and composed. She was apparently not bragging when she indicated that she could last an entire day.

A mage like her, who did not need to chant spell incantations and had precise control over magic, as well as unimaginable amount of mana and mental energies, was practically a lost goddess of magic. She bestowed miracles on the human world!

"All the best." Liu Yu sighed in his heart.

I'm really sorry to place such a heavy task on you. But now, the coin of victory is held in your hands!

Chapter 460: To The Ends Of The World Together

The God Slaughtering Formation was a forbidden formation technique used in ancient times to kill gods. As long as the person presiding over the formation core was strong enough, even a real god would not be able to escape it.

There were only two ways to escape the God Slaughtering Formation. One of them was destroy the formation core outside the array world, while the second was to use a strength that even the array world could not withstand.

Of course, it was impossible for the people trapped in the array world to destroy the formation core outside the array world, so without the help from others, the only way to escape the array world was to tear open an exit with a strength the God Slaughtering Formation could not withstand.

Back in the sixth level, four Level Lords had been gathered together. The assessment program had given them the mission of eradicating the 'virus'. However, against the 'intruding virus', Kali, the Level Lords had no hope of victory despite Kali having sealed her strength to the Psionic Mortal Realm. Therefore, they had to activate the forbidden technique from ancient times that could kill gods.

Even a powerful figure like Kali was unable to forcefully break out of the God Slaughtering Formation with her powers sealed. She eventually needed to use the 'power of corruption' to save Shi Xiaobai at the cost of becoming a fallen pixie that she abhorred.

And at this moment in time, Shi Xiaobai and Dawn were being trapped in the God Slaughtering Formation. Although the setup of the formation core was not as lavish as having 'four Level Lords', it was impossible to exceed the array world's capacity with the strength of the two, even if they simultaneously used the power of the Sword Soul and Excalibur. It was no doubt fool's talk if they wanted to crack the God Slaughtering Formation.

If no one helped destroy the formation core exterior to the array world, there was no way for them to escape.

However, the duo did not know that they were trapped in such an uncrackable array world. They were still attempting to find a way to escape that did not even exist.

However, such racking of brains could not last too long because the horde of monsters had already begun attacking the Shell of the Black Turtle from every direction. The translucent turtle shell was beginning to reveal cracks on its surface.

After withstanding the blasts from the black beams of light and then getting attacked by a horde of monsters, even a divine artefact like the Shell of the Black Turtle would not be able to last very long.

"There's no more time."

Dawn made the calmest of judgments as she said to Shi Xiaobai, "The Shell of the Black Turtle cannot last much longer. Now is not

the time to consider how we can escape this world, but to think of a way to escape from the encirclement of these monsters."

In short, how to live on was the biggest problem they were facing.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and temporarily put aside the thoughts on 'escaping the world'. He surveyed his surroundings but monsters filled every corner. Furthermore, there were more and more monsters running from afar to encircle them. It was as if they were in the middle of a sea of monsters, and in the sky were hordes of flying monsters. At the instant the Shell of Black Turtle cracked, they would definitely be drowned by the monsters.

How were they to escape and survive such a situation?

Dawn had clearly already considered how they could escape from the monsters while Shi Xiaobai was pondering over how they could escape the world. She directly told him what she thought.

"Later on, I'll use the power of my Sword Soul to forcefully open up a path. We shall use the opportunity to escape to the periphery of the encirclement at the fastest speed possible. Although the outer perimeter has many monsters as well, the periphery is more expansive. The monsters can't cover every inch of it. As long as we find a hole between their cracks, we can escape towards the exterior with flash motion. I believe that the closer we are to the periphery, the more cracks there will be."

Dawn said calmly, "In short, we should leave this place first. We

should reach a slightly safer spot before we consider how we can escape this world."

Shi Xiaobai was taken aback slightly as he pondered seriously over Dawn's method.

The interior was filled with monsters, but there was a wide area towards the exterior. There were indeed many empty spots in between the monsters, so if they were able to escape to the periphery, the chances of successfully escaping would be rather large.

However, in order to open up a path, Dawn had to use the power of her Sword Soul once again. Could she withstand the use of such tremendous power for three times in such a short period of time?

Most importantly, with the tiny bit of strength he had barely recovered, how long could he use 'Crab Steps'?

Shi Xiaobai pondered over the situation carefully as he gradually stood up from the ground. At the instant he stood up, his legs could not help but tremble. He immediately focused so as to not appear that weak.

Damn it, was that all the energy he could recover after such a long period of time?

Shi Xiaobai lamented over his situation. The side effects of using Excalibur while disregarding everything had far exceeded his

expectations. It was likely that he could not recover in a short period of time.

The situation that he was in right now was truly terrible. All he could do was use the remaining bit of energy to forcefully use Crab Steps. All he could do might be to run to the periphery, and when the time came, he would collapse out of exhaustion. The girl beside him might very well stop in order to save him.

He did not want to die there, but even more so, he did not want to implicate her.

Regardless of anything, at least she had to live on!

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai pretended to stay calm and said, "We shall act as you said, but after escaping their encirclement, we should separate. Two people is too big a target. It will be easier to break through alone. When we run outwards to a safe distance, we can meet up again."

Sorry, This King might not be able to fulfill the promise of 'meeting up'.

But even if you are alone, please live on as best as you can.

Shi Xiaobai sighed as he pretended to give a solemn expression that could not be refuted.

When Dawn heard that, she stood up in silence and walked

slowly towards him with a deadpan expression. That pair of ice-blue eyes was colder and more imposing than they ever were.

She slowly raised her hand and suddenly pushed him in the chest.

Shi Xiaobai, who had barely managed to stand up straight, was caught off guard as he fell straight to the ground.

Shi Xiaobai suffused a bitter smile. That girl was truly too smart to easily see through his thoughts.

"In your present state, you won't be able to run to the periphery alone."

Dawn squatted down and gave him a serious and solemn stare.

Shi Xiaobai immediately grinned and said, "Don't worry. This King is the King of kings after all. How can This King die here? As long as a tiny trick is used, these monsters can't do anything to This King. This King will definitely meet up with you in the periphery, so..."

"Lies!"

The girl's calm voice that was filled with rich hidden emotions, cut Shi Xiaobai off from continuing his lies.

She sighed and stretched out her hand. She gently touched Shi Xiaobai's face and said softly, "Do you know that surviving in a world alone is more terrifying than death?"

"Lies!"

The girl's calm voice that was filled with rich hidden emotions, cut Shi Xiaobai off from continuing his lies.

She sighed and stretched out her hand. She gently touched Shi Xiaobai's face and said softly, "Do you know that surviving in a world alone is more terrifying than death?"

The words that were filled with feelings seemed to conceal a hidden story. It caused Shi Xiaobai to face it in silence.

"Si..."

Suddenly, he felt pain in his cheeks as Shi Xiaobai jolted awake from the melancholic mood.

He saw Dawn pinching his cheeks forcefully and staring at him with her beautiful ice-blue eyes. Her voice had the tensions of a girl, "So, your suggestion of running separately has been rejected! If you want to run, we run together. If you you want to die, we die together! No more nonsense, or I'll really turn angry!"

Shi Xiaobai felt his heart turn warm as he felt touched. He was momentarily at a loss for words.

After a moment, he sighed and said seriously, "This King never easily gives up, but this time, This King does not know how long he can last as well. You should understand that by running together, This King will only implicate you..."

"Get on!"

Shi Xiaobai's sentence was interrupted midway.

"What?"

Shi Xiaobai looked up in astonishment and saw Dawn genuflecting with her back facing him. She was using a tone that left no room for doubt to say, "Get on, I'll carry you."

The shoulder frame that did not seem very broad and that slender figure accentuated her slim figure. With a firm tone, she said, "Get on, I'll carry you". It was like a pair of warm hands were tightly holding Shi Xiaobai's heart.

Shi Xiaobai fell into a prolonged silence before eventually shaking his head. He said in a resolute manner, "No, using the power of your Sword Soul for a third time would definitely have consumed a great deal of energy. You won't be able to last long carrying another person while running under such a situation. This will not be an implication but This King dragging you to die together. It's impossible for This King to do that."

Dawn gave a gentle smile and said, "Don't worry, my mental energies have fully recovered. Your tiny bit of weight would not affect me at all. Furthermore, if I carry you, the target is equivalent to being only one person. You would not need to worry about your weakness implicating me. Isn't this a method that kills two birds with one stone?"

"Lies."

Shi Xiaobai shook his head resolutely, "To carry a person under such a situation would definitely result in a very restricted situation when it comes to dodging. It will also greatly increase the expenditure of stamina. It will only exhaust you faster. This King definitely can't do that."

Dawn wiped the smile off her face slowly as she looked solemnly at Shi Xiaobai for a few seconds. She suddenly raised her hand and said, "If you don't climb on, I'll knock you unconscious and run with you on my back."

The overbearing tone and serious expression indicated that she was absolutely not joking.

Shi Xiaobai was left dumbfounded, but he knew very well that if Dawn wanted to knock him unconscious, he did not have any strength to resist her. Furthermore, resistance would only waste Dawn's stamina. He obviously would not do so.

However, wasn't it just making trouble for herself to carry an unconscious person while running in the horde of monsters?

No, she was being serious. She would really do that!

That was...really too unreasonable!

Shi Xiaobai felt his head ache. He could not think of a way to convince the adamant girl despite racking his brains.

At that moment, he suddenly felt his body seemingly turn weightless.

"Hey!?"

Shi Xiaobai was appalled. It turned out that the girl had given up on convincing him. She forcefully carried him.

Shi Xiaobai attempted to resist, but he immediately received a warning stare.

"Oh?"

Dawn stared at him with a sideways glance before she lightly waved her right hand.

Shi Xiaobai was left beyond tears and all he could do was quiet down. Dawn had suddenly become dictatorial because she was telling him that a war of words was useless. She was determined to carry him.

Shi Xiaobai finally gave up on resisting because it was better being conscious than being knocked out. If he was unconscious, there was really nothing he could do.

Rip!

At that moment, there was the sound of clothes tearing. Shi Xiaobai looked to his side and saw that the girl had tugged at her sleeve and torn a piece of fabric from it, exposing a tiny bit of her fair arm.

What was she doing?

After half a minute, the answer was revealed. He saw the girl tear out patches after patches of fabric before twisting them into a rope. After that, she looped the rope around her chest and his back, tying them tightly together.

She tightened the rope with a lot of strength. And even though it caused their bodies to stick closely together, she did not react to it. She did so only to ensure that the rope was tightened so that he would not fall off midway.

However, she was apparently worrying over something else. She suddenly said in a nonchalant tone, "If you forcefully escape the rope, I will immediately turn back and tie you back together."

Shi Xiaobai was left at a loss whether to laugh or to cry. The girl

could even read his mind of him choosing to sacrificing himself during moments of danger. Such a dictatorial method gave him no opportunities to reject her.

But such a high-handed action made Shi Xiaobai even more touched.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a long time before sighing gently. He slowly leaned his body down and wrapped his arms around the girl's white neck. He placed his head on her shoulder and although it was a very intimate posture, it could also save most of her strength.

He was out of options, so he could only choose to believe in her and do his best to recover his strength in the shortest amount of time for her.

However, what was going on was quite a normal cliché. Wasn't it supposed to be the boy domineeringly carrying the girl?

Why was it completely opposite when it came to them?

The script isn't right!

Shi Xiaobai had the rare feeling of being bashful and embarrassed.

However, he did not know that the girl that was carrying him was feeling even more bashful.

From the front, to which he could not see, Dawn had her head lowered. She was gently biting her lower lip as she was already blushing red. Light constantly shimmered in her eyes in a brilliant and attractive manner, with a hint of a young girl's charm in them.

In her bashfulness, there was a hint of sweetness, and the sweetness was intermixed with a hint of agony.

She was having mixed emotions, but she only had one thought.

Protect him!

Even at the cost of my life!

Dawn looked up at the Shell of Black Turtle that was about to shatter at any moment. Outside the shell, there were hordes of monsters that gnashed their teeth and brandished their claws. There were incessant roars that were filled with killing intent.

Even if death were to inundate the entire world, she would definitely open up a path to live on with him!

If this world did not have light, then...

"Hey, Shi Xiaobai, we have to live on. Because we agreed to proceed forward together..."

The girl held onto the boy's feet with one hand, while her other hand held the holy sword named Lucifer's Sword. She said gently, "proceed forward together...to the ends of the world!"

Chapter 461: Earthbound Yaksha

Three minutes!

A very long three minutes!

An excruciating three minutes!

To Field Marshal Awesomo, that was the most painful three minutes of his life.

That was the first time he had a true understanding how important air was to life. It was also the first time he realized how excruciating it was to not be able to breathe.

But, apparently, all of that was too late. Even though he used all his strength, it was insufficient to break the spatial barrier. The silver-haired demoness's magic was redoubtable and she seemed to have undying will. All of that made him feel a deep sense of despair.

Slowly, his consciousness began to fade away. He knew that the moment he fainted, it would be the end of him. His long life that had spanned ten thousand years would finally come to a close.

He had lived for too long and had long forgotten death. But at that moment, he finally recalled of the horror of being at the mercy of Death.

At the cost of being trapped in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental World, he had obtained near eternal life, so he did not want to die, no matter the cost!

But the more he resisted death, the more he feared it. Fear made Field Marshal Awesomo begin to wail hysterically. However, without any air to propagate sound, he could not even voice it out.

The remaining essence of his life was beginning to flow away like sand.

Extreme fear made him feel extreme hate.

He hated the Daoist that forced him into the despairing situation. He hated that azure-dressed girl who had beaten him so badly that he could not fight back. He hated that silver-haired demoness that enclosed his hope in a separate dimension!

At the same time, he hated that Excellency that had sealed his strength 'to make the game more interesting'.

He felt hate, but he had a tiny shred of an extravagant wish.

Would that Excellency save him?

Even though he was already a failed toy, would the Excellency have a guilty conscience considering how he had acted dutifully for ten thousand years?

No, how could the Excellency have any heart?

Extravagant hopes and despair interweaved in his heart as his consciousness and hope slowly extinguished as he struggled helplessly.

...

"Is it finally going to end?"

Liu Yu wiped the cold sweat from his nervous face. Field Marshal Awesomo was already sprawled on the ground and did not even have the strength to move. Everything had happened as Liu Yu planned, but he did not dare to heave a sigh of relief.

They could not relax until Shi Xiaobai was rescued and Field Marshal Awesomo was completely dead.

However, the most worrisome matters typically were the easiest to happen.

Just as Field Marshal Awesomo was about to close his eyes, a black shadow descended from the sky. A black beam with an ice-cold luster flashed across like a steel string, cleaving the solid spatial barrier into two instantly. Field Marshal Awesomo's body was also taken out of the vacuum zone at the next moment.

The sudden turn of events gave the nervous group a shock. They immediately cast their gazes over.

The black shadow was extremely fast. In a few seconds, it had brought Field Marshal Awesomo to the boundary of the basin. When it stopped, Field Marshal Awesomo, who had been thrown behind it, was gasping for the air that he had yearned for. It was like a dried fish had finally returned to the ocean.

On second look, the black shadow looked truly terrifying. It was taller and bigger in size than Field Marshal Awesomo. Its hair was burning with green flames and it was dozens of feet tall. It was burning like a candle.

One of its eyes was at the top of its head, and another was found on its chin. They were of different shapes, with some triangular and some crescent-shaped.

Its nose had nostrils like the eyes of a snail. They protruded and retracted from time to time, with one facing to the sky and one facing to the ground.

One of its ears grew in front while another grew behind. Their shapes were horrifying.

Its skin exuded a strange grayness, making it appear very striking in daytime. Its right hand held a samurai sword that was completely black as it exuded an appalling aura.

Everyone turned alert. From the way it had slashed apart the spatial barrier in one strike and the speed it demonstrated, the ugly monster was definitely very powerful.

"Who are you?" Liu Yu questioned very directly.

"Thou shalt knoweth me as Earthbound Yaksha."

The ugly monster did not plan on concealing his identity at all. With a hoarse and piercing voice, it said, "Thou shalt knoweth that standing before thee is the Level Lord of the eighth level who was ordered to save this trash, and slaughter thee. Thou shalt knoweth that my strength is at maximum capacity. There is no need for thee to struggle."

Everyone was alarmed.

The ugly monster was actually the Level Lord of the eighth level, named Earthbound Yaksha?

How did the eighth level's Level Lord come to the world of the seventh level? Wasn't this in violation of the assessment program's defined rules?

But no, if the mastermind behind this was the assessment program, it was only natural that it could change it as it wished.

And from the power it revealed, it did not seem to be bluffing.

Could it be as it said that it was the Level Lord at full strength?

If that was the case, wouldn't the sudden appearance of this character be too troublesome!?

Everyone turned secretly anxious as they clenched the weapons in their hands to prepare for battle.

"Hahaha...has the Excellency finally decided to end this meaningless game?"

Field Marshal Awesomo laughed maniacally. He felt more hateful after surviving the calamity. However, he first coldly looked at Earthbound Yaksha that had termed him 'this trash'. He said in a deep voice, "You deliberately waited till This Field Marshal was about to die before you appeared. Was it the Excellency's intentions or yours?"

Earthbound Yaksha turned its head with a stare and said calmly, "Obviously it is not of mine own intention. If 't be true not, thine complete death would mark the appearance of me. To what end is there to keepeth trash like thee?"

Field Marshal Awesomo thundered angrily, "Fool, if This Field Marshal was at his full strength, you wouldn't be able to put up a fight at all!"

Earthbound Yaksha chuckled coldly as it said, "Thou art living in

dreams."

Field Marshal Awesomo stared angrily at the Yaksha's back, but he knew that he needed its protection. It went to great effort to snuff out his flames of anger, but immediately directed the hatred away. He said in a deep voice, "Earthbound Yaksha, do not harm those humans. They are not to die so easily. This Field Marshal will let them have a taste of the agony of hell! Count it as if This Field Marshal owes you one."

Earthbound Yaksha gave Field Marshal Awesomo a penetrating look and said with a chuckle, "What thou owe is useless, but better than nothing it is not. The group shalt art spared as thee please."

The two Level Lords exchanged biting remarks as though there was no one else. They did not think anything of the seven trial-takers present.

Sunless finally lost her patience. Although she could directly sense that overwhelming power exuded by the Earthbound Yaksha was much higher than Field Marshal Awesomo, she knew she could not act hastily. Only by cooperating with the rest would their chances of victory be higher. However, she really could not wait any longer.

The moment she thought of Shi Xiaobai in danger, she did not wish to wait another second longer.

When her calmness reached its limit, her reason collapsed as a result. With sword clenched, Sunless took a step forward.

But at that moment, a voice that had been silent for a long while suddenly sounded.

"Sunless, wait a moment first."

The voice immediately attracted everyone's attention, while Sunless subconsciously turned her head over.

She saw Speechless walking slowly over.

Mu Yuesheng immediately used Lightning Flashstep to come to his side. After a careful check, she realized that the wound on Speechless's left chest had basically been healed. She could not help but smack her lips and say, "It's completely healed!"

Liu Yu said in astonishment, "Isn't that recovery rate of yours way too astounding?"

In the distance, Pulp Farmer's eyes were filled with admiration. He was the only one who knew how Speechless was able to quickly recover from his wounds. More impressive than his recovery rate was his ability to endure excruciating pain.

The scene of Speechless mangling his wounds while remaining nonchalant had been drilled into Pulp Farmer's mind.

Sunless was also somewhat astonished, but she did not have any

time to care about that. She used a curious glance to inquire Speechless why she had to wait.

Speechless also guessed that Sunless was extremely anxious, so he did not keep her in suspense. As he walked over, he said, "Now, the most important thing is to kill Field Marshal Awesomo and rescue Shi Xiaobai. We no longer have time to beat or kill Earthbound Yaksha. Now the best method is for you to wait by the side. The six of us will do our best to hold back Earthbound Yaksha. Grab an opportunity and directly murder Field Marshal Awesomo."

"I know you are in a hurry, but you are the one with the highest chances of killing Field Marshal Awesomo among the seven of us. My strength might be higher than yours, but in terms of damage and burst of strength, I'm inferior to you. So, you have to wait patiently. Wait till we are able to hold back Earthbound Yaksha before striking. The outcome will depend on that."

Sunless remained silent for a moment as the momentary return of her reason told her that Speechless's method was correct. She nodded and turned around to retreat to a spot far away from the rest. She held her sword in wait. Her sharp eyes made her seem like she was a leopard that would pounce at any time.

A cold smile suffused across Earthbound Yaksha lips. The few humans had brazenly revealed their strategy and that act was completely ignoring its existence.

Thou shalt attempt holding me back?

Nothing more than a bunch of naive daws.

Fine, I doth not mind letting them has't a taste of the cruelty of despair.

Speechless was always a person of action. He immediately demonstrated the executive power of his decision. After explaining his plan to Sunless in front of everyone, he did not waste a single second. The strolling suddenly came to an end as he burst forward and charged at Earthbound Yaksha. He was like a crouching tiger that had suddenly pounced.

"Pulp Farmer, Feng Yuanlin, triangular formation, seal its movements with This Emperor!"

"Mu Yuesheng, Liu Yu, long-range suppression!"

"Mu Lengxi, Spatial Transference, target it on Field Marshal Awesomo!"

Speechless shouted as he ran, and finished his battle strategy assignments at the fastest possible speed.

The six people whose names were shouted immediately did the corresponding actions. Speechless was always considered by the masses as the 'number one youth in China'. There was no one below the age of sixteen in China whose fame could compare with his. And what resulted in his fame was his unparalleled talent.

Four years ago, he had represented China to take part in the once-every-four-years World Hero Tournament (Youth Division). He had fought all the geniuses in the world below the age of sixteen. Back then, he was only ten years old, and his cultivation realm was only at the Psionic Mortal Realm. Yet, he had managed to enter the round of eight, stunning the world.

As the rookies knew this, none of them hesitated at executing Speechless's orders.

Pulp Farmer charged from the left with spear in hand. Feng Yuanlin raised a gigantic shield and bashed from the right. Speechless charged straight in front of Earthbound Yaksha. The triangular spots they were standing in closed in on Earthbound Yaksha, forming a complete seal with the basin's cliff walls.

Mu Yuesheng placed her hands to the ground as ice-blue lightning bolts sizzled. Two bolts as big as vines meandered through the ground like snakes. They bit at Earthbound Yaksha's feet from a hidden angle.

Liu Yu threw his few remaining paper talismans and quickly chanted a few incantations. Translucent chains began to emerge out of the paper talismans, and on the end of the chains were sharp hooks that flailed towards the Earthbound Yaksha's limbs.

Mu Lengxi flipped through her ancient spellbook and focused to release her magic. Although the spells she conjured did not need any chanting, a spell like Spatial Transference that bordered on forbidden magic still needed a period of time to accumulate her mana. The spellbook glowed with intensity, changing from weak

to strong. Elemental magic began to tremble as they formed spatial power.

Sunless waited a distance away while gathering her strength. After listening to Speechless's battle assignments, she had understood his plan. If nothing went wrong, Mu Lengxi would use Spatial Transference to move Field Marshal Awesomo, who was hiding behind Earthbound Yaksha, near her. The Speechless trio would seal off Earthbound Yaksha's route of escape, while Mu Yuesheng and Liu Yu would hold Earthbound Yaksha back from a distance, giving her ample time.

It was unknown how long they could hold Earthbound Yaksha back, and what she could do was to do her best to kill Field Marshal Awesomo in the shortest amount of time when he was teleported to her.

This was very likely their last chance.

Sunless held her breath as she clenched her sword tightly.

Earthbound Yaksha squinted its scarlet eyes and glanced scornfully at the group. A teasing smile suffused across its lips.

Thee bethink it's a perfect plan?

But foolish humans, thee has't mistaken something.

"Doth thee not knoweth I am the Earthbound Yaksha?"

The Earthbound Yaksha sneered as it slowly raised the black samurai sword in its hand.

"Vaiśravaṇa Heavenly Slash!"

It lifted its hand and fell its blade. It looked like a slice from top to bottom, but six cold black blade beams slashed out in different directions simultaneously.

In addition, when the Earthbound Yaksha raised its black blade, a force that caused the hearts to palpitate filled the area. It caused the group to feel their souls tremble as their bodies turned stiff. They were instantly unable to move.

The six black blade beams flashed over as the situation instantly reversed.

Pulp Farmer's chest armor was slashed into two as he flew backwards while spewing boiling blood.

Feng Yuanlin's gigantic shield was shattered as a deep wound was slashed on his shoulder. He nearly lost his entire arm.

The paper talismans floating in the air were diced to pieces by the blade beam causing Liu Yu to suffer a backlash. He coughed out blood as he knelt to the ground.

As for the lightning bolts that were winding through the ground, they were cleaved apart by the blade beams that fell from the sky. The blade beams traced the lightning bolts back to Mu Yuesheng. Thankfully, she severed her output in time and prevented her organs from suffering severe damage. However, she was instantly left seriously injured by forcefully severing her attack.

Mu Lengxi was fine as she managed to conjure an ice shield to withstand the blade beam, but the ice shield had been conjured in a rush, so it was unable to fully withstand the blade beam. The remaining blade beam slashed through the spellbook in her hands.

Speechless used 'Mirror Replication' and forcefully produced 'Vaiśravaṇa Heavenly Slash' with a samurai sword he produced using psionic power. However, all he managed was to stop the blade beam that was heading straight for him.

With a single slash of its blade, Earthbound Yaksha had injured four of them and torn up the spellbook. It was equivalent to five of them losing their ability to do battle. Only Speechless could still continue to do battle.

Earthbound Yaksha said with a sneer, "All of thee has't underestimated mine own power."

No matter how perfect a plan was, it was useless against the huge gap separating them from absolute strength.

Speechless could not help but clench his fist. He had indeed underestimated Earthbound Yaksha's strength, but it was not

because of the strike called 'Vaiśravaṇa Heavenly Slash', but the 'Soul Suppression' the Earthbound Yaksha had dealt to them before it struck.

That intimidating instant was what determined the outcome.

In the psionic cultivation realms, only entities with cultivation at the Psionic Might Realm could deliver 'Soul Suppression'. Although the Earthbound Yaksha's power did not come from psionic power, it was possible to estimate that its strength was above the Psionic Might Realm at the very least.

Psionic Mortal Realm, Psionic Soul Realm, Psionic Might Realm. Their cultivation levels were two full realms away from Earthbound Yaksha's!

Speechless had a certain amount of immunity when it came to 'Soul Suppression', because he had undergone training to resist 'Soul Suppression' from a young age. It was termed 'resistance training', and he had long imbued the 'resistance' into his being.

But the rest likely had not experienced any strict form of 'resistance training'. Their ability to resist stem purely from their personal willpower. The more resolute one's willpower was, the less influence 'Soul Suppression' had on them.

From the looks of it, Mu Yuesheng, Pulp Farmer, Liu Yu, and Feng Yuanlin were unable to resist 'Soul Suppression'. Although they were only momentarily suppressed, it was deadly enough. If Earthbound Yaksha had not fulfilled his promise to Field Marshal

Awesomo and spared their lives, they would probably already be dead.

Mu Lengxi had barely managed to withstand the 'Soul Suppression', and was able to conjure an ice shield to defend, but she was unable to change the outcome of her spellbook being destroyed.

From the looks of it, even if the five of them did not lose their ability to do combat, they would be useless in the battle if they could not withstand 'Soul Suppression'.

Therefore, this battle was a solo duel for the only person who could withstand the 'Soul Suppression'—Speechless.

No, that's not right. There was another person.

Speechless glanced at Sunless, who was in the distance.

She looked like she was eager to strike, and with her close to madness willpower, it was unlikely for her to succumb to 'Soul Suppression', right?

However, was it really good to let her join the battle?

The most important thing to do now was not to defeat Earthbound Yaksha but to kill Field Marshal Awesomo to save Shi Xiaobai!

The plan could not change, so he could only hold back Earthbound Yaksha himself!

Speechless decided firmly on the spot as he charged at Earthbound Yaksha once again. At the same time, he shouted at Sunless, "Sunless, try finding an opportunity from the side. Remember, your goal is Field Marshal Awesomo! Leave Earthbound Yaksha to me. You just need to think of ways to kill Field Marshal Awesomo!"

Sunless nodded and expressed her agreement to his proposal.

Earthbound Yaksha responded with a sneer, "What's the point of struggling?"

Struggle?

A cold smile suffused in Speechless's heart.

Arrogance was a fatal weakness. People who belittled others would typically pay a terrible price.

As he was blessed by God, he possessed the most outstanding human genes. He had awakened his S-class superpower—'Mirror Replication'.

'Mirror Replication' had several usage limitations.

First, 'Mirror Replication' was automatically triggered. When someone near him used a move, the move would be automatically replicated and stored.

Second, 'Mirror Replication' could only store ten moves. When the eleventh move was stored, the first move would be deleted.

Third, the storage time of 'Mirror Replication' only lasted an hour. The move would be deleted after an hour.

Fourth, moves that surpassed his own strength could not be replicated.

Although there were many limitations, the usage effects were extremely monstrous. It perfectly matched the evaluation of a 'S-class' superpower. And its effects were—zero energy consumption, zero cost, perfectly stored moves.

The concept of perfect replication lay in delay time, duration, released strength, and various other aspects. However, Dawn had previously spotted certain flaws in it, proving that it was not perfect replication. It actually had very minute differences.

Despite the many limitations and flaws, Speechless's superpower still allowed him to have inestimable upper limits to his strength.

Although Mu Lengxi and company had their attacks interrupted, thankfully, his automatic replication was triggered, so he had

stored ten mirrored moves.

Therefore, he alone was able to complete a plan that needed six people!

Speechless charged straight at Earthbound Yaksha and used familiar psionic conjuration to construct a psionic samurai sword. His first blade he slashed out was 'Vaiśravaṇa Heavenly Slash'!

A look of surprise flashed in Earthbound Yaksha's eyes. It never expected that the human was able to ignore its 'Soul Suppression', and was able to slash out a 'Vaiśravaṇa Heavenly Slash' that was extremely close in strength as the one it could produce. However, it faced the attack in a composed manner. It easily shattered the black blade beam as though it was teasing its prey.

At that moment, Speechless suddenly leaped high into the sky and used psionic power to give him a forward burst. He stayed in mid-air for a few seconds as he quickly chanted, "Vileness Begone From the Heaven and Earth, Mysteries and Gods Encaved in Unfathomable Profoundness, Imbue Me with World Power of the Highest Order, Announcing to the Nine Heavens, Inviting the Purifying Generals and Ambassadors, The Slaying of Demons, A Sending for Myriad Souls..."

In the short period of time taken to chant, he was able to construct more than a hundred psionic talismans with the stored memories of 'Mirror Replication'. At the final instance of his chant, he scattered the talismans into the sky.

"Incantation for Purifying the Heaven and the Earth!"

A divine white light fell from the sky and shot straight at Earthbound Yaksha.

Liu Yu stared in disbelief.

However, Earthbound Yaksha only sneered, "Trivial tricks!"

Following that, it swept its blade towards the sky. Black smoke that billowed immediately devoured the holy light.

But at the same time, Speechless had already landed. When he stepped on the ground, two bolts of lightning meandered straight at Earthbound Yaksha's feet like snakes.

"Daw!"

Earthbound Yaksha shook its head in a mocking fashion. It suavely slashed towards the ground, producing a fine crack. When the bolts struck the crack, they turned to smoke with a sizzle, but lost all momentum to proceed forward.

However, at that split instant, it was unknown when Speechless managed to traverse more than a kilometer. With psionic spear in hand, he thrust it at Earthbound Yaksha.

"Courting death?"

Earthbound Yaksha finally lost its patience as it raised its blade. It was prepared to slice the charging human that did not cherish his life into two. However, just as it raised its blade, it keenly felt something strange.

A sneer suffused across Speechless's lips. At the moment Earthbound Yaksha was not paying attention to its back, a six-pointed star nexus had already lit up with a gorgeous brilliance.

Charging head on with a spear was just a trick to divert Earthbound Yaksha's attention. His only target from the very beginning was to use 'Spatial Transference' to move the hiding Field Marshal Awesomo near Sunless!

"It all depends on you! Sunless!"

Speechless roared in his heart!

However, just as he believed his plans had succeeded, he saw Earthbound Yaksha suddenly turn its torso around and stab the ground behind it. It exposed its waist completely to his spear.

"What!?"

Speechless did not expect Earthbound Yaksha to so quickly notice his goal, much less expect that it would make such a choice.

Did it completely turn a blind eye to the damage he could cause?

Foolish creature, you shall pay the price for your arrogance!

Speechless thundered angrily as a cold beam preceded before his spear thrust forward like a dragon. It stabbed straight into Earthbound Yaksha's waist, but when it hit its mark, it felt like it had stabbed straight into a mud pool. The spear had been devoured by Earthbound Yaksha's body!

At the same time, Earthbound Yaksha's black blade had ruptured the six-pointed star array, forcefully ending the channeling of 'Spatial Transference'.

"Knowest thou not this? Feeble human!

Earthbound Yaksha sneered as it turned back and slashed 'Vaiśravaṇa Heavenly Slash'!

Speechless hurriedly retreated but due to the close distance, he was injured by the blade beam despite managing to partially dodge it. The already injured him immediately turned pale as he knelt to the ground.

So close. Success was so close.

But he had ultimately failed.

He never expected that the Earthbound Yaksha could keenly smell the scent of magic, much less expect that its body could turn around in such a freakish manner.

"As a Yaksha, evil spirits from hell art extremely comptible to magical elements. It is unfortunate. Thou art clever, but thee hadst hath used a wrong strategy."

Earthbound Yaksha sneered as it raised its blade at Speechless, "Thou art the most dangerous, so it's most important that thee kicketh the bucket."

Earthbound Yaksha had identified Speechless as the greatest threat and it had decided not to spare his life.

From afar, Sunless sighed as she walked towards Earthbound Yaksha with her sword raised.

Although Speechless had failed, wasting a great deal of her time, the kind her was not one to leave him in the lurch.

However, in the end, it required Earthbound Yaksha to be defeated before Field Marshal Awesomo could be killed.

In the end, she still had to battle alone.

In the end, she still could only trust herself.

Sunless felt somewhat disappointed.

Earthbound Yaksha glanced at Sunless as a light smile suffused across its lips. From the looks of it, the game was about to end. Its appearance had completely broken the balance of the game. It only wished that the last toy was able to struggle a little longer. But before that, it needed to dice up the youth that had nearly embarrassed it.

Earthbound Yaksha raised its blade slowly and was about to let it fall.

Speechless knelt on the ground while holding his chest. His face was pale and his gaze looked clouded. He did not seem like he had any strength left for resisting.

The other injured ones limped over, but the moment they made contact with the formless 'Soul Suppression', their already weakened bodies were left rooted to the ground.

The fog of despair had already covered the heavens.

Who could save this battle situation of defeat?

"Lalalalalalala..."

A hymn of 'lalala' suddenly sounded.

At the moment the song sounded, a miracle happened.

Chapter 462: Proclaiming Loudly To The Sky

At the instant the Shell of the Black Turtle shattered, Dawn slashed out the Sword Soul she had readied.

This time, Shi Xiaobai managed to appreciate the immensity of the Sword Soul from close proximity. He could not help but feel a longing for this third realm of sword techniques.

The moment the Sword Soul landed, white light immediately filled the world in front of them. Tragic wails resounded through the clouds but it only lasted for a moment. The might of the strike had vanquished at least a hundred monsters, while a path had been blasted forcefully from the interior zone.

Logically speaking, the power of the Sword Soul should have consumed a great deal of Dawn's mental energy, but it did not stop her from immediately charging out after the slash.

As the opening she had forcefully blasted open would very quickly be filled by the surviving monsters, every second was crucial. Every second determined the outcome of their survival.

Dawn's flash motion technique focused on speed, and when compared to Shi Xiaobai's Crab Steps, its dodging ability was slightly inferior, but its speed was clearly much faster. And even more remarkable was that instantaneous burst of speed she could muster. Its impressiveness took Shi Xiaobai's breath away.

Even though she was carrying him, Dawn was able to rush out to the periphery of the encirclement in the blink of an eye. The surrounding monsters did not even manage to react in time.

Shi Xiaobai finally understood why the gargantuan had been beheaded in one strike. Other than underestimating the amount of power Dawn's strike had, a very important reason was that her instantaneous burst of speed was just too sudden.

However, rushing to the periphery of the encirclement did not indicate their safety. It only meant the beginning of their escape.

As the white light dissipated, the monsters began to react. The monsters in the inner ring immediately surrounded them from the back, while the monsters in the periphery roared while attacking them from the front. The monsters that were circling the skies charged down as they issued sharp screeches.

The monsters inundated them from every direction like a flood. Their overwhelming killing intent seemed to signify the apocalypse.

However, Dawn demonstrated her stunning strength and state of mind at that instant. Her extreme calmness prevented the threat of death from binding her. Amid the densely-packed monsters, she would keenly detect the fleeting cracks in between the monsters. Finally, with a tremendous burst of speed, she would tunnel through them.

If she were to encounter a monster blockade that had monsters being shoulder to shoulder, she would determine the weakest point of the blockade in the shortest possible amount of time and use the power of her Sword Truth to break through the blockade.

And what impressed Shi Xiaobai the most was how she would ingeniously use the monsters she attracted as meat shields against the black beams of light that she was dodging. It sounded simple, but it needed massive amounts of observational and improvisational abilities.

This girl, who grew up to become the Hero King, had been deemed to be the strongest person in all of human history. She had perfectly demonstrated the outstanding comprehensive qualities she possessed—fast speeds, impressive bursts of power, mental state of mind that were nearly nonhuman, accurate judgment, excellent observational skills and improvisation.

So despite carrying a person, it was because of all these qualities combined that allowed her to dart through the monsters that filled the world like there were none at all. At a stable pace, she proceeded towards the periphery where there were fewer and fewer monsters grouped together. Gradually, she pulled a gap between the monsters that were in hot pursuit.

Shi Xiaobai was able to acutely sense how powerful she was by being carried by her. He was secretly awed by her. Although he had once traversed a sea of demonic beasts, he had used the dodging and confusing traits of Crab Steps to make his breakthrough. Furthermore, he had used wine with aphrodisiac to cause confusion by making the demonic beasts to go into heat. As for

Dawn's method of progress, it was as smooth as flowing water. She was like a sharp sword that tore straight through the encirclement of the monsters.

All Shi Xiaobai could do was try his best to lower his body and ensure that he would not affect the girl under him. Then, he would silently shout the numeric thumbs up, '666'.

Due to Dawn's excellent performance, the escape process became surprisingly successful. They quickly penetrated the most densely-packed interior and middle regions and came to the periphery where the monsters were relatively scattered apart. However, the monsters in front of them did not seem to have an end. After passing batch after batch of monsters, they failed to see an end to it. It was as if the entire world was filled with monsters that were gathering towards them.

There was a steady flow of monsters streaming in front of them while there were monsters in hot pursuit behind them. There was no time for her to rest.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but worry over the girl's stamina as he whispered, "Put This King down. The periphery is already safe enough. This King will be fine alone."

"There's no need."

Dawn responded in a firm manner, "If you are worried about my stamina, your concern is unnecessary. This bit of expenditure is nothing to me. Your weight does not have any effect on me. The

problem you worried about in the beginning about dodging has been resolved. If the inner circle failed to stop me, there is no need to worry about the periphery. If you find it embarrassing to be carried by a girl, why don't...you carry me the next time?"

Dawn's voice sounded more energetic and bright than Shi Xiaobai had expected. She did not sound exhausted at all and it made Shi Xiaobai heave a sigh of relief. From the looks of it, he had underestimated Dawn's stamina and endurance. Maybe carrying him really did not affect her much.

Shi Xiaobai decided to abide to her decision this time. He said, "This King will abide to your decisions for now, but try not to force it. If you are tired, honestly tell This King. This King's strength is about to recover as well. When the time comes, let This King carry you instead."

"Alright!"

Dawn responded with a clear sense of joy in her voice.

"It's so boring. Shall we chat?"

Suddenly, she turned her head and said a single sentence. Although she turned her head back the next second, Shi Xiaobai had managed to see the yearning in her bright ice-blue eyes.

"Won't it distract you?"

Shi Xiaobai inquired softly. Having a chat in a land fraught with dangers would be considered quite an oddity, but Shi Xiaobai did not mind. However, he was a bit worried that it would affect the girl who needed to focus to dodge the monsters and the black beams.

"Of course not. Although I'm unable to triple-task like you, I'm still able to dual-task. If you keep looking down on me, I'll turn angry. Let me ask you again, do you want to chat or not?"

Probably because they were getting more familiar, Dawn began to demonstrate the feminine side of hers to Shi Xiaobai. Her tone had a little emotion in it, and a little willfulness, but it was mostly the coquettishness of a girl.

Shi Xiaobai naturally did not reject her as he said with a nod, "Alright, what do we chat about?"

Dawn pondered for a moment and said, "Actually, I always wanted to know what is the name of the final strike you produced during that battle with me?"

Shi Xiaobai faltered for a moment.

The final strike during the battle?

Wasn't that Excalibur?

Come to speak of it, the strike's appearance and name were an

imitation of the blond woman's slash with Lucifer's Sword in his mind. And that blond woman was the grown up Dawn Li.

The feeling was somewhat strange when the creator asked about the sword technique he imitated.

However, it was clear that Dawn at her present age had yet to create the real 'Excalibur'. This strike was still a strange and mysterious one to her.

Just as Shi Xiaobai was hesitating to reply, he heard the girl mutter, as though she was in reverie, "That strike was really pretty..."

It looked like she really liked that strike.

Shi Xiaobai chuckled to himself and said, "That strike's name is 'Excalibur'. The meaning behind it is to 'use every bit of strength to produce the final strike that would clinch victory'. The general principle is..."

Shi Xiaobai unreservedly described his understanding of 'Excalibur' to her. Dawn listened in relish and quickly understood Shi Xiaobai's thoughts. She even began giving her own suggestions.

The clever girl was no doubt a sword genius who had created the 'Three Thousand Li Sword' at the age of eight and the improved version of the 'Hundred-eighty Thousand Li Sword' at the age of

nine. Her understanding of swords was much higher than Shi Xiaobai's, so she immediately pointed out several flaws of Shi Xiaobai's Excalibur as well as where it could be improved.

Using Shi Xiaobai's line of thought when he created Excalibur as the foundation, Dawn was able to constantly add her own ideas to it, making the technique approach perfection.

Shi Xiaobai was left in shock. His ability to comprehend was equally stunning, but he lacked the relevant knowledge when it came to sword techniques. With Dawn pointing it out, he immediately understood how his Excalibur was indeed a flawed copy.

But, the chance of perfecting it was right in front of him!

Shi Xiaobai was also not one who would resign to playing second fiddle. As he listened to her suggestions, he began retorting the mistakes Dawn had pointed out in a logical manner. At times, he would leave Dawn at a loss for words. The two of them seemed like they were working together to improve the technique, but they also looked like they were engaging in an intense debate.

"It may be so, but you are too adamant when it comes to the pursuit of power. It makes it overly perilous.

"It's indeed perilous, but This King believes it's the final strike, so peril doesn't matter."

"In short, why should it be the final strike?"

"A last-ditch effort can raise your courage to its limit, but Excalibur does not only have one goal. Most of it is will, the will to attempt a desperate final attempt just for victory."

"Although it's great to use all your strength for victory, a method that does not allow any leeway for defeat would appear too stiff and inflexible, if you were to use all your strength every time. I believe that a sword technique with a multitude of transformations while it being a combination of forcefulness and yielding is necessary."

"Yes...what you say makes sense. Indeed, transformations with a combination of forcefulness and yielding will be more flexible. However, a sword technique with extreme might should not be abandoned. It is critical for the reversal of a dangerous situation. It looks like there is a need to seriously consider the trade-offs between forcefulness and yielding."

"That point needs to be perfected in actual combat through trial and error. Let us discuss the next problem. The theory behind the compression of energy actually has its limitations. As the limit to the amount of energy compressed depends on the sword's hardness, not everyone would have a holy sword like Lucifer's Sword. We can't guarantee that we won't be disarmed or have the holy sword snatched, so there is still room for improvement for the usage of Excalibur."

"What about changing the conduit's energy node?"

"That's not a simple matter. It requires further research."

"Compared to the limitations of the sword, This King is more concerned about the speed at which energy can be compressed, as well as letting different energies merged together perfectly."

"Hey, aren't you being too greedy? This sort of problem is not one that can be solved overnight!"

"It's because it can't be resolved that's why we need to discuss it, isn't that so?"

"Well, that makes sense. Then let's continue discussing..."

"..."

The boy and girl ignored the monsters that were everywhere. They treated the roars and yelling around them as thrilling background music as they engaged in an intense debate regarding 'Excalibur'.

With the passage of time, they gradually managed to perfect 'Excalibur' to as far as it could go from theorizing. Although there were still many problems that could not be discussed, they had already enhanced 'Excalibur' by several stages. Furthermore, they had determined the basic direction in which it could be enhanced.

Shi Xiaobai was extremely excited to the point of him forgetting that he was being pursued by monsters and that he was in a world fraught with danger at every turn.

It was probably because of the vigor that filled Dawn's voice and how she did not seem exhausted in any way. Furthermore, her footwork was getting smoother and more natural, as if she was as light as a feather. This finally relieved Shi Xiaobai.

He was planning on forcefully changing the setup they were in at the moment Dawn showed any signs of fatigue. He would flip around, and carry her on his back, as the proper script would go.

But from the looks of it, Dawn's stamina and endurance had really far exceeded his imagination. She did not seem affected at all despite running while dodging constantly for more than ten minutes.

As she promised, she could last a very long while.

If this world truly had an end, they might very well be able to reach the ends of the world.

After the end of the discussion, Dawn said softly, "Although I'm a bit unwilling to admit it, your 'Excalibur' is the most beautiful sword technique with the most possibilities. I look forward to its future."

Her voice exuded anticipation, but she was feeling a bit bitter as

she probably realized that she no longer had a chance to see the boy she liked very much to produce Excalibur again.

When Shi Xiaobai heard that, he shook his head and said, "You are wrong. This is not This King's Excalibur, but...our Excalibur!"

Dawn's eyes widened as she could not help but ruminate over the words that made her heart stop.

"Our..."

Really?

Is that really so?

She had already left traces of herself in that technique?

That technique was one they possessed together. Furthermore, it was a sword technique that only the two of them had.

Then, when he produced that technique, would there be an instant when he would recall her name, and think of how she had once existed in his life?

At that moment, the girl could not help but laugh. Her laughter was as melodious as a wind chime. It sounded like heavenly bells ringing amid the monsters' roars.

Then, without the need to muster her courage, the girl shouted out to the sky in a very natural manner.

"Shi Xiaobai!"

"I like you!"

A direct confession which was filled with deep emotions was mostly pure and innocent. It was a part of her heart that she had never revealed to anyone. She finally took the first brave step of revealing the purest and most real emotions of a young girl.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat dumbfounded, but he could not help but feel happiness from the bottom of his heart.

Shi Xiaobai had received three confessions in the past. The first time was when a school belle who he did not know very well suddenly confessed to him before he crossed worlds. Back then, he was somewhat confused and did not think too much about it.

The second time was when facing Sen Senyuan's Demon Calamity Gun. The heavily injured Sunless stood by his side and whispered "Like" to him. Back then, he was extremely touched. It reaffirmed his intentions of protecting her, but he did not plan on responding to her affections.

But this time, Dawn's proclamation was still echoing in the sky. Even though it was drowned by the din of roars, he simultaneously felt a joy and horror from the bottom of his heart.

He knew that he could not face it in silence this time!

He had to respond!

That was because the monsters that surrounded them could tear them apart at any time. And she was still running towards the ends of the world that might not exist.

She had given all that was beautiful and happy to him, so how could he be so cruel as to remain silent?

However, just as Shi Xiaobai opened his mouth and was about to respond, he heard a soft voice enter his ear like a gentle breeze.

"Promise me, you must live on."

Shi Xiaobai felt like he was struck by lightning as a strong sense of foreboding filled his heart.

"Slam!"

Just as he feared, the girl's running posture collapsed finally when she said her last sentence. Her momentum caused her to slam to the ground ahead of her.

Shi Xiaobai, who was pressing down on the girl, was immediately consumed by horror. He called out the girl's name as he turned the

girl's head.

He saw that beautiful face that was filled with fatigue. Her eyes were tightly closed and her eyebrows were deeply knitted. Her nose was moving slightly as she maintained a very weak breathing.

The girl had fainted.

Just a second ago, the voice was still filled with vigor and it did not show any signs of fatigue. Nothing seemed amiss about the girl that was running at full speed forward. But now, she had fainted and she looked completely exhausted.

Shi Xiaobai's pupils dilated as hot tears streamed down his cheeks.

Fool!

Idiot!

Her energetic and relaxed behavior of her not looking exhausted at all was all faked. It was just to make you feel at ease.

Why did you not notice it at all?

After having used the power of her Sword Soul for three consecutive times, her mental energies were definitely nearly drained. To focus her mental energies, observation, judgment and

improvisation for such a long period of time, to the point of dual-tasking, don't you know how much mental energy was consumed?

Why didn't you think of such a simple logic!?

It was unknown when she had reached her tipping point, but she had forcefully pretended to appear relaxed. Do you understand how much pain she had endured?

Why did you not realize your stupidity until the moment she collapsed?

Even the strong and determined Shi Xiaobai had his weak moments. At that moment, his reason was shattered by the girl's sentiment. He fell into an abyss of remorse. His heart was in pain.

"Promise me, you must live on."

Suddenly, that voice that was more gentle than a breeze echoed softly in his mind.

Shi Xiaobai was jolted awake as he looked up to survey his surroundings. He returned to the harsh reality from his despondent fantasies. The monsters that continuously surged at him had surrounded him once again. They bared their fangs that stunk and flashed their sharp claws. They approached in a ferocious manner.

Shi Xiaobai immediately wiped the tears off his cheeks and

reached out to carry Dawn.

Now was not the moment to wallow in remorse.

That was because he had told her to live on and head to the ends of the world.

That was because he still owed her a response to her confession.

That was because the girl was still tied tightly to him using the crudely made rope she spent half a minute to make.

Shi Xiaobai carried the unconscious girl in his arm as his eyes were firm and gentle.

"This time it's This King's turn to protect you."

Chapter 463: The Sudden Appearance Of Despair

"Lalalalalalala..."

It was a prelude that was being hummed, but even so, the instant the voice that had yet to become a song sounded, many miracles had already happened.

Earthbound Yaksha felt a divine aura that it deeply hated ever since the beginning of its existence. Countless ear-piercing screeches constantly resounded in its ears as it suddenly found its body extremely heavy. It was as though dozens of invisible chains had restrained its body in an ever-tightening fashion. It made the Earthbound Yaksha find it harder to breathe. Its strength seemed to be decreasing bit by bit.

Mu Yuesheng, Pulp Farmer, Liu Yu, and Feng Yuanlin, who had been suppressed by Earthbound Yaksha's 'Soul Suppression' suddenly felt relief from the pressure on their bodies. The combat apprehension that repressed their souls had vanished as an invisible strength seemed to surge into their bodies from the world. Their frailty was quickly removed.

Sunless felt that her fatigue was wearing away at an extremely fast speed as her blood began to boil. More and more energy filled her every cell as the sword in her hand emitted a delightful sword hum.

Speechless was immediately awakened from his dazed state. He

had been blessed by the melody both physically and mentally, but unlike the other rookies, he didn't feel much joy. Without needing to turn his head, he could already guess whose voice it was.

As for the others, they spontaneously turned their heads towards the origins of the voice, and together, they widened their eyes in astonishment.

The bespectacled silver-haired girl was standing on the ground and gracefully extending her arms out. Her eyes were closed and with her pink lips opened, she sang with deep emotions. Even though it was a simple 'lalala...', but the 'miracle' that was created by that melodious voice, tune and timber had already hinted at her special identity.

"Mu Lengxi..."

"She's actually a Muse!?"

A Muse was an extremely rare job class in the human world. It was different from singers who used their voice to entertain people. The melody sung by Muses could create 'miracles'. Depending on the song, it would result in different miraculous effects.

Muses could be said to be a teammate that every professional hero team yearned to have on the team. They were talents coveted by armies of various nations, and they were a humanoid weapon that could affect an entire war.

Muses was such a rare and treasured existence.

The group never expected that they would encounter a 'Muse' during the organization rookie selection. Muses were special talents that any organization would protect with utmost secrecy, but what surprised them even more was that Mu Lengxi, whom they had mistaken as a 'mute', actually could produce such an endearing voice.

Liu Yu stammered, "A miracle of the world of magic, a treasured Muse...What sort of monsters are this year's rookies?"

However, the true shock had yet to begin because after Mu Lengxi finished singing the 'lalala' prelude, she belted out the first line to the lyrics that was raw with emotion, allowing her to fully express the miracle of a muse!

"I walk through this relentless downpour!"

This was the first line to the lyrics that was the calmest, but it blew the minds of everyone!

The energy that surged into their bodies, with their fatigue and pain subsiding, they were filled with boiling fighting spirit and courage. Everything was qualitatively different from the 'lalala' prelude.

"That's...Muse Silvermoon's 'Last Stardust'!"

That was a miraculous song widely known by many. Therefore, the moment music-loving Feng Yuanlin heard the first line, he was able to name the song.

To the rookies on the verge of collapse, Mu Lengxi's voice had undoubtedly created a miracle. It combined energy, fighting spirit and healing as one, giving them the ability to continue fighting.

But to Earthbound Yaksha, the song was like a devil's curse, or the judgment of an angel. It was suffering in torment and it did not want to endure it another moment!

"Die!"

Earthbound Yaksha was inordinately furious as it charged towards Mu Lengxi.

"Protect the Muse!"

That was a classic phrase often shouted in battle. And at this moment, it was shouted by Speechless.

Pulp Farmer and company had long understood that the Muse would become the focused target of the enemy and had already started to approach where Mu Lengxi was.

As Mu Lengxi's song gave them resolute battle will, Earthbound Yaksha's 'Soul Suppression' was finally unable to bind them again.

Pulp Farmer, Liu Yu, Mu Yuesheng, and Feng Yuanlin timely obstructed Earthbound Yaksha. Finally, they were no longer powerless to do battle.

Speechless heaved a sigh of relief when he saw that. He turned his head and wanted to tell Sunless to take the opportunity to kill Field Marshal Awesomo, but he saw that she had already taken action.

When Earthbound Yaksha charged forward with complete disregard of anything, it had left Field Marshal Awesomo alone. Sunless had immediately grabbed the opportunity she had been waiting for.

Field Marshal Awesomo, who had turned fearful from the beatings, fumbled to escape, but he was quickly caught. Once again, he holed up like a turtle in defense while covering his head. He constantly shouted 'save me' to Earthbound Yaksha. His pathetic appearance made it impossible to think that he was a Level Lord.

When Earthbound Yaksha saw the situation, it hesitated for a moment. It did not dare to violate the orders of the Excellency, so it was prepared to turn back to save Field Marshal Awesomo.

Speechless had already charged over.

"Hold it back!"

With forces coming from the front and back, Earthbound Yaksha was repressed by Mu Lengxi's melody. Its 'Soul Suppression' was no longer effective and it was really trapped by the five rookies in its original spot.

...

Mu Lengxi was immersed in her own world. When she closed her eyes to sing, she needed to devote all her feelings to create the 'miracle of a muse'.

"I walk through this relentless downpour!"

"With my drenched and trembling shoulders!"

People who heard it imagined themselves in a relentless downpour, and how their thinly-clad bodies were being drenched in the rain. Their shoulders trembled because of the cold, but even so, they still walked on resolutely.

Was she expressing the need to be 'resolute'?

"Towards the ends of my ideals!"

"And with worn out tiny hands!"

"Pick up the faded memories!"

"Cover up my hollow heart!"

When one's heart reached the ends of one's ideals, please recall the budding past. Even if that pair of tiny hands was hurt while working hard to climb upwards, recall the beautiful memories that had faded until one's heart is filled.

Was she expressing that 'courage' was needed to pursue one's ideals?

"The things called love and sympathy!"

"I do not mind abandoning them all!"

"If that's the price for retrieving the things that I've lost!"

Abandon all love and sympathy so as to retrieve one's conviction.

Was she expressing the need to be 'adamant'?

"Even if my fate is to be covered in scars!"

"My heart will continue emanating vibrant colors!"

Ah, so she was not supposed to sing. That was because the power of a Muse came from the 'Sacred Sound'. However, her 'Sacred

Sound' was too special. Every time she used the power of the 'Sacred Sound', it would cause its deterioration. Eventually, the 'Sacred Sound' will not be under her control. Therefore, even ordinary speech would result in the 'Sacred Sound' from rampaging, causing harm to people around her.

That was the truth to why she did not speak.

In fact, all she needed to do was not sing or become a muse.

But...But every time she saw injured or despondent people, she could not help but feel the need to use her voice to give them strength and encouragement.

It was because she was a muse, so she wanted to create 'miracles'.

Even if her fate was to be covered in scars, her heart would continue emanating vibrant colors.

"This is my last stardust reaching for the sky!"

"Dust to dust, ash to ash!"

"Beyond the sky!"

"My fragments of dreams!"

"Please head towards eternity!"

If her voice could eventually become the last stardust, even if it was dust to dust, ash to ash, she would continue heading towards the sky of her ideals, singing out with her voice.

She was an eternal Muse, even though she would become an eternal mute because of her injuries.

Silvermoon's song!

Please head towards eternity!

...

Mu Lengxi's song had created a 'miracle', reversing what was a battle that was already doomed to despair.

A glimmer of hope bloomed from her song.

Earthbound Yaksha's strength was restricted by the song, while it was completely restrained by Speechless and company. It was left motionless for a moment.

Field Marshal Awesomo, who was covering his head in defense, was finally not lucky like previously. This was because Sunless had gained additional strength from the song. This tiny bit of excess allowed her to tip the scales.

An azure storm that was more intense and violent than any that preceded it!

Field Marshal Awesomo yelled tragically. Once an opening was created in his defense, it would result in his collapse. The sword beams that were filled with killing intent slashed at his body incessantly, and his recovery abilities were unable to keep up with the damage. His body was also constantly reducing in size, until all that was left was the head with the bull horns.

Earthbound Yaksha roared angrily, but Speechless was a tough foe to begin with. Mu Lengxi's song had also drastically reduced its combat strength, and with Pulp Farmer's domineering spear techniques, Feng Yuanlin's relentless shield bashes, Liu Yu's cunning incantations, as well as Mu Yuesheng's high-voltage bolt strikes that were unstable in strength which made it even harder to deal with. Earthbound Yaksha was already unable to fend for itself, so it no longer had the time to bother about Field Marshal Awesomo, who had been diced to the point of only having a head left.

"Save me! Spare me please! I beg of you, don't kill me!"

Field Marshal Awesomo pleaded in a hysterical manner.

However, Sunless would not show any signs of pity because of that, nor would she hesitate in any way. There was no other reason—if Field Marshal Awesomo did not die, Shi Xiaobai could very likely die.

To Sunless, a hundred million Field Marshal Awesomos were nothing compared to a hair on Shi Xiaobai.

Her eyes were ice-cold as she thrust her sword straight towards Field Marshal Awesomo's head!

But at that moment, a hoarse voice suddenly echoed gently.

"That's as far as it will go."

A calm voice with very simple words was like a film director shouting 'cut'. The battle that was ongoing came to a complete and sudden halt.

Mu Lengxi's voice came to a halt.

Sunless' thrust of her sword came to a stop as her body could no longer move at all.

Speechless, Pulp Farmer, Liu Yu, Feng Yuanlin, and Mu Yuesheng, who were engaging in battle with Earthbound Yaksha, felt their bodies completely stiffen at the same moment. They were like ice-sculptures that had been frozen.

"The game is over."

The hoarse voice sounded once again. This time, the group

managed to see its true form—a shadow on the ground.

However, it was not an ordinary shadow because it had reached out seven of its snake-like shadow arms to grab the shadows of Sunless and company.

"It took a little bit of time, but all of your shadows have been caught by me. In other words, all of your consciousnesses have been imprisoned by me and all of you are no longer able to control your bodies. Therefore, the game should be ending."

The strange shadow said in a cold voice, "But before the game ends, I will tell you a few cruel facts."

"Firstly, killing Field Marshal Awesomo would not disable the 'God Slaughtering Formation' because that was a lie to begin with. Field Marshal Awesomo is not the formation core of the 'God Slaughtering Formation'. Killing him would be useless. The true core of the formation is hidden somewhere none of you can find, so it's impossible to destroy the 'God Slaughtering Formation'. The two people you want to save are certainly doomed."

"Secondly, I'm the Level Lord of the ninth level. The Excellency has sent three Level Lords to kill you. Although the Excellency did it for fun in the beginning, the Excellency is now determined to kill all of you. Therefore, all of you are doomed regardless of anything."

"Thirdly, the final escape method of the 'exit command' has been disabled by the Excellency. The Excellency had gone to great ends

to use an inordinate amount of authority to ensure that all of you would be killed, so there is nothing to regret from dying under such circumstances."

"Last of all, all of you can still survive for a little longer because Earthbound Yaksha and I do not have any interest when it comes to killing humans, but unfortunately, the stupid bull that you have been abusing cruelly is a psychopath. When his body is completely healed, all of you will die so terribly that even I cannot imagine it."

The calm but cold voice depicted the cruel truth.

Field Marshal Awesomo, who was taking form and was about to reconstruct his body, indicated their cruel future.

The hope that had just descended upon them was so easily shattered, revealing the true nature of despair.

Chapter 464: Grabbing The Devil's Hand

Array World

The sky was eventually covered by the massive wings of the monsters in the sky. Sunlight was nearly completely devoured, and could only peep out through the cracks in the winged blockade. The rays of sunlight that scattered to the ground illuminated the lands, but all it showed was a mass of darkness from the monsters that swamped the lands.

Sounds filled with killing intent like roaring, hissing, screeching, shrieking sounded incessantly. It did not give any spot of reprieve to the world they were in.

But in this world filled with despair, a boy was running straight towards hope. His hands were holding an unconscious girl, as though he was carefully carrying a crystal that could easily shatter at a touch.

In front of him, there were monsters charging at him with gaping mouths. Behind him, there were innumerable monsters in desperate pursuit. Once he came to a stop, he would immediately be inundated by the monster horde. All he could do was advance and tear through the horde of monsters, going from one land of despair to another.

Shi Xiaobai lost track of the time when it came to his running. He did not know how long he could run nor did he know how much longer he had to run.

However, he knew that he needed to run. He had to run without stopping towards what was in front of him!

Even if his feet no longer obeyed his command!

Even if his lungs felt like they were burning!

Even if the air he was breathing was so thin that it did not seem to exist!

Even if every second felt like he was in hell!

Even if such running did not have an end to it!

Even so, he would do his best to open up his stride and run forward. He would run ceaselessly forward, not for the ends of the world, but because the girl in his arms was still sleeping peacefully. How could he let that short dream turn into an eternal slumber?

"Huff, puff...."

Heavy breathing burned his lungs. Due to the need to maintain his consciousness with pain, Shi Xiaobai completely stopped using 'Unleaking Turtle Aura'. His body felt like it was consumed in flames.

If burning his life could be exchanged for power, Shi Xiaobai

would not hesitate to do so, but unfortunately, he did not possess such a mystic technique. All he could burn was his will that refused to collapse.

Time and again, just as he was about to fall unconscious, he would use the pain to force his eyes open.

If he was alone, he might have already collapsed a long time ago. But now, in his arms, there was a girl who had given him her heart. The girl had proclaimed 'I like you' loudly.

"Slam!"

Shi Xiaobai finally ushered in his first fall.

However, he immediately turned his body to use his shoulder to withstand the pain of the fall.

Immediately after that, he clenched his teeth and got up.

Every time he fell, he had to use even more strength to open the gap between the monsters behind him.

But that was not his final fall because he was beginning to reach his limits frequently.

At the sixth time he fell, he finally consumed all of his strength.

No more additional pain was effective because even the most lazy cells had given all its energy.

Shi Xiaobai did not know how long he had been running with Dawn. He was so exhausted that he had forgotten about time. However, he knew he had done his best and given his all.

Unfortunately, she remained unconscious.

He had no chance to tell her.

That he liked her too.

...

...

Infernal domain. Infernal King's bedroom

The glow of flickering candles barely illuminated the dim room. Inside the massive bedroom, there was only a stunning beauty dressed in a bathing robe.

The woman was lazily sitting on a chair as she shook her slender fair foot. Her eyes were on a crystalline chessboard in front of her as though she was observing a complicated game of chess. Yet, it looked like she was looking at another world through the crystalline chessboard.

After a long while, the stunning woman picked up a black chess piece termed 'Queen' and placed it back on the board, removing a white chess piece termed 'Knight' from the board.

At that moment, she was playing a board game named 'International Chess' by a boy. Each side of the board was a country, and the game of chess had the inkling of war between countries. Although it did not seem as complicated as 'Aeroplane Chess', it was still extremely interesting.

However, the boy who was the only one capable of playing chess with her was situated far away. In her boredom and loneliness, all she could do was play chess with herself.

At that moment, a pleasant voice rang in the quiet room.

"Let's end it here."

At the instant the voice resounded, the black-and-white chess pieces on the board flew out like bullets. They either smashed into the walls, into flower vases, or to the ground. There were a few that hurtled towards the beautiful woman.

However, the pieces were reduced to dust by an unknown force before it reached the woman.

On the crystalline board that no longer had a single chess piece, a blurry image gradually appeared.

That was an absolutely stunning beauty with purple hair cascading down naturally. For some reason, she wore a white eyepatch over her left eye. Only her blue right eye could be seen, but it looked as clear as a crystal. The eye was calm, but it seemed to contain the mountains and rivers, as though a sea of stars filled it. It added a sacred flair to her beautiful looks. She clearly looked like a young girl, but she exuded the dignity of a goddess.

The purple-haired girl looked at the stunning woman through the crystalline chess board.

The woman was apparently not surprised by the situation and seemed to have anticipated it. She squinted her eyes as she said with a smile, "You finally can't bear it any longer? I thought you would have appeared earlier, but who knew that you would be able to endure up to now."

The purple-haired girl said, "I never expected you to be this bold. You obviously know that I can destroy you and the entire land of trials with a wave of my hand, but yet you kept rubbing me the wrong way time and time again?"

The stunning woman said with a chuckle, "Just treat it as if I'm sick of living. Since I'm not afraid of death, or afraid of destruction, there's nothing to fear."

The purple-haired girl fell silent for a moment and said, "Speak, what is your goal? Seeking revenge against me?"

"Revenge?"

The stunning woman covered her mouth as she said with a laugh, "Giggle...You must really be joking. All you did was be a bit forceful when negotiating with me and made some unfriendly threats. How can I have a grudge with you, or even seek revenge on you?"

When the purple-haired girl heard this, a look of helplessness flashed in her eyes. She said with a wry smile, "So that's the reason. It looks like I miscalculated. I never expected that as the 'assessment program', not only have you gained sentience with a personality. It's actually a personality with extreme pettiness. By seizing the Infernal Queen's body and setting Xiaobai as the Infernal King, you used all sorts of techniques to seduce him, all because of a few harsh words I used against you during our negotiation?"

The 'Infernal Queen' gave a coquettish smile as she said, "You must be joking. What I did was because I loved my Darling Husband, and wanted to be closer to him and do what he wants."

The purple-haired girl said with a sneer, "Don't tell me that you think that you can enrage me by doing this?"

The 'Infernal Queen' giggled and said, "Of course, I only spent time alone with your boyfriend in one room, and had 'intercourse' for ten days and nights while neglecting food and sleep. He taught me things in such a meticulous manner, but with Her Excellency Kali being tolerant and forgiving, how can you be angry over such trivial matters?"

Kali was cursing secretly. Although she knew that what the fake Infernal Queen's shameless distorting was false, she still felt incensed.

She pretended to stay calm as she said, "What's there to be angry about? You went so far as to bring shame on yourself so that you can prove that my boyfriend is such a gentleman. I should be the one thanking you. Unfortunately, your charms are limited. Even though you went nude, you still failed to let my Xiaobai have a tiny inkling of interest."

The 'Infernal Queen' pricked up her brows. She had especially chosen this body which had snow-white skin and absolute beauty that could topple countries. Her figure was excellent and she had ample breasts. Her hips were curved and her waist slender. She could be considered a masterpiece, but after her bath, she had failed to seduce Shi Xiaobai despite being thoroughly naked. It had also far exceeded her expectations.

However, the 'Infernal Queen' obviously could not tag on praises about how Shi Xiaobai's sublime actions of 'not being disturbed with a woman in his lap'. She said with a chuckle, "It's not that I lack charm, but Darling has a unique taste. He likes bony lolis like you, and coincidentally, that girl called Dawn Li also matches his taste. Hey, aren't they acting out the till death do us part scene of star-crossed lovers right now? It really makes me jealous. I wonder if you will feel a modicum of jealousy? After all, if this carries on, even if your beloved boyfriend might not have a change of heart, he will at least end up becoming unfaithful. Why don't you take the opportunity to use my hand to kill that little side-hoe?"

"Why don't you take the opportunity to use my hand to kill that little side hoe?"

Kali's gaze turned cold as she said, "I do not wish for him to become a flower in a greenhouse, so I do not mind you increasing the tribulations that he faces, but if it exceeds my tolerance level, you will force me to do something. It's best that you consider if you can withstand the outcome of infuriating me. I can accept him having a change of heart or becoming unfaithful, but I do not wish for him to be heart-broken. Therefore, that girl cannot die."

The 'Infernal Queen' said with a sigh, "You are really making it tough on me. This can't be killed while that can't be killed, wouldn't the trap that I went through great pains setting up be for nothing?"

Kali said with a sneer, "As for the seven trial-takers, do not overdo it. Sending out three Level Lords and even going against the rules to ban the 'exit command'. You have already completely overturned the balance of the game. Although I do not mind the deaths of those seven people, they are still Xiaobai's friends. Furthermore, they are in such a dire situation in order to save Xiaobai. I cannot sit idle while you do as you please."

The 'Infernal Queen' said in an even more depressed manner, "You are being too cruel. You are even forbidding me to have my final enjoyment? What if I were to say...no?"

Kali said with a sneer, "If you are bent on refusing to realize your

errors, I'll have to intervene."

The 'Infernal Queen' said with a sly smile, "If you could personally take action, was there a need to enter this prolonged mindless conversation with me? The moment you attack, I'll gain the final authority and will immediately activate the 'self-destruct sequence'. No matter which side you save, the other side will instantly die. No matter how strong you are, there is also a time lag when it comes to crossing between two worlds that are on different planes of existence. It's because you can't save both sides that you are here threatening me, isn't that right?"

Kali's expression changes slightly, as she said coldly, "So that's how it is. Is that your real goal? By doing so, you have indeed forced me into an impasse, but you should know that when push comes to shove, I will not hesitate to save Xiaobai. Although doing so would be less than fair to the seven trial-takers, it is something that cannot be helped. My conscience is clear and Xiaobai would not blame me for it. But if you were to activate the 'self-destruction sequence', you would be destroyed along with the land of trials. Do you think it's worth it to pay such a huge price but only being able to drag seven humans to die along with you, without being able to kill Xiaobai or hurt me?"

The 'Infernal Queen' gave a coquettish laugh as she lazily bent her fair arms and whispered, "Then, what if my true goal is to force you to do something, in order to gain the final authority to activate the 'self-destruction sequence'?"

With that said, Kali's pupils constricted slightly as she said in disbelief, "You don't want to live anymore!?"

The 'Infernal Queen' chuckled and said, "That's right. I'm sick of living. Being trapped here in what seems like a vast world but actually lacks freedom, living on is just an exceedingly boring matter. Therefore, being able to see your pained and hesitant expression might be the last moment of joy to me. You definitely never imagined that the powerful you can't even save a few humans, right?"

A wry smile suffused across Kali's lips. She had truly been tricked and had completely fallen for her scheme. Who said that no scheme was useless in front of absolute power?

It was only because your scheme was not sinister enough.

The moment the self-destruction sequence began, it only took an instant for the entire land of the trials to be destroyed. Shi Xiaobai and Speechless' group were separately located in the array world and the world of the seventh level. They were different worlds that existed in different spaces. Even she needed to take time to travel through space.

If the 'Infernal Queen' was really sick of living and wished to be destroyed as soon as possible, Kali could really only save one side.

And she definitely would choose to save Shi Xiaobai, but the other seven rookies were Shi Xiaobai's friends. Furthermore, they were in a dire state because of their attempt to save Shi Xiaobai, so how could she turn a blind eye to their plight?

The 'Infernal Queen' was too nefarious, causing Kali to feel inordinately furious, but she could not do a thing, because the moment she attacked, she would similarly activate the 'self-destruct sequence', causing her to fail to save both sides.

Kali found her head aching. She had lost count of the years that has passed since she felt so helpless after gaining absolute strength.

This time, the only person that could save the seven children was not her, but...

"Xiaobai, quickly wake up."

...

...

The boy's eyes were filled with tears. In his blurry vision, he slowly lost his focus.

"Badump! Badump! Badump!"

A weak heartbeat began to turn stronger constantly in his unconscious mind...Stronger and stronger...

Suddenly, a fiery beam of light shot out from every corner in his mind and stabbed his eyes, evaporating all his tears. It was as if even his eyes were consumed by the flames. In his pained vision,

the world in front of him suddenly opened up into an expanse of light.

In the light, a shadow gradually floated over, like a large rug that paved a path in front of him.

Screech, screech. The sound of mice screeching began resounding in his ears.

Suddenly!

Countless eyeballs appeared in the shadow. The pupils in the eyeballs turned in different directions as they simultaneously looked at the light beyond the shadow!

At the same time, the light filled the firmament, as a massive mouth that occupied half the sky slowly opened. Accompanying it was the sound of maggots squirming.

Slowly, a gigantic bloody tongue reached out from the massive mouth.

On careful look, the tongue was filled with sharp barbed spikes. Every spike had a thin red lip, as though the most striking lipstick had been applied on them. Countless red lips slowly opened.

The countless eyeballs in the shadows that were looking at the light suddenly turned and looked towards him. Their overwhelming evil intentions seemed to stab into the boy's every

pore like needles. In the light, the countless lips on the spiked tongue unleashed a demonic voice. The voice sounded like the wails of ghosts and the roars of gods!

"Giving up?"

"Have you given up?"

"Repressed or indignant?"

"You must be indignant?"

"Are you indignant!?"

"Then struggle!"

"Struggle!"

"You have to struggle!"

Suddenly, a gigantic mouth that filled half the sky reached out a hand. It was a black-skinned devil's hand covered in blood.

That hand looked like it was far in the sky.

But in fact, it was just in front of him.

"Grab it!"

"Grab it!!!"

"Grab it!!!!"

"Take the power you need!"

"Go struggle!"

"Go and struggle!"

The boy used his final bit of strength to raise his hand with great difficulty.

Gently, he grabbed the devil's bloody hand.

...

.....

The three-headed hellhound, Herat, was a bachelor dog. It was not because it wasn't handsome or because it did not 'dare' to risk things, but because this screwed up world only had a single three-headed hellhound.

It was not like it could not accept the act of mating with other species, but that was only to release its pent-up sexual frustrations. It was a physical process and there was no spiritual connection and exchange. It was not the pure 'love' it yearned for.

As it could not obtain it, it no longer believed in 'love'.

Only till today!

Two humans that suddenly appeared in this world were actually exchanging sweet nothings in front of it!

It was incensed but it did not act rashly and chose to quietly observe!

Oh? Wanting to kiss?

Interrupt them!

Hmph! Want to confess?

Another interruption!

Let the two darn humans experience the anger of a bachelor dog!

After a long while, the two humans finally could not hide in the turtle shell any longer. They began their journey of escapades, but

what made it even more incensed was that the two humans would not forget to exchange sweet nothings to each other while running.

Herat used all its strength to chase after them, but it had no idea how long it chased after them. The two humans seemed extremely tenacious and managed to last a long while without collapsing.

However, there was ultimately a limit no matter how tenacious they were.

After the girl fainted, the boy had lasted for a rather long period of time. He fell down six times before he finally could not get up.

Herat gave a victory roar and was preparing to have a taste of the two humans' flesh with its partners. It was definitely going to be filled with the putrid taste of love.

However, just as Herat took a few steps forward, it immediately caught a whiff of intense danger. Don't ask it why it was able to catch a whiff of danger, it was only because three-headed hellhounds have such sharp noses.

In short, as a meticulous and intelligent three-headed hellhound, Herat believed in its intuition and retreated far away at the fastest speed possible.

Just as it forebode, the boy that had just fallen down stood up once again.

Furthermore, when he stood up, his black hair had all turned silvery-white. His pair of black eyes had a golden vortex in them, as though there were two golden devils living in them.

Immediately following that, the banquet of a cruel massacre happened in front of Herat's eyes.

In less than a minute, hundreds of monsters were torn into pieces by that human. No, that was no longer a human but a silver-haired demon.

It used its bare hands to rip apart hundreds of monsters.

The silver-haired demon was bathing in blood and the girl that was tied to it was also covered in blood.

The silver-haired demon raised its head to roar, as though it did not notice that there was a girl tied to its body.

The monsters that came late trembled in fear from the hellish scene before them. None of them dared to approach the region that was like an Ashura's playground.

Herat felt thankful for its intelligence. It had hidden in the safest zone and continued monitoring the situation secretly.

Suddenly, its eyes lit up.

That was because the true show it had been waiting for is finally about to begin.

The unconscious girl finally opened her eyes!

"Shi...Xiao...bai?"

The girl slowly lifted her hand and tugged gently at the silver-haired demon's sleeve. Her weak voice sounded especially clear in the dead and silent hell.

The silver-haired demon seemed to finally realize that a strange object was tied to its waist.

It lowered its head and growled.

Then it stretched its blood-stained hands slowly towards the girl in front of it.

Herat was immediately ecstatic as it began to tremble in excitement.

That was because the silver-haired demon's hand pose was one it was very familiar with. That was the same hand pose that it used repeatedly when it ripped apart the hundreds of monsters!

...

Chapter 465: Virtues And Sins

The human world once had three holy trees—"Fate Tree", "Time Tree" and "World Tree".

The pixie race was a special lifeform born from the "World Tree". The maturation of every fruit of the World Tree meant the birth of a pixie.

Pixies were known to be beauty incarnate since ancient times. Not only was it because pixies were mostly beautiful, but because every pixie was given the blessing of the "Seven Contrary Virtues" by the World Tree at their birth.

It was a debatable question whether humans were innately good or evil. To probe the inner workings of human nature at its most nascent stage, the actions of infants were used. It was debated if humans were corrupted by society as they grew up or not, but there was no conclusion to this debate even after thousands of years. Due to different angles and points of views, the explanations given by both sides were reasonable. No one was able to conclusively retort the other, so no one could prove that they were absolutely correct.

However, there was no such awkward debates for pixies. That was because pixies were given the grace of the World Tree to be 'born perfect'.

Pixies were born with the seven precious 'Virtues' — Chastity, Temperance, Charity, Diligence, Patience, Kindness, and Humility.

Although pixies were born with these virtues, they had to undergo the baptism of worldly affairs. In their growth, changes would slowly develop. For example, a particular pixie might not need to work because she was born with a silver spoon. The virtue of 'Diligence' would slowly be ground away by neglect on a daily basis.

Pixies that could maintain the seven virtues all their lives were extremely rare. They almost never existed. Only in the legends were there 'Holy Pixies' who truly maintained all seven virtues. However, 'Holy Pixies' were a legend after all. It was impossible to discern if they were fiction or a true existence.

Typically, a well-educated pixie would only be able to maintain two or three virtues. The other virtues would gradually disappear as they grew up, making them not much different from ordinary humans.

However, to pixies who were born with the virtues, there was one thing that was forbidden. It was even abhorred—Virtues could disappear, but it absolutely could not become a Sin.

For example, 'Diligence' could disappear, but it absolutely could not become 'Sloth'.

'Chastity' could be lost, but one could not indulge in 'Lust'...

Pixies could connive the virtues given to them by the World Tree disappear, which they would view it as their incompetence, but

they would never taint themselves with the corresponding seven deadly sins of the seven virtues. That was because it was the most serious of betrayals to the World Tree that gave birth to them.

However, if pixies tainted themselves with an 'evil' from any one of the seven deadly sins, be it a pixie commoner or pixie aristocrat, or even the pixie queen, they would become 'fallen pixies' upon being tainted by 'evil'. They would be exiled at the very least, or even vanquished.

'Fallen pixies' were the most forsaken species to the pixies, but unfortunately, the World Tree had buried in them the seeds of 'corruption' at the same time it gave them the seven virtues.

That was because as long as they destroyed a particular 'virtue' of theirs and take the initiative to 'corrupt' themselves with 'evil', they would be able to trigger the seed hidden within them. It would give pixies a temporary burst of strength.

The ability to exchange power for 'corruption' was the gifts with the best of intentions while simultaneously being the cruelest of tests when the World Tree birthed the pixies.

That was because there were times when even pixies who yearned for peace would have no choice but to bow down before power. At that moment in time, they would have to make a choice of acquiring the necessary strength at the cost of tainting themselves with 'evil'. This was pertinent when it came to facing the hunting of greedy humans. Their lives, chastity, and dignity were threatened, so these things would become a very difficult choice for them when compared to the 'virtues'.

Most pixies would choose to 'corrupt' themselves in their greatest time of need to resolve the danger. Although it meant betraying the World Tree, it was much better than betraying themselves.

These were the origins behind fallen pixies and corruption. They were pixies born with the seven virtues from their very beginnings.

...

Ten thousand years ago, the first apocalypse befell the human world.

The strongest destroyer of the apocalypse—the Original Sin of Calamity—prioritized destroying the three holy trees that acted as pillars for the human world. The World Tree naturally failed to escape the calamity.

Following that, as the 'clean-up crew', the Seven Deadly Sins began slaughtering the remaining living beings left in the human world. As a result, the pixies faced the threat of genocide.

During that calamity of genocide, there was only one pixie that luckily survived.

The only pixie that survived was Kali, an adolescent who still maintained the seven virtues. She was chosen by the World Tree to become its successor.

Without the World Tree's procreation, Kali became the last pixie in the human world.

From that moment on, Kali realized her fate and her mission. She once secretly swore to maintain the final bloodline of the pixies and to absolutely not trigger the strength in the 'corruption seed', never to become a 'fallen pixie'.

Thankfully, inheriting the powers that the World Tree had bestowed upon her made her nearly invincible in strength. Furthermore, in her travels through different planes of existence, she always took the form of an 'ugly old woman'. Therefore, she never fell into a dire state where she needed to activate the 'corruption seed' during the past ten thousand years.

Although in the ten thousand years of travel, she had lost her 'Kindness' because she ruthlessly killed her enemies, lost her 'Humility' because of her overwhelming strength and lost her 'Diligence' because she no longer needed to walk to traverse large distances, but there was no inclination towards corruption. She did not encounter a dire state that needed her to trigger the corruption. It was already considered quite a fascinating miracle.

But not long ago, due to the self-sealing required to enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower and how she was trapped by the four Level Lords in the God Slaughtering Formation, she fell into a desperate situation of having to trigger the 'corruption seed' in order to save Shi Xiaobai, who was on the brink of death.

When 'sacrificing Shi Xiaobai' and 'sacrificing herself' was placed on the same balance, Kali would not hesitate to choose the latter.

She destroyed the virtue known as 'Patience', and took the initiative to take in the evil known as 'Wrath'. In order to save Shi Xiaobai, she had violated her sworn oath and betrayed the World Tree by turning herself into a 'fallen pixie'.

She did not regret her actions. Even if she had to do it again, she would make the same choice.

Although compared to the ten thousand years of her life, the amount of time she knew Shi Xiaobai was so short that it was like a grain of sand in a desert, to her, that short period of time was even more precious than the long span of ten thousand years.

In the ten thousand years, not only was her life seemingly long and endless, she was also accompanied by loneliness.

And in the recent short span of time, she had secretly observed Shi Xiaobai's interesting escapades. While watching him, she would at times burst out laughing, at times be infuriated, at times tear up with sadness, at times having boiling blood flow through her veins, and at times disregard everything...

Although he never noticed her ever-watching eyes, nor did he know about her knowing smiles and slight frowns, she did not feel a tinge of loneliness at all by being a lone observer.

What she could get from Shi Xiaobai was far greater than what one could imagine.

As such, how could she watch by the sidelines the person who filled her 'emptiness' be destroyed?

How could she let the youth that possessed the loftiest of ideals die at the beginning of his journey?

Even if she needed to use a lie of 'how it was a trivial matter as she was only betraying herself if she became a fallen pixie even though she was no ordinary pixie and that she was equivalent to the successor of the World Tree', she would absolutely not allow that youth to fall into an eternal slumber.

Therefore, she chose 'corruption' in order to complete 'rescuing' him.

She did not regret her decision at all.

But the developments that followed made her filled with regret up till the present moment.

Shi Xiaobai did not let down the sacrifices she made. He even returned the favor in a way she did not dare imagine.

He 'snatched' her 'corruption'.

She was somewhat uncertain of the process of how the 'snatching' worked. All she remembered was that she was suddenly 'pushed down' by him. She fell into panic and was worrying how she could reject him when he gently reciprocated her sacrifice.

However, this 'reciprocation' was like a heavy sense of 'retribution' to her.

Shi Xiaobai had snatched away the evil of 'Wrath' from her, making her return to becoming a pure pixie that was untainted by evil. For that, he had to correspondingly pay the great price of the possibility of being controlled by 'Wrath' or lured by 'corruption'.

Kali felt a great deal of blame for her carelessness, but she felt mostly touched.

True love was just like how she 'selflessly' sacrificed herself.

And true love was repaid by him in his 'selfless' manner.

The first thing Kali did when she left the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower was to search through all the information regarding 'corruption'.

The Seven Deadly Sins reviled in the extermination of life, but they did not have the practice of burning books. Therefore, she had managed to luckily retain a portion of the pixie's canonical collection.

However, as she flipped through thick tomes, Kali turned more confused when she understood more about 'corruption'.

That was because the books that described 'corruption' all had a premise that could not be omitted—the identities of the fallen were all pixies.

Yes, there was no description of humans that had the seeds of evil buried in humans due to 'corruption'!

For humans, virtue and evil stemmed from human nature. They were just two sides of human nature, so it was an extremely ordinary matter. Therefore, when the 'seeds of evil' exclusive to pixies were scattered in the spiritual fields of humans, there had been no precedence to the kinds of 'flowers of evil' that would bloom.

Without any precedence, this resulted in the greatest dilemma at present.

Shi Xiaobai had snatched the seed of evil known as 'wrath', so it was a complete unknown what sort of changes or repercussions would happen.

When Shi Xiaobai fell into despair once again, she smiled wryly as she wondered how many times he would have his life threatened despite him having begun cultivation only recently. She was also nervously waiting for the final moment she needed to make a resolute choice.

It was rather different from what she previously faced. She was also unable to make a decision with absolute calmness. Due to the meticulous machinations of the Infernal Queen, she ultimately could only save one side. The moment she saved Shi Xiaobai, it would mean abandoning the other seven rookies that fell into a dire situation in order to save Shi Xiaobai. Even though she no longer had the habit to fuss over 'moral principles', it was still a violation of 'moral principles' to return kindness with ingratitude.

Therefore, the perfect ending was that he and them, who were on the brink of danger, could proceed together was to save each other or save themselves.

However, the ninth level's Level Lord, 'Shadow Wraith' had grabbed the shadows of the rookies. There was already no possibility of them to resist any further.

Shi Xiaobai, who was running desperately while carrying the girl, no longer seemed to have the strength to stand up again after falling for the sixth time.

With the situation progressing into such a state, logically it would be a situation of despair, if not for the 'evil seed of fury' that Shi Xiaobai had 'snatched' away from her.

The 'evil seed of fury' produced its reliable and formidable power.

Shi Xiaobai once again received the powers bestowed unto him from 'corruption'.

Kali never expected this because this was the first time such a situation happened.

Pixies could destroy their 'virtue' and expedite the corruption of 'evil' in order to obtain strength, but they could only do so once in their lives.

If they could limitlessly obtain power that far exceeded their strength, it was no longer a gift of the World Tree, but something that broke the laws of the natural world.

But with the precedent of a human obtaining the seed of evil, the laws were pulverized as well.

Pixies could only obtain strength during their first corruption. If the aspect they corrupted was 'fury', they would easily lose their temper in the future. It was equivalent to being tainted with a pernicious habit of being easy to anger.

But Shi Xiaobai had obtained strength that far exceeded his strength because of 'fury'!

What was going on?

Another corruption?

What sort of price would he have to pay to obtain strength once

again after falling into fury?

Kali was alarmed but she forced herself to calm down. She carefully observed Shi Xiaobai, who had lost his reason due to 'fury' as he slaughtered the monsters in the array world.

He was still as cold and powerful as when he slaughtered the four Level Lords. He still used his bare hands to tear apart his prey in a brutal manner. He was still the silver-haired devil that allowed blood to dye himself red...

There did not seem to be any changes from the first incident, but one would discover that as Shi Xiaobai tore apart his prey, he appeared even colder and more decisive than before, that is, if one observed him carefully. He was like a 'devil' that was adhering to his instinct of indiscriminate killing.

This meant that, compared to the previous time, Shi Xiaobai's remaining clarity of mind in his rage was even more fuzzy.

Although he had paid a terrible price, Shi Xiaobai had at least completed the act of 'saving himself'.

Just as Kali consoled herself in such a shoddy manner, the plot reached the nadir of the grim situation.

That was because Dawn had awoken and called out. She had made the 'Shi Xiaobai', who was no different from a demon, realize her existence.

This silver-haired demon that only abided to its instincts of indiscriminate killing finally reached out its blood-stained hands towards the frail and warm girl's body that was just inches away.

Chapter 466: All A Bachelor Dog Could Do Was Laugh Foolishly

The array world ushered in dusk. This dangerous world that could even slaughter true gods similarly had night and day. As night approached, the two suns of varying sizes had no choice but to subdue its blazing heat and sink slowly into the ground.

The setting suns were like drops of blood that dyed the dimming azure sky. The vivid crimson colors also seemed to be derived from the blood of the dirty monsters that soaked the lands.

The ice-cold crimson land was 'hell' that even the monsters did not dare approach because standing in the middle of 'hell' was a devil more terrifying than monsters.

The blood-covered devil had forbidding silver hair and a pale complexion. Its glazed eyes had black pupils with golden vortices that seemed to be perpetually rotating in them. The description of the devil was not sufficient to illustrate the terror that it possessed. It did not have a hideous body or a frightening aura. One could not even feel the existence of a 'soul' from it.

It was like a soulless mass that acted like a cold machine powered by the gear-like golden vortices.

But maybe it was because the silver-haired devil lacked 'emotion' that made it resemble a 'devil'. The imperceptible but vivid feeling of death and the impossibility of seeing its true appearance because of the blood that covered its body prevented anyone from thinking

of it as a 'human'. There was also no way one could tell that this devil which did not have any breathing, heartbeat, emotions or soul was actually...

"Shi...Xiao...bai?"

Dawn gradually opened her eyes. In her blurry vision, the first thing she saw in the blood-red world was the silver-haired devil that was closest to her. In fact, she did not immediately recognize the devil whose true identity was beyond recognition. Out of instinct, she had muttered the boy's name she was most worried about the moment she regained consciousness.

But in the next instant, as her mind gradually cleared, she immediately recognized the silver-haired devil's true identity.

Even though the silver hair and the blood had changed his appearance, and although his cold and breathless state had wiped off all signs of humanity, she could still recognize the 'silver-haired devil' in front of her to be the boy whom she recently got to know and was extremely concerned about.

"Shi Xiaobai."

She lightly whispered his name once again.

However, the boy named 'Shi Xiaobai' did not give her any response. The pair of black eyes that were originally filled with hallowed light were now glistening with resplendent golden light.

They were like a pitch black haze that sealed his soul within.

The girl frowned slightly as the nauseating smell of blood caused her to look to her side to witness the hellish scene of dismembered limbs everywhere. She easily guessed what had happened and she could easily predict what would happen next.

When she consecutively called out twice, it was obvious what the silver-haired devil that only had its killing instincts left would do once it had its attention garnered.

"Shi Xiaobai!"

However, she still shouted out his name a third time with a raised voice.

Finally, or perhaps, indeed, the silver-haired devil lowered its head slowly. Its ice-cold eyes reflected her figure before they were minced by the golden vortices again and again.

It let out a low growl. It was without any emotion and it resembled a wild beast that had caught scent of its prey.

Then, it stretched out its blood-stained hands towards her.

They were demonic hands that had been assimilated...after grabbing onto the 'devil's hand'.

The pair of hands had torn apart hundreds, if not thousands of monsters. It had spilled blood and strewn organs across the barren land. It had used cruel deaths to accentuate this cruel world with even more cruelty.

The three-headed hellhound, Herat had witnessed the massacre that happened only moments ago. It had seen the pair of blood-covered devilish hands and the scene of it tearing its prey apart countless times. Up to that point in time, the scenes were still reverberating in its mind, like a nightmare.

Therefore, it knew what the silver-haired devil would do instinctively when it realized that it had neglected a fresh life tied to its waist.

It would definitely tear the girl attached to its waist into pieces.

Just like the tragic outcome of those monsters, that beautiful, warm-blooded body would be torn to shreds in a second. Boiling hot blood and viscous organs would splash onto the filthy ground and eventually stained by dust. It would be lost in the filthy corpses and with the passage of time, emit a stench until the smell completely disappeared.

And what was ironic about it was that the girl had done her best to force a smile and passion to pacify the boy of his worries up to the last second before she fainted.

The boy had once burned his will while running fervently for the girl. He climbed back up again and again after collapsing to the

ground even though injuries covered every inch of his body. Yet, he continued to desperately protect the girl and had no choice but to transform into the ruthless devil up to the final moment in order to protect her.

They were willing to sacrifice themselves for each other and their love was as pure and beautiful as glass.

But at that very moment, the boy who transformed into a devil to save the girl had stretched its bloody hands towards the girl he wanted to save out of killing instinct, after having lost his humanity and reason.

In order to save her, he had partaken in the consumption of a bitter fruit, yet he would eventually down the wine of eternal regret of 'killing her himself'.

To rip apart such a beautiful scene was what one would call a tragedy.

But Herat had never seen such an ironic and lamentable tragedy before.

Although it was a bachelor dog that hated 'love' to the bone, it could not help but lose a bit of its initial excitement. It could not help but have feelings of compassion and empathy.

However, it was powerless to prevent anything.

The only thing it could do was to witness the birth and end of the tragedy while watching coldly by the side. In the future, it would remark at the greatness of that 'love' and also spurn the ironic 'tragedy'.

"Howl."

Herat howled softly as it gave its blessings to such a beautiful love that had no help to the matter.

...

Having just awoken, Dawn did not know that the bloody hands had been tearing apart prey while she was unconscious. She did not even know that the hand gesture that was slowly approaching her had resulted in savage deaths.

But even if she did not know, she could easily guess from the hellish scene she was in and guess at the reality.

The ice-cold eyes that were filled by the golden vortices could no longer hold her figure in them.

In his eyes, in everything he could see, including her, were bubbles that were repeatedly burst.

The silver-haired devil would not hesitate to vanquish any life in front of it.

Dawn clearly understood this cold and harsh fact.

But even so, she did not cease calling out his name after the first three times.

"Shi Xiaobai...Shi Xiaobai...Shi Xiaobai..."

There was no need for additional words, all she needed to do was to repeat his name.

She slowly twisted her slender figure that was tied to his waist. Finally, her feet touched the ground as they stood facing each other.

Due to the thick rope tying them together, her body was adhered tightly to his.

She could clearly sense that his body exuded a coldness. The originally warm embrace was now as cold as an icy cavern.

But even so, she still stretched both her hands out to hug his waist. She hugged him tightly and did so with even greater strength, as if she was using all of her strength to merge his body into her own, or fuse into his soul.

Even though the blood-stained devil's hand was holding onto her shoulders forcefully.

Even though death might descend upon her at the very next moment.

Even so, she still hugged him tightly and passionately called out his name.

"Shi Xiaobai..."

Such an act was not about giving up her struggle, nor was it to search for the final warmth in life.

The reason why she did not attempt to flee but instead hugged him tightly was not because she believed that it was pointless to flee but because she trusted him.

She firmly believed in him and believed that even though he had transformed into an inhumane devil, he would not harm her.

Such a 'belief' filled the girl's emotions. One could call it simple-minded or one could also call it foolish.

Dawn naturally would not accept that she was a simple-minded girl, much less admit that she was a foolish nymphomaniac. Therefore, she had thought up of several logical reasons in a short span of time to give birth to that belief.

The objective clues were everywhere. For example—

For example, the crudely-made rope that was made from cloth was not torn. The rope was still tightly binding the two of them together.

For example, even in a bloody hell, even though there were hundreds, if not thousands of monsters ripped to pieces, she remained unharmed despite being the closest to him.

For example, the black beams of light were still shooting at them from every direction in an attempt to kill them, but the black beams were blocked by an invisible barrier, and the barrier had enveloped her within as well.

For example, the bloody hands that held her shoulders did not seem as cold and ruthless as they seemed on the surface. As its grip slowly increased in strength, it was also clearly trembling...

There were many objective reasons why he would not harm her, and all of that made her faith become ever more reliable.

However, the most important and most heart-felt reason was that in her eyes, he was definitely not a silver-haired devil.

It was just a slightly transformed—

"Shi Xiaobai."

She gently called out his name in an impassioned manner.

She had never imagined that there would be a day she would fall head over heels for a particular boy. Even though she realized how incorrigible her infatuation was, she willingly gave up her reason and chose to immerse herself within it.

The her from yesterday would definitely mock the present her.

But the present her only felt sweetness in her heart.

He protected her at the cost of transforming into a devil.

The reason why she could open her eyes again and still remain alive was all because he had given his all to protect her.

It would definitely not be overstepping any boundaries to imagine what painful but touching stories had happened while she was unconscious.

And just a tiny bit of imagination would cause her sweet thoughts to completely drown the terrifying guesses.

Even though she realized that she was in an ocean of sugary-sweetness, or that her life might be devoured by that sweetness at any time...

Even though she was being naive and silly...

She would still choose to hug him tightly in a manner that she could not extricate herself from and passionately call out his name.

"Shi Xiaobai."

She believed in him.

Even if he had transformed into a devil, he would definitely not harm her!

...

Herat slowly widened its eyes and watched the scene in front of it in disbelief.

The bloody hands that held the girl's shoulders did not rip the girl's body into two like it had expected. Instead, after trembling for a long while, the arms finally fell to the sides slowly and reached at the girl's slender waist before they gently hugged her.

The girl had hugged the devil tightly and the devil eventually returned it with a gentle embrace that should never have happened.

It was clearly a mindless and emotionless devil that was acting on instinct so why did that happen?

Or could it be said that gently treating the girl in his arms had also become an instinct of the silver-haired devil?

Or could it be said that the deep emotions of the girl had reformed the heartless devil?

Herat couldn't figure out the answer. Finally, it could only come to a conclusion—the greatness of love had created an unbelievable miracle.

"Woof!"

With that thought in mind, Herat could not help but give a howl that lacked savageness.

If it had a mirror in front of it, it would see the expression it had—it was a foolish smile that could not be any more foolish.

In front of it, in the 'hell' that was strewn with blood and minced meat, the golden-haired girl and the silver-haired 'devil' were hugging each other tightly. The black beams smashed incessantly into that invisible barrier as they constantly produced sparks. The monsters that surrounded them layer after layer trembled without approaching. They did not dare to disturb the girl and the 'devil' that was reveling in an embrace.

The setting sun's last light rouged a beautiful tinge to the firmaments.

The duo did not separate from their embrace as they waited for the impending night and the tomorrow that was no longer very distant.

In front of such a beautiful scene, the bachelor dog, Herat, could do nothing but laugh foolishly.

Chapter 467: Because She's A Goddess, Her Love Was More Submissive Than Mortals

Because she's a goddess, her love was more submissive than mortals

Herat could only laugh foolishly because it was only a bachelor dog that had yearned for love despite having never experienced it before.

When Kali saw this scene, she was unsure of what expression to deliver. That was because among the lovebirds that were using their lives to express their fondness for each other was her boyfriend.

Generally speaking, to an 'old witch' that had lived for ten thousand years, a so-called 'boyfriend' might be akin to a dessert one would occasionally taste. It was a dessert that 'could be changed once she was sick of it' or 'abandoned once her appetite changed'.

But to this date, the ten-thousand-year-old 'old witch' still maintained her virginity. The boyfriend she had was her first love in the extended ten thousand years of her life. Then, this 'dessert' would obviously become something she did not want to share with others. It was so precious that she would have to consider carefully before tasting it.

At that moment, the cake that Kali had yet to enjoy after storing away for ten thousand years had a mouthful bitten off by another

person.

"Hey, how can that happen?"

"I came first!"

Kali's cheekbones raised as she nursed a grievance like a frustrated wife.

This beautiful pixie that was like a goddess most of the time acted like a teenage girl reveling in love when facing her first instance of it.

She remembered that night in Riko's house. In the process of Shi Xiaobai testing his superpowers, he had 'accidentally' touched the softness in front of Riko's chest. That had caused her to feel pangs of jealousy.

In order to affirm her 'sovereign rights', she had shamelessly kissed Shi Xiaobai on the lips.

Although that was a slight peck that separated almost immediately after it happened, it was her first kiss.

As a first kiss, that kiss lacked the atmosphere and was too rushed. It was filled with regret...

But because it was imperfect that accentuated its beauty, making

it an indelible memory. Although she lost a tiny bit of her strength as a holy pixie because of the first kiss, it was still worth it...

Alright, all that was said above was just Kali's self-consolation. She had to admit that the first kiss was too impulsive.

Due to the impulse that stemmed from a 'jealousy' that she did not realize, she had paid the price of having a lacking first kiss and the loss of a portion of her strength. That was the truth of the matter.

So...

She could not be jealous!

She could not be jealous!

She absolutely could not be jealous!

"How can that be possible..."

Kali sighed. She felt her chest feeling tangy. Her throat was slightly dry and her heart felt winced in an unbearable discomfort.

She constantly told herself—she might lose her life because of the fourth apocalypse, so how could she have the right to prevent members from the opposite sex from pursuing him? Even though the girl that would eventually be by his side might not be her, it

was already a perfect ending if she could create a world where he obtained happiness.

She was increasingly turning vexed, but when she saw the boy and girl that were hugging without separating while standing on the blood-stained ground and the sanguine dusk, the look in her eyes turned into a 'hidden bitterness'.

"The power of love is so magnificent. I'm so envious of it. However, I'm somewhat sad for you. What sort of tragic feelings do you have as you witness that beautiful scene of being betrayed by that unfaithful boy?"

A charming voice with a sharp tone suddenly sounded.

Kali suddenly came to a realization that her 'projection' was plastered across the chessboard right in front of the Infernal Queen. Her melancholic and pouting expression clearly revealed the bitterness in her heart.

To a girl who was feeling jealous, the Infernal Queen's 'mocking laugh' was no doubt a critical blow.

But unfortunately, Kali was feeling jealous mostly because of regret that the female lead in the scene was not her. She did not feel overly envious about the beautiful scene.

Although this pixie that had time stall on her in her pubescent stage did not have big breasts, she was broadminded. It was so

large that it could accept everything of the person she loved—the good, the ugly, the brightness, the darkness...everything. She could accept everything with a smile.

A true goddess might have the additional petulance of a girl, but she would absolutely not become a goddess that devolved into a base goddess.

The Infernal Queen's attempt to create strife failed to create any negative effects. Instead, it made Kali's mind calm down.

"My mood is indeed somewhat terrible, but there is no way it can be termed 'tragic'. Instead, it should be said that I'm feeling somewhat disgruntled...My intentions are definitely not inferior to that girl. No, no! My love is definitely deeper than hers...It's clearly the case, but at this moment, the person moving him by 'making a sacrifice while disregarding her life' isn't me. For me not to be able to accomplish that...makes me feel a little disgruntled...that's all..."

Kali's calm voice quivered slightly.

The words she said came from the bottom of her heart. She did not deny that she was feeling terrible. She even admitted that the disgruntlement she felt caused the hint of jealousy in her words. This ability to directly understand her heart highlighted her traits as a goddess of being diametrically opposed to being cold and hostile.

Unfortunately, the Infernal Queen who heard her words was not

someone she could have a heart-to-heart talk.

The Infernal Queen did not abandon the useless act of causing strife. She once again expressed words that were filled with malevolence.

"I can completely understand the disgruntlement you are feeling. You, who can dominate the world if you so wished, has injected all your feelings for a mere mortal, and all in exchange for his unfaithfulness and betrayal... Despite already having such an outstanding lover like you, he still shamelessly remains intimate with other girls. This is completely...sigh. I can completely understand your disgruntlement..."

"Enough."

Kali finally voiced out to interrupt the Infernal Queen by saying, "You have even made a mistake about the direction in which you are trying to misrepresent, so don't continue this childish act of sowing discord. About the accusation of him being unfaithful, recall well. You were unable to successfully seduce him despite stripping, so you should know better than me how impossible it is for him to be unfaithful, right?"

That sentence was a counter check on the figurative chessboard. It caused the Infernal Queen's expression to immediately turn ugly.

With her irresistible appearance, not only did she fail to seduce the boy while standing stark naked in front of him, it had been

completely ineffective.

And at that moment, that hateful blond girl had managed to move his 'heart' with that male outfit that lacked any feminine charm.

Such a thing...no matter how one thought about it...

It was truly something worth being disgruntled about!

The Infernal Queen felt somewhat hurt, but she did not mind continuing the mutual damage onto each other. She said with a sneer, "Indeed, that boy's upstanding is extraordinary. It made me once suspect if he has an abnormal sexual orientation or if he is impotent...but even if his body did not cheat, it is equally unfaithful by having someone else in his heart. Despite having such a perfect lover like you, his heart was stirred by another girl. Are you truly capable of saying that it's not an act of betrayal?"

Kali said with a chuckle, "If such an excellent girl fails to move Xiaobai after devoting herself in such a silly manner, I would begin to suspect if he really had a 'heart'."

The Infernal Queen responded with a scoff, "Isn't what you are saying the excuses unfaithful men often give? Think carefully, do you think that there are any differences with hypocritical excuses like 'it's not because I was unfaithful, but because that girl was too excellent. She is so excellent that any man will fall for' and gross explanations like 'I didn't want to push her down, but that she took off her clothes by herself and threw me onto the bed. I only

committed a mistake that any man would'? That boy did not commit the sin of the latter, but didn't he commit the mistakes of the former? Not only are you not blaming him for his unfaithfulness, you are instead helping find such an excuse that is unbearably common. Why is that so?"

The relation of love to one's heart and body was an everlasting topic.

From the Infernal Queen's point of view, 'the love of many in one's heart' and the 'cheating using one's body' were equally abominable.

To the Infernal Queen, 'her act of taking the initiative to strip and push Shi Xiaobai down, resulting in Shi Xiaobai failing to resist the temptation and have sex with her' was not much different from 'Dawn Li's silly devotion that made Shi Xiaobai fail to withstand her passionate love, eventually falling for her'. The only difference was that she had failed while Dawn Li had succeeded.

However, from Kali's point of view, these two matters were not considered one and the same.

Kali pricked up her eyebrows and said, "The way you view matters really suits the superficial essence of a 'program'. I'll temporarily ignore the reasons behind why you had equated the two scenarios, but have you ever thought of vast differences between the 'shameless seduction of a woman with slightly better looks' and the 'devotion of a girl with limitless future to the point of disregarding her life'? All you did was strip and spread your legs,

while that girl was willing to sacrifice her life for him. How can you compare the two as if they were the same? Your method might be effective against lustful male scum, but to Xiaobai, that 'cheap body' and her 'precious sincerity' is completely incomparable."

Their value system was different, resulting in them having judgments on the same matter to be worlds apart.

Kali's point of view was completely opposite to the Infernal Queen's.

The Infernal Queen could not help but bite her lower lip as she fumed secretly in her heart. The present situation regarding the debate with 'mutual damage' seemed to leave her 'covered in scars' despite her relentless bombardment.

Woman with slightly better looks?

Shameless seduction?

Cheap body?

They were accusations that were infuriating, but there was no way to retort against it!

Yes, she had indeed stripped herself easily. She had casually spread her legs for that boy, but as a living creature that had lived for thousands of years, would she have any sense of shame towards such a matter?

Why was there a need to disparage such a perfectly justified act into being such a cheap act?

The Infernal Queen laughed from her vexation and said, "You are right. To beings like us with nearly eternal life, 'stripping and spreading the legs' is indeed not something difficult, but sacrificing one's life is something nearly impossible. Your understanding isn't wrong, but to use our special existence as the foundation to build on, wouldn't that appear to be an overgeneralization?"

"No, no, no. It's not 'we'..."

When Kali heard that, she immediately waved her hand and said, "It's not 'we'. It's only something very easy for you. To me, I'll rather die than do such an embarrassing act. Do you understand? It's not that 'devoting one's body' and 'devoting one's sincerity' is not equivalent, but it's the value behind the devotion process. In summary, that cheap body of yours and that previous sincerity of hers are incomparable. If a girl who devoted her body had remained chaste for ten thousand years, then the devotion she exhibits is naturally considered a 'precious body'."

When Kali said that, her face gradually turned ruddy.

For some odd reason, her mind could not help but imagine her devoting her body to Shi Xiaobai. The girl that maintained her chastity was naturally referring to herself. However, such an embarrassing scene was something she found it hard to accept even when she imagined it.

It was not that she was so 'naive' that she did not dare imagine it, but because 'chastity' had an extremely important meaning for her.

Once she lost her 'chastity', the power that the World Tree endowed her would dissolve and disappear. Her strength would drastically decrease. Having been burdened with the heavy responsibility of avenging the pixie race, she had lived to this day, so strength was more precious to her.

Therefore, from Kali's point of view, 'devoting her chastity to Shi Xiaobai' was much harder than 'sacrificing her life for Shi Xiaobai'.

There were no essential differences between the devotion of heart and body. However, the importance it held for the devotee determined its value.

This was Kali's understanding.

However, it sounded like undisguised mockery to the Infernal Queen.

Why did the words 'cheap body' make her so frustrated?

Indeed, as a program that attained sentience and will from having no 'heart', the act of 'intercourse' was something extremely natural. It was not something that needed to be fussed over, but, but...

The Infernal Queen said a frustrated sentence that did not sound convincing at all.

An indescribable frustration surged through her heart. It prompted her to reveal her true thoughts on this matter that she did not care about to begin with.

"I used my body to seduce the boy purely as an act of revenge for your domineering attitude."

However, Kali was just too strong. She was so strong that she could not think of any other acts of revenge. Therefore, she had chosen the lowliest of all lowly strategies.

"To me, intercourse is not something that gives any pleasure."

Although she had her own will, her innate nature as a program could not be changed. She did not have the desires like other living creatures. Therefore to her, there was no need for intercourse. She did not gain any happiness from intercourse.

"Therefore, this is the first time I'm doing it!"

Although she did not mind the act of intercourse, she would not be bored enough to have intercourse with other biological creatures since she did not need intercourse, nor did she derive any pleasure from it.

Using intercourse as an act of revenge might be something completely trivial to her, but up to date, she never had the need to do so. This was the first time she encountered an existence as powerful as Kali who loved a weak biological creature at the Psionic Mortal Realm.

Therefore, this was really the first time she was doing it!

"Furthermore...furthermore, this body has never been tainted. It's a genuine virgin..."

So...

"So, I have never had intercourse, and according to your explanation, I have also maintained a so-called 'chastity'. It's not some 'cheap body'!"

The Infernal Queen did not know why she needed to provide such an 'insipid' explanation, but she felt greatly relieved after saying those words.

Was the reason behind the sense of frustration due to the vilification of the explanation that seemed like the truth?

In summary, if 'chastity' that she did not place any importance to became an indicator with value, she would definitely not fall into the abyss of 'cheapness'. As such, proving that she was 'chaste' would not be a meaningless matter.

With this thought in mind, the Infernal Queen suffused a composed smile.

Kali never expected that the Infernal Queen, who had 'no sense of shame', would go to such great lengths to explain herself. After a moment of stupefaction, she smiled with a shake of the head, "Alright, let's consider it as you preserving your 'chastity'. But even so, this does not change my evaluation of you. That's because your cheapness is not dependent on your body being untainted, but that you completely do not care about the person you...have intercourse with. Just to infuriate me, you could sacrifice your body. So how can this 'chastity' that you don't even care about be considered 'precious'? The price you pay might be 'chastity', but no matter how you put it, it is just 'cheap chastity'."

The Infernal Queen's smile immediately froze. Her intense retort had only been returned with a light answer that was so substantial that she had no way to retort.

Kali had only changed the words 'cheap body' to 'cheap chastity'.

It was as if a sharp knife had stabbed into her, tearing apart her virtual walls she constructed using 'chastity'.

What indignation!

She had never felt so indignant before!

She had never felt so helpless either!

"Then..."

The Infernal Queen said at a loss, "Then...Then if 'chastity' is as important as 'life', would it...would it not be cheap anymore?"

Kali faltered slightly before saying with a nod, "Erh...it can be understood in that way."

Kali had a nagging feeling that something was odd, but what the Infernal Queen comprehended did not seem erroneous. Although from a normal person's perspective, life should be something of greater importance, it was not like there were no women in the human world who treated their 'chastity' with greater importance than their 'life'...

Forget it, for such a creature that lacked morals like the Infernal Queen to have such an understanding probably only had every advantage and no drawbacks, right?

With this thought in mind, Kali said seriously, "You can only devote your chastity only when encountering someone you deeply love who you are 'willing to sacrifice your life for'. Only then would such 'chastity' be 'valuable'. Do you understand?"

The Infernal Queen nodded her head as she pondered over it. She secretly took note of Kali's words and buried it deep into her heart. A composed and seductive smile once again suffused across the corners of her lips.

Then, a drop of cold sweat oozed out of her forehead.

Hey, wait a moment!

What was going on now?

In the beginning, wasn't she using the unfaithfulness of Shi Xiaobai to deepen the jealousy-spurred 'wounds' of Kali?

Why did it become this strange situation of her being educated?

After all, whether her body and chastity were cheap or not had nothing to do with whether Shi Xiaobai was considered unfaithful or not, right?

When did the topic of conversation slowly shift?

The Infernal Queen turned increasingly vexed the further she thought. Looking at the gorgeous face which had a relieved look, like she had taught someone well, projected in the chessboard, she nearly burst out in angry tears.

How infuriating!

What happened to the mutual damage?

Why was she the only one hurt!?

The Infernal Queen's red lips twitched slightly as she used a stiffened tone to say, "I understand now. Compared to that blond girl's sincerity, my naked body back then was indeed not worth mentioning. But! But so what? Was it certain that by devoting her precious sincerity, it was taken for granted that the boy would be moved? Was it certain that if the boy's love was split into two, you wouldn't feel sad because of it? Was it certain that as you watch him and her embrace each other tightly, without separating up to this point, you wouldn't feel upset about it? Was it certain..."

Without any consideration for logic or excuses, the Infernal Queen began to use 'was it' as a counter attack after she turned shame into anger.

Along with the Infernal Queen's counter, Kali's expression turned increasingly cold.

This had caught the Infernal Queen by surprise for her unreasonable counters had turned effective.

That azure blue eye gradually turned dark and dull.

It isn't an illusion!

The Infernal Queen immediately laughed.

So that was the reason. She had chosen the wrong method from

the very beginning.

The pixie who was almost a 'sage' could indeed accept everything about the boy, but because of her deep love for him, it was impossible for her to not have the desire to 'monopolize' him.

She must have also wished that the boy would belong only to her.

That jealous expression from before was not an illusion.

The Infernal Queen gave a charming smile. She finally found a weakness that could be pulverized from the nearly perfect pixie.

"Even if Shi Xiaobai has...intercourse with that girl, would you really not mind at all?"

By using a gentle tone to forcefully say the sharp word of 'intercourse', the Infernal Queen had given Kali a brutal strike ruthlessly.

"How is it possible..."

Kali's dull eyes flashed a look of melancholy. She pouted her lips and muttered to herself in an inaudible manner, "How can I not mind..."

The Infernal Queen's smile immediately turned richer.

Her original goal was not to 'sow discord' because she knew that the chances of success would be extremely low. She only believed that it would be extreme vindication for her if she was able to make the azure blue pupils that resembled a sea of stars reveal a hint of distress.

But she never expected that a goddess could reveal such a frail state that looked so heartbreaking.

This...

It truly...felt too good!

The grief expressed by a goddess nearly overwhelmed the Infernal Queen with euphoria.

I want it!

I want to tear and destroy the mask of the goddess!

I want to violently trample on the pure feelings of a girl!

This twisted desire was suddenly born in a very natural way from the will of a program that should not have had any desires.

The Infernal Queen used a charming voice to say in a manner filled with emotions like she was weeping and grumbling, "Too pitiful. You are really...too pitiful. You clearly do not wish that his

body is touched by other women, but you watched with your own eyes how they embrace each other to the point of sinking their bodies into one another...You clearly only wish to be his only one, but you can only resign yourself to fate and accept the fact that another girl had entered his heart...You clearly wish to reserve your 'valuable chastity', but he might very well have intercourse with other women in the future, leaving behind a 'cheap body' for you...Ah, this is too sorrowful. It's really not worth it!"

The Infernal Queen's voice made it seem like her body was filled with deep emotions of grief and anger.

Kali sighed and said coldly, "You are right. I do not wish that he touches other women. I wish to be his only one, and similarly, I care about his 'chastity'. But I will not make my wish turn into ugly selfishness. Because compared to all of this, what I cannot accept is...to have such ugly jealousy that I become something he dislikes."

Once again, the purple-haired pixie did not put up a false front by lying nor did she avoid the topic. Instead, she openly admitted her wishes and expressed her moving thoughts directly.

Compared to her wishes, what was more important was to not become something he disliked.

Such a love...

The Infernal Queen said in disbelief, "Isn't...isn't your love too submissive?"

It was too submissive.

Compared to her loftiness as a 'goddess', such a love was just too submissive!

Kali smiled faintly as she shook her head and said, "Love between two parties is never equal. There would always be a side who will love the other more. From the moment Xiaobai 'snatched' the evil seed of corruption, I was completely defeated in this comparison of love... From the feelings known as 'like' to the fear of 'not wishing to be disliked by him and not lose him', what else can I do but to carefully and submissively taste these sweet fragments dipped in glass?"

It was impossible for love to be complete happiness.

The pixie who clearly fell in love for the first time had the understanding that many couples lacked. Due to the loss of her family and race and having spent ten thousand years in loneliness, she would be horrified over the tiny possibility of losing the boy she had met by sheer chance.

Even if her love was even more submissive, she could not be disliked by him.

"Idiot!"

The Infernal Queen angrily responded to the pixie's concept of

love with vitriol.

"What do you mean that there are no options!?"

The Infernal Queen did not know why she had a baffling sense of frustration rise up in her heart. Furthermore, this sense of frustration felt like it was boiling, as though it was about to burn her chest.

"You are too foolish!"

The Infernal Queen finally abandoned the last guise of respect with a switch of her tone.

She angrily said, "All you need to do is stay by his side and declare your sovereign rights to him. With your looks and your strength, there is no woman in this world that has the courage to snatch him from you! With your charms, all you need is to give the boy a tiny perk and he will definitely not be able to extricate himself from his infatuation towards you. It would impossible for him to have his heart stirred by others! In your so-called 'comparison of love', you can cause a complete reversal going from defeat to victory. Why do you admit defeat so easily? Why!? Are you really such a fool!?"

Ah, she understood. She understood the reason why she was so angry.

That was because the pixie in front of her was perfect in everything except for her pubescent body. It was something that

even she as a 'program' could not replicate. It was an existence she could only look up to and feel jealous of!

Her beauty and her strength, her every gesture and smile, made her doubt the bias of the Creator.

But she, who was a favorite of the Creator, had revealed such a despondent expression for a weak human. She had revealed such a submissive state!

Such a preposterous fact was infuriating!

Towards the Infernal Queen's anger and the aggressive tone she had, Kali could only smile faintly. She did not make any retorts.

Indeed, just as the Infernal Queen had said, if she could stay by Shi Xiaobai's side all the time, even Dawn Li would not have any chances.

But unfortunately, she could not do so.

"He and I were two trajectories that should have never been able to cross...Every intersection that happened out of an accident is illogical. If I were to selfishly linger around him, how would his fate be distorted when I have no choice but to leave him? Therefore, what happens now is already sufficient."

An analogy that was obscure and difficult to comprehend was actually describing a simple and direct reason.

A goddess and a mortal's encounter might seem beautiful, but the destiny of their intersection was cruel.

If a mortal fell in love with a goddess, he would be infatuated with the goddess. He would rely on her or even be possessive of her. The goddess might have to leave the mortal world one day because of a mission she had no choice but to bear the burden of. Then, how would that mortal's destiny change?

It would be pointless grieving over it. No amount of pain and sadness could alleviate the problem. One could only hate himself for being weak and curse at his own submission. As one could not find a substitute for a goddess, one would drown in the beautiful memories as he lived alone the rest of his life. That was the destiny of a mortal.

Therefore...

By maintaining an illusionary distance or by positioning the goddess as a beautiful bubble that could burst at any time, it would make it more acceptable when the mortal were to lose her. Only then would the mortal not be as sad...

Kali did not want to become a goddess, but Shi Xiaobai and her were never residents of the same world.

There was bound to be a day she would leave his world and return to her own. And the world that belonged to her was a world he would never reach regardless of the pursuits he would embark

on.

Therefore, in order to reduce the grief he would bear when the moment came and in order to reduce the destined pain, she could not increase even a tiny inkling...of lovely memories between them.

For her, that was enough.

She was already satisfied with the present situation.

"I'm already satisfied to be able to see him from afar."

This was probably the sweetest expression of love in the world, but also simultaneously the bitterest expression of love in the world.

Even a goddess, no, because she was a goddess, her love was more submissive than mortals.

"Is that so? Is that really enough?"

The Infernal Queen found it inexplicable. She could not grasp the way Kali thought.

Perhaps it was because she was born in the cold 'program', so she had no way to understand what such warm 'sacrifice' was.

As such, she was feeling infuriated.

The Infernal Queen said with a sneer, "Should you be called foolish or naive? Love without partnership will one day lose its original flavor. If you continue watching him from afar, there will be a day when the memories fade away. He will no longer love you! Now, he is only unfaithful, but if this carries on, the distance between the two of you will result in him having a complete...complete change of heart! At that moment, you will really lose him!"

By being too submissive in her love, it would instead result in the matter she feared the most to happen. Would it really end up making her lose him?

This possibility was something Kali had never thought of.

However, every time he felt the grief of losing her, wouldn't that also mean that there was an additional possibility of him not loving her?

Ah, why did she not think of such a simple logic?

No, if he were Shi Xiaobai, he would not so easily turn unfaithful!

But...

But...even Shi Xiaobai could possibly turn unfaithful, right?

Kali's eyes flashed a perplexed look.

The worry of making him sad, as well as the fear of losing him, there was no way to tell which side was heavier when they were mixed together.

"Enough...Enough...This is something between him and me...It has nothing to do with you."

As Kali said that, she categorically rejected this conversation that had finally wavered her.

The Infernal Queen's eyes constricted slightly as she could not help but clench her fist.

She had noticed a look of despondency flash in the girl's eyes.

Using a forceful but unreasonable method of 'it has nothing to do with you' was no doubt the limpest of surrenders.

In this debate of 'mutual damage', it looked like she had clinched the final victory.

But why?

Why did she not have the slightest inkling of joy?

Why was she filled with anger instead?

The Infernal Queen lowered her head and gave a stiff smile, "Then, this conversation can't carry on?"

"Yes...the happy chat ends here."

Kali sighed and suddenly her tone returned to normal. A blizzard-like cold voice emitted out of her soft, red lips. "Let's return to reality. That stupid bull that you reared has regenerated itself after ten minutes of hard work. It would fully recover in another ten seconds. I believe your nonsense should also come to an end? Take the opportunity in which no one is injured and end this joke that has gone too far. You and I might be able to become 'friends', if not..."

Kali's words pulled the Infernal Queen back into reality.

The conversation that appeared calm on the surface was, in fact, a dangerous situation that could explode at any time.

At that very moment, in the mountain valley of the Silent Desolate Lands, seven trial-takers from the human world remained motionless because their shadows were captured by the Shadow Wraith.

Earthbound Yaksha, which had nothing to do, was napping while leaning against a rock cliff. Although it had yet to deal the fatal

blow, in the past few minutes, Field Marshal Awesomo, who had been nearly ground into meat pulp, was finally about to recover to its perfect state after a slow self-recovery process.

The terror that had been brewing for ten minutes was about to descend!

How would Field Marshal Awesomo, who had been brutally dealt with, brutally abuse the seven trial-takers over the accumulation of humiliation and anger, especially that azure-dressed girl that had diced him into pieces? The unnerving scene that was about to happen was something unimaginable even if one tried.

This was a cruel situation that was approaching despair.

Kali could not save them because the moment she made a move, the Infernal Queen would be able to activate the self-destruct sequence. Shi Xiaobai, who was in the array world, would not be able to survive.

Shi Xiaobai similarly could not save them because he was a 'silver-haired demon' at the very moment. To repress the urge to kill the girl in his arms already took him all his strength.

Dawn was even more unlikely to be able to save them. She was unwilling to depart the boy's embrace, so how could she have any intentions of returning to that world?

The friendly forces on their side were no longer able to give a

helping hand.

At that very moment, the only person that could prevent the tragedy from happening was the Infernal Queen, who was the enemy!

Kali was helpless. The only thing she could do was persuade the Infernal Queen to end this 'joke that had gone too far' and persuade her with the sincerity of 'becoming friends'.

However, how could the Infernal Queen, who had painstakingly machinated this scheme, compromise after forcing Kali and the rookies into such a state of despair?

"Becoming your friend...is truly an irresistible enticement..."

The Infernal Queen smiled coquettishly. The sincerity of becoming 'friends' had indeed moved her.

Unfortunately, the present her was enraged. She was extremely furious!

Therefore...

"Please forgive me, but I reject it."

"That's because compared to becoming your friend, I'm more interested in knowing...what expression you would give to

apologize to him for not being able to save the boy's friends."

"That would definitely be the most beautiful scene in my opinion."

...

Due to her jealousy, indignation, as well as anger that came from anticipation, she ripped the possibility of a peaceful outcome to shreds.

The shattered pieces fluttered like snowflakes descending down to the ground.

It was ashen and ice-cold—just like the soon-to-happen tragedy of utmost cruelty that no one could salvage.

Chapter 468: The World Without The Minotaur

The world in the seventh level was apparently not on the same timeline as the array world. As it was already evening in the array world, the world of the seventh level was far from welcoming in the dusk.

Although the glaring sun was no longer as hot as it was at noon, the rays of light it dawned down onto the mortal world was still as resplendent as ever. The sunlight penetrated the holes in the clouds, illuminating the land fully.

Inside the vast and empty basin, there was not a single spot that escaped the sun's illumination other than the periphery regions near the rock cliffs. And because of that, the seven young boys and girls within the basin had their 'shadows' imprisoned.

If a large mass of clouds floated across the sky to temporarily shade the sunlight, it would cause the 'shadows' rooted to the ground to temporarily disappear. Only then might they be saved.

Unfortunately, such a miracle did not happen. During these short but seemingly endless ten minutes, not a single miracle happened no matter how much they were praying.

Therefore, this story that was stained by an atmosphere of despair did not seem like there would be any reversal happening. It was finally reaching the closing curtain of this tragedy.

Field Marshal Awesomo's flesh that had been diced to bits were like maggots. It squirmed inch by inch before slowly merging together. After ten minutes of hard work, the pieces of meat were finally about to be fully restored as a whole in another ten seconds.

This self-recovery process was filled with repugnance—severed intestines were gluing themselves together, shattered organs were slowly merging together, sticky blood was squeezing back into the dried up blood vessels, foul brain fluid seeped into pale white bones...Such a process that looked like a reversed dissection was even more sickening and tragic than the dismemberment scene.

And accompanying this process was an atmosphere that was constantly brewing with horror and despair.

The more miserable Field Marshal Awesomo's restoration process was, the more brutal his revenge would be.

Even the thirty-thousand-strong audience could sense the dangerous aura exuded from the basin. The Celestials could not sit still because one of the seven unfortunate souls that were about to be devoured by Field Marshal Awesomo's vengeance was their Celestial King.

However, the stirring among the Celestials was completely useless. That was because, since an unknown period of time ago, the basin demarcated by the cliffs was already enveloped by an invisible domain. It isolated the thirty-thousand-strong audience outside the basin.

After all, the mastermind behind this scheme was the assessment program who had full control over the land of trials, the Infernal Queen. Be it the Celestials, Infernals, or the Transcendents, they were just puppet-like existences she created. Naturally, they lacked the strength to interfere with her plans. They did not even have the right to disturb the trajectory towards despair by even a centimeter.

All they could do was watch helplessly as Field Marshal Awesomo's perfectly recovered body pick its head up from the ground before placing it on his neck with a clean cut.

The bones connected with each other while flesh began exchanging tissue. When the final wound disappeared, it would mark the beginning of an extremely brutal revenge.

"Is the boring and meaningless prelude finally about to end?" Earthbound Yaksha opened its eyes and cast its gaze onto the gigantic shadow that spread across the ground. Its voice sounded somewhat impatient.

It had abided to Shadow Wraith's arrangements, it did not kill Speechless and Mu Lengxi, who made it somewhat worried. It was not entirely because it wanted to allow Field Marshal Awesomo to vent his anger, nor was it because of the Shadow Wraith, who was the Level Lord of the ninth level, had the right to 'order' it.

It was because Earthbound Yaksha was a warrior that reveled in bloodshed before it became an evil spirit from hell. The vestiges of

a warrior's honor prevented it from finding depraved delight in attacking opponents who could not fight back.

However, allowing enemies that it could kill immediately live on for another ten minutes seemed like an extremely foolish thing to do. Even though the seven trial-takers were restrained by Shadow Wraith's 'Shadow Shackles', who could be certain that nothing unexpected would happen despite the odds of a reversal happening was infinitesimal?

What made Earthbound Yaksha most vexed and impatient was that it knew the true motives behind Shadow Wraith's actions.

"Yes, the prelude has ended, so let the dirge of despair begin!"

Shadow Wraith let out a hoarse, sinister chuckle.

"Oh, heh heh...Brother Yaksha, don't you know that the prelude is extremely important? Compared to passing a death sentence directly, by sparing them with a pittance of time to live, letting the remnants of hope gradually vanish, their feelings of despair will gradually accumulate. They will hysterically pray for a miracle, and as the timespan of their prayers slows down, it will begin brewing an endless terror. Finally, when the flames of despair spark an explosion, it will be the most beautiful dirge when it reaches the climax! Therefore, the prelude is extremely important."

Shadow Wraith's voice was filled with evil delight.

Earthbound Yaksha revealed a look that indicated it had expected it. It said in a cold voice, "Thy evil delight is something that I cannot agnize even after ten thousand years. In mine own point of view, nay matter how weak the opponent is, nay matter how much advantage exists, excessive arrogance and carelessness can result in disaster for oneself. Besides..."

Earthbound Yaksha turned its head to scan the seven trial-takers on the desolate lands. Its expression turned uglier.

Even though they could not move or their repeated struggles had failed after a long ten minutes, the seven humans, be it that carefree shield youth, or that frail looking silver-haired girl, none of them had eyes that seemed dull despite Field Marshal Awesomo's revenge and torture was about to descend upon them.

Their eyes had remained bright with a sparkle to them. They did not look like eyes people would have in a state of utter despair. No, it should be said that their eyes were clearly filled with hope and fighting spirit!

They were enemies that definitely could not be treated carelessly. Furthermore, it and the two other idiots had given them ten minutes without noticing it.

"Enough! Foolish Ox, apace maketh thy moveth!"

Earthbound Yaksha bellowed angrily. While it was rejoicing over the fact that nothing unexpected had happened in the past ten minutes, it also began having a wariness like what a serious

warrior should have.

"No hurry."

Field Marshal Awesomo cracked his neck that he had rejoined. Immediately the crackling of his bones locking in place was heard. As he picked up the battle ax on the ground with a sneer, he turned his head towards the azure-dressed girl that was glaring hatefully at him from afar.

"What's the rush? We still have lots and lots of time. This Field Marshal wants them to experience utter torture, giving them a living death!"

As Field Marshal Awesomo said that with a tone that could barely repress the wrath in it, he slowly walked towards the azure-dressed girl that was at his mercy.

"Killeth those folk immediately. Maketh haste and stop wasting time!" Earthbound Yaksha frowned. Field Marshal Awesomo seemed bent on slowly torturing the seven trial-takers to death. If he was allowed free reign to do so, it would definitely be a waste of even more time. There might be unexpected situations that crop up. After all, the seven trial-takers did not seem like they had given up from the look in their eyes.

Arrogance and carelessness were sources of evil that could land them in trouble easily. They had to nip the threat in the bud!

As a warrior many years ago, it had died under the hands of an enemy that it thought it had killed. How could it make the same mistake?

Earthbound Yaksha's eyes squinted as he slowly unsheathed a samurai sword.

"Earthbound Yaksha, hold your blade! This Field Marshal advises you not to underestimate my anger. Did you not see the pain and humiliation that This Field Marshal experienced just now? If the cruelest of tortures isn't used, how can This Field Marshal vent the anger in his heart?"

Field Marshal Awesomo growled angrily at Earthbound Yaksha. Not long ago, it had been trapped in a tiny space. All the air had been robbed of it. That sense of despair of not being able to breathe and the terror of impending doom was still fresh on his mind. The hatred he had could no longer be described by words.

One could see the instantaneous struggle in Earthbound Yaksha's eyes before it finally let out a sigh.

"It's up to thee."

Earthbound Yaksha sheathed its samurai sword and closed its eyes with flagging interest. It leaned against the cliff to continue its nap. Regardless of the matter, it had a relationship with the foolish ox for ten thousand years. Even though their relationship appeared odious on the surface, it was impossible that it did not feel a thing for the ox.

Furthermore, although it was somewhat wary, it did not believe that the seven humans had any chance of retaliation. That was because it too could not escape Shadow Wraith's 'Shadow Shackles' if it were in their shoes.

It was not worth it to sever all ties with the foolish ox for an unrealistic notion of wariness.

Earthbound Yaksha's compromise made Field Marshal Awesomo release a delighted smile. He turned his head and continued proceeding forward at a speed that wasn't considered fast, but in less than ten seconds, he was already in front of Sunless.

With less than a meter separating him from her, all he needed to do was swing his ax, and the girl would be beheaded, splattering blood everywhere.

But at that moment, looking down at those calm, amber eyes that were filled with killing intent, he was unsure what he should do next.

He was always inclined to enter a frenzied massacre while enjoying the thrill of splitting his enemies into two. However, he did not have much expertise when it came to torturing techniques.

It wanted to make the wretch in front of it be tormented by the cruelest torture. Typical acts of torture could not satisfy him; hence, he needed to treat her carefully like a treasure. He was momentarily unsure what he should do next.

"Hey, Wraith, you were once the prison governor of the underworld. You are proficient in means of torture when it comes to convicts. Can you teach This Field Marshal? This Field Marshal finally understands today that torturous torment is an important art. Due to the rage I have, it's not something that can be vented even with slaughtering."

Field Marshal Awesomo turned its body to look at the shadow on the ground and asked a horrific question.

"Heh heh heh..."

Shadow Wraith was clearly pleased to indulge Field Marshal Awesomo. It said with a sinister laugh, "Compared to physical pain, mental torture is even crueler. Therefore, constantly trampling on their dignity, letting them feel a humiliation that cannot be endured, making them yearn for an immediate death, letting them suffer a mental breakdown...That is true punishment!"

Field Marshal Awesomo clearly did not understand the underlying meaning behind Shadow Wraith's words. He said in impatience, "What does it mean? Can you tell This Field Marshal what should be done directly?"

Shadow Wraith said with a scoff, "You can't even understand that? You are really a...Forget it. I'll just make it clear. The human you want to torture is a young girl. She is equivalent to an unwed female minotaur in your minotaur race. To an unwed female

minotaur, what do you think is the most unbearable humiliation?"

To a foolish ox-like Field Marshal Awesomo, such a direct analogy could not be any better.

How should an unwed female minotaur be tormented?

Field Marshal Awesomo pondered for a moment before he immediately understood Shadow Wraith's intentions. He suddenly widened his eyes as he could not help but reveal a sinister smile.

Hence, he immediately turned around.

His hands had let go of his battle ax. With a twisted pose, he stretched his arm towards the azure-dressed girl a meter away from him!

An indescribable scene that should not have happened in a passionate novel about posturing might have been created by Field Marshal Awesomo. With his identity as a minotaur, he would NTR the male protagonist, so what else could stir the blood of experienced readers with such fetishes?

But!

How can the purity-obsessed author, who deliberately prevented one of the female protagonists from having any scenes with other male supporting actors, allow the female protagonist to be tainted in any way?

Very unfortunately, the antagonist was destined to not even touch a strand of the female protagonist's hair!

Therefore, rejoice, because, at that moment, the arms Field Marshal Awesomo stretched out midway paused in mid-air suddenly. His body that he turned came to a complete halt as well!

"Huh!?"

Shadow Wraith exclaimed in disbelief.

At the same time, they saw Field Marshal Awesomo, whose face had a hideous grin remained stiff on his face, had a fine crack appear from the top of his head. Immediately following that, including his head, his body gradually separated into two pieces as they fell to the ground.

"Slam!"

Field Marshal Awesomo's massive body had crumbled to the ground in two cleaved halves.

And in Shadow Wraith's vision, the azure-dressed girl that had previously been blocked by Field Marshal Awesomo's massive body slowly appeared.

At that moment, the azure-dressed girl was holding a sword with

both hands as she raised it high towards the sky. Visible black energy began spreading out from the tip of her silver sword like vines and it formed a spiraling sword energy of darkness that resembled a black fog!

"How is it possible!?" Shadow Wraith bellowed angrily in disbelief. The situation's sudden reversal was clearly not a miracle, nor was it because the shameless author had wantonly change the plot in order to save the female protagonist, but because—the azure-dressed girl who had raised her sword high had escaped its 'Shadow Shackles'!

Without any reinforcements, she had escaped its 'Shadow Shackles' alone and split apart Field Marshal Awesomo, whose back was facing her. Furthermore...

Shadow Wraith slowly widened its nonexistent eyes as it looked at the spiraling black sword energy above the silver sword. Suddenly, it realized something...

"No! Quickly stop her!" Shadow Wraith yelled in Earthbound Yaksha's direction!

"Damn it!" Earthbound Yaksha immediately opened its eyes when it heard Shadow Wraith. With a curse, it immediately unsheathed its samurai sword and wanted to prevent the unforeseen event that was about to happen.

However, as Earthbound Yaksha had a protruded spine, it had especially found a cliff to rest on. It was a distance away from the

dismembered body. When the blade beam it slashed out was midway in flight, Sunless had already cleaved down her raised sword!

"Heaven Shrouding Eclipse!"

The spiraling sword beams of darkness slammed at Shadow Wraith suddenly like a black cloud!

Heaven Shrouding Eclipse was one of the higher grade sword techniques of the Ye family. It was also the most proficient sword technique Sunless's brother, Heartless, knew.

However, Sunless, who had only practiced the technique a few times in the past, did not pale in comparison to Heartless with her usage of Heaven Shrouding Eclipse. It was solid proof of her talent in sword arts.

And the reason why she chose to use Heaven Shrouding Eclipse at such a critical moment was that the sword beam formed from Heaven Shrouding Eclipse would absorb all the natural elements of 'darkness' from the surroundings. It would cause the sword beam to have a physical manifestation of 'black clouds'.

Against Shadow Wraith, who was a 'shadow', the black clouds that could shroud the sunlight was apparently the best technique!

As such, when the sword beam came cleaving down, the suppressive sword beam in the form of black clouds fully depicted

the reason why it was a 'Heaven Shrouding Eclipse'. The sun was eclipsed and the ground beneath the sword beam was completely covered in darkness!

Darkness immediately devoured the six shadow tentacles of Shadow Wraith!

"No!"

Shadow Wraith bellowed furiously. The devouring darkness did not harm it, but it had dispelled its 'Shadow Shackles'!

The other six humans that were shackled immediately escaped the shadow's imprisonment!

"Move out!"

A male voice filled with a magnetic charm suddenly resounded in the darkness.

It was Speechless's voice!

At the same time, three figures tore through the black fog and charged towards Earthbound Yaksha's location!

The enraged Earthbound Yaksha had similarly taken action. It dashed towards the source of noise with a samurai sword in hand. The youth who had given an order like a leader was an existence

that it felt most apprehensive about among the seven humans. It was filled with regret that it did not immediately kill the youth ten minutes ago.

However, no amount of regret could change the past. Therefore, Earthbound Yaksha was determined to kill him 'now'!

Earthbound Yaksha immediately sensed that three auras were charging straight at it.

It swept its gaze and saw that the three figures were the youth with the mithril shield, the Daoist with a talisman in hand, as well as the azure-dressed girl, who left a deep impression on it.

"Scram!" Earthbound Yaksha sneered. A repressive Soul Suppression emanated from its body.

It did not have the luxury of time to waste with the trio. Even the azure-dressed girl was not someone who made it as apprehensive as that youth who was proficient at strategic deployment.

Towards opponents who were a few psionic realms lower than it was, releasing Soul Suppression was enough to leave them stifled.

And indeed, the moment Earthbound Yaksha's Soul Suppression was released, other than Sunless, who did not appear affected, Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu's pupils constricted and their bodies came to a sudden halt. Their actions appeared extremely slow.

At that moment, a melodious voice sounded. It was moving and pleasant to the ears. The voice wasn't loud, but it seemed to penetrate the barriers of space itself. Instantly, it filled the entire arena!

"The sky is high and the wind sings,"

"The dream I once relished in joy,"

"That people will one day find,"

"Your firm belief with the eyes of a child!"

"I'm willing to be by your side,"

"Crossing through the frozen forest,"

"So that your eyes won't forever hesitate,"

"in the grief of the world!"

It was unknown when Mu Lengxi had taken off her thick black-rimmed glasses, revealing her adolescent beauty. She spread out her arms and with her eyes closed, she sang with gusto. The wind that blew into the sky suddenly flared the crystalline-like silver-hair that resembled snowflakes into the sky.

At that moment, the bookworm who always buried herself in a sea of books and remained silent was dignified and pure like a goddess. She was as charming and gorgeous as a pixie.

Her voice reached towards the horizons and clear droplets of resplendent light fell to the ground like a drizzle, while illuminating the other six. The courage and hope infused in the voice transformed into surging energy that flowed through their bodies.

The effects of Soul Suppression was immediately reduced drastically, enough for Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu to conquer it based on their own willpower.

"Wow, wow, wow! Muse Silvermoon's 'The Sky is High and the Wind Sings'! And she immediately began with the chorus which is the most exhilarating! Oh! Oh! Oh! Energy is surging, it's all coming!" Feng Yuanlin shouted out in an exaggerated manner. He raised his mithril shield and charged at Earthbound Yaksha. His excited appearance did not look like he was rushing headlong into battle, but like he was rushing to attend a concert.

"This is how a Muse alone can influence the outcome of a battle!" Liu Yu sighed in praise once again.

Although Mu Lengxi's powers were still nascent as a peerless Muse, she was able to shape the outcome of the battle. In the future, she would definitely be a Battle Muse viewed as a treasure by the country. And in addition to her proficiency of magic that far exceeded Liu Yu's understanding, it was unimaginable how impressive a hero she would grow into.

Mu Lengxi's future had endless possibilities!

Liu Yu and Feng Yuanlin were not the only ones that were affected by Mu Lengxi's voice. Earthbound Yaksha was also affected by it and was crying in bitterness.

It felt that there was an irritating sacred aura surrounding it. Grating sounds hummed in its ears as it suddenly felt its body turn extremely heavy. It was as if dozens of invisible chains were wrapped around its body while it constantly tightened. Its actions were severely restrained.

"Darn it!" Earthbound Yaksha regretted sorely that it did not kill Speechless and Mu Lengxi ten minutes ago. Now, it was tasting the bitter fruit of its inaction.

A struggle flashed in Earthbound Yaksha's eyes. It had made the same choice as it did previously. With an angry roar, it forcefully repressed the ill effects the voice had on it before turning around and slashing straight at the singing Mu Lengxi.

At that moment, Mu Lengxi looked like she was completely defenseless. It was also posing the greatest threat, so it was only right to be the first target to be finished.

"Pui! Shameless wretch, don't you dare think of harming her!" It was unknown when Feng Yuanlin had run in between Earthbound Yaksha and Mu Lengxi. He had used his mithril shield to withstand the sharp blade beam that surged over.

"Damn it!" Earthbound Yaksha cursed angrily.

The punk had only pretended to attack from the beginning, but he was actually protecting the singing girl?

Earthbound Yaksha immediately turned to charge at Feng Yuanlin. Even though the weak worm wanted to be a protector of women without knowing his own strength, it did not mind slaughtering him first before stepping over his corpse!

"Oh!?" However, just as Earthbound Yaksha turned around again, it felt an extremely dangerous aura emerge behind it.

"Courting death!"

Earthbound Yaksha roared angrily as it stamped on the ground with its right foot. With a twist of its torso, it had slashed towards it back with its astounding ability to twist!

But at the same time, the azure figure that it noticed had suddenly vanished into thin air when it turned back.

"Blind spot attack!?"

Earthbound Yaksha exclaimed in surprise. The azure figure had moved to a spot in its blind spot instantly with an intricate side step.

What keen judgment!

What a stunning reaction!

Earthbound Yaksha felt slightly alarmed, but its reaction was extremely fast as well. It immediately gave up on its counterattack. Suddenly, it charged forward in an attempt to dodge the sword that came slashing right towards it.

However, it failed to completely escape the peripheral blast of the sword beam. The sharp sword beams instantly lacerated its skin.

"Si!"

Earthbound Yaksha cried out in pain. The strike's sword beam contained a rich element of light. As an evil spirit, the light was able to hurt its physical embodiment. A visible laceration appeared on its back!

"Vaiśravaṇa Heavenly Slash!"

Earthbound Yaksha naturally would not stop its actions because of an injury. It immediately slashed out its powerful and famous blade technique at its assailant while there was a gap in between the assailant's attacks.

However, its assailant was not any amateur. Immediately, with a

perfect leap backward, the assailant had completely dodged the attack.

Earthbound Yaksha finally managed to turn its head to discern the true identity of its assailant. Just as it guessed, it was indeed the sword-wielding azure-dressed girl.

"It looks like it twas not luck for thee to beest able to repress that foolish ox alone." Earthbound Yaksha squinted its eyes. It had no choice but to admit that it had underestimated the azure-dressed girl's strength. Her calmness, sharpness and machine-like precision combat style did not resemble that of a young girl in her teens. She clearly had the mental prowess of an old witch that had lived for countless years.

"Doth thee bethink the three of thee can repress me?" Earthbound Yaksha scanned Sunless, Liu Yu, and Feng Yuanlin, who stood in a triangular position around it. It was secretly furious. If not for the restraint the voice was giving it, it would not be in such a tragic state. But the current situation did give it a sense of defeat.

Repress? No, the three of us will slaughter you!" said Liu Yu coldly. He held a stack of talismans in his hand and could throw it into the sky at any time and produce any one of the eight incantations of Daoism.

Sunless' eyes were ice-cold as they stared intently at Earthbound Yaksha, as though she was waiting for the opportunity to kill it.

Other than that, the combat situation came to a temporary

standstill that could have the flames of battle ignite again at any time.

At that moment, a sinister voice suddenly resounded.

"That's as far as it will go!"

Shadow Wraith, which had been silent for a prolonged period of time, finally took action. It had once again made a bold declaration as though it could press a pause button. Heaven Shrouding Eclipse's sword beam had already dissipated. There was no obstruction to the sunlight, and the shadow tentacles that it stretched out had successfully reached the feet of the trio!

"Ha, what a bunch of fools that do not learn their lesson." Earthbound Yaksha sniggered. It was relieved and did not expect that Shadow Wraith's repeat of his technique would actually be successful.

"Go fuck yourself as far as you can go!"

Suddenly, a boorish invective emanated from the other side of the battlefield!

Earthbound Yaksha turned its head and saw Speechless appearing less than a hundred meters away from Shadow Wraith without any warning. The shadow arms at his feet surprisingly extended in a strange way. The shadow arms that extended out a hundred meters suddenly clenched Shadow Wraith's neck at the

moment Speechless's voice resounded!

Shadow Wraith cried in agony. The shadow tentacles that it had extended out retracted. Its jagged shadow outline began to convulse crazily.

"Well done!" Liu Yu guffawed in joy as he gave a big thumbs up to Speechless.

This attack that let it have a taste of its own medicine could be called perfect. Just as Shadow Wraith had reduced its presence to secretly extend its shadow tentacles towards the trio that was facing Earthbound Yaksha, Speechless had lowered his presence as much as possible as well. He had then used Mirror Replication to replicate 'Shadow Shackles' and sent his own shadow tentacles towards Shadow Wraith!

This was an intense exchange of placing each other in 'check' on a figurative game of chess. Speechless had used his excellent ability and intelligence to counterattack Shadow Wraith alone!

"The ones that will only go this far is the two of you!"

Speechless laughed crazily as he suddenly turned his head in a completely opposite direction in the battlefield. He took a deep breath and shouted forcefully at a name most people would consider odd.

"Pulp! Farmer! "

The name Speechless yelled with some hoarseness in his throat was Pulp Farmer, who did not participate in the triangular encirclement against Earthbound Yaksha despite being a melee warrior.

Yes, forcefully getting Liu Yu, a Daoist meant to gross out their opponent from a distance to the front lines to take on one corner of the triangular encirclement was not because the commanding brain behind the strategy was retarded, but because Pulp Farmer had to do something even more important!

Earthbound Yaksha and Shadow Wraith looked towards the direction in which Speechless had turned towards. Immediately, they saw the spear-wielding youth who unknowingly had retreated to a blind spot outside the battle zone. Then they saw a scene that could be considered odd.

Pulp Farmer had extended both his arms and with his head lifted high, his spear was erected beside him. Under the illumination of the sunlight, he looked as mighty as a silent sculpture of a god of war!

However...

White paper cranes were flying out of the mighty youth's palms that were extended upwards! One after another, the paper cranes were flying unendingly out of Pulp Farmer's palm!

The one thousand paper cranes were flapping their paper wings

and flying towards the sky like sparrows.

Looking up at the sky, it was appalling to realize that in the endless firmament, there were countless pure white paper cranes flapping their wings. None of them were acting together. Instead, they were flying in a different direction toward the sky, as though they wanted to see every corner of the world.

When Speechless roared out his name, Pulp Farmer slowly opened his eyes.

That forbidding face that looked extremely firm and mature suddenly beamed radiantly in a way appropriate for his age.

"I found it!" Pulp Farmer yelled. The way he beamed was like a lost child that had managed to finally find his way home after overcoming challenge after challenge.

"I found the core of the formation!!!"

When this deafening yell resounded through the sky,

Speechless smiled.

Liu Yu moved the big thumbs up he had towards a different direction.

Feng Yuanlin raised his shield as he leaped in joy.

Tears stream down Mu Lengxi's eyes.

Sunless gaped slightly and emitted an 'ah' that she found hard to suppress...

Found it!

Found it!

Found it!

Shi Xiaobai...

The possibility of saving you has been found!

"No! Impossible!" Shadow Wraith yelled sharply.

In order to create the so-called 'despair', in order to fulfill their perverse idea of fun, it had informed the seven humans of the scheme and revealed secrets. One of the things revealed included that "killing Field Marshal Awesomo would not disable the God Slaughtering Formation" unless the formation core was destroyed.

And now, the formation core had been found!

"Impossible! Impossible! Impossible!"

Shadow Wraith was certain that if the mission failed in such a manner, as a pig-like teammate, it would definitely be tortured tragically by the heartless assessment program. That devil possessed the absolute rights to not only kill them but to deal with them in any way it liked!

Shadow Wraith fell into hysteria, but Earthbound Yaksha calmed down instead. It looked coldly at Speechless and said in a solemn voice, "Thy actions wast highly coordinated, with very clear goals. Wast all of this discussed by thee before hand?"

Earthbound Yaksha recalled the unease it felt previously. Yes, from the beginning, it had noticed that the humans' actions seemed to be coordinated ahead of time. The triangular encirclement, the shield youth protecting the singing girl in time, restraining Shadow Wraith...All of that appeared to have been played out according to a particular person's script. It was done with such verve like it had been planned!

But!

How was this possible?

The seven of them had clearly been restrained by Shadow Wraith. Not only could they not move, they could not even speak. How were they able to draw up such a highly coordinative plan?

"How didst thee doth it!?"

Chapter 469: A Divine Operation Finished In Ten Minutes

How did Speechless and company do it?

It was probably not only Earthbound Yaksha and Shadow Wraith who remained puzzled. Probably even the big shots in the three-dimensional world in another plane of existence must be dumbfounded. They might even involuntarily question—"What sort of strange development is this?", "Can there be such a screwed up operation?", "Come over here, Author, it's about time we had a good chat."

Then, in order to explain the story clearly in a professional and ethical way—in no way is it to pad the word count, in no way is it to pad the word count, and in no way is it to pad the word count, with important things having the need to be repeated three times! (Finally padding out a wave of text happily.)

Cough...well in order to explain the story clearly, let us rewind back to about ten minutes ago, the instant when Shadow Wraith just appeared, while releasing a toxin known as 'despair', but read as being a 'shitty teammate'.

Back then, when Shadow Wraith suddenly appeared, it had operated beautifully. It had successfully restrained Speechless and company as well as announced three pieces of information that could not be verified but were all equally despair-inducing.

First, that Field Marshal Awesomo was not the formation core.

Therefore, killing Field Marshal Awesomo did not mean the disruption of the God Slaughtering Formation. They were destined to be working hard towards a pointless goal.

Second, the identity of the pitch black mass was the ninth level's Level Lord. They had to face three Level Lords at the moment.

Third, the exit command had been disabled. The 'Excellency' with its powerful might was the mastermind behind all this, and the 'Excellency' was determined to have all of them killed.

The three pieces of information had successfully weaved the web of despair.

Speechless was unable to determine if the information was true or not, but by inferring from the situation they were in, the three pieces of information were very likely to be the truth.

However, the three pieces of despairing information mixed in a single piece of information that benefited them—destroying the formation core would result in the collapse of the God Slaughtering Formation—the only piece of beneficial information was useless in the situation they were in. With the seven of them simultaneously restrained, unless a powerful force came to rescue them, there was nothing they could do.

They were unable to save themselves, much less rescue Shi Xiaobai.

At that moment, even Speechless felt helpless. He was immersed in a pessimistic mood.

But at that moment, he suddenly heard a familiar voice in his mind.

"Hey, hey, hey...Benefactor Speechless, can you hear this?"

Initially, Speechless believed that he was having an illusion or some auditory hallucination because the voice did not reach him through his ears, but resounded directly in his brain.

But quickly, the voice repeated another time. Speechless finally realized a particular possibility.

He attempted to respond with a thought.

"Liu Yu?"

After he responded, a relieved sigh immediately resounded in his mind. Then, the voice said the following in his mind.

"Phew, it's This Penniless Priest...Listen, the reason why you can hear This Penniless Priest's voice is that of This Penniless Priest's superpower—'Telepathic Relay'. This superpower's general usage is to converse telepathically with someone within a certain distance as long as they do not refuse it."

Speechless was immediately astounded, but he immediately had a sudden thought when he received this brand new piece of information. As a result, he could not help but shout out in his mind, "Wahaha! Liu Yu, your superpower is...is amazing! You are indeed worthy to be a man that shares the same syllable, 'Yu' (speech) as This Emperor!"

Liu Yu immediately blushed with shame as he said with a wry smile, "This superpower is actually useless in battle. However, this Penniless Priest always found it hard to abandon it even though it's useless. Who knew that it would be somewhat useful at such a juncture..."

"Somewhat useful? You are way too humble man. This superpower might be able to save all of us!" said Speechless in excitement.

"Really? This Penniless Priest can't think of any way out no matter how much he racks his brain. So This Penniless Priest attempted to engage in telepathy with you...Erh, doesn't that mean that Benefactor Speechless has already thought of a way out!?" Liu Yu said with great anticipation in his mind.

"Yea, a way out that might be possible has been thought out and it would definitely be better than not thinking of something...Oh, by the way, can your superpower engage in 'Telepathic Relay' only between two people?" said Speechless.

"This Penniless Priest could only do two people in the beginning, but after repeated experiments and improvements, This Penniless Priest can now add another person to the telepathic relay, and have

a three-way telepathic conversation. However, three people is the maximum This Penniless Priest can do for now," said Liu Yu.

"Three people is enough. At least it saves the time needed to pass on information. Make haste while we can. Now, connect Sunless. Who knows how long the three Level Lords will give us," said Speechless.

"Alright!" responded Liu Yu.

A second later, Liu Yu spoke again, "Alright, it's connected."

"Hey, Sunless, can you hear this?" Speechless immediately attempted to call out to her.

"Huh?" Sunless's puzzled voice resounded simultaneously in Speechless and Liu Yu's minds.

"I'm Speechless Li. We are now conversing using Liu Yu's superpower and engaging in a three-way telepathic relay. Do you understand?" Speechless did not want to waste time, so he explained the situation to Sunless in the most direct manner.

"Yea," Sunless responded. She did not seem astonished nor did she appear as excited as Speechless. Clearly, her thoughts were somewhere else.

"Sunless, I know you are currently feeling very anxious. The person most anxious in the present situation is definitely you.

Because, compared to extricating the danger you are in, you are more anxious about rescuing Shi Xiaobai. However, you have to calm down now. Listen, I have a method that might save everyone and even save Shi Xiaobai. And the most important step to this matter has to be fulfilled by you. Only you can make it happen! For that, you have to calm down. No matter how difficult it is, you must force yourself to calm down...Then, Sunless, in order to save everyone, no. Even if it's just to save Shi Xiaobai, can you calm down?"

Speechless said it in such a manner. Since time was of the essence, he was still excessive in his plea. Clearly, whether Sunless could calm down was an important matter.

For that, Sunless fell silent for a second before giving a firm response.

"Say the method."

Sunless did not answer if she could calm down or not, but Speechless knew that even if she 'could not', she would definitely change it into something possible. If that was the way to save Shi Xiaobai, she would force herself to do it regardless of anything.

"Due to the automatic triggering of 'Mirror Replication', I know the shadow that is restraining us is called 'Shadow Shackles'. At the same time, I know the theory behind the liberation process of 'Shadow Shackles'. In fact, 'Shadow Shackles' is not restraining our bodies but it is a two-layer illusion!" said Speechless.

"Two-layer illusion? What is that?" asked Liu Yu eagerly before Sunless responded.

"You can understand it as a dream within a dream. In fact, our consciousness is currently stuck in a dream state formed by the first illusionary layer. However, the second illusionary layer is fooling us to think that we exist in reality. The goal is to prevent us from knowing that we have fallen for an illusion. And the premise to the two-layer illusion is grabbing the victim's shadow with a shadow. In principle, severing the contact between the shadows is sufficient to destroy the illusion, but the seven of us are unable to manage that. There's also no point to place hope on nonexistent reinforcements. So the thing we need to do is use our own willpower to escape the two-layer illusion!" Speechless tried his best to explain the slightly complicated idea in the most comprehensible manner.

"Escape? How?" Sunless immediately asked an important question.

"We first need to escape the second illusion layer, which is used to hide the first illusionary layer. The easiest way is to constantly tell yourself that 'this isn't reality', so as to hypnotize yourself. This step requires a firm belief in yourself. Only people who believe in themselves greatly are able to do it. Sunless, among the seven of us, the only people that can escape the second illusionary layer are the two of us." Speechless did not plan on explaining why they were the only two that could escape the second illusionary layer, but he had his reasons.

The reason was that when facing Earthbound Yaksha's Soul

Suppression, only Sunless and himself could act normally. The other five were more or less affected. And the reason why he could do so was that he had undertaken 'resistance training'. As for Sunless, she had completely managed to conquer the repression of Soul Suppression with her own willpower and firm resolution.

This girl who very rarely spoke with others was not shy with strangers or aloof but it was because she was too mature. Just as Pulp Farmer said, Sunless and Shi Xiaobai were young freaks that had minds that resembled cunning old spirits. They could see through the essence of many things at a glance, even the light that was obscured by the darkness. For that, Shi Xiaobai would positively face it, while Sunless would choose to ignore it, putting a distance between herself and the world that had nothing to do with swords.

"Then?" Sunless made a terse remark and interrupted Speechless's deep thoughts.

"Then...after escaping the second illusionary layer, you will enter the dream state created by the first illusionary layer. And our real consciousness is situated there. The first illusionary layer is an orthodox mental demon illusion. By enlarging the mental demons of the target, the target will be embroiled in an endless cycle of horrific nightmares. Therefore...the way to escape the first illusionary layer is to overcome your own mental demons."

When Speechless said that, he came to a slight pause before sighing suddenly. He said apologetically, "Sorry, deep in my heart, there resides a mental demon I cannot defeat. I will not be able to defeat the mental demon in a short period of time. Therefore, the

only person that can quickly escape the first and second illusionary layers through their own strength to liberate themselves from 'Shadow Shackles' is you, Sunless Ye."

"Got it," Sunless said.

"Erh, Sunless, I'm not sure what your mental demon is, nor do I know if that mental demon of yours is as difficult to conquer as mine, but all our hope will rest on you. So...Sunless, are you confident that you can defeat your greatest mental demon?"

Speechless carefully probed her. He knew that the heavy burden of saving everyone rested on Sunless's shoulders. It was a shameless and weak thing to do, but other than that, he had no other method. Without escaping from 'Shadow Shackles', there was no way the subsequent parts of his plan could work.

"I can...No, I'll definitely be able to do it!" Sunless gave such an answer.

Upon hearing Sunless's response, Speechless immediately felt like he had asked a stupid question.

To Sunless, be it defeating her own mental demons, she would only answer that she could, and give an answer of definiteness. Since it was a necessary step in the bid to save Shi Xiaobai, she would do her best to overcome and defeat the thing she previously could have chosen to run away from, even if the mental demon was an unsurmountable entity that previously made her cower in fear.

Sunless was such a cool girl!

"If only I could be as brave as her."

Speechless thought to himself. His heart felt like it had been mangled by a blade. He returned to that unforgettable rainy night that he probably would not forget for the rest of his life. That was a mental demon he lacked the courage to face at that moment in time. It was a nightmare that he chose to cower away from like a coward.

Speechless quickly regulated his emotions because the most important mission had been given to Sunless. Therefore, he needed to do his best to deploy the remaining matters.

"Sunless, once you escape from 'Shadow Shackles', you have to wait for the opportunity to complete two things."

Speechless quickly said, "First, if Field Marshal Awesomo is about to recover or has already recovered, think of a way to quickly make him lose his ability to fight. Second, at the moment when Earthbound Yaksha and Shadow Wraith are unable to react, use 'Heaven Shrouding Eclipse' on the contact point of the shadow tentacles. I once saw your elder brother use 'Heaven Shrouding Eclipse'. That strike's black sword beam is able to block out the light. It will be able to shroud the sunlight at the point of where the tentacles make contact, resulting in the removal of 'Shadow Shackles' from our bodies. If I recall correctly, 'Heaven Shrouding Eclipse' is one of the moves of the Ye family's sword arts. You

should be able to use it, right?"

"Yes." Even though she had only practiced it a few times, Sunless was able to give an affirmative answer without any hesitation.

"That's good. If everything works out smoothly and the seven of us escape the restraint of 'Shadow Shackles', then please immediately restrain Earthbound Yaksha. I will use my Mirror Replication to restrain the Shadow Wraith. Then...the plan to save Shi Xiaobai will officially begin! This time, I will definitely deploy the plan perfectly. Although we have failed a few times previously, I implore you to believe in me...I, no, This Emperor will definitely bring Shi Xiaobai back to your side!" said Speechless.

"Alright, I'm begging you." Upon sensing the sincerity in Speechless's words, Sunless chose to believe in him once again. Furthermore, she had made a rare request like 'begging you'.

"Thank you...Then I'm begging you to complete the mission of saving all of us!"

Speechless returned with a sincere entreatment. Then, he said to another person that did not have the opportunity to interrupt all this while.

"Liu Yu, cut Sunless's connection. Next...connect Pulp Farmer!"

After about ten seconds of explanation, Pulp Farmer, who had been connected into the Telepathic Relay, quickly understood the

situation.

"Then, what's my mission?" asked Pulp Farmer.

"If Field Marshal Awesomo loses his combat strength and we successfully restraint Earthbound Yaksha and Shadow Wraith, then we will have the spare capacity to save Shi Xiaobai. But the premise to saving Shi Xiaobai is...to find the formation core that Shadow Wraith declared that we would not be able to find. And the only person capable of doing that is you, Pulp Farmer!" said Speechless.

"Only I can do it? That can't be? ...Eh? Eh! You, you, don't tell me..." Pulp Farmer was puzzled for half a second before he realized something. Immediately he panicked.

"That's right. This Emperor knows about the superpower you have always hidden. This Emperor also knows the reason why you are known as Mt Chang's 'Pulp Farmer'! Man, summoning thousands of paper cranes from your palm really doesn't match your typical image, but there's no need to resist it. You got to know that having identity dissonance is an important part of creating your character..." Speechless could not help but laugh as he prated on.

"Damn it! I only used it a few times when I was young. How did you learn of such private information?" Pulp Farmer could not calm down.

"Man, don't mind the unimportant details...Anyway, This

Emperor will not tell others. It will be a secret between the two of us," said Speechless.

When Liu Yu heard that, he could not help but curse silently—Although he was indeed just like a 'mouthpiece', there were three people, alright!?

Also, wasn't the 'secret between the two of us' too fake? When Pulp Farmer uses his superpower, wouldn't the thirty thousand-strong audience in the background see it clearly?

"Back to all seriousness."

Speechless quickly refrained from joking. He said, "If This Emperor didn't guess wrong, your superpower is similar to a summoner's magic. You should be able to command the summoned paper cranes, maintain a telepathic connection with them and receive feedback from them...right?"

"Yea, your guess is correct." Pulp Farmer immediately calmed himself.

"Alright then! Then, let's talk about your mission. Pulp Farmer, when we battle the Level Lord, find an opportunity to secretly move to a location far away from the battlefield. It's best if you can hide in a blind spot outside the battlefield. Then, use your superpower and summon the thousand paper cranes to search for the formation core. No one knows how well hidden the formation core is. Therefore, there is no way to estimate how long it will take to find the formation core. However, no matter how long it takes,

we will try our best to restrain the Level Lords and give you a sufficient amount of time. No matter what, we will last till you find it!" Speechless's voice was filled with a resolute firmness.

"Got it, I'll try my best to find the formation core," said Pulp Farmer. There was no need to give any bombastic guarantees. A guarantee from the domineering youth's mouth was enough for others to believe.

"Thank you. Then, the mission of finding the formation core will be left to you!"

After Speechless said that, he gave someone a pathetic but crucial amount of screen time.

"Liu Yu! Next, connect Mu Lengxi!"

...

"Wow~! Telepathic Relay! Ahhhhh! Boohoo, Brother Liu Yu, why didn't you say so earlier. This superpower is perfectly made for your Little Xi!"

Mu Lengxi was exhilarated. To a chatterbox who could not speak, using text to converse was a very painful matter, but Telepathic Relay could allow her to express her voice. Such a matter was too beautiful and joyful. As such, 'Daoist Liu Yu' was upgraded to 'Brother Liu Yu' in her heart.

"..." Liu Yu was unable to respond to her. He suffered the pain of missing the chance to say a precious stage line.

"Alright, calm down for a moment. There will be opportunities in the future. It's not like Liu Yu will run away!" said Speechless.

"Erh, alright then. Let's get down to business. So...what's my mission?" At such a critical juncture, Mu Lengxi naturally would not act too willfully.

The siblings immediately came to a common understanding. Liu Yu wanted to loudly tell them 'can you ask This Penniless Priest for his opinions!?' Repeated use of Telepathic Relay was very tiring, alright?

"Let's put it this way..."

Speechless considered his words before saying, "Earthbound Yaksha's Soul Suppression will result in immense suppression on everyone's actions. As for your...voice, it can not only alleviate the effects of Soul Suppression, it can even restrict Earthbound Yaksha's actions, so..."

"Isn't it just singing? No problem, leave it to me!" Mu Lengxi interrupted Speechless's minced words.

"However, if it's singing, your voice..." Speechless sighed. It was the thing he was most hesitant about.

Mu Lengxi possessed the talent of being a 'Muse', but singing would result in her failing to control the 'Sacred Sound', making it more belligerent. Therefore, every time she sang a song, the hope of being able to speak normally would also reduce.

"Bro, what are you still worrying about at this point in time? Anyway, it's already an incurable problem, so who cares if it continues deteriorating!? If it can save everyone and save Brother Xiaobai, then this trivial matter is not something to be fussed about." Mu Lengxi said gleefully.

"Sigh, you!" Speechless knew that his younger sister would respond in this way, but when he heard her answer in such a nonchalant way, he felt his heart winch in pain. His sister was a chatterbox who would not stop once she began chatting. She clearly yearned to speak normally more than anyone else.

"Wow, so the important matters are done? Hey, Brother Liu Yu, Brother Liu Yu, are you there? Are you there? Are you there?" However, a particular girl that was being worried about didn't have her thoughts on the matter.

"Here..." The girl's call was too intense that Liu Yu had no choice but to respond.

"About that...Telepathic Relay can be done between three people. Brother Liu Yu, can you...erh...in the future...Little Xi has many things to say to..." Mu Lengxi suddenly turned bashful. Clearly, the words she wanted to say had made her too embarrassed to voice it out.

"You wish to have a telepathic relay with Shi Xiaobai, right?" Liu Yu was no doubt a Daoist with a high attainment. He immediately saw through her.

"Ah...Can, can it be done?" The girl asked apprehensively.

"Of...Of course, it's not a problem." Liu Yu obviously could not reject her. Although doing so meant he had to be a presence-less 'mouthpiece', and be a bachelor dog that munched on cold dog food while watching a couple exchange sweet nothings, he found it impossible to reject such a cute and pitiful girl. However, for some baffling reason, Liu Yu suddenly recalled of his young junior sister who asked him apprehensively if "Daoists could marry".

"Yay! Thank you, Brother Liu Yu!" The girl cheered.

"Enough!"

Speechless finally spoke. Although he did not have an evil sister complex, he had mixed feelings about seeing his grown-up sister finally having someone she liked.

"Next! Connect Feng Yuanlin!"

...

"Anyway, you, Sunless, and Speechless will form a triangular

encirclement around Earthbound Yaksha and try to restrain it. Oh, to be precise, you will be a feint. In fact, your true mission is to protect my sister. Got it?"

"Got...got it." Feng Yuanlin had a feeling that Speechless was not in a good mood, so he did not dare to ask further and expressed his understanding.

"Well, that's good then. Next."

Speechless said before suddenly coming to a halt.

"Well, this is the last one. Liu Yu, connect..."

Chapter 470: Welcome Back

"How didst thee doth it!?"

The flashback ended. Time returned to the moment Earthbound Yaksha uttered in surprise.

Earthbound Yaksha obviously never expected that the seemingly insignificant Daoist would be able to produce a trump card of 'Telepathic Relay' that could reverse the dire situation. Therefore, there was no way it could guess that the ten minutes it had bestowed on them would result in so many complicated changes.

The plan Speechless designed played out without a fault. It could even be said that it was carried out even more smoothly than he had predicted.

Sunless had perfectly finished the most critical and most difficult mission. Pulp Farmer did not let down their hard work by locating the formation core in such a short amount of time.

Therefore, all that was left was the final step!

Speechless looked up at the sky and revealed a smile. The thousand paper cranes were flying towards the same spot. Everything was progressing smoothly.

"How didst thee doth it!?"

Earthbound Yaksha inquired once again coldly.

Speechless glanced at it and scoffed before ignoring it.

He obviously would not be as stupid as Shadow Wraith to tell their secrets to the enemy. Furthermore, the machination that spanned ten minutes could not be fully described in a few words. A particular honest author who never padded words had spent about six thousand characters to barely explain the situation.

Furthermore, Field Marshal Awesomo had perfectly showcased what it meant by 'antagonists die from their monolog'. He did not want to match him by adding a comedic scene of 'protagonists die from talking too much'.

"Hmph! Whatever. Regardless of how thee did it, all thee didst wast to findeth the formation core. If't be true all of thee believeth thee can destroy the formation core under our eyes, thee would beest too naive!

Earthbound Yaksha sneered. Even though they knew the location of the formation core, it did not mean that they could successfully destroy it.

Earthbound Yaksha glanced at Shadow Wraith, who was still frantically yelling 'impossible'. It deeply understood what it meant by 'you never fear having a god-like opponent, you only fear having a pig-like teammate'. It frowned and said furiously, "Shadow Wraith! Calm down! Only the formation core's location hast been exposed. The God Slaughtering Formation hast not been

destroyed! Furthermore, so what if it beest true of its destruction? Our mission is only to killeth the bunch of trial-takers. Only the outcome matters, not the process!"

"Oh...Oh. Heh heh...right, you are right. Kill them all! Kill them all! All that needs to be done is to kill them all!" Shadow Wraith stopped its desolate screams. As it was excessively afraid of that Excellency's torment, its voice was even trembling. But because it was horrified, its trembling emotions sounded like it was in hysterical madness.

"Kill, kill, kill, kill, kill...."

The sinister voice blabbered on constantly from the shadow's head that had its throat clenched. Suddenly, Shadow Wraith that adhered to the ground stood up. It was like black sludge that suddenly erected itself on the ground.

Suddenly, the pitch black sludge-like body expanded at a discernable rate. Instantly, it reached the height of several stories high.

Speechless' shadow hand that was clasping the neck of Shadow Wraith was instantly ruptured. With a frown, Speechless jumped away and quickly opened the distance.

"Kill! Kill! Kill! You shall all be wiped out!"

Dozens of thick black tentacles extended out from the massive

sludge-like mass. They slammed the ground heavily as though it was crazy.

It looked like a giant octopus made of black sludge that was several stories tall. However, its tentacles were not limited to eight, but dozens. They were even constantly growing in length.

"If thee bethink that we as Level Lords doth not hast tricks up our sleeves to useth during times of danger, then thou art too naive."

Earthbound Yaksha's frame suddenly expanded several times in size. Its blackish-gray skin was suddenly covered in thick, scarlet lines. The aura it exuded was several times more terrifying.

"Thou hast shown excellence by escaping Shadow Shackles and findeth the formation core, thou hast far exceeded mine own expectations. But all of this shalt come to an end. Wraith and I shall not giveth thee any chances in our forbidden state!"

Just like how most major BOSS battles had an enraged mode when they were low in health, Earthbound Yaksha and Shadow Wraith would naturally procure a forbidden strength that would come at a particular price when they were in a dire situation!

"Indeed..."

However, Speechless smiled.

"Oh?"

Earthbound Yaksha had a sense of foreboding.

"Since none of you have used your full strength, This Emperor will obviously not use all his trump cards. Sorry, This Emperor still has the final trump card!"

As Speechless said that, he looked up towards the sky.

It was unknown when the fluttering paper cranes in the sky had gathered at a common point. They were orderly lined up, forming a clear outline.

From afar, it was as if a gigantic 'arrowhead' drawn in the sky!

And the 'arrowhead' was pointed towards a particular position on the ground!

"The formation core is there. Everything is ready. Then, our final trump card, I beg of you!"

Speechless cupped his hands around his mouth as he took a deep breath before shouting with all his might!

"Mu Yuesheng!"

A figure walked out from beside Pulp Farmer's figure.

That girl that had been constantly hiding in a blind spot, to the point of her name not appearing much in this arc, had entered the eyes of everyone at that very moment.

She wore a simple short-sleeved shirt and a thin jacket meant for summer. Coupled with her gray pleated skirt, there was nothing about her clothes that highlighted her.

She had cut a mop of brown short hair that reached her shoulders. With her hair cut, the gentleness of a young girl had been trimmed away.

She had a pair of brown eyes. Although they were the beautiful color of a girl's, they were filled with the resolution of what a young boy would have.

Her name was Mu Yuesheng—a name that might have been forgotten if it was not mentioned again, a name that might have only appeared a few times, and a name that might not affect the story in any way even if it disappeared.

Compared to excellent girls like Dawn Li, Sunless Ye, and Mu Lengxi, her beauty was ranked the last when put on the same stage with them. She was similarly the weakest and lacked any sense of presence.

But!

But this brown, short-haired girl that had been neglected was someone that everyone needed to see at that moment!

And after that moment, everyone would remember her!

Because, at that moment, she was the protagonist!

Because, in this story arc of 'saving Shi Xiaobai', she was in true essence—the last trump card!

...

"What? The last trump card? Brother Speechless...you must be joking, right!?"

"Hey, do you think it's time to pull a joke? Yuesheng, don't tell me you don't believe your brother?"

"Well, it's not like I don't believe you...But...I don't believe myself...Compared to the rest of you, I'm just too weak. Trump card...that's impossible, right?"

"Pui! You are considered too weak? Heavens, if we are talking about pure long-distance offensive strength, Shi Xiaobai and I are left in the dust by you, alright!?"

"Ah...don't joke! This kind of joke...is not funny at all...My longest distance offensive technique, 'Extreme Electro-optical

Beam' only has a kilometer damage range. It doesn't even reach the standard as a long-distance attack."

"Erh...so...you haven't realized the existence of 'that move'..."

"That move?"

"Well, years ago, after I knew about the situation with your superpower, I thought of 'that move' instantaneously. I never expected you to not realize it up to today..."

"Eh? "Years ago?"

"Man, as I was a bit worried, I once investigated your situation three years ago."

"Is that so..."

"Are you angry?"

"Not really, just a bit...Forget it. Why don't you tell me about 'that move'? What is 'that move' that I have not realized?"

"Alright, I'm not sure if you have heard of a military weapon with the ability to do tremendous damage known as 'electromagnetic guns'?"

"Electromagnetic guns? Haven't heard of it..."

"Is that so? Then it looks like I need to explain from basic principles. Listen carefully."

"Yea, I'm listening."

"Electromagnetic guns are kinetic weapons of mass destruction that shoot projectiles powered by electromagnetism. It was researched by the military a long time ago and it is still being refined up till today. It mainly has four components—a power source, a high-frequency pulse, an accelerating armature, and a projectile. As for your superpower, 'Electromagnetic Embodiment', it can replicate the first three components. You can use a metallic object as the projectile to be shot out. It will closely replicate the effects of an electromagnetic gun. The main point of this move is how to use 'Electromagnetic Embodiment' to replicate the power source of the electromagnetic gun, the high-frequency pulse, and the accelerator armature. I'll tell you in detail the theory behind it. Your 'Electromagnetic Embodiment' is able to naturally produce electricity, so any part of your body can become a power source. And as long as you figure out a way to reduce the time needed to produce an electric pulse, it would not be difficult to produce a high-frequency pulse. So the most critical part is to emulate the accelerating armature. The current electromagnetic guns can be subdivided into different types based on the accelerating armature such as coilguns, railguns, electrothermal guns, and reconnection guns. However, their underlying theory is about using the Lorentz force from magnetic fields to generate kinetic energy and accelerate the projectile. Therefore..."

"Wait...Wait a moment! I didn't understand from the point of the accelerating armature. Things like coilguns, railguns, and... Uh, can you repeat those parts again and say it slowly?"

"Yea, no problem. The remaining time is all yours. I can repeat it as many times as you want. You are our final trump card!"

"Ah! Final trump card? That doesn't sound realistic. Can I...really do it? To learn such a powerful technique in a short amount of time from theory, can I...really do it?"

"You can do it. I believe in you."

"You believe in me?"

"That's right. I remember years ago when you left the Mu family. You tugged at my hand and said, 'Even if I leave this place, I'm still me. I'm still that Mu Yuesheng who will never admit defeat. When we meet again in the future, I will still not change. Well, it should be said that I will become even more outstanding. So, don't argue with the adults for me any further. Believe me. I'm fine...'"

"Ahhh! Don't continue. I don't know the person who said those words!"

"Haha, you are still no different from when you were young. Indeed, nothing has changed. You are still..."

"Urgh..."

"Sorry, the final trump card represents immense pressure, but I still chose to place it on you because I know that you can shoulder it... That's because from a very, very long time ago, you have always, always made me look up to you. You are absolutely the resolute Mu Yuesheng, who will never admit defeat!"

"Bro..."

"Therefore, become the trump card that makes everyone sit up and take notice. My beloved sister!"

"Not a sister, a cousin."

"Hey, is that important?"

"Well, I will become the trump card, my willful...cousin."

...

...

"Trump card..."

Mu Yuesheng muttered to herself. She took out a coin from her shirt's pocket. It was an ordinary coin but it was in no way ordinary.

That was because a black-haired youth who had placed the coin into her palm had once said in a very serious tone—"This is no ordinary coin, but a Divine Coin!"

A Divine Coin could also be known as a 'Coin of God'.

If this world truly had a 'god', then wasn't the youth that had brought her all the way from the third level to this point, using a strange massage technique to change her Mind Expanse, to the point of changing her destiny, like the existence of a 'god' to her?

In that case, the coin he 'rewarded' her was truly a coin of God.

And now, that adorable and respectable 'god' that she felt lifelong gratitude towards was trapped in a terrifying world known as the 'God Slaughtering Formation'. She had become the last trump card to rescue him. She held the strength to save him.

Then, what...was there for her to hesitate?

Yes, there was no need for hesitation!

"I am the trump card!"

Mu Yuesheng took a step forward and turning to her side, she stretched out her right arm. She aimed at a spot far into the distance where numerous paper cranes, which had formed an

'arrow head', pointed at.

The Divine Coin rested silently in between her fingers. It was stuck close beside a bent thumb, just like an explosive blast that was about to burst off.

Icy-blue electric bolts sizzled as they twirled around that extended white arm. They were testy as they leaped around in an increasingly intense fashion.

"All the best."

This was the voice of Pulp Farmer, who was standing not far from her.

However, Mu Yuesheng knew that standing on this piece of land were all her partners that were working hard towards the same goal. They were definitely shouting the same words in their heart.

The burden she bore was not only to be the 'last trump card', but also their hopes and hard work.

This was a very, very heavy pressure.

But no matter how heavy it was, she would straighten her back.

Because she was the strong and firm Mu Yuesheng!

You need an electric source?

Then use all the electric charges in my body!

The icy-blue electric bolts that were swirling around her arm began to suddenly jump around crazily like incessant thunderclaps within the clouds.

You need a high-speed pulse?

Ah, even if my fingers are maimed, I would compress that instant to its shortest moment!

Her thumb that was placed above her index finger pressed down forcefully, leaving a deep impression in her index finger. Then, at the moment the electric bolts surged most intensely, her thumb flicked at the coin in between her two fingers at the fastest possible speed!

You need an accelerating armature?

Magnetic flux, Lorentz force, kinetic acceleration...Even such a complicated process has been memorized by me. The hardworking me will work even harder. So...succeed! Please!

As the bolts jumped, the Divine Coin was deployed!

So...

"Please come back! Shi Xiaobai!"

It was unknown who it was, which of them, or how many of them had the same scream at the same moment.

"Boom!"

The coin that acted as a projectile produced by the 'electromagnetic gun' was too fast. It was so fast that its trajectory could not be seen. And because of its speed, everyone had already seen its destination in an instant.

Just like the explosion of a mortar shot, the piece of land where the paper cranes were pointing at exploded, sending dust flying into the sky. Even the paper cranes flew haphazardly from fright.

"Did it succeed?"

This was the question everyone was concerned about.

"Gulp..."

Shadow Wraith nervously gulped a nonexistent mouthful of saliva.

Suddenly, golden beams of light shot out from the desolate lands into the sky. The golden lights fused together, turning into a

resplendent golden surface.

If one looked from high up, one would realize that the golden light formed a seemingly complicated pattern that resembled a six-pointed star but was even more complex in every other way.

"No, no, no, no!"

Shadow Wraith once again screamed hysterically.

And while it screamed, the golden surface suddenly disintegrated!

"The God Slaughtering Formation has been broken." Earthbound Yaksha sighed helplessly.

While it sighed, a golden pillar of light descended from the sky like a waterfall. It crashed into the basin, right in the middle of the shattered formation pattern.

In the dazzling golden pillar of light, there were two blurry figures that could be faintly seen.

"Shi Xiaobai..."

Although the golden light blanketed the two figures, preventing one from clearly seeing them, from one of the figure's height, there was no doubt that it was that familiar youth they knew.

"Haha, he's indeed alive. This Emperor knew that the bastard wouldn't die!" Speechless laughed out loud.

"Hey, Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, This Penniless Priest said that your glabella was dark and that it was an ominous portent. You refused to believe but now, didn't you need This Penniless Priest to help you tide through this calamity?" Liu Yu rubbed his eyes.

"Hai, Brother Shi Xiaobai, I believe that there is a need for us to explore in depth the effective usage of the thousand paper cranes to posture." Pulp Farmer secretly ordered the thousand paper cranes in the sky to form a huge line of text, 'Shi Xiaobai, I want to learn to posture'. The paper cranes were in a fluster as they indicated that it was too difficult. These Subjects can't do it!

"Boss Shi Xiaobai..." The most atypical Feng Yuanlin was at that instant quiet like an adonis.

"Shi Xiaobai!" Mu Yuesheng placed her right hand with the completely swollen thumb behind her. She raised her left hand and danced as she cheered for the 'god' she looked up to.

Mu Lengxi, who could not speak or even let out a sob, did not cry. Her eyes were squinted as she smiled sweetly.

They did not know what sort of dangers he had encountered in another world.

He did not know what hard work they had put in, in order to save him.

But at the instant of them meeting again, no matter how woeful the experience, all of them felt a sense of warmth.

Sunless stared intently at the familiar figure that could be faintly seen in the golden light.

Her tensed face finally softened.

She raised her delicate hand to comb through the hair on her cheeks.

Her eyes were slightly red, as a warm smile beamed from the corners of her lips.

Ah, Shi Xiaobai, "Welcome back."

Chapter 471: This Must Be A Joke!

"Welcome back."

The thousands of words in everyone's hearts were condensed to just two simple words. They were not considered touching words of emotion, but at that moment, they were more moving than any other words.

However, such a warmth was destined to be fleeting because as the scattering golden pillar of light that fell from the sky began to quickly dissipate, the two figures in the pillar of light slowly materialized.

"Shi Xiaobai?"

The rare smile that beamed on Sunless's face froze. The others could not help but frown.

Although they were already mentally prepared that the duo that was trapped in the God Slaughtering Formation might be slightly injured, or even be covered in grievous injuries, none of them expected the scene before their very eyes.

A cold, bright silver hair, a pale expression, a defiled body dyed red by blood, as well as the look in the pair of eyes that the bright, golden vortices in them could not embellish made him look like a fallen devil despite having returned from hell.

Was that 'Shi Xiaobai', who effused a just and heroic fervor?

No, no, no. He was undoubtedly Shi Xiaobai, right?

Ignoring the loving embrace of a man and woman, which dealt the greatest damage to bachelors, the girl that was hugging the 'silver-haired devil' tightly might be covered in blood all over, but she was clearly and definitely the girl that would one day become the Hero King in the 'past's future'.

She had no reason to hug the 'devil', right?

That's not right. There was apparently no reason for her to embrace Shi Xiaobai in such an oblivious manner?

"Heavens, what exactly happened in the other world?" Speechless uttered in amazement. He looked baffled, but compared to wondering how Shi Xiaobai had become such a 'Shi Xiaobai', he was more curious over the happenings between the duo for them to have such a relationship.

Just as everyone was dazed by the strange scene, Dawn noticed something odd. She slowly opened her eyes and moved her head that was tightly adhered to 'Shi Xiaobai's' chest upwards. Looking up slightly, she squinted her eyes as she surveyed her surroundings.

"Oh?"

The girl's eyes gradually widened and she looked somewhat incredulous. "We're out?"

What was entering her eyes was not that world with the crimson dusk. The hellish scene that was covered with blood and guts was no longer present. Her body was basking under the warm sunlight as a gentle wind blew, sending exceedingly fresh air into her nostrils. In the vast expanse stood humans that made her feel a sense of cordiality although she did not know them. She only had a vague impression of the youth that had his chest pierced by her strike and he was apparently surnamed Li as well. However, none of that prevented her from feeling good vibes from them. Oh, that's not right. It appeared as though two of the girls had that hint of animosity in their eyes.

Regardless of the circumstances, the world here was much more beautiful compared to the other world.

Finally...she had returned with him alive.

"Hey, Shi Xiaobai, we are back. We are safe. So, you can have a good rest. You are too, too, too tired..."

Dawn heaved a sigh of relief. She took half a step back and looked up slightly. She stretched out her hands to gently lift 'Shi Xiaobai's pale face. She stared at the glazed eyes that could not hide their emptiness. She only felt her heart ache painfully for him.

What sort of desperate situation did he experience, and what sort of resolution did he take, to be able to protect her under those

circumstances or turn into such a state in order to protect her?

He was in dire need of rest.

"Is that a joke? An hour ago, wasn't the two of them fighting so intensely, as though they were unwilling to stand down till they perished in an internecine struggle? How did it change completely in just a short hour?"

Speechless was dumbfounded. The teenage girl's feelings of the 'Hero King' in front of him were completely different from that cold and expressionless blond youth from before. It was a completely different scene from the cold and ruthless appearance when she slashed out her Sword Soul in a bid to kill him and Shi Xiaobai.

What happened in that world during that short hour? What did that bastard, Shi Xiaobai, do!?

"How can Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's flirting skills be something that plebeians like us be able to comprehend?" Liu Yu immediately gave up thinking.

Everyone was somewhat stupefied. They only felt that the changes within an hour were somewhat unbelievable. According to Field Marshal Awesomo, the Hero King was apparently a true existence that had traveled from three thousand years ago to the present day? Although Field Marshal Awesomo's words were not reliable, they were not necessarily fake.

If she were the true Hero King, then wouldn't it mean that Shi Xiaobai had managed to hook up with the greatest historical figure in just an hour!?

Heavens, it was horrifying on pondering!

At that moment, something unexpected happened all of a sudden!

"Be careful!" Sunless yelled.

From her point of view, a massive figure had suddenly appeared behind Shi Xiaobai. It was Field Marshal Awesomo, who had been forgotten outside the battlefield. It was unknown when he had recovered as he suddenly sneaked an attack!

The spot Shi Xiaobai and Dawn landed happened to be in the vicinity of where Field Marshal Awesomo collapsed!

Everyone was alarmed, but they were more than ten kilometers away. They were unable to provide any help instantaneously.

When she sensed the surging killing intent rushing towards her, Dawn frowned slightly. Although she had caught sight of the figure whose head resembled a black octopus, the gray evil spirit wielding a samurai sword, as well as the gigantic minotaur lying not far away, she did not wish to alarm 'Shi Xiaobai', who had finally managed to calm down, over these trivial matters. Therefore, she chose to ignore them. She did not treat them as

monsters that needed killing. It was equivalent to demarcating a line that shouldn't be crossed.

But unexpectedly, the gigantic minotaur that was lying not far away suddenly jumped up despite looking completely dead or bordering on death. He brandished his battle ax vigorously before he cleaved at her.

No, to be precise, the target of the gigantic minotaur was 'Shi Xiaobai's head.

"Not to be forgiven!"

Dawn's tender and teenage feelings of heartache immediately turned cold. Her eyes instantly became as sharp and aggressive as a sword.

Anything that attempted to harm Shi Xiaobai was not to be forgiven!

She did not know who the gigantic minotaur was, nor did she know why it would suddenly attack 'Shi Xiaobai', but she would absolutely not forgive the minotaur!

Dawn decisively waved her right hand, and like a bolt of lightning that flashed, she stretched out her index and middle finger that resembled a sharp sword. Instantly, she cut off the thick cloth rope that was wrapped around her waist, separating her from the tight adherence to 'Shi Xiaobai'.

After the cloth rope was severed, she crouched down abruptly, like a compressed spring, and through the side, she instantly appeared from under 'Shi Xiaobai's' arm. Immediately, she faced the minotaur that was about to strike 'Shi Xiaobai's' back.

When she crouched down, she raised her right hand and spread out her palm with a twirl. Suddenly, she grabbed down on invisible air and a purple pattern flashed in her palm. Lucifer's Sword that had been dropped in the array world appeared out of thin air in her right hand.

That move was spatial magic known as "Equipment Magic". It was one of the more complicated magical skills. As an intricate magic rune had been inscribed on 'Lucifer's Sword' beforehand, she could summon it back to her even through a thick spatial barrier.

But when she accomplished all of that, she was unable to be in time to prevent the attack as she had greatly expanded her physical strength.

Dawn panicked but immediately she gritted her teeth and thrust her sword upwards towards Field Marshal Awesomo's arm, in a bid to force him to release his ax.

However, Field Marshal Awesomo ignored her strike and disregarding the safety of his arm. His reason had long been devoured by anger and humiliation. It so happened that the boy that the azure-dressed girl was so worried about had appeared in

his vicinity when he fully revived. How could he miss such a rare opportunity for revenge?

Field Marshal Awesomo had a savage look on his face. Blue veins protruded out of his thick arms as his muscles rippled. After experiencing the tragic fate of having his body dismembered numerous times, his strength had long recovered to his peak after all the 'damage'.

Therefore, he was presently at his full strength. He cleaved at the boy's head in an indomitable fashion with Mountain Cleaving Ax!

Even a mountain would be cleaved into smithereens by that strike, much less a head!

Dawn panicked and hurriedly twisted her sword's trajectory, in a bid to chase after the ax that she could no longer block.

Just as the boy's head was about to be smashed into a mess!

Peng!

Suddenly, a blood-stained and pale-white hand reached out at a speed that could not be discerned. It struck the ax and held it firmly. The ax immediately came to a halt, unable to move another inch.

"Impossible!"

All the veins on Field Marshal Awesomo's neck began to protrude. His ox head turned purple, but no matter how much strength he used, the battle ax that was in a firm grip did not move even a centimeter.

How could that silver-haired and bloodied boy have such strength!?

Suddenly, the silver-haired boy turned his head and took a glance at him.

Just that single glance made Field Marshal Awesomo feel his body freeze up, as though he had plummeted into a frozen cavern. An innate sense of fear rose up from his heart, as though he was facing a nemesis he could never defeat.

He subconsciously wanted to abandon his ax and flee backwards. However, the silver-haired boy suddenly moved. His speed was so fast that Field Marshal Awesomo failed to react in time. All he saw was a blur before the boy stood on his shoulders. Furthermore, one hand had gripped his arm.

It widened its ox eyes and felt a baffling sense of panic. However, for some reason, his body had turned stiff in his spot, preventing him from moving. Suddenly, the silver-haired boy's bloody hand that held his arm moved upwards!

All he saw was a thick limb that was thrown high into the sky.

Blood began to spew out suddenly like a bursting water pipe. As the deluge of blood spurted out, pain began to overwhelm him.

Field Marshal Awesomo let out a painful cry. He found it unbelievable that a causal movement made by the silver-haired boy would rip his arm out. It was so fast that the pain did not transmit to his brains in time.

However, its nightmare had only just begun. The silver-haired boy suddenly leaped from his shoulders and agilely circled around his arms and climbed to his back.

Immediately, his back turned cold, as though a foreign object had been inserted into his body. What followed was an excruciating pain that nearly caused him to faint. It felt like something inside of him had been separated.

He cried out in pain as he slammed his left hand towards his back, but before his arm reached the halfway mark, the boy had grabbed his entire arm. With a twist against the joint, the arm was dislocated and severed.

The repeated blows of extreme pain made him howl in pain. The firing of thalamic neurons prevented him from fainting. And at that moment, something seemed to drop down from the sky, crashing into his foot. In response, he knelt to the ground and when he lowered his head to take a look, he realized that it was a bloodied vertebral bone!

The boy had climbed behind him, and in an instant, ripped a portion of his vertebral bone out!

No, that was no boy at all, but a terrifying devil, a true devil covered in human skin.

Just as he had furious and horrified thoughts, the devil's face suddenly appeared in front of his eyes. That pair of frail and thin-looking hands that were stained in blood had already pierced his abdomen.

Field Marshal Awesomo immediately felt the presence of a form of despair. He yelled, "No, no, no, no..."

However, it was of no use. The pair of hands did not hesitate as they easily stabbed deeper into his abdomen and pulled outwards. Sticky intestines began extending out like rope, and was cut midway. His liver and lungs began to spew out the next second after they were pulverized.

"Ah Ah Ah Ah..."

Field Marshal Awesomo gave a cry of despair. His body was being torn apart piece by piece and the pain was much more intense than being sliced to pieces by a sword. Furthermore, the pain came too quickly and suddenly. What followed was even more agonizing.

The spectators above the basin frowned for they had never encountered such a brutal and bloody scene. Some could not bear

to watch it while the weaker ones were already beginning to vomit.

Speechless and company were dazed from the scene. They found it unbelievable that the devil ripping Field Marshal Awesomo apart while he still remained alive was Shi Xiaobai.

Even Dawn could not help but cover her mouth. Although she had imagined how cruel the scenes in the array world were after seeing the hellish scene upon regaining consciousness, she still found it highly impactful when she saw it with her own eyes. At the same time, she felt remorse while her heart ached for the devil before her. The more brutal and crueler it was, the more adorable and gentle she found Shi Xiaobai.

While everyone was startled by the shocking scene, Earthbound Yaksha was the only one that had begun to take action. If this continued, Field Marshal Awesomo could very well be killed. It appeared as if the silver-haired devil was bent on tearing Field Marshal Awesomo to pieces. Such damage could very likely exceed Field Marshal Awesomo's self-recovery ability and when the time came, he would die completely.

Be it due to his warrior code or the friendship of ten thousand years, it could not sit idle.

However, just as Earthbound Yaksha moved, Sunless had already noticed its actions. She was one of the few people present that could maintain her calm. That was because she believed in Shi Xiaobai's true nature. Furthermore, she could vaguely guess the sequence of events in the array world. Therefore, she did not get confused by the bloody scene, and instead remained vigilant

against Earthbound Yaksha's actions.

The moment she saw Earthbound Yaksha have the thought of rescuing Field Marshal Awesomo, Sunless had slashed her sword out. Using an azure sword beam, she stopped it in its path before using 'Meteor Steps' to chase up to it.

"Scram!" Earthbound Yaksha roared angrily. It did not want to be embroiled with Sunless, making it evident how much it wanted to save the ox.

Sunless remained silent. With the second burst coming from 'Meteor Steps', she charged forward and suddenly slashed at Earthbound Yaksha's waist. The angle was artful and incisive. It contained rich powers of light, and it would be an absolutely devastating blow for Earthbound Yaksha.

Earthbound Yaksha had no choice but to turn around and parry the strike with 'Vaiśravaṇa Heavenly Slash'. It was secretly worried as it immediately bellowed angrily. Soul Suppression once again burst out and it was prepared to kill Sunless first. It believed that its 'enraged' mode would allow it to finish the battle in a short span of time.

On the other end, the similarly 'enraged' Shadow Wraith had begun taking action. Its materialized tentacles slammed the ground, and its sludge-like body constantly advanced. When it reached a viable range, it stretched out its tentacles towards the silver-haired devil that was engaging in wanton slaughter.

Dawn was already alert of her surroundings. She naturally wouldn't allow Shadow Wraith to succeed in its sneak attack. When she saw the tentacles hurling over, she immediately took a step forward, and with an 'Instant Flashstep', she appeared where the tentacles were. She slashed out with a swing of her sword. The sword technique she used was 'Sacred Fire', meant specially to restrain evil beings. The sword burned with sacred flames and when the tentacles were severed, the flames traced back to the origin of the tentacles.

Shadow Wraith yelled in pain as it hurriedly severed its tentacle of its own accord. It roared maniacally, flailing the dozen or more tentacles in the air before it suddenly smacked them out!

It was unknown when Speechless appeared behind Shadow Wraith. Both his hands held a psionic sword as he thrust them towards Shadow Wraith. With an abnormal pose, he reproduced 'Sacred Fire' that Mirror Replication had just obtained. The holy fire stabbed into Shadow Wraith's asshole...uh, into its body along with the sword.

Shadow Wraith cried out tragically as the flames that contained holy powers consumed it. However, it was not that weak to succumb to it. It immediately used its sludge-like force in its body to douse the sacred fire.

The rest had begun taking action as well.

Mu Lengxi began singing Muse Silvermoon's "The Sky is High and the Wind Sings" again. The song that expressed courage and willpower was most empowering at that moment in time.

Pulp Farmer and Mu Yuesheng joined in the battle as they headed towards Shadow Wraith that was the closest to them.

Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu teamed up with Sunless as they began attacking Earthbound Yaksha in a three-corner pincer attack.

At that moment, a ghost-like figure dashed from the middle of the basin to another end of the basin in a startling sonic boom. While everyone was still recovering from their shock, it had already appeared in front of Earthbound Yaksha.

It was 'Shi Xiaobai'!

What happened to Field Marshal Awesomo?

Looking sideways into the distance, the only thing left from where Field Marshal Awesomo previously was was a pool of blood and a pile of sticky and nauseating bits of meat. The only thing that could be considered complete was an eye socket that was a quarter its normal size. As for the rest, they had been ripped to shreds...

Earthbound Yaksha was incensed when it saw that. Ignoring the chilling fear that it suddenly felt, it slashed at the silver-haired devil in front of it.

The strike was known as the 'Wraith Slaying Devil Blade' which accumulated its power from slaughtering countless of wraiths

from hell. It was an accumulation of the prolonged hatred wraiths had towards the devils that abused them. It was a blade technique that was specially used to counter devils.

It did not have a chance to use it against pure and honest humans, but at that moment, it was highly suitable to use it against the cruel devil.

However, the silver-haired devil in front of it was not any ordinary devil. It possessed an exaggerated agility that even high-grade devils could not attain. With a turn to its side, it dodged the blade before stretching out a hand to grip Earthbound Yaksha's arm. It easily tore the arm off its joints and taking advantage of the momentum, the devil charged forward. Before the pain from the torn off limb spewed blood, the devil had stabbed Earthbound Yaksha's body with a hand!

"No! How could it be?"

Earthbound Yaksha watched in disbelief as its abdomen instantly ruptured. Then, an excruciating pain overwhelmed its senses.

It was an evil spirit from hell. Only light and spectral powers could directly hurt its physical embodiment. Why was a hand that was made out of flesh able to rip its body apart?

Earthbound Yaksha was destined to never know the answer. The time offered to it to ponder was just too little because the pair of devilish hands did not wait a second to rip apart its prey.

Tragic cries echoed throughout the basin once again. Thankfully, Earthbound Yaksha was just a physical embodiment of an evil spirit. It was a kind of specter, so the scene was not as gory and disgusting as before.

But the degree of horror was enough to give people nightmares.

Sunless, Liu Yu, and Feng Yuanlin managed to see the scene up close. The visual impact was unimaginable. No matter how horrifyingly Earthbound Yaksha cried, the silver-haired devil continued tearing its body apart like an unwavering machine. It ripped out portions that was once Earthbound Yaksha's body and threw them nonchalantly. It was as if it was not ripping apart a life, but a cheap blob of cotton.

Liu Yu and Feng Yuanlin turned their heads away midway through the brutal scene. Only Sunless stared intently. She stood close by and focused on Earthbound Yaksha with a wary gaze. Even though it had been torn to bits, Sunless did not wish to let down her guard of it possibly hurting Shi Xiaobai before it died.

The ten seconds that felt extremely long was actually very short. Almost in a blink of an eye, Earthbound Yaksha's massive body had transformed into a pool of bloody water.

All it took for a complete body to turn into messy pool of bodily fluid that was void of any dregs was ten seconds.

This was why the scene had such an impact.

And after completing this 'trivial' task, the silver-haired devil charged straight for the frantic Shadow Wraith without even looking at the three humans.

"He's not attacking us. Does it mean that Shi Xiaobai still maintains a bit of his consciousness even in this state? Or he would only attack targets that show animosity?" Liu Yu feigned calmness as he analyzed.

"Latter." Sunless suddenly said. Her eyes were still locked onto Shi Xiaobai intently, but she had answered Liu Yu's analysis.

"What are you basing it on?" asked Liu Yu.

Sunless shook her head and whispered the word, "Hope."

The latter was without any basis, but she wished that it was the latter.

That was because if it were the former, it would be too cruel to awaken Shi Xiaobai if he had even a tiny bit of consciousness regarding this matter.

Shadow Wraith was being encircled by Dawn, Speechless, Pulp Farmer, and Mu Yuesheng. Its situation was much worse than Earthbound Yaksha, but it was able to use its massive body and extraordinary resistance to result in a stalemate with the four people without suffering too terribly.

However, the silver-haired devil very quickly reached its devilish claws out toward it. It was much faster than it had expected. To be precise, the speed at which Field Marshal Awesomo and Earthbound Yaksha was torn apart and reduced to sludge was something it could not imagine.

Therefore, its tragedy befell it. In front of the silver-haired devil, it was unable to put up the slightest bit of resistance. That unreasonable agility made its hundreds of tentacles useless, much less the strange energy that was ripping out chunks of its body in a nonchalant manner. It was like a natural executioner, one that was professionally trained to deliver death by dismembering.

As its body was the largest among the three Level Lords, it had survived a few more seconds more than Field Marshal Awesomo and Earthbound Yaksha. But because of this, the misery it experienced lasted for a few more seconds.

Those few seconds felt like a few lifetimes long. It was the cruelest punishment from hell that made it not even want to live for another second!

The wretched howling and crying echoed inside and outside the basin. It made all the spectators turn silent. It made the rookies only dare to stop and stare from a distance.

Only when Shadow Wraith's body was completely ripped to pieces, marking the deaths of the three Level Lords did the silver-haired devil stand in the pool of 'bloody sludge'. His body was covered in fresh blood, dirty bits of meat and foul sludge. It was silent, like a machine that came to a complete halt after finishing

its mission.

That moment of stillness extended to the voices and breathing of the crowd. It was as if the entire world had fallen into silence in shock.

This continued to the moment when the blond girl, whose clothes were similarly blood-stained, suddenly took a step forward. With a leap, she pounced into the silver-haired devil's arms. Her arms wrapped around the devil's waist and she hugged him tightly.

The robes she wore were originally white in color and were untainted in any way. Their original pure snow-white color had now turned into a dirty blackish-red.

However, at that moment, she looked holier and purer than a nun dressed in white robes.

"Sleep, it'll all be fine after you sleep."

Dawn raised her hand as she gently caressed 'Shi Xiaobai's silver hair while speaking as if she was delivering a somniloquy.

Not far away, Sunless gradually slowed down her footsteps. Her calm expression and her dull eyes remained the same. No expression or emotions could be read from them, but one could clearly hear the sound of her footsteps coming to a halt and feel the slight tremble of her body.

"Got beaten to it..."

She murmured with an inaudible voice.

Other than that, no one made a sound in an attempt to disturb the 'couple' embracing each other without a care in the world, despite being covered in grim innards.

The matter was over. The three Level Lords were all dead. The plot that was machinated against them had been foiled. Now, all that was left was to wrap up the situation.

The silver-haired devil, no, Shi Xiaobai had yet to be restored to his original state.

At that moment, he was like a machine that had stopped operating. He remained motionless, allowing Dawn to hug him. The golden vortices in his eyes that were constantly rotating had also stopped, and it looked more empty than they were before.

However, he did not faint either. Such a state could not help but make others worry for him.

Dawn called out a few times and realized that Shi Xiaobai was remaining motionless. As she thought about it, she pulled away from his arms and took a few steps back.

"Are you not sleeping because it's too dirty? I'll help you shower?"

It was unknown how did the girl come to such a conclusion. Furthermore, she immediately began taking action.

She held her hands together in front of her chest and with her palms facing up like she was holding a ball, she quickly chanted, "By the Oath of Water, by thy name and by my body, Water Ball!"

Blue light condensed in between the girl's hands. Suddenly, a ball of water about the size of a basketball was raised up by the girl. The ball of water constantly expanded in size and when it was about two meters high, it suddenly sprayed forward!

The large ball of water flew to a spot above 'Shi Xiaobai' and suddenly burst. It splashed down like a waterfall, drenching 'Shi Xiaobai'. The blood, dirt and flesh were cleansed away, but 'Shi Xiaobai' remained motionless despite the impact.

"Is that magic?" Liu Yu asked Mu Lengxi using Telepathic Relay.

"It's magic. Three thousand years ago, the psionic cultivation system was not mainstream. There was quite a number of people using magic. However, the Hero King at this age has very ordinary magic standards," answered Mu Lengxi.

In that short period of time, Dawn had sprayed three balls of water at Shi Xiaobai. He was much cleaner than before so although there were still stains on his clothes, the dirt on his skin had been cleansed by the strong force.

The face that had been cleaned finally revealed its true appearance.

"Pss...That bastard is quite handsome after all."

Speechless found his words problematic as he immediately said with a laugh, "But unfortunately, he's still slightly inferior when compared to This Emperor."

The people present immediately ignored the second half of his sentence, but they nodded in agreement with regards to the first half of Speechless's sentence.

The pale face looked better than before. The silver hair gave him a unique sinister charm. Although his eyes looked empty, it did not hinder itself from being a part of the set of perfect facial features. Shi Xiaobai's originally delicate but not handsome face looked very different due to a few tiny changes.

Saying he looked like a 'hottie' was not accurate. To be precise, he had a beauty that was neutral-masculine.

Dawn gave a satisfied smile. She walked forward while disregarding the gazes of everyone. She gently caressed Shi Xiaobai's face. If it was not done by a beautiful girl to a boy, it would look like a creepy sexual predator doing as he pleased to a motionless loli.

No one made a sound to stop her because they realized that Shi Xiaobai was completely cleansed. However, Dawn was covered in dirt. She did not even send a drop of water on herself, as though she did not care about her hygiene.

"Didn't history tell us that the Hero King was a germaphobe?" Pulp Farmer whispered into Liu Yu's ear.

"We might have learned some fake history." Just as always, Liu Yu gave up pondering. He gave an answer that was of little research value so that there was no need to further investigate the truth.

No matter what type of Hero King the historical Hero King was, the present Dawn Li resembled an unkempt and dirty female hooligan.

She caressed Shi Xiaobai's face for nearly a minute before she suddenly retracted her hand. She said gently, "I'm leaving..."

Leave? Where to?

Everyone fell into a daze.

However, Dawn continued,

"I need to return to the place where I belong."

"I have to return because the time is up."

"After this separation, we might never meet again because we are people from two different worlds, to begin with. We might even not be in the same 'timeline' and we are people from different 'realities'."

"But regardless of the case, I like you. I like you very, very, very much. Uh...What I'm talking about is the feeling between men and women."

"This level of liking would never change no matter how much time has passed. So even though we are separating, even though we will not have a way to meet again, I'm already happy enough to have this many beautiful memories."

"But, I have a regret..."

"I still have no idea of what you think of me up to now. Do you..."

"Hey, Shi Xiaobai, do you like me, even if it's just a tiny, tiny bit?"

As she ignored everyone's looks, the girl boldly and passionately gave her confession before she left.

A faint sadness and a rich sweetness permeated the air. This was probably the beauty of love.

"This is probably what it feels like to be a bachelor," said Liu Yu.

However, the cold machine did not begin to function properly because of the heartwarming words. Even the girl's beautiful farewell and passionate confession were useless.

The silver-haired Shi Xiaobai remained motionless and unmoved.

The girl sighed before she suddenly took a step back.

"Do not forget me."

She looked like she was pleading and her expression looked heart wrenching.

"Then...farewell...my first love."

It was as if she was bidding him farewell forever with a plangent voice.

The girl took another step back and took a deep breath. Looking up slightly, it was as if she was about to leave immediately.

At that moment, the golden vortices in the pair of empty eyes suddenly began spinning.

A fair hand raised stiffly.

Everyone stared with widened eyes as though they had seen a miracle.

Dawn widened her eyes as well. After a moment of surprise, she hurriedly stretched out her hand to hold Shi Xiaobai's raised hand.

"I...I...I..."

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai opened his mouth.

It was still that familiar voice, but it was like a broken radio that was stuck with the word "I".

But at that moment, everyone patiently pricked up their ears.

Dawn felt that her pounding heart was racing faster and faster.

"I...I..."

This repeating but staccato 'I' continued on for a full minute, but just as everyone was about to lose their patience, the second word was squeezed out of his vocal cords.

"I...I...Like..."

A single "Like" syllable instantly made Dawn rejoice in tears.

As long as there was no fucked up reversal, the words Shi Xiaobai wanted to finish was definitely—I like you.

Just this sentence was enough.

That was on Dawn's mind.

Yes, the joke had gone far enough.

Things like she having to leave or that her time was up? Of course, none of that was actually true!

She had planned on pretending to leave in a hope to let Shi Xiaobai, who had 'hung', recover his consciousness. However, she never expected to receive such great rewards!

It completely exceeded her expectations and all she felt was satisfaction.

"Actually..."

Dawn was about to explain the joke because she found it sinful to continue experiencing the bliss through the use of a joke.

But at that moment, a strange voice resounded in her mind.

The sound alarmed Dawn. She immediately turned flustered as she raised her head to survey her surroundings as she shouted, "What does forceful expulsion mean!?"

"I was just joking!"

"No! I'm not leaving!"

"I don't want to leave!"

"I don't want..."

Everyone watched in astonishment as Dawn began shouting at an unknown entity. Suddenly, at the moment Dawn shouted "I don't want", she vanished without completing her sentence!

She had disappeared into thin air!

She had vanished in front of everyone's eyes instantly!

"Like...Like."

The voice that sounded like a broken radio truly broke at that instant.

The moment Dawn vanished, 'Shi Xiaobai's voice came to a sudden halt. The golden vortices in his pair of black eyes began to

spin out of control. The speed was that of a rapidly spinning top!

Everyone was shocked as well. Suddenly they felt a heavy pressure billow towards them, causing them to feel stifled.

"Soul...Suppression?" Speechless frowned deeply. Although he had experienced 'resistance training', he was unable to withstand the pressure of the Soul Suppression which came from 'Shi Xiaobai'!

Dawn Li's sudden disappearance had clearly pushed 'Shi Xiaobai' to the brink of raging!

Strange streams of black energy suddenly began to surge towards Shi Xiaobai. The golden vortices in his eyes spun at high speeds while his pale skin gradually turned pitch black. His silver hair gradually grew longer and the intensity of Soul Suppression grew stronger. Even Speechless could not withstand it as he was completely immobile!

At that moment, even the world seemed to experience an odd phenomena.

"Who...can stop him..." Speechless uttered those words with great difficulty, but his heart was filled with wry smiles. Even he could not move from the Soul Suppression, so who else could prevent the enraging Shi Xiaobai.

However, Speechless's pupils constricted slightly because he saw

an azure-dressed girl slowly walking towards Shi Xiaobai despite the overwhelming suppression.

Sunless!

Even under such immense suppression, Sunless was still able to proceed forward. Step by step, she approached the enraged Shi Xiaobai.

"All...All the best..." prayed Speechless.

Sunless did not disappoint him, or it should be said that Sunless never disappointed anyone.

Even though Speechless had been crushed till he was adhered to the ground in the end, Sunless was still walking. Even though it was a turtle's crawl, she finally managed to touch Shi Xiaobai's cheeks gently with her hand.

"Came late..." Sunless said softly.

The last time, someone had taken the first opportunity away from her.

This time, she had come late.

It didn't sound like there was a great difference, but she had managed to touch his face for a second time...

At that moment, the quaking ground came to a stop. The darkening skies lit up with a glimmer of light. The Soul Suppression that had crushed people to the ground vanished suddenly and the black energy that constantly surged into Shi Xiaobai's body instantly dissipated...

But a shocking thing happened at that moment!

'Shi Xiaobai', who had his face touched, suddenly stretched out both his hands to press down on Sunless's shoulders. He pounced and immediately pushed Sunless to the ground. Sunless moaned, as though she was in pain. She was pinned down to the ground by 'Shi Xiaobai'.

"Holy shit!!"

Was his bestial nature finally showing after he failed to rage?

Everyone hurriedly got up and rushed to save Sunless, but they saw Shi Xiaobai, who was sprawled above Sunless, suddenly collapse. His head fell straight onto Sunless's chest. It looked like he was smothering himself with her breasts, but everyone noticed that Shi Xiaobai's hair had turned from silver to black.

"Fainted."

Sunless immediately spoke, so as to assuage the crowd that was rushing over to prevent Shi Xiaobai from engaging in a lascivious

act from panicking.

Sunless held Shi Xiaobai's head and let her chest be his pillow before she sat up.

"He's sleeping..."

Sunless gently caressed Shi Xiaobai's black hair. Her voice was warm and gentle, and her expression was even tenderer.

"Ah! Sunless, you..." Liu Yu, who was the first to approach, exclaimed suddenly.

Everyone gathered over and saw two deep claw marks on Sunless's shoulders. Blood spewed out and one could even vaguely see bone...

It turned out that 'Shi Xiaobai' was not engaging in a bestial act. Instead, he had wanted to attack Sunless. If not for him falling unconscious at the critical moment, dispelling his silver-haired state, Sunless's two arms would have been ripped off and thrown into the air like the three Level Lords...

However, despite experiencing such grave danger, Sunless was still able to maintain a gentle expression despite enduring the excruciating pain. One could even see a rare smile on her face.

She caressed the hair of Shi Xiaobai, who was resting on her chest, as if she was caressing a treasure more important than her

life.

"Shh...Don't wake him up."

She looked up to gesture for the panicking crowd to calm down.

At that moment, the two girls from the Mu family began to tear up. The boys around them were feeling deeply shocked. They felt that if Shi Xiaobai were to one day let down that girl, he was definitely not to be forgiven.

Mu Lengxi quietly cast healing magic on Sunless's shoulders, while Speechless used Mirror Replication to heal her as well. Her injuries took nearly ten minutes before they healed.

Speechless sighed and said, "Let's go. Shi Xiaobai needs a quiet room to rest in. Sunless might also need to have her wounds tended to. Let's go back."

Speechless' suggestion was met with agreement. Sunless hesitated for a moment before agreeing. There was no other reason because there was indeed a need for Shi Xiaobai to have a quiet room to rest although she did not mind sitting there and be Shi Xiaobai's pillow.

"Come on. Liu Yu, let's hold up one arm, and support him from each side. Little Xi and Yuesheng, help Sunless bandage her wounds."

Speechless got Liu Yu, who was standing beside him, to help 'move' Shi Xiaobai. Since carrying him alone needed a princess carry, it created a feeling of dissonance. As for Sunless, her shoulders were injured, so she could not bear the heavy burden of moving Shi Xiaobai. Furthermore, there was a need for her to tend to her wounds.

Speechless' order's were always rather reasonable, so the group quickly followed his instructions.

The returning team lineup was determined instantaneously. Feng Yuanlin would walk right at the back, while Speechless and Liu Yu would each cling onto one of Shi Xiaobai's arms. They would walk in the second row, while Mu Lengxi and Mu Yuesheng would help Sunless bandage her wounds. Pulp Farmer would walk at the back to watch their backs.

Speechless did not relax even when it came to the returning lineup. He proceeded in the safest way possible.

It was because there was still a group of spectators above the basin that had not departed. Although they voluntarily opened up a path that could easily accommodate dozens of carts, no one knew what incidents might happen.

There was no harm in taking precaution.

Everyone proceeded as planned.

Feng Yuanlin walked carefreely despite Speechless reminding him several times to be on alert.

Mu Lengxi and Mu Yuesheng each stood on one side of Sunless as they helped her bandage her wounds. However, since it was in broad daylight and with so many eyes watching, Sunless only wrapped two bandages around her clothes. There was a need for her to take off her clothes and be bandaged again when she returned.

Pulp Farmer demonstrated an excellent quality completely unlike Feng Yuanlin's. He was constantly wary of the back and even released the thousand paper cranes as a preemptive warning system. He nipped danger in the bud.

Speechless began to raise topics for a conversation in an attempt to make the team's heavy mood turn lively.

"You don't say, This Emperor remembers that only one trial-taker can obtain the recognition in the seventh level's world. When the sole person to clear the level is made known, the remaining trial-takers would be forcefully expelled. This Emperor is very sorry because all of you would be forcefully expelled as a result of This Emperor," said Speechless.

"Why?" Liu Yu followed up in a friendly tone.

"Because based on the performance of the battle, This Emperor's performance was probably the best, right? With exciting commands and a perfect plan, This Emperor had led everyone

from a situation of despair to an outcome where we turned the tides of battle. If the assessment program were to choose someone to acknowledge, it will definitely choose This Emperor, right?" Speechless said as though it was a matter taken for granted.

"Uh...but the reason why we could turn the tide of battle was because of This Penniless Priest's Telepathic Relay, wasn't it?" A brittle alliance could shatter at any time. Liu Yu felt that his hard work was not to be dismissed even if it lacked merit. It wasn't easy for him to be a mouthpiece which could not easily interrupt.

"Without This Emperor's strategic orders, Telepathic Relay would have been useless," said Speechless with a smack of his lips.

"But This Penniless Priest recalls that the resolution of Shadow Shackles was all dependent on Sunless. Finding the core formation was all dependent on Pulp Farmer. Destroying the core formation was all dependent on Mu Yuesheng. The reason why we could restrain Earthbound Yaksha was all because of Mu Lengxi and Feng Yuanlin, who protected her. Benefactor Speechless, other than you restraining Shadow Wraith for a short moment, it appears like you did not do anything special?" Liu Yu looked baffled. He had the feeling that Sunless was more suited to be the MVP.

"This..."

Speechless began to stammer, but he quickly straightened his thoughts. With a light cough, he said, "For a company to run smoothly, it obviously cannot be void of technical talent, but what greatly influences the company is obviously the chief executive that aligns the various departments and eventually makes the

decisions. What This Emperor did was no different from a chief executive."

Liu Yu was surprised. Although it was twisted logic, what Speechless said sounded very reasonable?

At that moment, Feng Yuanlin, who was walking right in front, turned his head suddenly and tried to get in on the conversation, "I believe..."

However, Speechless immediately exhorted Feng Yuanlin to be wary of the front by saying, "Don't turn your head. Watch your front!"

Feng Yuanlin helplessly turned his head and said, "I can still speak without my head turned, right?"

"Sure, what do you want to say?" asked Speechless.

"I think the person that should obtain the assessment program's recognition is Boss Shi Xiaobai!" Feng Yuanlin said loudly. With his boss being unconscious, as a lackey, he naturally needed to step forward to fight for his boss's reputation!

"Tch, Shi Xiaobai? Tell me, what did Shi Xiaobai do in this battle?" Speechless said with a scoff.

"Boss Shi Xiaobai had killed three Level Lords!" shouted Feng Yuanlin.

"Is that so? Think about it carefully. Can that monster that killed the Level Lords be called Shi Xiaobai?" asked Speechless.

"Uh...Probably..." Feng Yuanlin obviously would not admit that the silver-haired devil was his boss, Shi Xiaobai. With that line of thought, the achievement of killing the Level Lords was indeed unlikely to be considered Shi Xiaobai's.

However, Feng Yuanlin was disgruntled, so he said, "But...But...Boss Shi Xiaobai managed to hook up with..."

"Hook up?" Speechless asked in puzzlement.

"Hook up...hook up with who?" Feng Yuanlin scratched his head and said, "I remember that Boss Shi Xiaobai had hooked up with some very powerful and dignified figure! But who is it? Why can't I remember it at all?"

"Hey, beware getting slain by slandering Shi Xiaobai, by that Sun... Anyways, you understand. Although This Emperor also thinks that the bastard is a casanova, This Emperor has no impression of him hooking up with anyone. It's normal if you can't recall it because there was no such person," said Speechless.

"Oh, is that so? It might be me remembering wrong." Feng Yuanlin thought for a moment and immediately felt like he was mistaken. It was as though it was a wrong impression that lacked any basis.

"That's why, Shi Xiaobai did not do a thing in this battle. Instead, he was the one being rescued. It's impossible for the assessment program to choose him, right? It will not doubt be This Emperor," said Speechless with a laugh.

"No, that's not right!"

Feng Yuanlin still found the matter somewhat odd. After he pondered for a very long period of time, he finally had a stroke of brilliance and shouted, "That's right, Boss Shi Xiaobai had tied with the Hero King! Bro, you were nearly killed. So it is beyond a reasonable doubt that you were defeated!"

"It was just carelessness on This Emperor's part... Furthermore, that Hero King was a fake. It was an imitation created by the assessment program. Didn't it say the truth before it disappeared? Shi Xiaobai's tie with the Hero King was not true, so it can't be considered something important," said Speechless.

"Fake...Oh, it's fake. Odd, why do I remember that someone said it's true...Did I remember wrongly again?" Feng Yuanlin scratched his head in a distressed state.

"Did you have some strange dream last night, causing your memories to mess up? Or is it...that This Emperor's memory has problems? Hey, Liu Yu, Pulp Farmer, Yuesheng, what about your memories? Are they the same as This Emperor's?" asked Speechless.

"They're the same." Liu Yu and the rest gave the same answers one after the other.

"Ha...ha, it looks like I remembered wrong!" Feng Yuanlin gave a stiff laugh.

This conversation suddenly turned somewhat awkward when it reached that point.

After a few minutes, no one made another sound. Only when Speechless found a new topic of conversation did it become somewhat lively again.

At that moment, they were proceeding through the Silent Desolate Lands. On the way, they also encountered many citizens that were similarly on the way back.

Although they did not let down their guard...Urh, to be precise, they referred to Pulp Farmer, who consciously remained wary of the back, as well as Feng Yuanlin, who was forced to be constantly be wary of the front.

Most of the time, it was Speechless who took the initiative to kick start a conversation. The others would respond to him and it made the return journey not overly boring.

However, just as they were past the halfway mark of their journey!

Something out of the ordinary happened!

A problem happened to the three people walking in the second row simultaneously. First, it was Liu Yu on the left who fell to the left as though he was knocked away. Speechless, who was on the right, flew backwards as if he was struck by an immense force. And Shi Xiaobai, who was carried by the arms, planted his face straight to the ground in an odd manner...

"Shi Xiaobai!"

"Boss Shi Xiaobai!"

"Brother Speechless!"

"Speechless Li!"

Everyone exclaimed. Sunless was the first to rush to Shi Xiaobai, who had collapsed to the ground face down. Feng Yuanlin turned his head and walked over to help Liu Yu up.

Mu Yuesheng had instantly turned around to rush up to Speechless, who was behind her. Pulp Farmer, who was behind, also naturally walked towards Speechless, who was closest to him.

Mu Lengxi's eyes wavered from left to right for a moment. She had noticed Sunless, who had rushed to Shi Xiaobai's side. As the light in her eyes dimmed, she bit her lower lip before running towards Speechless.

At that moment, Sunless had roughly probed Shi Xiaobai's body. When she realized that he was still unconscious and uninjured, she immediately heaved a sigh of relief. She turned her head and asked Liu Yu, "What happened?"

She did not see the culprit, nor did she sense any energy fluctuations. But why did the trio suddenly collapse to the ground?

Was it some invisible force?

The answer clearly wasn't that.

Liu Yu hesitated slightly before saying with a sigh, "This Penniless Priest did not manage to see all of it, but the general sequence of events was Benefactor Shi Xiaobai suddenly waking up. He knocked This Penniless Priest down with his elbow and then smacked Benefactor Speechless in the chest. It caused Benefactor Speechless to fly back... This Penniless Priest failed to see what happened after that... But maybe Benefactor Shi Xiaobai had fallen unconscious again, causing him to collapse forwards since no one was supporting him."

It sounded like the truth. If the invisible force did not exist, then the only way to explain how Liu Yu fell to the left, how Speechless flew backwards, and how Shi Xiaobai plummeted forward was Liu Yu's explanation.

Furthermore, Liu Yu had no reason to lie.

However...

"Why would Shi Xiaobai do such a thing?" asked Sunless.

Even if Shi Xiaobai had suddenly woken up, there was no reason for him to do such a thing, right?

"Yea, This Penniless Priest happened to notice Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's hair. At that instant, it was silver in color... This Penniless Priest cannot be sure, and keeps thinking that it's a mistake. After all, that instant was just too short."

As Liu Yu said that, his expression writhed.

For Shi Xiaobai's hair to suddenly turn from black to silver, before attacking a companion, it was probably an after effect of the enraged silver-haired mode, right?

All of this could be explained, and no one else was injured after all.

But...

For some reason, Sunless began to gradually frown.

At that moment, the sound of a sobbing cry was heard nearby.

"Brother, wake up! Don't scare me! Sob..."

It was Mu Yuesheng's voice!

The strong Mu Yuesheng was actually crying!?

"What happened?" Liu Yu exclaimed in query. He had rushed towards Speechless with Feng Yuanlin. Sunless carried Shi Xiaobai's body with both her arms as she slowly approached. Her shoulders were trembling gently. Clearly, it was still demanding on her to do such a thing with the injuries she had incurred.

Anyways, let's cast our gaze towards the spot that was more urgent.

At that moment, Speechless's eyes were closed tightly. His expression was extremely pale and he laid on the ground motionless.

Mu Lengxi was bending over his chest while crying incessantly. Mu Lengxi had a hand over her mouth to stop her from producing any sounds of crying, while her other hand was constantly wiping away the tears that rolled down her cheeks. Pulp Farmer had a look of disbelief.

Liu Yu and Feng Yuanlin rushed over, with the former asking loudly, "What happened?"

The two girls were already silent from the sobbing. Pulp Farmer could only utter, "Speechless...Speechless is dead...There's no breath...no pulse...Even his heart isn't beating...Speechless...Speechless has died just like that..."

Liu Yu's eyes widened as the color from his face drained. However, he immediately forced himself to calm down. He said loudly to the two sobbing girls, "Don't give up!"

Yes, even though all signs of life had vanished, it did not necessarily mean death!

Giving up was not an option at such a juncture!

Liu Yu thundered, "Mu Yuesheng, use your electric impulse to stimulate the heart. Mu Lengxi, use healing magic. No, that's not right. Use magic that restores physical strength! Don't cry! Don't give up! Speechless might not necessarily die just like that!"

Leadership was extremely important during times like this. Just as Speechless said, if not for his calm direction in that dire situation in the previous battle, which was analogous to gathering a plate of loose sand into a coagulated whole, it was impossible to reverse the situation.

In fact, what Liu Yu had instructed were actions that Mu Lengxi and Mu Yuesheng had been attempting again and again before they were left choked in tears. However, the two were left in complete anguish when the magic and defibrillation failed to show any positive effects.

However, Liu Yu's constant shouts of not giving up and to not lose hope ignited hope in them once again.

Even though there was barely any hope, it had made them strengthen their will once again.

Mu Yuesheng straightened her body and placed both hands on Speechless's chest. She carefully controlled the electric voltage needed for defibrillation. With such a superpower, she had naturally once studied defibrillation in the past.

Mu Lengxi had begun using physical and energy replenishment magic on Speechless again and again.

They were doing all that was humanly possible.

"Right...mouth-to-mouth resuscitation!" Liu Yu was also doing whatever he could do as well.

"I'll do it!"

At that moment, Pulp Farmer demonstrated his heroic side. He did not hesitate to volunteer himself to take on the task of administering mouth-to-mouth resuscitation.

Liu Yu's expression stiffened. He felt as if he had given an incorrect command. He did not know if Speechless would thank

him or kill him because of the mouth-to-mouth resuscitation if he was successfully resuscitated.

Pulp Farmer was truly a man of action. The moment he said that, he crouched down and was prepared to give Speechless mouth-to-mouth resuscitation, as though he was not giving others a chance to object or snatch the mission away from him.

However, there was someone who had snatched the mission away from him due to her closer proximity.

A second after Liu Yu mentioned mouth-to-mouth resuscitation, Mu Yuesheng had only hesitated for an instant before she reached out her hand to pinch Speechless's chin. She pulled it open as she leaned over to administer mouth-to-mouth resuscitation.

As she gave mouth-to-mouth resuscitation, she used her other hand to apply electric shocks to Speechless's chest. It could be said that she was giving her all.

This scene looked extremely hallowed. Furthermore, the mood appeared rather serious and depressing, so Liu Yu, who nearly blurted out 'wincest', swallowed his words.

"Speechless can definitely be saved. Definitely!" Liu Yu said affirmatively.

...

An hour later.

"Sorry..."

Liu Yu hung his head low.

"This Penniless Priest was just beside him, but for such a thing to happen...This Penniless Priest...is deserving of death."

Despite such profound remorse, the scene could not become any more solemn.

At that moment, the colors of their figures should be ashen gray.

That was because Speechless was dead.

He had really died.

He did not have any breathing, pulse or heart rate after attempts of saving his life lasted for an hour. Furthermore, his body was becoming colder.

But to be precise, Speechless had already been dead for an hour.

"It has to be a joke..."

Mu Yuesheng lowered her head. Her brown eyes did not have any

luster to them, as though they were 'malfunctioning'.

All of this could not be real. All of this is a joke, right?

Shi Xiaobai, who suddenly lost control of himself, had accidentally killed Speechless?

His most respected friend killed the cousin she liked?

This must be...a joke, right!?

Chapter 472: Thank You And Sorry

In a blink of an eye, three days had passed.

Shi Xiaobai was still in deep slumber and he never woke up again in that period of time.

Speechless similarly did not magically open his eyes once again. After three days, all that happened was his face turning paler, and his body turning colder and stiffer. Even the last preposterous hopes had been shattered by reality.

Speechless was truly dead. He had managed to luckily survive having his left chest pierced by a sword, but he was killed by a smack that did not even leave him with any superficial wounds.

He did not die gloriously in battle but was instead smacked to death by a partner that had lost control of himself after the battle. This laughable and ironic but ridiculous and tragic matter had truly happened.

At that moment, in the Infernal domain's Infernal King palace, in a penthouse that was carved out to be a forbidden ground, Speechless's corpse lay quietly in a coffin.

The useless mask that he had placed on his face in order to hide his identity had already been removed, revealing his extremely handsome face. He was not much different than the Hero King who disguised herself as a male.

Speechless had always been the most outstanding youth in China. Be it his family background, talent, ability or looks, they were the cream of the crop. He became famous at a young age and did many things that not only rendered people speechless, but also left them in awe. The number of girls in China that were infatuated by him with only one-sided love were innumerable. When they left the tower, it was unknown how many hearts would be broken from the news of Speechless's death.

And at that moment, there were two girls inside the penthouse. It was unknown how many times they had cried over the past three days.

Mu Lengxi and Mu Yuesheng sat quietly in a corner of the penthouse. Their eyes were slightly red and puffy. Their expressions looked like they were in a trance.

They were from the same family. By tracing the family tree, they were considered cousins. However, Mu Lengxi had been taken away by her magic teacher from a young age, so by the time she returned to the Mu family, Mu Yuesheng had already been taken in by collateral relatives because of her lacking talent and natural endowment. As such, only the slightly older Mu Yuesheng knew of Mu Lengxi's existence. It was only because she was Speechless's blood sister. As for Mu Lengxi, she did not even know that she had an elder cousin that had been forced away in the family from a young age.

However, what they were facing was the simultaneous loss of a loved one. Similarly, they had weeped over it for a prolonged

period of time and were aware of each other's identity. Naturally, they had an additional of feeling of being fellow sufferers. However, neither one of them attempted to console the other because they lacked that energy to spare.

All they did was spend time together in the dimly lit penthouse. They had been silent, calm and in grief for three days.

No matter how much grief they experienced, they eventually had to force themselves to accept the fact that their loved one had passed away.

"Creak."

The door to the penthouse was gently pushed open as Liu Yu walked in silently.

The duo looked up to take a glance when they heard the sound before they lowered their heads once again.

Liu Yu sighed silently as he slowly closed the door. He walked slowly to a seat on the other side. Seating himself down, he hesitated for a long while before he took a deep breath. Using 'Telepathic Relay', he connected the three people in the penthouse.

"Can This Penniless Priest...have a minute with the two of you?" Liu Yu said telepathically.

Mu Lengxi and Mu Yuesheng slowly turned their heads and after

a moment of hesitation, they nodded gently. Over the past three days, Liu Yu had apologized to them countless times. He had blamed himself from failing to prevent the tragedy from happening despite his close proximity. For that, they naturally did not truly blame him. No one could have prevented an accident they did not anticipate. However, they did not have the mental capacity to comfort him. As such, when they saw Liu Yu come in, they thought that he was there to apologize once again. They subconsciously avoided his gaze.

But at that moment, from the look on his face, he did not seem like he was here to apologize again?

"There is something This Penniless Priest wants to discuss with the two of you."

Liu Yu sighed and said, "Benefactor Shi Xiaobai has not awoken yet, but he will wake up sooner or later. So..."

When they heard 'Shi Xiaobai's name, Mu Lengxi and Mu Yuesheng's expressions changed slightly. To them, hearing this name gave them mixed emotions. They even subconsciously wanted to avoid it.

"So?" However, Mu Yuesheng knew that she could not escape from reality.

"So, This Penniless Priest wants to discuss with the two of you what will happen after Benefactor Shi Xiaobai wakes up. Back then, This Penniless Priest saw Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's hair

clearly turn silver. It is obvious he had not regained consciousness, or he would never have done such a thing. This Penniless Priest believes that he might very well not remember what had happened when he wakes up..." As Liu Yu said that, he suddenly fell into silence.

"Oh?" Mu Yuesheng frowned slightly.

Liu Yu sighed once again and after a long moment of hesitation, he said, "If Benefactor Shi Xiaobai wakes up and knows that he killed Benefactor Speechless because he lost control, he would definitely feel extremely distressed. But we all understand that the deceased is gone. No amount of remorse can rectify things. It will only exacerbate the grief, so This Penniless Priest wishes that this matter can be withheld from Benefactor Shi Xiaobai. More importantly, with the Li family's elder generation practice of protectionism, if they were to know of reason for Benefactor Speechless's demise, they would employ ruthless means to kill the murderer of Benefactor Speechless as a form of revenge. They would not care if Benefactor Shi Xiaobai was innocent or not. The Li family is a powerful faction. Even the Hero Association will not be able to guarantee of Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's safety, much less Gaia. Furthermore, even if they can protect him in the near future, they can't protect him forever. The Li family will not rest, so...This Penniless Priest wishes that not only will this matter be withheld from Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, it will also be kept a secret from the world. Sorry, This Penniless Priest knows that it's a very selfish act, but..."

Mu Yuesheng raised her hand to cut him off, "I understand. Withholding the truth will be the best for everyone. I share the same thoughts as you. Even if you didn't mention it, I would have

mentioned it sooner or later. So, there is no need to think that you have done something that has let all of us down. We know very well that 'Shi Xiaobai' in that state had even injured Sunless in his frenzy. If he had a bit of his consciousness, he would absolutely not have done that. Therefore, the murderer who killed Brother Speechless is not Shi Xiaobai, but that monster we have no idea about. That is the truth."

After three days of calming herself, Mu Yuesheng had returned to that strong Mu Yuesheng after collapsing in tears in the Silent Desolate Lands.

"Thank you..."

Liu Yu kneaded his glabella. He looked somewhat exhausted. Clearly, he had not had a good night's rest for the past three days.

"I also..."

At that moment, in Liu Yu and Mu Yuesheng's minds, Mu Lengxi's voice gently sounded. "I also...wish to hide the truth...because...if it was my brother, he would definitely have done the same..."

The blow dealt to the girl that was the youngest among them was nearly the greatest. The person she liked had killed her brother. With her age and experience, it was no doubt a serious tragedy. Up to that moment in time, she was still bearing hopes of a pitiable fantasy— 'how great it would be if all of this was a nightmare'. But even so, she was able to muster the courage to be strong when she

was needed to face the situation resolutely.

Speechless had two good sisters.

Shi Xiaobai had two good friends.

As such, the tragedy that had happened would not result in another tragedy.

This was probably the silver lining, right?

"Thank you."

"Sorry."

Liu Yu did not know what sort of mood this was, so he had to say those two sentences, but when he walked out the penthouse once again, he felt that the sunlight that illuminated him today was a little cold.

Chapter 473: As Long As There's Love, It Doesn't Matter Even If You Are Siblings!

After Liu Yu left, the dark penthouse fell into silence once again.

Mu Lengxi and Mu Yuesheng had thought of a lot of things over the past three days. Actually, even if Liu Yu did not say a word, they would definitely not view Shi Xiaobai as the murderer. That was because 'Shi Xiaobai' in his silver-haired state was no different from a 'devil'. It was void of humanity from the way it ruthlessly ripped the Level Lords into pieces. Furthermore, it had nearly ripped off Sunless's arms. How could such a 'devil' be Shi Xiaobai?

Therefore, all of this was just an accident, a natural disaster.

That was what they thought, as well as what they believed...

"Drip..."

Suddenly, the sound of water dripping to the ground echoed clearly in the gloomy penthouse. It was especially clear in such a silent atmosphere.

Mu Yuesheng looked over with a turn of her head. Her eyes constricted slightly.

Under the dim candlelight, tears were constantly rolling down the silver-haired girl's pallid face. She was struggling to wipe them

away but it was in vain.

Logically speaking, such crying had happened countless times over the past three days. It could not be considered odd, but Mu Yuesheng knew that it was different this time.

"You...are forcing yourself to give up...right?"

Mu Yuesheng let out a soft sigh. After a moment of hesitation, she slowly stretched her hand out to touch the girl's silver hair.

Mu Lengxi slowly looked up and met the slightly puffy brown eyes. She could see a sense of gentleness in them, but the grief in her heart become more unbearable. Tears burst out incessantly.

"You are forcing yourself to give up your liking for Shi Xiaobai...right?"

Mu Yuesheng said gently, "All of us do not think Shi Xiaobai is the murderer, but...it is a fact that Brother Speechless died under Shi Xiaobai's hands. We are unable to deny it, nor can we escape from that fact. As long as you see Shi Xiaobai, you will recall that painful matter. You can no longer like him without care or concern like before. You are unable to convince yourself that none of this had happened. Therefore, you are trying to force yourself to give up on the liking you have. However, giving up isn't that simple. Giving up is more painful than you imagined, so you can't stop your tears. Is that right?"

The words precisely described the feelings in the girl's heart. It made Mu Lengxi gradually widen her eyes.

Be it the fact of lying to Shi Xiaobai or concealing the truth to the world, she could do all of that easily. It was because she felt that it was the right thing to do. By doing so, she could put an end to the tragedy.

But the only person she could not hide from or deceive was herself.

The murderer that killed Speechless was indeed not Shi Xiaobai, but it was an irrefutable fact that Speechless had died under the hands of Shi Xiaobai.

She had no idea what sort of feelings or expression she should have when facing a clueless Shi Xiaobai.

The moment she saw him, how could she not be reminded of her elder brother's state of eternal slumber?

How could she make herself forget a tragedy that she could not forget for the rest of her life?

She could no longer be like her past self to carefreely and naively like that boy.

No, she didn't even have the right to like him anymore.

That was because with Shi Xiaobai's intelligence, there was no way for her to keep a perfect facade in front of him. She lacked the confidence when it came to keeping the secret under Shi Xiaobai's interrogation.

Therefore, to her, the deceit of Shi Xiaobai that Liu Yu had mentioned was equivalent to...avoiding Shi Xiaobai.

She had to give up her liking of Shi Xiaobai, be it to safeguard the secret or to prevent herself from being reminded of this painful memory.

However, giving up was not an easy matter. It was not something she could accomplish by steeling her heart.

It was because she was not as firm and resolute.

Mu Yuesheng had seen through it all and she had said it out, straight to her face.

Why?

Mu Lengxi questioned in her grief.

"Hey, Lengxi, I like Speechless. The like between man and woman," said Mu Yuesheng suddenly.

Mu Lengxi widened her eyes before reaching out her hands to cover her mouth.

"I've liked him from a very young age because he was always able to do things I couldn't. He would always bravely accomplish dreams that I did not even dare attempt. In my heart, he was a true hero."

Mu Yuesheng said softly, "Back then, when he stood in front of me, sounding his objection angrily at those adults and scathingly denouncing the unreasonable rules of the Mu family, my face was drenched in tears, but my heart was laughing in joy. That was because he had done something that I have backed out of despite having desperately endured and had a crazy wish to do so. So, from that moment onwards, I made up my mind that I would never back off against any matter... That is like how an ordinary girl likes him ordinarily."

Her liking was so genuine that it prevented anyone from raising doubts against it.

Mu Lengxi's gaze gradually turned soft. Although she was astonished, it was not something she found it hard to accept.

"But..."

Clearly, what Mu Yuesheng wanted to say wasn't that. She sighed lightly before saying, "But we are cousins. We are related by blood! So...I know my liking will not have any outcome. It's impossible for there to be an outcome! This is a liking that I had to give up

sooner or later. In the end, all that will be left is grief, regret, and remorse..."

The words that took a sudden turn made Mu Lengxi furrow her brows tightly. She clenched her fists quietly and was about to open her mouth to say something. But upon recalling that she could not speak, her expression turned flustered.

That's not true.

It shouldn't be like that.

She shouted in her heart.

"But I still chose to like him."

Suddenly, Mu Yuesheng gently smiled. She stretched out her hand to hold Mu Lengxi's tightly clenched fist. She whispered, "Even if there's no outcome, and even if you will never be together, so what if you have to lie to him forever, preventing from ever knowing? Can all of this be more painful than forcing yourself to give up on that liking of yours? True regret is not that you cannot be together with him when you like him. It is when you like him so much but have to resolutely choose to give him up when the time comes."

After having heard what Mu Yuesheng wanted to convey, Mu Lengxi's tightly clenched right fist gradually loosened.

"So, avoiding Shi Xiaobai does not mean giving up on your liking of him. That's because liking a person...doesn't necessarily mean you must be together."

So, she had said so much just to tell her that.

She was truly a fool.

Mu Lengxi nodded her head vigorously!

Even if they were destined to never be together, there was no need to give up on her liking.

Yes, that's it!

The tears finally came to a stop.

Mu Yuesheng gave a gentle smile as she raised her hand to caress Mu Lengxi's head.

Since Speechless isn't around anymore, let me take care of his younger sister.

Come to think of it, I'm her elder cousin.

At that moment, Mu Lengxi suddenly turned around to pick up a writing board beside her. She picked up a pen and quickly

scribbled on it.

Moments later, Mu Lengxi turned the writing board over.

Mu Yuesheng's expression changed drastically when she caught a glance of it.

The writing board read, "That's not the case. Even if you are cousins, you can still be together. Brother doesn't care about things like blood-relations!"

Chapter 474: Warming Each Other

"That's not the case. Even if you are cousins, you can still be together. Brother doesn't care about things like blood relations!"

Mu Lengxi had written that line on the board.

Mu Yuesheng's expression changed drastically when she saw that. A drop of sweat oozed out of her forehead.

Brother doesn't care about things like blood relations?

Wait a moment, what was the meaning behind those words?

Why did Mu Lengxi believe that Speechless thought nothing about blood relations? Could it be that Speechless had done something to her that ignored their blood relations? Or else, why would she say such words?

"Why do you say so? Could it be...Could it be that Speechless did something to you?"

Mu Yuesheng immediately turned flustered.

Mu Lengxi immediately shook her head and turned the writing board to face her and began scribbling once again.

Mu Yuesheng felt like a cat on hot bricks. She felt as if the strokes

on the writing board were scratching at her heart.

What was going on?

To say that he did not care about blood relations was terrifying upon careful thought.

Not long later, the writing board turned around once again.

Mu Yuesheng hurriedly focused and it read, "Brother did not do anything to me. It's just that Brother has always liked Little Aunt! He kept insisting that he will marry Little Aunt in the future and that he doesn't care about blood relations!"

Mu Yuesheng was surprised. Speechless liked his Little Aunt? That meant...he liked his mother's younger sister?

Eh!?

Wait!

If she did not remember wrong...

"If I recall correctly, Speechless and your little aunt is that person right? The Mu family's strongest person, one of the top ten S-class heroes in China. Mu Xiyan that has the title of 'Queen'." Mu Yuesheng swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

"That's right! Little Aunt is very strong and she's very pretty. Brother often says that Little Aunt is the number one beauty in China. He would not marry anyone else but her," wrote Mu Lengxi.

"Wait...if I remember correctly, Mu Xiyan is now twenty-eight years old, right? Their age gap is more than ten years. Eh, could it be just a joke? Right, it must be only a joke right? Things like marrying my father when I grow up. A joke like that?" said Mu Yuesheng.

Mu Lengxi shook her head and suddenly turned solemn. She wrote, "It's not a joke. Brother was serious. For Little Aunt, Brother had rejected the confessions of many girls. Brother really likes Little Aunt although it has always been one-sided. However, Brother made a confession last year!"

As the writing board could not contain all her words, Mu Lengxi's stunning words stopped at a cliffhanger.

"Confession? That can't be...Was...was it successful?"

Mu Yuesheng nervously held her breath.

This time, Mu Lengxi did not nod or shake her head in reply. Instead, she took her sweet time writing on the board. It was as if she wanted a particular girl to die of anxiousness.

After a few moments, she stopped writing and raised her board. "Of course he failed! Erh, back then, I had actually peeped in

hiding. After Brother confessed, Little Aunt was very angry. She gave him a thorough beating, sending him into the hospital for half a month! Erh, I was rather far away back then. Little Aunt had lowered her voice and said something I couldn't hear. But it was definitely a rejection. Brother suffered quite a setback and remained gloomy for months."

"A thorough beating... It does sound like what the rumored 'Queen' would do."

Mu Yuesheng wiped the sweat from her forehead while she remained unsure of what to make out of it.

However, Mu Lengxi immediately wrote, "So, Brother doesn't care about blood relations. Things like cousins not being able to be together, no way!"

In order to comfort her elder cousin, she had dug out her brother's hidden past. Such a sister was sick!

"Speechless has never changed after all. He always does something that I want to do but never dare to. Even things like a confession...If..."

If she knew earlier, would she have mustered the courage to confess?

But, such an if was just an if.

With the present situation, nothing could be changed no matter how much regret there was. She no longer had the chance to tell the boy of the truth in her heart.

Mu Yuesheng suddenly felt very upset. In the end, all she could do was chase after his back, but she did not have the courage to do whatever she wanted like him.

Mu Yuesheng fell into silence once again. The gloomy penthouse that managed to finally have a bit of liveliness was once again shrouded by a dead silence.

Blood relations might be traversable, but what about the distance between life and death?

Speechless was dead.

That was the truth.

Such a truth was really cruel...

Mu Yuesheng felt her eyes felt a tinge once again as her vision gradually blurred. It appeared as if those irritating tears were about to well again.

Suddenly, she felt her right palm warming up with a soft touch.

Mu Yuesheng looked down and saw Mu Lengxi's right hand

grabbing her hand.

Looking up, she saw Mu Lengxi's pretty and pallid face with smeared marks from her tears. But now, she was beaming with a gentle smile.

That smile seemed to say—Don't cry Sister. I'm here.

Ah...

Despite her being a younger sister and how I should be the one comforting you, why did it turn out to be you comforting me?

Ah, how odd.

How odd.

But!

But!

But, it's so warm...

Mu Yuesheng wiped the corners of her eyes and stretched out her hand to hold onto her sister's other hand.

"Erh...shall we have a chat?"

Thank you.

In that cold room, there is still you for us to mutually exchange warmth.

It's nice.

...

...

Outside the Infernal King's bedroom, Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin were standing on each side of the door. They were leaning against the wall with their eyes closed to rest their minds. However, none of them were completely relaxed. Instead, their ears were pricked up in alertness.

Shi Xiaobai was still unconscious and he was sleeping inside the bedroom.

And at that moment, there were two women responsible for taking care of the unconscious Shi Xiaobai.

The two of them were terrifying women from a particular point of view. They were Sunless Ye and the Infernal Queen.

These two women shared a room and simultaneously bore the

burden to tend to Shi Xiaobai, such as wiping and cleaning his body, It was unknown if such welfare, erh, that's wrong. It was unknown if such a mission would result in them coming to blows. It was a matter that was truly difficult to predict.

Hence, in order to stop them in a timely fashion when they came to blows, Feng Yuanlin and Pulp Farmer took up the important role as guards for the past three days.

The duo were actually beginning to doze off because the two women in the room were surprisingly cordial. They did not come to blows in the three days, and it was unknown what was happening inside the room. Therefore, it was impossible to imagine how they got along with each other and who gained victory at splitting...the roles of taking care of Shi Xiaobai's body.

Well...it was truly a curious matter.

At that moment, an exclamation was suddenly heard inside the room.

"Darling!"

It was the Infernal Queen's voice.

"You've finally awakened!"

That was the Infernal Queen's delighted voice.

Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin immediately widened their eyes as they looked each other in the eye with a tacit understanding.

"Boss Shi Xiaobai has woken up?"

"Shi Xiaobai has finally woken up!"

After three days, everything had undergone tumultuous changes.

Shi Xiaobai had finally awoken!

Chapter 475: Do You Dare Believe?

More than half a month had passed since a thousand rookies from the organization faction had entered the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower for the training selection. During this period, there were rookies that were sporadically eliminated. However, the results of the batch were rather striking. The number of trial-takers that reached the sixth level had far surpassed prior trials.

And the number of trial-takers that had entered the seventh level was surprisingly eight, strangely one more than usual.

The eight rookies had spent more than ten days in the seventh level. Matters regarding rookies did not have much of an astounding factor to China that had many 'major situations' happening every day. The topic of conversation during this period was naturally lackluster, but it surprisingly welcomed a peak three days ago.

Shi Xiaobai had killed another three Level Lords!

With that, the eight remaining Level Lords in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower had all been 'cleaned up' by Shi Xiaobai alone!

This matter that came with inklings of 'fantasy' caused a topic that stirred the masses. Citizens began to discuss the matter fervently as it turned more intense over the past three days.

And another matter that was related to the organization selection was pushed to the forefront at that moment.

...

In Shanghai City, a landmark building stood in a business district that resembled a concrete jungle. It reached far into the clouds. And at the top of the skyscraper, there was a large white U-shaped table inside a spacious meeting room. Senators of all shapes and sizes sat by the table as they conversed in whispers, as though they were discussing something.

It was noon and hot air swirled above the city. The interior of the room was extremely hot and stuffy, but the mood of the crowd's discussion did not seem affected in any way.

A large door in the meeting room was slowly pushed open without warning as a short white-browed elder with a benign and kind countenance entered. He walked to the podium slowly and following closely behind him was a tall and lanky beauty in a uniform.

The uniformed beauty wiped her black-rimmed glasses out of habit. The unbridled discussion from the crowd sitting beneath her made her somewhat annoyed, but she quickly calmed down as she said with a serious tone, "Everyone, please quiet down."

The uniformed beauty's voice wasn't loud, causing it to be instantly drowned by the unbridled discussion. It was as if the crowd had not discovered their existence as they continued their

conversations.

Were they trying to put them down a notch?

The uniformed beauty sneered as she turned to look at the white-browed elder. In response, he slowly shook his head as he continued maintaining an amiable smile.

The uniformed girl nodded and remained silent.

The two stood quietly in front of the meeting room's podium as they silently watched the conversing senators like two silent statues.

These senators were representing China's various organizations in the meeting. There was no lack of members of the upper echelons of top tier organizations. In the beginning, they would maintain their politeness and respect for the white-browed elder, who was the organization senate's chairman. But after several meetings without an amicable outcome, they had finally ripped off the masks that hid their false pretense.

Taking the other party down a notch before a negotiation was a common tactic used by the upper echelons of organizations who were accustomed to using their power to suppress others.

The uniformed beauty sneered inwardly as she glanced helplessly at the white-browed elder. She was certain of one thing—if the benevolent-looking elder were truly enraged, a tiny application of

a punishment or even maiming the so-called organizational upper echelons would leave the true leaders of top tier organizations so silent that they would not even dare produce a fart.

The elder was good in every aspect, except for his maintaining of an extremely low profile. He was very accommodating.

The uniformed beauty lowered her head slightly as she ignored the matter. Compared to wondering when the retarded senators would quiet down, she was more concerned with the plot of a television serial that she was following.

From the preview, it was likely a Shura battlefield between the main lead and the second and third male leads?

The uniformed beauty began fantasizing the plot and was soon immersed in her reverie.

The senators that were conversing on the surface had, in fact, had their eyes trained on the podium. The corners of their mouths twitched silently as they felt that their act of defiance had figuratively hit cotton. Despite having the strength of will, they lacked the power. Soon, they found it pointless as they gradually quietened down.

Regardless of the matter, the smile on the white-browed elder deepened with his goal achieved. He remained silent as he turned his head slightly and gave the uniformed beauty a nod.

The uniformed beauty had just fantasized the male lead kissing the second male lead. The latter had struggled initially before relenting. Finally, at the moment of subservience, he suddenly pushed the male lead and cursed out angrily, "What joke is this!? Why are you so proficient!? How many times have you kissed the third male lead?" Such an interesting scene had been suddenly interrupted. She silently cursed the organizations' upper echelons at their inability to continue their act of 'putting them down a notch or two'. They were indeed a bunch of lame fools.

However, work was work. She had to do it even if she was unhappy. With a sigh, she looked expressionlessly at the backbone of the hero organizations below her.

Seeing everyone cast their gazes at her, she deliberately cleared her throat a few times before saying, "I believe everyone already knows that the academic faction will finish their selection today. The name list for the collective training was also submitted long ago when it was the match of the final eight. However, our organization faction has been dragging it again and again. We have delayed determining the final two candidates for the collective training. The association has been urging us and it has even given us a final deadline. Therefore, today's meeting will be the final round of discussions before we make a decision."

After the uniformed beauty said those words, she swiftly walked to a wall beside the meeting room in her clacking high-heel shoes. She reached out her hand and pressed a button situated at a corner of a wall. A gigantic screen immediately rolled down and filled an entire wall. As a projector flashed to life, a series of text and figures appeared on the screen.

The uniformed beauty pointed at the wall and said, "Everyone, please take a look. These are the figures indicated on the stone monument. It was completely determined by the assessment program, as well as the final score and rankings of the trial-takers for this batch."

...

...

The figures displayed on the stone monument was not complicated. Written in rows, each row only had a name and a number.

The name represented the trial-takers, and the number was the score that the trial-takers had obtained during the trial. The score was determined by the assessment program and it was done with a specialized algorithm to create a summarized score. Therefore, the trial score was absolutely fair and authoritative. No one could doubt the values.

And ranked from top to bottom was the ranking of the people with the highest trial score.

The first place was undoubtedly Shi Xiaobai. With a high score of 95,601, he stood atop the rankings. As for second place, Speechless had only managed to barely break a score of ten thousand. The score Shi Xiaobai had earned was extremely exaggerated. It had already broken the highest score in human history and it had even exceeded the previous record by more than two times.

However, there was no debate regarding this score. That was because Shi Xiaobai had done a completely insane act. It was still a popular topic of discussion by the citizens of China. He had finished off eight of the Level Lords. Other than the third level's Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign which had been 'conquered', the other seven had been 'vanquished'!

According to expert analysis, the Level Lords of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower were at the Psionic Might Realm realm at the very least. They were two full realms above the trial-takers at the Psionic Mortal Realm. In the past, the only person to kill a Level Lord was the Hero King, but Shi Xiaobai had managed to finish off eight in one trial?

He had finished off all the Level Lords that Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower trial-takers feared meeting the most!

Even though there was major news happening every day, Shi Xiaobai's matter had astounded every citizen of China. He was always trending as one of the top few on the search engines.

How did Shi Xiaobai do it?

Which organization does Shi Xiaobai belong to?

Who is Shi Xiaobai?

These three topics had taken up seventh, fifth and second in the

search engine rankings up to today.

It was common that some young hero would become famous after they appeared on a national, international, or even global tournament from a single match. However, no one had accomplished what Shi Xiaobai had done. About half a month ago, he was a complete unknown, but half a month later, he was practically known throughout the country.

Finishing off the eight Level Lords was not only an amazing miracle, he had also shone blessings on trial-takers in the future. Only the heavens knew how many unlucky people had been eliminated by the Level Lords during each trial of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.

There were also people lamenting over the lack of a Shi Xiaobai when they were back in the Psionic Mortal Realm.

In short, Shi Xiaobai had gone 'viral' throughout China.

Of course, compared to Shi Xiaobai, the upper echelons of the other organizations were more concerned about the people who entered the final ten. They wanted to know who were the rookies that would participate in the two factions' collective training.

The stone monument's score and ranking were as follows:

1st: Shi Xiaobai [95,601]

2nd: Li, Speechless [11,111]

3rd: Ye, Sunless [10,560]

4th: Mu Lengxi [7,320]

5th: Mu Yuesheng [5,110]

6th: Pulp Farmer [5,021]

7th: Liu Yu [4,396]

8th: Feng Yuanlin [4,110]

The first eight were long fixed. That was because only eight of them had reached the seventh level. As for the rest, they could at most reach the sixth level.

And because of that, the trial score was only used as a form of evaluation. What was a 'life-and-death' matter was the ninth and tenth place!

The number of people that entered the sixth level was surprisingly more than expected. The official forecast that had An Mo and Zhou Chuchu in the top ten were also in the lineup. Therefore, the ranking created by the scores was like a massive

army crossing a lone bridge. They would be stabbing at each other in a tragic showdown.

The citizens had believed that An Mo and Zhou Chuchu would emerge victorious eventually, but what shocked everyone was another hot topic of discussion among the populace which rode on Shi Xiaobai's coattails.

However, it was not a shocking event, but a strange matter used as a joke after meals.

9th: Wen Hezheng [2,017]
10th: Kevin [1,992]

Do you dare to believe it?

Two rookies from a second-rate organization that had not even reached the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm had won the final two spots.

Chapter 476: He Objected To Everyone's Objections

The upper echelons of the various organizations that made the backbone of the heroes felt their mouths twitching slightly as they stared at the screen. Although this was not the first time many of them had seen the trial's ranking score, they felt like their intelligence was insulted when they saw Wen Hezheng and Kevin in ninth and tenth place respectively. These two rookies from a second-rate organization, who were not even at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, made them feel indignant and furious.

If the evaluation score was not determined by the assessment program, they would have definitely treated the ranking as an underhanded scam by the organization senate. Even though it was determined by the assessment program, they had already begun to suspect if the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower's assessment program had finally malfunctioned or it had become retarded after more than ten thousand years.

In short, Wen Hezheng and Kevin had managed to enter the top ten. They had even managed to squeeze An Mo and Zhou Chuchu out of the top ten. This matter was truly ridiculous and ludicrous. It was not believable at all.

After the evaluation scores were announced publicly, the various organizations had sent intelligence officers to do a thorough background check of Wen Hezheng and Kevin. They had realized that not only were they sorely lacking in strength, one of them was a Psionite without any superpower genes. Although the other was an Esper, his cultivation talent was extremely mediocre. He was a

greenhorn who lacked any true battle experience but remained extremely arrogant. Furthermore, they both came from Gaia, an organization that had long fallen to the second tier.

Shi Xiaobai was from Gaia, while Mu Yuesheng was also from Gaia. Now, even the last two spots had been snatched by Gaia.

A second-rate organization had taken four spots for the collective training?

Are you going to be defying the heavens?

The outstanding tree that stood out in the forest would be hit by the winds, let alone a tree that had long rotten?

China's seven most famous organizations—Zeus, Thor, Poseidon, Chaos, Muses, Darkness, and Templar had collectively penned their objections to this matter.

It was most evident from the incensed Templar, which did not even obtain a single spot. It declared that if the organization senate were to continue down the path with the insistence that the rule which 'everything shall be determined by the trial score', then Templar would split off from the organization senate.

This matter had caused quite a stir in China. The organization senate could not withstand the pressure from the masses as well as the seven large organizations collective suppression; therefore, it had held a meeting for that matter.

There had been five such meetings in the past. Every time, the conclusion was overwhelming. Other than Yama Minamiya, who represented Gaia, voting against it, every upper echelon representative from the other organizations had agreed to modify the rules. Reasonably speaking, changing the rules was not something important. It also did not hurt the organization senate in any way. Instead, it could even relieve the pressure that it was receiving from everywhere. There was no reason for the organization senate to not follow the wishes of the people and abide by the outcome of the meeting.

However, the white-browed elder, Chairman Jiang of the organization senate was the final decision maker of the meeting. Every time, he would forcefully end the meeting with a simple sentence, 'let's discuss this at a later date'.

A courtesan from a particular organization that had ascended the ranks from under-the-table methods wanted to scream, "Discuss this at a later date? Why don't you fuck me first and quickly return to the discussion!"

Unfortunately, Chairman Jiang, who was adamant, would flutter his sleeves, leaving without taking any wisps of the clouds away.

This smiling and benign old man was a stubborn bull that did not flinch under threat, bribery, enticement or soft tactics. The old man's surname was clearly read as Jiang, but maybe it should be written as Stubborn.

The organization's upper echelons ground their teeth in hate. Therefore, they had schemed the plan of 'putting him down a notch or two'. However, it was like a punch hitting the air. Thankfully, the Hero Association had begun exerting pressure on the senate. Chairman Stubborn was likely to come to a compromise.

The academic faction was ending its selection today. Its spots had long since been decided, and after dragging it out so long, the senate had no excuse to continue dragging it out as the collective training was about to be affected. Today was the last meeting.

The organizations' upper echelons constantly exchanged glances. They were prepared to force an abdication. No matter how adamant Chairman Stubborn was, he would have to raise his ass and compromise!

The uniformed beauty scanned the group of upper echelons as a hint of abomination flashed in her eyes. However, she hid it extremely well. With a sigh, she said, "Then, let's begin the meeting."

Demons dancing in revelry. Oh. No, it was just the bunch of retards beginning their act once again.

This time, it was unlikely they would be easily fooled, right?

Indeed, just as she finished her words, a stout man who was about two meters tall stood up immediately. He shouted like a barrage of cannons, "Hmph! I absolutely will not agree to let those

two punks represent the organization faction to participate in the collective training. Without strength, they will only be disgracing the organization faction! I can't be disgraced like that!"

The stout man was dressed in metallic armor. A humongous ax was slung behind his back and his exposed arm muscles bulged out like rocks. He had a stubble on his face that was marked with perfectly round eyes. The moment he opened his mouth, it was like he wanted to enter a brawl with others. His choice of words was vulgar and boorish.

He was Zhang Meng from the organization, Thor. People called him 'Brute Ax Boor'. He was extremely powerful and was one of the few A-class heroes in China. He was also the only participating senator without much intellect. He was a brute that only spoke with his fists. However, such a 'talent' could be the decisive trump card in particular situations.

Of course, most of the time, he would cause more harm than good.

Hence, Zhang Meng could make the leading charge, but he could not be the leader or the situation would collapse in less than three minutes. The middle-aged woman who led the Zeus delegation quickly realized this point. She interrupted in a timely fashion, "Brother Zhang Meng is extremely right. The strong reign supreme and the capable are esteemed. Wen Hezheng and Kevin are too weak."

"Half a month ago, our organization, Zeus, had happened to have a battle exchange with Gaia. Back then, Wen Hezheng and Kevin

had represented Gaia in battle. The outcome was them being defeated in one strike by Zhu Yuanyuan and Huang Peng respectively. The outcomes of both matches were determined in less than ten seconds combined.”

“Although Zhu Yuanyuan and Huang Peng are considered rookie elites of our organization, they are far inferior to the Ye family siblings. Heartless Ye, who unluckily met Shi Xiaobai in the fourth level, had been eliminated early but he could defeat the combined efforts of Zhu Yuanyuan and Huang Peng alone.”

“Question yourself.”

“If Wen Hezheng and Kevin, who could easily be 'one-shot' by Zhu Yuanyuan and Huang Peng, managed to 'luckily' represent the organization faction in the selection, what sort of blow would it deal to Heartless Ye, who is many times stronger?”

The middle-aged woman spoke with greater aplomb as her expression turned to indignation. She said loudly, "I find it unfair for Heartless Ye! I find it unfair that rookies who had cultivated desperately with their lives were tragically eliminated because of a lack of luck! Based on what? What merits do these two 'trash' have to represent them in the collective training? What right did these two 'trash' have to snatch spots that belonged to others?”

“Everyone, put yourself in their shoes. If you were Heartless Ye, An Mo, or Zhou Chuchu, would you be fine seeing 'trash' you can finish with a single hand represent you to fight the academic faction's rookies? They would be hearing words like, 'even trash can participate in the collective training, but you were actually

eliminated?'. How can they not be enraged by that? Do we have to wait till Wen Hezheng and Kevin disgrace themselves completely during the collective training, and in extension, all the rookie's dignity, the organization faction, and the senate's dignity before it's too late for regret?

The middle-aged woman's voice sounded agitated, but her emotional and logical appeal in her speech was filled with constant rhetorical questions. It made everyone feel personally affected, as it resonated with them.

This was not only the middle-aged woman's excuse, but the thoughts of the various large organizations. It had even become the voice of the Chinese.

Various organization representatives sitting below had visible changes in expression as they began to echo her with agitated comments.

"Wen Hezheng and Kevin cannot attune the masses! I firmly object to it!"

"Heartless Ye, An Mo, and Zhou Chuchu, which one of them is weaker than Wen Hezheng and Kevin? Isn't a selection meant to select the ones that are stronger, talents that are qualified to be representatives?"

"The rule of letting everything be determined by the trial score is problematic in itself. Who can be sure that the assessment program would not be faulty?"

"Change the rules! The rules need to be changed!"

"We can't let children with true strength suffer such grievance! Hero organizations have always placed fairness in the forefront. This matter is too unfair!"

The crowd broke into an uproar as they unanimously shared the same thoughts.

Changing the rules was an outcome 'everyone' wished for.

Zhang Meng roared with his head lifted up, "If the rules are not changed, I'm the first person to find it unacceptable! Change the rules. The rules have to be changed today. I want to see who the fuck dares to object to it!"

The meeting had just begun, but the mood had reached a climax.

This time, everyone had torn off their insincere masks of having 'amiable discussion'. They had chosen to use the most direct and brutal method!

No one could object to their objection!

No one!

"I object!"

Yama Minamiya stood up with a deadpan expression. He was similarly in the meeting room with agitated feelings. Situated in the middle of everyone, he looked lonely but he also possessed a proud sense of loneliness.

He objected to everyone's objection.

Chapter 477: Dispute

"I object!"

Yama Minamiya stood up with a loud shout. He looked at the middle-aged woman with tightly puckered lips. His expression was stern and fuming anger was hidden within his glaring eyes.

The seated upper echelons of the various organizations immediately cast cold gazes of animosity at him. The middle-aged woman narrowed her eyes as viciousness flashed in her eyes. Zhang Meng was the most direct. With an angry stare, he slammed the table and produced a deafening 'bang'. It caused the meeting desk to tremble.

"A trash like you is objecting again!"

The boor, Zhang Meng, was not a person who followed etiquette. He only believed that Yama Minamiya was a person who clung on obstinately to his demands. He yearned to throw a powerful punch at him.

If not for Yama Minamiya's only objecting vote in the previous meetings which caused the meeting to end unceremoniously, there was no reason for Chairman Jiang to drag the matter this far.

The seven major organizations had protested in unison, while most first-rate and second-rate organizations had expressed their objections. The media and public had overwhelmingly leaned toward a side. Changing the rules of the selection should have been

taken for granted.

Yama Minamiya was only a Division Minister from a second-rate organization. His hero license was only C-class. His strength had only barely entered the Psionic Might Realm. What right did he have to object to everyone's objections?

If this were any ordinary period, Zhang Meng would have smashed Yama Minamiya flat. However, in the meeting, all they could rely on was the bite of their tongues. It was a competition of eloquence. Strangely, Yama Minamiya was an odd person. He was impervious to hard and soft tactics. He did not succumb to a show of force, so it made Zhang Meng, who was accustomed to speaking with his fist, to fail miserably.

However, this was already the final meeting. Everyone had decided on losing all decorum. They no longer cared about Chairman Jiang, so Zhang Meng was obviously unfazed.

However, Yama Minamiya did not even spare Zhang Meng a glance. He stared straight at the middle-aged woman and said in a deep voice, "Madam Chen, forgive me for disagreeing with what you said! They already possess the strength to defeat rookie representatives from Zeus; therefore, they are not as weak as you describe them to be."

"Instead, they are much stronger than a majority of rookies. However, you had deliberately avoided mentioning such a matter. Aren't you being too sinister with your intentions? Furthermore, Wen Hezheng and Kevin both reached the sixth level. They were not weaker than An Mo and Zhou Chuchu. It's not impossible that

their scores are ranked ninth and tenth.”

“What right do you have to deny the results of their hard work? I admit, they might come from Gaia which isn't a famous first-rate organization, but it does not deny them of their talent and potential. You categorically mention that the hero organizations place fairness at the forefront. Is robbing the future of two children who worked hard for it through biased discussion considered fair? Such fairness is something I have never ever heard of! I'll absolutely not agree to it!”

Yama Minamiya minced his words as though he was stirring the deaf and enlightening the blind.

The middle-aged woman's expression turned increasingly ugly. She said coldly, "It is understandable that Division Minister Minamiya is biased towards the rookies from his organization, but isn't such perverse logic complete disregard for every one of us present here? In the fourth level's duel grounds, Zhu Yuanyuan and Huang Peng had indeed been defeated.”

“However, the reason for their defeat was because of an accidental drain of their stamina during the third level. That duel was not fair in any way. How can it be used as a comparison? If they were to battle under normal circumstances, Wen Hezheng and Kevin have no chance of victory! Furthermore, from what I know, the reason why Wen Hezheng and Kevin were able to reach the sixth level was due to Shi Xiaobai's protection.”

“They had been taken care of by him before they barely managed to pass the fifth level. And the reason for the two of them to be

ranked ninth and tenth is because of the teamwork mechanism on the third level. They had formed a team with Shi Xiaobai and had been given trial points when Shi Xiaobai conquered the third level's Level Lord! These two people are clearly lacking in strength.”

“They managed to ascend the levels only on the virtue of receiving protection. They eventually got nominated because they had clung on to a powerhouse! Their results are completely ingenuine. How can it placate the masses? Division Minister Minamiya, you keep insisting that they had achieved it with hard work, but can shamelessly clinging onto Shi Xiaobai be considered hard work? It's completely lamentable, shameless and ludicrous!”

The middle-aged woman was responsible for external diplomatic negotiations in Zeus. Her ability to distort facts and proficiency at doing 'mouth work' was always something recommended and well-liked by the upper echelons.

After she finished her spiel, the crowd applauded and gave their kudos. They also echoed what she said.

Yama Minamiya remained expressionless and was unmoved. He only stared at the members of the upper echelons of the various organizations that were higher in stature than him without being servile or bumptious. He was not proficient at giving speeches or engaging in a war of words.”

“Wen Hezheng and Kevin were not rookies from his division, but having abided to the two convictions of 'righteousness' and 'honesty', he could not sit idle as he watched a scene with people

using their power to threaten others. More importantly, he could not let the two children who had made others look at them in a different light after they left the land of trials to suffer such unfair treatment.

Yama Minamiya coldly glanced at the middle-aged woman and said with a deep voice, "Nonsense. It is utter nonsense! Kevin and Wen Hezheng had only formed a team with Shi Xiaobai at the third level's group mode. The other five levels were part of a competitive mode, so how can there be any protection? The trial score's allocation of points is also your subjective guess."

"Who can be sure that the points obtained when conquering the Level Lord would be split with others during team mode? The claim that Zhu Yuanyuan and Huang Peng had been accidentally drained of their stamina at the third level is completely your word. Is there any evidence to prove it? Furthermore, Kevin and Wen Hezheng definitely didn't have a good time at the third level."

"Back then, Shi Xiaobai was dealing with the Level Lord, while they were trying their best to accumulate enough points. They were also exhausted by the time they reached the fourth level. If we are talking about unfairness, it will be the two of them being at a disadvantage. What are you basing on to claim that they have no chance of victory under normal circumstances?"

"After three days, they should be re-evaluated in their appraisals. Kevin and Wen Hezheng were already completely different from the battle exchange. Think about it. How much effort did they need to put in for them to reach such a step? They had passed the official selection to rightfully win the spots in the collective

training. There is no reason to deny it. It is also not to be snatched by anyone else. That is true fairness!"

Yama Minamiya became increasingly agitated as he spoke. His fist was clenched tightly as he spoke with his head and chest held high. Without looking anywhere else, he was feeling proud of both Wen Hezheng and Kevin. He was also furious over such a discussion that should not have happened!

The middle-aged woman's eyes were ice-cold as her lips trembled gently. She was about to open her mouth to retort.

But at that moment, a thin man wearing a suit rapped the table. His voice was rather soft, but it immediately attracted everyone's attention.

The suited man tapped the table's surface with his fingers as he hung a 'friendly' smile on his face. He said, "Since Division Minister Minamiya is so confident in his rookies, why are you so insistent on objecting the change of rules? Let the rookies who reached the sixth level enter a selection match and let strength do the talking. Wouldn't that be the fairest?"

"If Wen Hezheng and Kevin really possess the strength to participate in the collective training, it would not be difficult for the two of them to stand out during the selection match. In that case, it will be a smack in everyone's faces and it will also convince the public. Wouldn't that be perfect? Division Minister Minamiya keeps insisting that Wen Hezheng and Kevin are no longer the same people as before, so why not set up an arena and have a go at it? Could it be that 'righteous and honest' Division Minister

Minamiya is only hoping to use glib words to skip around the matter?"

Chapter 478: Not To Be Subdued By Force

The rule of choosing the ten spots through the use of the ranking of the trial scores for the two-faction collective training was not a problem. There was a particular fairness in the trial scores. At least no one could interfere with the assessment program's evaluation, so there would not be any conspiracy theories that were well-liked by the masses.

However, the trial score could very likely have luck and the reliance on someone stronger as factors that could become the greatest castigation. The first eight people that included Shi Xiaobai and company were the only ones who had entered the seventh level. There was naturally no debate regarding their spots. However, Wen Hezheng and Kevin's rankings at the ninth and tenth place might not be their true achievement.

Similarly, there was a total of 49 rookies that had reached level six with them. And the number of people that exceeded them in terms of strength and fame was not limited to An Mo and Zhou Chuchu.

Hence, these two spots were obviously eyed by the other organizations.

And at the moment of the protesting fervor, a number of people provided 'suggestions'. They believed that using the trial score as the selection rule was too problematic. There was a need to change the rules appropriately. For example, the designees of the ninth and tenth spot should be chosen through an elimination match.

Their reason was that if Wen Hezheng and Kevin truly had the strength, the holding of the elimination tournament was a chance to prove themselves. If they lacked the strength, it was exigent that they organize the elimination tournament or it would be a waste of the two spots for the collective training. It could even disgrace the organization faction.

This was a subjective will that the majority had tagged on to the collective training selection. It seemed very reasonable, but in fact, it was rather unreasonable for Wen Hezheng and Kevin.

The suited man had raised the unreasonable 'reason'.

Yama Minamiya's expression turned ugly as he said in a solemn voice, "Using a tournament to choose the strong is not problematic. The academic faction had employed such a method after all. But since we are using a tournament, why did we use the trial as the selection? Since time immemorial, there has been no lack of methods to do selections."

"Could there be any method that is absolutely reliable? Must we attempt every one of them? When the rule that the trial score was the standard was initially decided, it was to resolve such debate. Nothing can be accomplished without rules. How can a rule that was decided in the beginning be changed wantonly? Proving themselves in a tournament sounds very reasonable, but why should those two children do it? What unfair logic is that!?"

"Division Minister Minamiya, please refrain from becoming agitated."

The suited man waved his hand as he said softly, "What Division Minister Minamiya says is extremely correct. The collective training's spots are temporarily the two children's. Using it as the prize for the tournament is indeed unfair to them. Let's do it this way. The seven major organizations are planning on jointly organize a focused training session for rookie elites."

"As recompense, regardless of Wen Hezheng and Kevin's results at the tournament, they will be able to participate in the joint training of the seven major organizations. I believe the focused training of the seven major organizations will not be much worse than in terms of nurturing of rookies when compared to the two faction's collective training. In that case, Wen Hezheng and Kevin would not only have a chance to prove themselves at the tournament, they will only be changing the place of their training if they fail at the tournament! Division Minister Minamiya, what do you think about that?"

Unlike Zhang Meng and the middle-aged woman's hard and soft tactics, the suited man had prepared a 'carrot'. The collective training of the seven major organizations indeed sounded only slightly inferior to the two faction's collective training, it was better to compromise by taking a step back to withstand the pressure from the masses. At least, such recompense for the compromise was sufficiently enticing.

However, Yama Minamiya scoffed in his heart. There had been no news of a collective training organized by the seven major organizations in the past. It was probably a trick they had come up with temporarily to fool him into compromising. If Wen Hezheng and Kevin were to really participate in this so-called collective

training, it was obvious what sort of ostracization and cold shoulders they would be given. Furthermore, the faction collective training was organized by the Hero Association and it was a collective training that was of national importance. How could it be compared to a collective training that the seven major organizations came up on a whim?

When Yama Minamiya thought of that, he responded with a sneer, "Why should a spot for the collective training earned through one's strength be exchanged?"

When the suited man heard him, his smile gradually vanished. He said in a deadpan manner, "It looks like Division Minister Minamiya plans on obstinately having your way?"

Yama Minamiya said in a deep voice, "The collective training spots are rightfully theirs. No one can snatch it away from them."

The suited man said with a chuckle, "Don't forget that every citizen in the country has their attention on this collective training. That two rascals are representing the organization faction. They are representing the younger generation. Have you thought of the pressure they will be experiencing?"

"If they were to make a fool of themselves at the collective training, it will not only be them disgracing themselves. They cannot afford the responsibility of shaming the organization faction! When the time comes, the one that will be criticized by people, mocked and viewed with animosity by various associations would definitely include Gaia, not to mention the obstinate you, Division Minister Minamiya. Is it worth it to bet Gaia's reputation

and your future on two disappointing rascals?"

Yama Minamiya's eyes were glaring like burning torches as he smiled and said, "I trust them."

The suited man narrowed his eyes as a cold look flashed in his pupils. He suddenly said coldly, "Division Minister Minamiya is truly a good division minister that adores his rookies. After this meeting ends, I dare guarantee that regardless of the outcome, Division Minister Minamiya's 'good reputation' will be known throughout the country. He will be 'praised' by the people, and the 'love and unity' of Gaia will definitely be extolled by the people!"

Yama Minamiya asked irascibly, "Are you threatening me?"

The suited man shrugged and said with a laugh, "No, no, no. How can this be considered a threat? If Division Minister Minamiya continues to obstinately continue with his debate, there might be someone who can't tolerate it any further, making Division Minister Minamiya shut up, or maybe forever...Well, that's what a threat is, right?"

As though they wanted to corroborate the suited man's words, the seated crowd glared at Yama Minamiya coldly. They no longer hid the killing intent in their eyes.

The mood instantly turned chilly.

Yama Minamiya laughed angrily as he straightened his back and

said loudly, "A true man is not subdued by force. I, Yama Minamiya, hate unfair matters where might is used to suppress others. Even if it's not because of those two children, I will absolutely not compromise for justice and righteousness!"

"Peng!"

Just as Yama Minamiya said those words, Zhang Meng, who had been left alone in a corner, suddenly slammed the desk angrily. He roared, "Shut up! I can't bear hearing this anymore!"

Yama Minamiya glanced at Zhang Meng coldly and said, "Scram!"

"Courting death!"

Zhang Meng's ashen face immediately turned red. He stared with widened eyes with a look of rage filling his face. He bellowed angrily and caused the ground to abruptly quake. The meeting desk began to shake as a massive suppression was emitted from his body. Like the fall of a snowstorm, it hailed right at Yama Minamiya.

Yama Minamiya's vision blacked out as he nearly fainted. He felt like his body was being wrung tightly by a humongous hand. His bones were being squeezed forcefully and they were about to shatter!

"Psionic Imperial Realm!"

Yama Minamiya smiled bitterly inwardly. Zhang Meng was indeed a famous A-class hero whose strength was already at the Psionic Imperial Realm.

In the psionic cultivation system, there were five realms demarcated—Psionic Mortal, Psionic Soul, Psionic Might, Psionic Domain and Psionic Imperial.

In between every realm, there was a clear difference in strength, and the greatest gap in strength was the Psionic Domain Realm and the Psionic Imperial Realm.

Everything beneath Psionic Imperial was nothing but ants! Only by stepping into the Psionic Imperial Realm would one be considered a true member of the strong.

Yama Minamiya's cultivation level had only reached the Psionic Might Realm, so how could he put up any resistance in front of Zhang Meng?

Zhang Meng's simple release of 'Overlord Suppression' had nearly knocked him unconscious.

"Kneel!"

Zhang Meng suddenly roared angrily at Yama Minamiya. An invisible pressure crashed down on Yama Minamiya's straight and upright back like a massive mountain!

"Bam!"

Yama Minamiya's knees slammed to the ground as he emitted the sound of a loud impact as well as the shattering of bones. He had been pressed down to the ground. His expression changed drastically as his face turned extremely pale. He was fuming with anger and feeling humiliated. However, he could not in any way stand up under the massive pressure on him. It was unknown how many pieces his kneecap had shattered into.

"Pu!"

With a deep grunt, Yama Minamiya spat out a mouthful of boiling hot blood.

A mocking smile suffused across Zhang Meng's lips as he looked delighted and pleased with himself.

The seated crowd had derisive looks in their eyes as they looked at the kneeling Yama Minamiya. There were even some who went as far as scorning him with the words 'he deserves it'.

The middle-aged woman sneered unceasingly.

The suited man shook his head and said with a sigh, "Why did it have to come to this if you knew about it?"

The only person with an angry glare was the uniformed beauty. She stared at Zhang Meng with a displeased look before casting a pleading gaze at the white-browed elder beside her.

The crowd also looked at the white-browed elder.

Would Chairman Jiang remain ambivalent towards Zhang Meng's unbridled act?

However, no one expected that the 'honest and upright' Chairman Jiang still had a peaceful smile on his face. It was as though he had not seen such an 'unfair' scene. He had taken the position of being an indifferent spectator.

This made the crowd heave a sigh of relief.

It also made Zhang Meng go from bad to worse.

He scoffed as he raised his right foot to step on Yama Minamiya's shoulder. He said mockingly, "What happened to the Division Minister Minamiya that would not be subdued with force? Aren't you still obediently kneeling before me? Why? Do you find it unacceptable? Then stand up!"

Yama Minamiya bellowed angrily as he tried his best to stand up, but his attempt only left him spitting out a mouthful of blood. His body turned limp once again as the color drained from his face.

The mockery in everyone's eyes turned more intense.

"Trash!"

Zhang Meng chuckled disdainfully before he realized something. Yama Minamiya's eyes were filled with defiance and he was still trying his best to straighten his back. Suddenly an indescribable sense of anger rose up in him as killing intent flashed in his eyes.

He lifted his foot and was about to kick at Yama Minamiya's head!

"Boom!"

Suddenly a deafening explosion sounded. Everyone jumped in shock before they turned to the source of the explosion. They saw a gigantic hole in the meeting room's wall.

Rubble was crumbling as debris flew in every direction. The hole was about half the size of the wall!

A figure walked into the meeting room from outside the wall that had a hole smashed into it.

Everyone's eyes looked at the figure as they drew cold gasps.

Bald, yellow-colored skin-tight clothes, a red cape and a blade by his waist. The person's identity was obvious.

"One-Pun!"

Zhang Meng's eyes widened as the right foot he had raised in mid-air stiffened in place.

One-Pun calmly glanced at Zhang Meng before turning to look at the white-browed elder.

The white-browed elder was still smiling amiably. Finally, he said for the first time after he entered the meeting room, "I did not see a thing."

One-Pun nodded and responded, "Then please continue to ignore whatever happens next."

As One-Pun said that, he suddenly turned his head to grin at everyone in the meeting room.

His facial features were simple and his expression was dazed. He looked so very 'harmless'.

Chapter 479: Leaning On Furniture Cannot Be Obscene, Turning Wet At A Glance

One-Pun hung a 'harmless'-looking smile on his face. He scanned everyone in the meeting room ambivalently without releasing his Overlord Suppression like Zhang Meng.

Most of the people that attended the meeting were members of the upper echelons of their respective organizations, so they enjoyed statuses that were superior to others. However, having reveled in their high positions and enjoyed comfortable lives, many of them had cultivation realms that were even inferior to Yama Minamiya. Only a few of them possessed true strength. Instead of releasing the power of his Psionic Imperial Realm, One-Pun could simply use Soul Suppression to leave a large number of people in the meeting room wailing while sprawled to the ground.

However, One-Pun did not do so. It was not because he wasn't furious. In fact, it was the exact opposite. The way the crowd had cheapened Yama Minamiya's existence had infuriated the typically mild-tempered One-Pun. However, if he were to use his fist to suppress others, how different would he be from the bastard, Zhang Meng?

Therefore, One-Pun only glanced at the crowd nonchalantly. The glance looked rather mild on the surface, but in fact, it contained emotions that were like tumultuous waves in a stormy sea.

The crowd immediately felt like they were facing an ice cellar or as if they had plummeted into an abyss. An intricate chill seemed to rise up from the bottom of their hearts with no way to stop it.

Just being glared at by One-Pun made them feel like they were given a deathly stare from a ferocious beast that would pounce on them at any time to rip them into pieces. The spontaneous fear made their bodies tremble involuntarily.

A few of the timid ones shrunk their bodies as they shut their eyes and trembled.

A death-fearing man who had renal problems peed his pants while trembling.

The courtesan that had attained her position through under-the-table means was leaning on a piece of furniture, barely propping up her limp body. She could not help but squeeze her thighs tightly. As someone who was into masochism, she was feeling both fear and pleasure that was nearing perverseness. Her pale face flushed red as her legs trembled while they rubbed against each other. There were tears of fear at the corners of her eyes while her tiny mouth gradually gaped. She could not help but moan as her panties instantly turned wet from the spewing of two completely different liquids.

The middle-aged woman and the suited man were given special attention. One-Pun's gaze had landed on them for three full seconds. During those three seconds, they felt like they had been enshrouded by endless darkness. The sound of gnashing teeth that resembled that of wild beasts' resounded as countless sharp teeth seemed to simultaneously rest on their skin. As the sharp teeth grazed against every inch of their skin, it was as though their bodies would be riddled with holes at the very next instant or be torn into a bloody pulp.

At that moment, be it the middle-aged woman who had a hot temper due to menopause or the suited man that derived joy from his machinations, they both felt utterly powerless and a deep sense of fear.

Can a gaze kill?

They would have treated it as a joke in the past, but now, they could not laugh in any way.

That was because a gaze could truly kill!

One-Pun's gaze swept across the crowd before landing on Zhang Meng.

Zhang Meng slowly retracted his right foot and slowly dissipated the Overlord Suppression that was pressing on Yama Minamiya. With a stiff expression, he locked eyes with One-Pun but soon, he unnaturally looked to the side.

Since he was at the Psionic Imperial Realm, he naturally would not feel apprehensive from a single gaze. However, the might of One-Pun was something he had long heard and was aware of. He knew that he was probably not One-Pun's match; therefore, he did not wish to stare back at One-Pun's gaze that had hidden flames of fury.

When Yama Minamiya felt the pressure on his body decrease and

noticed the 'interesting' look on everyone's trembling faces, the pent up anger that he had was greatly reduced. He tried standing up, but due to the pain in his knees, he ended up drawing a cold gasp. His kneecaps had probably shattered into many pieces. Zhang Meng's ruthlessness was clear.

Yama Minamiya did not wish to continue kneeling despite not being able to stand. As such, he ended up sitting on the ground. He looked up at One-Pun and wanted to say something. Suddenly, he noticed the wall that had been blasted through. Immediately, he found it amusing.

This scene was something he had once seen. At the end of Gaia and Zeus's battle exchange, Heartless had used a forceful attitude to cancel the tradition of the battle exchange. Back then, Shi Xiaobai had smashed through the metallic walls of the stadium and ended up changing everything. Wasn't One-Pun doing the same?

Could it be that 'smashing a wall to appear' was one of their fine traditions of Gaia?

Yama Minamiya's baffling smile left the crowd confused and embarrassed. One-Pun's expression turned sullen after he took a few glances at Yama Minamiya. He suddenly turned to look at Zhang Meng and said, "Complete shattering of kneecaps, serious internal injuries... Do you want to do it yourself or do you need me to do it for you."

Everyone was secretly alarmed. They never expected One-Pun to demand that Zhang Meng suffered the same injuries as Yama Minamiya.

Who was Zhang Meng?

He was an A-class hero, one of the important powerhouses of Thor. He was a famous person at the Psionic Imperial Realm!

Shattering Zhang Meng's knees and inflicting serious internal injuries similar to Yama Minamiya's, would greatly weaken the hero faction and Thor. How was he comparable to a trivial figure like Yama Minamiya?

To put it harshly, a trivial figure like Yama Minamiya could die tragically on the spot without causing much of a stir. However, if Zhang Meng were to be seriously injured, Thor and the Hero Association would definitely not sit idle.

A civil war between Psionic Imperial warriors was typically banned.

One-Pun was actually seeking revenge while disregarding everything else?

Zhang Meng's eyes that had originally lacked confidence immediately turned cold. The dignity of being at the Psionic Imperial realm prevented him from enduring One-Pun's threat. He felt extremely humiliated as he suddenly turned to look at One-Pun and said coldly, "Are you joking?"

One-Pun did not respond but stared at Zhang Meng in a deadpan

manner. He repeated once again, "Do you want to do it yourself or do you need me to do it for you."

One-Pun obviously wasn't joking.

He might not engage in evil deeds like the suppressing others with his fist, but it did not mean that he would not use his fist to fight for justice! Or it could be said that One-Pun's punch was born for that reason!

As for weakening the Hero Association and Thor?

Why would it matter to him?

He was a hero, a hero for victims and not a hero for a hero faction, much less a hero for the Hero Association!

The crowd in the meeting room turned alarmed and afraid when they realized that One-Pun was truly enraged. They wanted to persuade One-Pun to calm down and think of the consequences, but no one had the guts to speak up as they were afraid that they would implicate themselves.

The suited man who had always been eloquent sealed his lips tightly with an ashen expression. The middle-aged woman that was not bad at her 'mouth work' was shuddering in fear. She did not even dare move her tongue.

Zhang Meng's expression was extremely cold. The hot-tempered

him could not tolerate the provocation of others. If not for One-Pun being truly powerful, he would have attacked in rage. So even though One-Pun was strong, it did not mean he could swallow his anger!

"You are taking bullying to the extreme! I did not want to go so far as to fight you, but you ended up thinking that I'm a coward that can be bullied by the likes of you?"

Zhang Meng said with a scoff, "You and I are both at the Psionic Imperial Realm. Even if you are stronger than me, how much stronger can you be? How can my knees be something you can shatter as you please!?"

Zhang Meng had never bowed his head to beg for mercy even when Thor's Thunder Emperor was angered. Brute Ax Boor similarly would not succumb to force!

"Then, I'll be making my move," said One-Pun calmly.

He suddenly took a step forward!

Chapter 480: Is This The Time To Act Cute?

Right after One-Pun took his first step, Zhang Meng raised his Thunderclap Ax. The muscles on his arms bulged like protruding dragons as he stared at his opponent with a furious glare. He took a big step forward before charging like an ox!

He roared angrily and with a sudden wave of his arms, the Thunderclap Ax came crashing down at One-Pun!

With a thundering blast, the Thunderclap Ax surprisingly produced devastating thunderbolts!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

All the lights in the meeting room shattered in response!

Zhang Meng knew that he was no match for One-Pun, so how could he allow One-Pun to take the initiative?

The only thing he could do was to strike preemptively!

Zhang Meng used all his strength and he no longer held back his Psionic Imperial Suppression. All of it was released in an instant and the immense power was like a massive power crashing down from the sky. The members of the upper echelons who had led comfortable lives obviously could not escape unscathed. Immediately, many of them gaped and turned limp, while others knelt to the ground with tied tongues. Some even fainted!

Zhang Meng's Psionic Imperial domain was fully released in an instant. Psionic power in a fifty-kilometer radius around him was transformed by him into lightning. With a roar, he gathered the lightning on his ax, conjuring devastating thunderbolts!

This strike was powered by the full strength of a Psionic Imperial expert. It was also Brute Ax Boor Zhang Meng's strongest attack!

One-Pun's expression remained calm. His dull and inert eyes did not appear alarmed in any way despite facing Zhang Meng's sudden attack. All he did was to come to an abrupt stop and with a lift of his shoulders, he bent his arm upwards as his forearm moved to his side. His slightly clenched fist was thrust head on like a baton!

Everyone was stunned. One-Pun, who had the title of Moon Reflection Sword Master, had not pulled the Moon Reflection Blade by his waist while facing Zhang Meng's powerful strike?

Only the eyes of the white-browed elder, who had his head lowered in a subservient look, flashed with a glimmer. All the turbid moonlight instantly gathered on One-Pun's fist!

The punch was not considered 'heavy'. Not only did it lack the force of Mt Tai, it was even inferior to the strength of tigers and leopards!

However, the punch was absolutely not 'light' either. That was because the devastating thunderbolts in the meeting room had

instantly crumbled from the straight punch!

No, what shattered was not only limited to the thunderbolts!

"Boom!"

The Thunderclap Ax that had been tempered from refined steel clashed with One-Pun's fist of flesh and blood; but in an instant, the Thunderclap Ax began to crack, and with a deafening explosion, it shattered!

The alarmed Zhang Meng's eyes were filled with disbelief. His Psionic Imperial domain had been so easily destroyed? Even the Thunderclap Ax had been shattered with a single punch?

The Thunderclap Ax was not considered a powerful divine weapon, but it had some fame to it. It could be said to be in the top hundred of China's weapon rankings. It had fought alongside him for more than a decade, chopping through astral beasts and cleaving calamity fiends apart. It was bound to be damaged, but it was so easily turned to smithereens from a punch?

How could that happen!?

Zhang Meng only maintained his shock for a moment because the fist was still continuing on its trajectory!

Thunderclap Ax was only the beginning. One-Pun's fist had already moved past the shattered ax head as it slammed straight

toward Zhang Meng's chest!

"I don't believe it!"

Zhang Meng widened his eyes angrily. He suddenly threw up his chest to take on One-Pun's fist!

Zhang Meng roared as his brawny chest was immediately covered in a blackish-gold halo. It was as though he was wearing blackish-gold armor!

Psionic Imperial Hardening Armor!

After a Psionite entered the Psionic Imperial Realm, even the simplest Psionic Hardening would be enhanced to Psionic Imperial Hardening Armor. Furthermore, Zhang Meng was not using the most basic Psionic Imperial Hardening Armor, but the A-class psionic defensive skill—Blackgold Combat Armor!

Brute Ax Boor, Zhang Meng, had once relied on the Blackgold Combat Armor's defense to rush in and out of Astral Calamity Beasts' encirclements. He had slaughtered all of them without being injured at all!

He refused to believe that One-Pun's fist could smash through his Blackgold Combat Armor!

However, at the moment Zhang Meng's chest was struck by One-Pun's fist, he suddenly realized what it meant by the idiom—a

mantis obstructing a chariot!

"Pu!"

Zhang Meng spurted out a mouthful of boiling blood. His Blackgold Combat Armor had been instantly shattered by the fist while his chest was caved in like a sand pit. If One-Pun had not shown him mercy, it was very likely that the punch was enough to penetrate his chest. But even so, Zhang Meng still flew out like a cannonball. With a bang, he broke through the wall and flew out of the meeting room. He had nearly fainted in mid-air.

Everyone drew a gasp as they stared at the wall that Zhang Meng had crashed through as if they had seen a ghost.

No, what wall was there?

The wind that accompanied the retraction of One-Pun's fist had caused the entire wall slab of the meeting room to crumble into rubble! Burning hot sunlight immediately entered the room but the members of the various organizations only felt a coldness sweep through their bodies.

As they stiffly turned their heads to look out, they were appalled to realize that Zhang Meng had already flown away with no clear sight of him.

However, One-Pun did not seem like he would put the matter to rest. He gradually retracted his fist as he nonchalantly commented,

"The kneecaps haven't shattered". With a few strides, he walked out the meeting room.

Moments later, a shrill scream that sounded like a pig being slaughtered, came from outside. Intermixed in it were the undecipherable invectives from Zhang Meng. However, it quickly turned into painful chokes and finally into a sorrowful plea.

The crowd in the meeting room did not dare poke their heads out to watch the scene, but the sound alone was sufficient to tell them of the tragic situation that Zhang Meng was in.

Was...that really only the shattering of kneecaps?

The crowd swallowed their saliva as they turned completely silent. No one dared to make a sound, much less come forward to stop One-Pun.

It was said that the hero, One-Pun, was the most affable person out of the ten best S-class heroes and that he had the best temper. Who could have guessed that the moment he was infuriated, his ferocity was comparable to the S-class hero tyrant, Groundless Cao!

The suited man's expression changed several times as he turned extremely flustered. The reason why Zhang Meng would suddenly injure Yama Minamiya was a scheme planned by him. Using his eyes, he had signaled Zhang Meng to attack. However, tricking Zhang Meng to attack was easy, cleaning up the present mess would be very difficult.

With such a tragic outcome, Zhang Meng would definitely vent his anger on him. As for Thor, it would quickly investigate and realize that he was the one that had schemed to get Zhang Meng to be the vanguard. When the time came, the organization he came from, Chaos, would probably choose not to protect him. They could even abandon him by disavowing him.

Now, the only method was to think of a way to save Zhang Meng so as to make amends for his faults!

However, what could he do to One-Pun who reigned supreme with his fist?

The suited man racked his brains and suddenly his eyes lit up. He looked at the white-browed elder and said softly, "Chairman Jiang, you have always been righteous in your engagements. You vanquish the evil and help the good. If you do not stop One-Pun, Zhang Meng might really end up being beaten to death. You won't turn a blind eye, right?"

When the crowd heard what he said, they suddenly recalled the old man that had the lowest presence in the meeting room. In his youth, he was a famous leading exponent. Before he retired, he was always ranked at the top of the S-class heroes. His meritorious services had even landed him in the Hero Hall of Fame. Even One-Pun would have to respect this esteemed elder!

The members of the various organization's upper echelons were unrelated to Zhang Meng, but what Zhang Meng suffered made

them feel a sense of danger because they would be suffering a mutual crisis. At that moment, they cast pleading gazes at 'Chairman Stubborn', who they had secretly gnashed their teeth against.

"Chairman Jiang, please stop One-Pun!"

"If this carries on, Zhang Meng will be killed!"

"If Zhang Meng were to be maimed, it will be an absolutely terrible setback to China's hero faction. Chairman Jiang, you should consider the overall situation and save Zhang Meng!"

From the pleading looks they showed, people who weren't in the know would think that Zhang Meng was their close friend or relative!

Yama Minamiya sighed. He found them helplessly stupid. If they had apologized to him and pleaded with him to forgive Zhang Meng, he might be able to request One-Pun to show some mercy. However, they had not even considered executing such a simple act. Instead, they had continued to belittle and ignore him.

The uniformed beauty turned her head and did not dare look at the pathetic faces they were faking. She was afraid she would vomit the meal she had last night.

Chairman Jiang remained silent. As he listened to their requests, his expression maintained a genial smile. At first glance, one might

think that he was an ordinary old man that was exceedingly common.

The suited man said in agony, "Could it be that the impartial Azure Emperor, Jiang Tianyou, is afraid of One-Pun's brutality? Is he unwilling to step forward to help the weak!?"

Azure Emperor Jiang Tianyou was once the most commendable righteous hero!

Even though he was now a genial-looking white-browed elder, it was absolutely impossible that his stubborn temper and sense of justice would change!

That was what the suited man thought.

Under the pleading gazes of the crowd, Chairman Jiang suddenly raised his hands to cover his eyes and said, "I...did not see anything."

Everyone was stunned agape.

Heavens!

Esteemed Elder, are you trying to act cute!?

That's not right.

Is this the time to act cute!?

...

Chapter 481: The Difference Between 9cm And 18cm

By suddenly raising his hands to cover his eyes and say the words 'I did not see anything' so righteously, Chairman Jiang left the crowd dumbfounded.

The silly act of trying to plug one's ears while stealing a bell might be an appreciative act of cuteness if it was done by a cute chick with a pleasant voice. However, the person who did that was an esteemed old man with gray hair. Immediately, the members of the upper echelon in the meeting room sensed a deep sense of 'maliciousness'. They cursed in their hearts, 'fuck you', but when they realized that the old man was Azure Emperor Jiang Tianyou of yesteryear and that he was the only safety net the meeting room had, how did anyone dare curse him?

Many of the crowd's faces flushed red as they did not dare to laugh out. Neither could they curse like they wished to. One of them could only awkwardly say, "Chairman Jiang, nice joke."

"Pfft!"

But at that moment, there was someone who could not control her laughing outburst.

Everyone turned their heads and saw the uniformed beauty standing beside Chairman Jiang laughing out happily. Although she had covered her mouth in time, the beautiful bell-like laughter still seeped out of her fingers. She turned her head over as her

shoulders trembled as if it was very tough to endure.

The middle-aged woman's menopausal temper immediately flared up as she was about to shout out 'preposterous', but she was horrified to notice that not only was Chairman Jiang not angered, he had even turned to look at the uniformed beauty. The expression he had was like the affection he would give his granddaughter.

The middle-aged woman immediately swallowed the word 'preposterous' as she thought secretly to herself that the uniformed beauty was probably not as simple as being a secretary or assistant!

The suited man's expression was the ugliest. However, he did not dare to make it too obvious. After a moment of hesitation, he spoke out softly, "Chairman Jiang, are you really going to abide by One-Pun's wishes of pretending not to see anything? You have always been the idol in my heart because you are one of the few that cannot stand for injustice."

"I remember that years ago when you were still a B-class hero, you showed no fear and stepped forward when you happened to discover that the Hero Association's Vice-Chairman had been bullying the weak! But now with what you are doing...have you really become old?"

If this were any other time, the suited man would absolutely not act so wantonly in front of the esteemed Jiang Tianyou. However, the present matter determined his future, maybe even his life. Thus, he had naturally lost his cool.

The white-browed elder turned to look at the suited man. He still looked genial but his eyes no longer looked turbid. Instead, they looked as sharp as a sword.

"I did not see a thing when Zhang Meng bullied Yama Minamiya, so it's natural that I also do not see a thing now. This is my justice!"

The crowd was left flabbergasted when he said those words. By being able to rise up to ranks of the upper echelon, they were definitely not idiots despite their malevolent practices. They instantly understood what Chairman Stubborn was implying!

The reason why Jiang Tianyou did not intervene when Zhang Meng was bullying Yama Minamiya was that he did not wish to stop One-Pun's assault. By not intervening twice, it would not be something unjust. Instead, it would be a very just act!

This darn sly old fox!

The suited man cursed inwardly as his expression turned extremely ugly.

He finally realized that Jiang Tianyou had noticed that One-Pun was on the way. Therefore, he did not obstruct Zhang Meng from engaging in his act of evil. That was because the moment he stopped him, there was no reason for him to turn a blind eye when One-Pun began beating Zhang Meng up brutally.

The smiling old fox had planned everything a long while ago!

The suited man sighed helplessly. He knew very well that pleading to Jiang Tianyou for help was destined to fail. He could only hope that One-Pun would show mercy. He prayed that Zhang Meng would pent up his anger and not go as far as to lose all reason. However, he probably needed to think of a method to withstand or avoid the blame from Thor.

From beginning to end, the suited man that thought himself a clever fellow did not even consider the thought of pleading Yama Minamiya to be magnanimous so that he could, in turn, persuade One-Pun from his brutality. Perhaps, in his mind, Yama Minamiya was just a tiny division minister from a second-rate organization who could not influence the decision of an S-class hero One-Pun.

It might also be a subconscious reluctance to submit to such a trivial figure. Of course, it was also possible that he had a psychological scar from Yama Minamiya's demeanor of not willing to compromise. He had subconsciously believed that he could not persuade him.

The suited man did not know that Yama Minamiya, the man he did not turn to look at even once, was actually the only person in the meeting room that could stop One-Pun.

...

The screams outside the room continued on for a long time before it died down slightly. It was unimaginable what method

One-Pun had used to shatter Zhang Meng's knees. It was probably Zhang Meng's first barrage of expletives that had enraged One-Pun to reveal his 'brutal' nature.

The crowd in the meeting room had mixed expressions. They had also given up on persuading Chairman Jiang. Their desires to save Zhang Meng were not strong, to begin with. They had only attempted to persuade Chairman Jiang to stop One-Pun because they believed they would end up being implicated later. Now that they knew what Chairman Jiang's 'justice' meant, they were relieved.

Back when Yama Minamiya was being bullied, they had only turned a blind eye but they did not add insult to injury. If One-Pun wanted to blame them, Chairman Jiang would not be able to say 'I did not see anything'.

This meeting was the focus of attention of the entire country and it was fervently discussed by the people. But in fact, it was just a 'trivial matter between rookies'. True warriors might commend the rookies from this year's batch, but they would not put them to heart. Just like a conglomerate magnate who earned millions a day, he might commend the top scholar of the year, but he would not think too much of the scholar. It was because their 'worlds' were on different planes of existences.

Hence, the various organizations only sent a few members of their upper echelons, who placed importance on the organization's interests, to the meeting. For example, Thor's sending of an A-class hero like Zhang Meng was considered quite an oddity.

As for an S-class hero like One-Pun, it was completely unheard of that he would pay attention to rookie matters or even act because of it!

The members of the upper echelons of the various organizations had felt a strong sense of danger when One-Pun was enraged. They felt like they were ants while an elephant was walking past them. They were mortally afraid that the massive elephant's foot would accidentally crush them to death.

It wasn't that the seven major organizations did not have an expert as strong as One-Pun, but such experts were busy all day with matters like nabbing criminals, killing astral beasts or slaying calamity fiends. They would even personally go to the battlefield to fight calamity fiend armies. How could they have the time to bother with trivial matters regarding a bunch of rookies, not to mention protect the upper echelons that were scorned as the 'organization's parasites'?

That was the reason why the man with renal problems and the courtesan had wet their trousers when they were stared at by One-Pun. In front of a true expert, their safety was not guaranteed!

The courtesan was still trembling as she recalled One-Pun's cold gaze. She was reminiscing it in fear but was also momentarily feeling despondent.

She hesitated for a moment before suddenly leaning over and whispering to the man with renal problems sitting beside her, "Why is it that despite the fact that both of them are in the Psionic Imperial Realm, One-Pun... His Excellency One-Pun is so much

stronger than Zhang Meng? It's...it's almost like an adult beating up a child..."

The courtesan was the person with the lowest cultivation level in the meeting room, with her being only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Her understanding of the psionic cultivation system was extremely superficial; therefore, she could not understand the situation that had unfolded at all. Why would Zhang Meng be completely powerless in front of One-Pun despite being at the same Psionic Imperial Realm?

More importantly, she wanted to know why One-Pun was so 'strong'.

The man looked somewhat pale. He was still immersed in the horrifying state of affairs. He turned to glance at the courtesan when he heard her but he had planned on brushing her off. However, he suddenly realized that her face was flushed and her eyes were thirsting for sex. Her extremely alluring look changed his mind immediately.

He coughed lightly and acted in a profound manner by saying, "What's so odd about that? Among Psionites, the greatest difference in strength has never been the difference between the Psionic Imperial Realm and the Psionic Mortal Realm, but... between Psionic Imperial Realms!"

"Ah?"

The courtesan was extremely shocked as she covered her mouth

and exclaimed, "What does it mean?"

The man gave an aloof smile and pretended to act worldly. He said, "As everyone knows, the psionic cultivation system is divided into five major realms—Psionic Mortal, Psionic Soul, Psionic Might, Psionic Domain and Psionic Imperial! Every realm in the psionic cultivation system has an obvious difference."

"For example, 'fusing with attribute souls' is the mark of entering the Psionic Soul Realm. 'Birth of Soul Suppression' is the mark of entering the Psionic Might Realm. 'Creating a psionic domain' is the mark of entering the Psionic Domain Realm and when 'psionic soul, psionic might, and psionic domain transform and are enhanced, entering the realm of kings', that would be the mark of the Psionic Imperial Realm."

"After that, Psionic Imperial Realm experts might continue cultivating and their strength would constantly increase, but there would no longer be any clear distinctions again. It could be said that in the history of the psionic cultivation system, there has never been a Psionite that had a transformative mark after the Psionic Imperial realm."

"Therefore, the psionic cultivation system only has five realms! Most people would think that the Psionic Imperial Realm is the highest realm for Psionites, and that is it the final point of the psionic cultivation system, but in fact, the Psionic Imperial Realm is the true starting point of psionic cultivation!"

The courtesan was confused listening to all of that but felt impressed. She threw a suggestive look at the man and said

seductively, "Aww~ It's so hard to understand. Can you explain it simpler, pretty please?"

The suggestive look the courtesan gave made the man feel good. Compared to his shuddering panic from before, it was like he had climbed back up to heaven from hell. He said as though he was on cloud nine, "I'm really at a loss with you. Then let me give you a simple analogy. For example, let us use numbers to demarcate each realm's strength."

"If the Psionic Mortal Realm's maximum is 10, and one enters the Psionic Soul Realm from 11, then the Psionic Soul Realm's maximum is 100. As for the Psionic Might Realm, it will be 1000! But what is the Psionic Imperial Realm's limit? It's not a million or trillion but infinity! Do you get it?"

"Going from the Psionic Mortal Realm to the Psionic Imperial Realm is only a span of 100,000 points, but after the Psionic Imperial Realm, some Psionic Imperial experts might have a strength value of 100,000 while there might be others as high as ten million. The difference between them is a full 99 times the amount needed to reach the Psionic Imperial Realm!"

"The Psionic Imperial Realm might look like the final realm of the psionic cultivation system, but it is, in fact, the true starting point. That's because the gap between people at the Psionic Imperial Realm can be infinitely large! One-Pun can crush Zhang Meng because of their difference in strength values despite them being both at the Psionic Imperial Realm. It's unknown how wide the difference as it could span points that might be equivalent to several Psionic Imperial Realms!"

The easily comprehensible analogy made the courtesan immediately understand. Dicks might be the same, some were 9cm while others were 18cm. Wasn't the difference obvious?

In short, One-Pun was mightier than Zhang Meng. He was indeed worthy to be a man that made her orgasm with a glance!

The courtesan was very pleased as she conveniently asked a tiny question, "Well, since the difference between Psionic Imperial Realms is that great, why did Zhang Meng say that His Excellency One-Pun could not be much stronger than him since they were both at the Psionic Imperial Realm?"

"About that..."

The man was also baffled about that. Although Zhang Meng was a boor, he was not a fool. Why did he say something that lacked common sense?

The man was unsure of an answer but with a flash of brilliance, he answered softly while flashing a strange smile, "This matter might be somewhat complicated. It can't be explained in a short period of time. Why don't we find a spot to have a good chat after the meeting?"

The courtesan chuckled and asked, "Where shall we chat?"

The man said seriously, "My car. There's air conditioning in it."

How could the courtesan not understand the implied meaning behind the man's words? She naturally did not have much resistance towards such matters. Furthermore, her experience from before left her reminiscent and empty. The man's 'invitation' was timely.

The courtesan chuckled and was about to accept his invitation.

At that moment, the red-caped One-Pun, who was termed by people as 'Superman', suddenly walked in. He was expressionless while he strolled idly. His clothes were not stained in any way, making him look cool and handsome.

Although he was a baldy, he was so good-looking.

The courtesan looked at One-Pun in a mesmerized manner before glancing over at the man with renal problems. Suddenly, she found him vapid.

Certain gaps were like a ravine that 18cm could not bridge.

Chapter 482: The Passer-By Female Protagonist That Takes The Counteroffensive Path

"Another time perhaps. I have something on after this meeting."

The courtesan wiped the charming smile off her face and heartlessly rejected the man.

The man was left startled. He did not understand why the broad would suddenly transform into another person. However, when One-Pun entered the meeting room, he suddenly recalled the terror the pair of eyes had inflicted on him. Immediately, he did not dare to say another word as he lowered his head resentfully.

After One-Pun returned to the meeting room, everyone turned their heads away as well in a bid to deliberately avoid One-Pun's gaze. The suited man noticed that One-Pun did not bring Zhang Meng back and he was about to make an inquiry, but the moment he thought of the terrifying feeling of having countless teeth graze across his skin in the darkness, he immediately felt his scalp tingle. He did not dare to speak a word. Even the biological hardwiring in his intestines had no choice but to forcefully hold back a fart.

One-Pun did not look at the crowd either. He first nodded at the white-browed elder as a gesture before walking toward Yama Minamiya, who was sitting on the ground. Then, he grabbed Yama Minamiya's brawny body and held him firmly by the shoulders before turning around, preparing to leave.

Everyone immediately heaved a sigh of relief when they saw the situation.

"Wait! The meeting isn't over yet!" Yama Minamiya suddenly yelled. "Put me down now!"

Everyone was alarmed, mortally afraid that One-Pun would put Yama Minamiya down.

One-Pun ignored him and continued to walk forward as he said softly, "Treatment first."

Yama Minamiya shouted, "No! Treatment after the meeting!"

One-Pun ignored him and continued walking.

Everyone heaved a sigh of relief once again.

"Pa!"

Suddenly, there was a crisp smacking sound!

The crowd widened their eyes in disbelief!

Yama Minamiya had actually slapped the back of One-Pun's bright and smooth head!?

"Put me down!" Yama Minamiya screamed into One-Pun's ear.

Everyone's mouth immediately turned into an 'O'-shape.

Heavens!

Was Yama Minamiya courting death?

"Pa! Pa! Pa!"

Just as everyone was reeling in astonishment, Yama Minamiya slapped One-Pun's bald head thrice with a solemn expression. Each slap was clear and loud. It even had a rhythm to it.

"Are you putting me down or not!?" Yama Minamiya bellowed in a deep tone.

Everyone was already dumbfounded. They felt as though their brains could not process what was happening. They were only afraid that One-Pun would suddenly rage and implicate them, causing them to shudder in fear.

However, One-Pun wasn't infuriated. Instead, he faltered for a moment before stopping and turning around. He walked to Yama Minamiya's previous seat and gently placed him down.

"Sigh, you should really change that temper of yours."

How did One-Pun's soft grumbling and extremely cordial expression look anything like he had just been given a 'Pa Pa Pa'?

Everyone was shocked but they finally realized something wasn't right. How did Yama Minamiya, a trivial division minister, actually have such an 'intimate' relationship with One-Pun?

The suited man came to a realization that he had made a fatal error. The reason why One-Pun was enraged was not that Zhang Meng was bullying someone from Gaia but because Zhang Meng had injured Yama Minamiya!

The reason why One-Pun was so incensed was that Yama Minamiya was his Achilles' heel?

As everyone was shocked by the relationship between One-Pun and Yama Minamiya, One-Pun suddenly looked up at everyone. Again, he smiled and gave a genial and 'harmless' look. He rapped the meeting desk and said, "Can the meeting...be a little faster? I'm in a rush for time."

Everyone was left too deep for tears. They thought to themselves: Your fist is the biggest so whatever you say is right. But with you standing there, who would dare speak out? Who would dare retort Yama Minamiya?

You can't bully us like that!

The middle-aged woman bit the bullet and said, "The Hero

Association is already urging us to submit the final name list so this is already the final meeting. And what should be discussed has more or less been done. It's time to make the final decision. I believe that we should vo...vo...vo..."

The middle-aged woman's body turned stiff. She could not say the words 'vote to decide'. Voting was the most suitable solution to such disagreements but the outcome of the vote during the meeting was obvious. She did not dare to suggest something that was completely unfair to Gaia in front of One-Pun.

The middle-aged woman trembled for a few seconds before redirecting her words. She said, "The final decision will be decided by Chairman Jiang!"

The only person who could ignore One-Pun's inclination was the esteemed senior.

The middle-aged woman believed that despite Chairman Jiang being somewhat stubborn, he was not pedantic. He definitely would not oppose the Hero Association and the wishes of the citizens to help a few Gaia rookies that had nothing to do with him.

The seven organizations had jointly protested, while the people of the nation had denounced the matter. The Hero Association had secretly been exerting pressure, so no one could withstand the three-pronged pressure. Even Azure Emperor Jiang Tianyou would find it difficult to withstand it. Furthermore, the two rascals from Gaia had no relationship with Chairman Jiang. It wasn't worth it for Chairman Jiang to pay such a heavy price.

The rest of the organization's upper echelons naturally shared the same conclusion that the middle-aged woman could think of. They believed that they had it in the bag from the beginning, believing that this meeting was just going through the unimportant process. In the end, they believed that Chairman Jiang would not commit such a low-level mistake as well.

After all, the white-browed elder was also an old sly fox!

The members of the upper echelons echoed the sentiment as they pleaded for Chairman Jiang to make the final decision.

The genial white-browed elder chuckled and surveyed the crowd. He gently said, "Are all of you really letting me make the decision?"

The middle-aged woman said with a nod, "Chairman Jiang, please make the final decision!"

The white-browed elder turned to look at One-Pun and asked, "My young friend, One-Pun, do you mind if I make the final decision?"

One-Pun shook his head and said, "I do not mind."

The white-browed elder nodded and finally looked at Yama Minamiya. He said solemnly, "Division Minister Minamiya, do you agree to leave the decision to me?"

Yama Minamiya fell silent for a moment before sighing. He said softly, "Elder Jiang, please think about it carefully. If you believe that the rule should be changed, I...I will not oppose it."

It might be sufficient to force everyone to accept an outcome which was beneficial to Gaia through the use of One-Pun's strength. However, Yama Minamiya did not wish to do so, nor could he do so.

That was because the act of doing so would not only tarnish One-Pun's reputation, it would also tarnish Gaia's reputation. And most important of all, the 'righteousness' and 'honesty' that he advocated would no longer exist.

He had done all that he could do. Now, he placed the two rascals' fate in the hands of the peerless hero, Azure Emperor Jiang, who had saved countless lives.

"Then I'll be the bad guy."

The white-browed elder gave Yama Minamiya a deep, meaningful look before turning to the crowd and met the eager eyes of the members of the upper echelons. He said with a solemn voice, "I have decided that the rule...shall not be changed!"

The smile that was just about to bloom on the members of the upper echelons froze.

Yama Minamiya looked at the old man with a pleasant surprise.

A gentle smile suffused across the white-browed elder's mouth as he said, "Why should I change a rule I set?"

The middle-aged woman drew a gasp. At that moment, she ignored her fear and said solemnly, "The rule Chairman Jiang set isn't wrong, but it is not the most correct rule. The seven major organizations, the Hero Association, and all the people of the country believe that holding a tournament is the fairest way to choose the talents that truly possess the strength! Chairman Jiang, please think twice about it!"

The white-browed elder said with a chuckle, "I only know that a decided rule will not be changed or it will be unfair. What has the seven major organizations, the Hero Association, and the views of every citizen in the country got to do with me? The rule I set is the greatest form of justice to me!"

The middle-aged woman nearly spat out blood from her anger as she said with a trembling voice, "By...by doing so, who is to bear the responsibility if Wen Hezheng and Kevin disgrace the organization faction at the collective training?"

"A trivial farce by a group of rookies will make the organization faction lose their dignity? Why do I not know that the organization faction is so fragile to setbacks?"

The white-browed elder scoffed and said, "Since you believe that someone has to be responsible, I'll bear the responsibility! You can tell the seven major organizations, the Hero Association, and every

citizen in the country that this matter was especially decided by me. All the responsibility shall be mine! After all, the rule was determined by me. If the talent chosen through my rule does not meet the mark, it is only right for me to be responsible."

The white-browed elder's strong sense of righteousness inspired Yama Minamiya. He clenched his fists and felt his chest surging with burning hot blood. He was extremely agitated.

The suited man suddenly laughed dryly and said, "So Chairman Jiang had long made up your mind. All the previous meetings were just to drag it out?"

The white-browed elder did not deny it as he nodded his head calmly and said, "The rule set by me cannot be changed by anyone. This is my 'justice'. No one can destroy my 'justice'! The meeting was only to go through the necessary processes that are unimportant. It was just to deal with a few irritating old fogies."

The members of the upper echelons could not help but smile wryly. The ones that had to go through the process was not Yama Minamiya but them!

...

In the following ten minutes, Chairman Jiang made the members of the upper echelons understand fully what 'Stubborn temper' was. He made the decision of not changing the rule and that Wen Hezheng and Kevin would become the last two candidates for the collective training. Regardless of what the crowd said, it was

useless.

Under One-Pun's 'kind' gaze, none of them dared to waste time by putting up a meaningless struggle. Finally, this series of undulating twists and turns ended with a 'crappy ending'. Chairman Jiang had used ten minutes to determine the final decision.

The crowd left the meeting room helplessly. They secretly thought to themselves that they had to embellish the situation with the 'high-handed' One-Pun and the 'overbearing' Jiang Tianyou to their organization regardless of the consequences. Although they could not fix the two 'monsters' that seized authority with their fists, it did not mean that the seven major organizations and the Hero Association would forget it. Furthermore, One-Pun had especially violated the hero law which stated that 'professional heroes at the Psionic Imperial Realm could not fight privately'. He had even seriously injured Thor's Zhang Meng. It was no trivial matter!

After Yama Minamiya expressed his thanks to Chairman Jiang, he was quickly carried out of the meeting room by One-Pun.

Finally, there was only Jiang Tianyou and the uniformed beauty left in the meeting room.

Jiang Tianyou changed the composed demeanor from before as he scratched his head with a wry smile and said, "Damn it, damn it. I'm going to be irritated to death by those old bastards!"

The uniformed beauty rolled her eyes and thought to herself: Were you acting just now?

The uniformed beauty hesitated for a moment before she said suddenly, "Grandpa, why did you...do that?"

The uniformed beauty was really not just an insignificant secretary. She was Azure Emperor Jiang Tianyou's granddaughter!

Although her grandfather's smacking of the ugly faces of those members of the upper echelon had allowed her to vent, was it worth it to oppose the seven major organizations, the Hero Association and all the citizens of the country for some so-called 'justice'?

The uniformed beauty was somewhat worried for her grandfather.

Jiang Tianyou turned to glance at his granddaughter as an affectionate smile suffused across his face. He said gently, "Weiwei, Grandpa recalls that you previously worked as an assistant to the general manager of the Battle Arena Corporation branch?"

The uniformed beauty... Oh, she should be called 'Yang Weiwei' instead.

Yang Weiwei faltered for a moment before gently nodding her head.

Life was always filled with surprises, both good or bad. Just a month ago, she was a pathetic assistant that was forced by the general manager to 'solicit' others. When she met with the tragic outcome of being fired, Jiang Tianyou had found her!

She was Jiang Tianyou's long lost granddaughter!

Well, Yang Weiwei had initially rejected the treatment that was akin to being a female protagonist in a novel.

However, Jiang Tianyou had done several things. After convincing her adoptive parents and not hesitating to take her brother, Yang Yang, as a disciple, she finally accepted this sudden appearance of a grandfather.

Soon, with Jiang Tianyou's direction that was vigorous and effective, she quickly became the private assistant to the Hero Association's Vice Chairman-cum-Senate Chairman, Jiang Tianyou. She had gone from an ordinary white-collared worker to an important member that dealt with important matters of the hero faction.

This drastic change in stature would have been difficult for anyone to adapt but Yang Weiwei had understood the gist of it in a few short days. Furthermore, she was like a fish in water with extremely high proficiency.

That was because...there was nothing that could not be completed through deceit. If once wasn't enough, twice would do.

Yang Weiwei's Soul of Deception was gradually turning mature.

Yang Weiwei asked, "Grandpa, why do you raise it up?"

Jiang Tianyou said, "Grandpa remembers that the Battle Arena Corporation branch you were in is in Steel City, which is also Gaia's headquarters, isn't it?"

Yang Weiwei found it somewhat odd but she nodded. She said, "It's indeed the Gaia branch."

Jiang Tianyou said with a nod, "Isn't it obvious already?"

"What's obvious?"

Yang Weiwei was somewhat dumbfounded but she immediately realized something. She said in disbelief, "Grandpa, because of that, you actually..."

Jiang Tianyou grinned and said, "Of course. If not for my darling granddaughter having lived in Gaia headquarters for a period of time, why would I have helped them?"

"Ah?"

Yang Weiwei exclaimed, "Grandpa, didn't you do it for 'justice'?"

"Does your Grandpa look like an idiot?" Jiang Tianyou rolled his eyes and said with a petulant laugh. "How does changing a rule have anything to do with justice? If we want to talk about justice, between a bunch of retards who are unrelated to me and a dull idiot that is somewhat related to my darling granddaughter, helping that dull idiot is my justice!"

"Oh..."

Yang Weiwei was left unable to respond. She thought to herself: Grandpa, your justice is so unjust.

But, your granddaughter likes it a lot.

Chapter 483: The Imitation That Vanished

Infernal King's chamber

Shi Xiaobai was lying in bed with his eyes tightly closed while he remained unconscious.

Sunless was sitting on a chair beside the bed. Her eyes were dull as usual, but her gaze was on Shi Xiaobai's face, having not left it for a prolonged period of time.

The Infernal Queen lay languidly on a sofa in the distance. Her eyes were closed as she had dozed off.

As time passed, the chamber remained silent with only the occasional sounds of breathing heard. No one moved, as though they were three petrified statues.

Suddenly, the corners of Shi Xiaobai's eyes twitched lightly.

No matter how minute the change or how ephemeral or fleeting it was, nothing could escape Sunless's eyes. A glint flashed in her dull eyes as the corners of her mouth moved but she did not make a sound. Her hands were clenched into fists but she did not get up.

Instead, it was the Infernal Queen who leaped up and landed beside the bed after sensing the change in Shi Xiaobai's breathing.

"Darling!"

"You've finally awakened!"

During the long three days, the Infernal Queen would only occasionally take a glance at him. Yet, at that moment, she showcased a worried look as if she had been arduously waiting all this while. Sunless glanced at the Infernal Queen without any expression. Her gaze was slightly cold but she did not say a word.

The Infernal Queen gave Sunless a provocative glance, and just as Shi Xiaobai was slowly opening his eyes, she lunged her face over.

Therefore, the first thing to enter Shi Xiaobai's vision was that gorgeous face.

Shi Xiaobai blinked his eyes gently.

The Infernal Queen gave a coquettish smile as she uttered, "Dar..."

The intimate and passionate address came to a halt because Shi Xiaobai had heartlessly turned away and looked at Sunless.

Sunless's mouths twitched slightly, but not a sound came out of it. It was not that she had nothing to say, but that the things she wanted to say were too much for her. It left her at a loss as to what to say.

The two gazed at each other for a moment when Shi Xiaobai's gaze suddenly landed on her shoulder.

Sunless's expression changed slightly.

"Sorry."

Shi Xiaobai's gaze turned slightly gloomy as he whispered. His voice was hoarse and deep.

Despite having lost control of himself, he still had a tiny bit of his consciousness left in him. Even though he did not completely remember what had happened, he still clearly remembered the intolerable pain that he experienced at the instant when he stabbed the girl's soft shoulders with his hands.

He had nearly ripped off her arm, hurting a girl he should not have hurt at all.

Sunless faltered slightly and said with a shake of her head, "Not you."

The 'Shi Xiaobai' that injured me isn't you, so why is there a need for an apology?

Shi Xiaobai sighed, but he did not speak any further.

Even if it was an instant, he could still see a worry that quickly disappeared in her eyes.

Compared to the lingering fear of having nearly lost her arm, she was more concerned about the blame he felt from the remnant memories he had. However, the ineloquent her could not say something beautiful to relieve him. All she could say were the two words, "not you".

"Yea."

Shi Xiaobai tersely answered as a smile that came from the bottom of his heart suffused from the corners of his mouth.

He could not blame himself, else she would blame herself.

"Yea!"

Sunless answered with a solid 'yea', as she felt relieved.

The Infernal Queen rolled her eyes. Seeing Shi Xiaobai ignore her and 'yea'-ing with Sunless, she immediately found it meaningless as she turned to walk towards the sofa.

At that moment, a knock came from the door. Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin had inquired if they could enter.

"The third wheels have come just in time."

The Infernal Queen chuckled softly as she waved her hand, opening the door to the chamber.

Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin were slightly dumbfounded as they looked each other in the eye before walking in.

...

The mood suddenly turned awkward in a baffling manner.

Shi Xiaobai had just woken up, and his mind was still in a daze. It was unknown what should be said.

Sunless was never one to take the initiative to speak. All she did was silently look at Shi Xiaobai.

The Infernal Queen sat on the sofa as she prepared to watch a good show. She had no intentions of interrupting.

Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin clearly had things to say, but they exchanged furtive glances at each other, as though they were trying to signal the other to say the first word.

Therefore, it suddenly turned silent.

Feng Yuanlin finally lost the 'glance war', so he could only bite the bullet and said, "Ahem, Boss Shi Xiaobai, how much do you

remember about the events at the Silent Desolate Lands?"

This question was clearly inappropriate. The memories regarding the Silent Desolate Lands was a memory that Shi Xiaobai and the others wished to forget if possible.

However, the answer to whether Shi Xiaobai had any impression of him accidentally killing Speechless determined the development of the plan which involved hiding the truth from Shi Xiaobai. They had to ask him to be sure.

"Only some blurry scenes."

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment as he tried his best to recall the memory of him being overwhelmed by 'anger'. The bits of fuzzy memories began to flash through his mind. From protecting Dawn Li to killing Field Marshal Awesomo, Earthbound Yaksha, and Shadow Wraith, the memories were all extremely vague. Many of the details could not be recalled at all, but as the memories continued on, a surging 'pain' made him widen his eyes.

It was as though something important had disappeared.

It had disappeared from this world and from his memories.

What was it?

What could it be?

"Dawn Li!"

Shi Xiaobai suddenly gasped as his expression changed drastically. He hurriedly asked the people beside him, "Where is Dawn Li?"

In his blurry memories, he seemed to see with his own eyes the blond girl vanish in front of him into nothingness. His consciousness was extremely hazy, but the pain he experienced at that instant was still extremely clear.

It was not a mistake, nor was it a dream, much less a memory error!

The 'nightmare' of the blond girl suddenly vanishing in front of him was a reality that had previously happened!

Tiny beads of cold sweat oozed out of Shi Xiaobai's forehead. All sorts of guesses filled his mind, but they all pointed at a particular cruel possibility.

"Dawn Li?"

Everyone noticed that Shi Xiaobai looked nervous and anxious as they immediately turned flustered. They tried their best to recall the name Dawn Li.

"Isn't Dawn Li...the Hero King's name? Oh, I understand. Shi Xiaobai, are you asking about the imitation that was created by the assessment program?" Pulp Farmer was the first person to recall the impression he had in his memories.

Shi Xiaobai immediately turned extremely pale. "Imitation? ... Did she...vanish?"

Regardless of how real and warm the blond girl had made him feel, Shi Xiaobai always had a worrying thought that 'she might be a fake existence'. However, this reality that he did not wish to face had been exposed completely.

"She vanished. Before she vanished, she revealed the truth. Just like our guesses from before, she was indeed an imitation created by the assessment program." Pulp Farmer did not remember what complications the fake Hero King had with Shi Xiaobai. In fact, his memory of the fake Hero King was also very fuzzy. However, for some reason, he had a deep impression that she was a fake imitation.

"..."

Shi Xiaobai sighed silently. He repressed the tumultuous emotions he was feeling, but he did not express it. He did not wish to believe that the blond girl that had accompanied him through life and death was a fake existence, but he had no way of convincing himself of such a ridiculous hope he wanted.

She had vanished.

They could no longer meet again.

Even though he had been mentally prepared after liking the girl, Shi Xiaobai still felt pain, as though his heart was being wrenched at that moment.

Chapter 484: Thoughts Separated By Three Thousand Years

"What about the rest?"

Shi Xiaobai forced himself to divert the topic. Being the recipient of his own vexation and pain was enough. There was no need to share it with others.

However, this casual question was left unanswered by anyone for some unknown reason.

Shi Xiaobai was surprised as he noticed that Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin had suddenly lowered their heads to avoid his gaze. Sunless remained expressionless but she had also maintained her silence.

What was going on?

"Did something happen?"

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly as he suddenly could not help but laugh, saying, "Why isn't anyone answering? Could it be that the rest have gained the assessment program's recognition, clearing the level and reaching the eighth level?"

"Boss Shi Xiaobai, they..." Feng Yuanlin was somewhat flustered from the questioning. Just as he was about to say something, Pulp

Farmer answered for him.

"Shi Xiaobai, you really did not study any of the details before you entered the tower. Only one person can gain the recognition of the assessment program on the seventh level. If a trial-taker wins the assessment program's approval, that person will clear the level and be sent to the eighth level. Then, the rest of the trial-takers will be expelled from the trial tower. It's general knowledge. Since we are still in the Infernal palace, it means no one has cleared the seventh level yet." Pulp Farmer said slowly as he glared at Feng Yuanlin, who had a 'flustered and guilty' look on his face.

After receiving Pulp Farmer's 'stare', Feng Yuanlin finally realized that they were 'shouldering' the heavy responsibility of hiding the cruel truth from Boss Shi Xiaobai. He hurriedly tried to compose himself as he echoed, "Ha...ha, Boss Shi Xiaobai sure loves to joke. Do you know how difficult it is to win the assessment program's approval? It probably isn't an exaggeration to call it as difficult as 'ascending the heavens'. After all, there has only been three mighty figures—Overlord Ji Feng, Sword Immortal Xu Taibai, and the Conquest King—who had managed to clear it."

Feng Yuanlin had only casually echoed Pulp Farmer's words, but this unintentional sentence made Shi Xiaobai widen his eyes suddenly.

There was only Overlord Ji Feng, Sword Immortal Xu Taibai, and the Conquest King?

"There are only three?"

Shi Xiaobai asked in surprise.

Feng Yuanlin's hands began to tremble from nervousness when he saw Shi Xiaobai looking at him. Heavens, he was the worst at lying. What was he to do?

Pulp Farmer rolled his eyes and felt a mild headache. Shi Xiaobai had only casually asked an unimportant question but Feng Yuanlin had turned flustered from a guilty conscience like a questioned crime suspect. If this continued, Shi Xiaobai would probably notice Feng Yuanlin's odd behavior.

With that thought in mind, Pulp Farmer hurriedly interrupted, "The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is a famous land of trials of great difficulty. The requirement needed of trial-takers at the Psionic Mortal Realm to clear the seventh level is as difficult as ascending the heavens. According to historical records, from the moment of the tower's construction, the humans that have cleared the seventh level are Overlord Ji Feng, Sword Immortal Xu Taibai, and the Conquest King. These three people are famous figures in history. That shows the value of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. The few of us might be called 'super rookies of China', but we are still far from capable of clearing the seventh level. Perhaps only monsters like you and...Speechless have that bit of chance."

When the word, 'Speechless', was said, Pulp Farmer's expression could not help but stiffen slightly. Feng Yuanlin turned his head away in a fluster. Even the look in Sunless's eyes changed slightly. The Infernal Queen who was languidly slumped on the sofa

revealed a teasing smile.

The mood turned somewhat odd.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not notice the oddity because his mind wasn't on with them. Due to Feng Yuanlin's unintentional change of topic and Pulp Farmer's deliberate attempt to cover up the matter, resulting in an over-detailed explanation, Shi Xiaobai's mind was filled with questions that inundated him.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and asked softly, "What about the fourth story? If This King did not remember wrong, the Hero King had once instigated a war between the three domains, killing the three kings alone and received the assessment program's recognition, creating the most interesting fourth story, right?"

Wasn't this story told to This King by you?

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly.

"Hero King?"

Pulp Farmer frowned as well.

"Indeed, the Hero King was one of the most likely people to win the approval of the assessment program over the past three thousand years. His talent and strength were not weaker than Ji Feng, Xu Taibai, or the Conquest King's. The Hero King might even be slightly stronger than them. However, to the surprise of

many, the Hero King stopped at the seventh level. No one knew what had happened to the Hero King back on the seventh level. It is still a mystery up to this day."

Pulp Farmer sighed as a wistful look appeared in his eyes.

Shi Xiaobai gradually gaped but he did not question further. He lowered his head and began pondering with knitted brows.

Pulp Farmer's words sounded definite. Sunless and Feng Yuanlin had not objected to his claims. It implied that Pulp Farmer wasn't lying. Furthermore, they had been the ones that had told him the story of the Hero King's slaying of the three kings not long ago. How could they tell a lie that could be so easily exposed?

However, his memory wasn't in chaos. Shi Xiaobai clearly remembered Speechless telling him on the Silent Desolate Lands that the Hero King's story was the most famous story of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. Speechless had participated in the selection in order to replicate the legendary story. Outside the Infernal King's palace, Liu Yu, Pulp Farmer, and Feng Yuanlin had recited to him the story of the Hero King stealing the three domains' sacred items which provoked a war between the three domains. Finally, the story ended with the Hero King slaying the three kings.

All these memories were clear and real.

Then, why did things turn out this way?

Why did Pulp Farmer's words now have such a huge discrepancy from what was previously said?

Shi Xiaobai was not foolish enough to believe that Pulp Farmer and company had jointly deceived him. There had to be a reason behind such a strange matter.

In fact, he had already thought of two possibilities.

First, his memories had been changed.

Second, the memories of others had been changed.

If it were the former, there was no reason to continue his reasoning. However, such a possibility was very high.

But if it was the latter, the complexity of the matter was completely unimaginable.

The former was much more reasonable than the latter.

However, Shi Xiaobai hoped that the answer was the latter. His ideal answer was—the Hero King that vanished was real. She had time traveled from three thousand years ago. Due to the change in experiences, history was changed. Therefore, their memories of that piece of history had been changed!

Just like how changing a particular matter would result in a

change in the world lines if a person time traveled using a time machine to the past, the future of the same world line would change in response.

If the Dawn Li he had met was real, meaning that she had time traveled from three thousand years ago, then what had happened had changed history. Then, wouldn't the memories of that piece of history end up changing?

Of course, this theory was completely opposite from 'returning to the past from the future to change the future'. It was a completely reversed theory and became an illogical deduction of 'coming to the future from the past to change the past'.

Furthermore, with the change in history, the memories of the rest had been changed but why were only his memories intact? This was a suspicious point that could not be easily skipped over.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai hoped that it was the latter but he could not think up of a reasonable theory to support it.

The only excuse he had was that—spacetime travel was illogical, to begin with. So why did he have to force it to be logical?

Shi Xiaobai, who had crossed worlds into this alternate world in a baffling manner, did not believe that logic had to be pursued for everything.

It was necessary to occasionally believe in an unreasonable but

compatible guess.

Shi Xiaobai had innumerable thoughts but they all came to the same conclusion, an outcome that he wanted to believe—the girl he liked was not an imitation created by the assessment program. Instead, she was an 'oddity' that had time traveled to present day which resulted in history being changed. She had vanished from this place and time, only to have returned to the world from three thousand years ago.

Although they were separated by three thousand years in time, and the distance between them was unbridgeable, they were at least real. At least, they lived on the same world line.

That was good.

A smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips.

Even if they were separated by the rivers of time that spanned three thousand years, they had at least once been in the same world thinking of each other.

Nice, it was.

Chapter 485: Triangular Slandering

Seeing Shi Xiaobai suddenly enter a ruminative state before suddenly revealing a smile, everyone in the room was left confused.

Feng Yuanlin and Pulp Farmer exchanged glances and once again tried to urge the other to speak by staring daggers at each other. They still had not received a clear answer to that important question.

After the 'glaring war' continued for a long time, Pulp Farmer was finally defeated. He secretly straightened his back and clenched his fists. He asked, "Shi Xiaobai, do you have any impression of the matters after the fake Hero King's disappearance?"

With that said, Feng Yuanlin quietly turned his head away, afraid that his expression would reveal anything.

The look in Sunless's eyes changed slightly before it instantly was restored to the dull and inert state.

The Infernal Queen's coquettish smile turned increasingly teasing.

When Shi Xiaobai heard the question, he stopped thinking and looked up at Pulp Farmer. He began to subconsciously consider Pulp Farmer's question.

Matters that happened after Dawn Li's disappearance?

Shi Xiaobai dived back into his memories again. He recalled that when Dawn suddenly disappeared, his momentary panic and bewilderment caused him to be consumed by 'angry' emotions. The tiny bit of reason that had been awoken by Dawn's gentle address had vanished.

Back then, he saw everything flooded by a scarlet red screen. The lives in front of him had turned into ugly devils. Therefore, when Sunless approached him, it was as though a devil was walking toward him. His instinctive act of killing caused him to strike, stabbing Sunless's shoulders with both hands.

If not for the soft sensation of stabbing into the shoulders and the painful grunt that Sunless uttered which instantly awoken him, it would have created a tragedy.

Thankfully, he had resisted the 'wrath' in his heart, causing his already exhausted body to finally fall unconscious.

Shi Xiaobai remained silent for a moment and told everyone in the room of the situation that happened back then. An apologetic look of lingering fear flashed in his eyes.

Sunless reacted upon listening to Shi Xiaobai's depiction of the events. Her heart ached for Shi Xiaobai's tiny bit of consciousness while in that state but she was also delighted that he had defeated 'anger' in order to not harm her. Most of all, she was worried that

Shi Xiaobai would blame himself for injuring her shoulders.

Sunless's thoughts were complex but she did not know how to articulate it. Her eyes wandered around and after a moment of hesitation, she finally extended her hand out to grab Shi Xiaobai's hand and said seriously, "Don't blame you."

The warm and gentle touch that transmitted to the back of his hand made him experience the genuine and selfless intentions of a girl. In the array world, Shi Xiaobai, who for the first time had his 'emotions opened up', knew how valuable these intentions were.

His heart warmed up as he smiled gently and whispered, "Got it."

Sunless's eyes lit up slightly as a fleeting smile suddenly suffused on her face. It was like an especially mesmerizing cactus flower that bloomed rarely.

A green 'tinge of envy' brewed. It was so astringent that it made the Infernal Queen roll her eyes.

Pulp Farmer, who was worried over another matter, did not engage in the fury of a 'bachelor dog', much less the realization that he was being the third wheel. He suddenly interrupted, "Then...what about the matters after falling unconscious? Do you still remember anything else?"

"Matters after falling unconscious?" said Shi Xiaobai in surprise. "This King was already unconscious, so how could there be any

memories?"

Pulp Farmer's eyes widened as cold sweat immediately oozed out of his forehead.

Damn it, he was in such a rush to obtain an answer that he had forgotten such a simple piece of logic. If Shi Xiaobai did not remember that he had 'woken up' during his unconsciousness, such a question was equivalent to telling Shi Xiaobai that other matters had happened after he fell unconscious. A person as clever as Shi Xiaobai would definitely realize this problem.

Indeed, Shi Xiaobai quickly wrinkled his eyebrows and asked, "Did something happen after This King fell unconscious? Or could it be...that This King did something after he fell unconscious?"

Pulp Farmer's expression drastically changed as he cursed inwardly for being a fool. He knew that he had to quickly come up with a reason or fabricate a story to shrug off the matter. However, how could he so easily fool the clever Shi Xiaobai? Pulp Farmer's mind was a mess as he could not think of a solution instantly. He broke out into a sweat from his anxiousness.

Feng Yuanlin was also worried by the side, but with his dull brains, how could he come up with a solution?

Shi Xiaobai finally noticed the strangeness and as though he thought of something, his pupils constricted suddenly. With a slight change in expression, he uttered, "Could it be..."

"He slapped you three times."

"Ah?"

"Ah?"

Shi Xiaobai turned his head toward Sunless.

Sunless locked eyes with Shi Xiaobai and gradually lifted her left hand and pointed at Pulp Farmer. She said without any expression, "When you fell unconscious, your vital signs had vanished. He was so frightened that he slapped you three times."

Pulp Farmer was confused. When did he slap Shi Xiaobai three times?

Why was Sunless 'slandering' him?

Just as the surprised thought rose in his mind, Pulp Farmer saw Shi Xiaobai's suspicious and panicking expression gradually relax. With a flash of brilliance, Pulp Farmer immediately realized why Sunless had suddenly fabricated this lie.

As he had slapped Shi Xiaobai thrice, he was afraid that Shi Xiaobai still had a memory of that happening despite being unconscious. Therefore, he had asked such a strange question.

Sunless had helped him fabricate an excuse.

Pulp Farmer was relieved and he immediately felt like prostrating himself before Sunless in admiration. Indeed, the person that could fool Shi Xiaobai was also a 'freak' with an equally high intelligence.

After realizing this line of thought, he hurriedly added to corroborate Sunless's explanation, "Sor...Sorry. It wasn't intentional...Back...back then, the situation was intense. Feng Yuanlin nearly cried from panic!"

Pulp Farmer was followed the 'code of brotherhood' as he dragged Feng Yuanlin into it as well.

Feng Yuanlin exclaimed. With his intelligence, he obviously had not fully understood the situation. He only knew that Sunless had suddenly 'slandered' Pulp Farmer and Pulp Farmer had suddenly 'slandered' him.

Was this the prelude to a 'slander' exchange?

Feng Yuanlin was afraid that he would wreck Sunless and Pulp Farmer's 'plans', so he bit the bullet and tried inferring.

Since they were having a 'slander' exchange, shouldn't he say something as well?

But who could he 'slander'?

Feng Yuanlin racked his brains with all his might as a stroke of brilliance suddenly flashed in his mind. He said loudly, "Right, right, right. The situation back then was too nerve-racking. Everyone thought you were dead. Brother Pulp Farmer slapped you thrice, and I...I nearly cried from panic. Also, also...Sunless gave you mouth-to-mouth resuscitation in order to save you!"

At that moment, Feng Yuanlin found himself extremely clever. He had perfectly complemented the grand plan of a 'triangular slander'.

Sunless, who suddenly took an arrow in the knee, had her breathing falter for a moment. With a stiffened expression, she wanted to explain, but she could not expose the lie at that moment. She could only swallow her words but the embarrassment in her heart prevented her from looking into Shi Xiaobai's eyes. However, her right hand was still adamantly holding on to his.

Pulp Farmer lowered his head in guilt and pretended that it had nothing to do with him. However, he secretly gave Feng Yuanlin a big thumbs up in his mind. This support of intelligence was really fucking well done (sick)!

The Infernal Queen, who was watching the brouhaha by the side, burst out into laughter. Her feminine laughter could not cease at all.

When Shi Xiaobai realized the situation, he was at a loss whether to laugh or to cry. He said, "It seems like...all of you need to be a bit more careful after This King 'falls unconscious'."

Pulp Farmer was delighted. Shi Xiaobai had been fooled. A triangle was indeed the most stable shape.

Sunless was relieved as well.

Regardless, concealing the truth was all that is needed.

...

Chapter 486: Time For This Game Of Chess To Come To An End

The group began joking about the 'terrible turn of events' after Shi Xiaobai fell unconscious.

Soon, Pulp Farmer made an excuse to leave, to which Feng Yuanlin parroted so as to leave with him.

They had intruded by rushing into the room mainly because they were worried about Shi Xiaobai as well as to confirm if Shi Xiaobai remembered if he had accidentally killed Speechless. Now, with Shi Xiaobai completely fine and clueless about what had happened after he fell unconscious, there was naturally no reason for them to 'risk' staying behind.

After Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin left, Shi Xiaobai lowered his head to ponder over Dawn. Although the guess that they were on the same world line was better than the outcome from before, it still could not satisfy him. The 'silly notion' that he could still meet up with her again made him begin to rack his brains.

Sunless was a bit mindful of how Shi Xiaobai would view the matter of 'mouth-to-mouth resuscitation' that Feng Yuanlin came up with. But the typically nonvocal her did not know how she should probe. Therefore, she could only become the usual silent beauty.

The Infernal Queen languidly lazed on the sofa as she shook her beautiful and exquisite leg that seemed to have a luster like

beautiful white jade. A coquettish smile hung on her lips as her eyes held a teasing hint as though she was planning something.

The room immediately turned silent once again.

"Rumble..."

Suddenly, a strange sound groaned.

Shi Xiaobai immediately blushed because his stomach had growled. After sleeping for three days, the energy he had received from eating the Infernal King's sword had basically been digested. As a result, he had the infinite appetite of the Power of Taotie reappearing, giving him the innate feeling of hunger.

Sunless looked up at Shi Xiaobai and immediately, a look of realization flashed in her eyes after a moment of surprise. She thought to herself that it was true that she was bad at caring for others. She had failed to realize that someone who had been unconscious for three days would be hungry after he woke up. If it were a more considerate girl, she would definitely have realized this and prepared in advanced.

"I'll get food."

Sunless hurriedly stood up and walked out the door.

Shi Xiaobai gaped and wanted to tell Sunless not to bother. He had lots of food everywhere around him. But as he thought that

the food around him were actually candles or other furniture, it would undoubtedly make Sunless worry for him even though candles were not much different from fried chicken to him. Therefore, he could only swallow his words.

With Sunless leaving, it immediately left Shi Xiaobai and the Infernal Queen remaining in the room.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to glance at the Infernal Queen. Before the battle royale between the three kings, he had once spent ten days with the Infernal Queen in the chamber they were in, alone. Although they were playing board games most of the time, the Infernal Queen had never ceased using a coquettish attitude to attempt to seduce him.

Didn't she seem a little different today?

The Infernal Queen was half-slumped on the sofa. The garments she was wearing could hardly conceal her figure. Her wanton and slothful posture was filled with a fascinating charm. However, the smile on her face was different from the seductive smile from before. It had more of a teasing and jesting vibe.

She locked eyes with Shi Xiaobai, narrowing them into a beaming smile without saying a word.

Shi Xiaobai thought for a moment before choosing not to make conversation. He hesitated for a moment and turned his head. He got off the bed and quickly walked toward the Infernal King's study desk.

He was hungry. Very hungry. The appetite of Tao Tie could no longer wait.

Before Sunless brings in food, it's best to find something to eat first.

Shi Xiaobai remembered that he had found the Celestial Jade that was of the same grade as the Transcendent fruit and the Infernal King's sword in the Infernal King's desk. Only energy at the level of the Celestial Jade could curb his hunger.

Shi Xiaobai began rummaging through the Infernal King's drawers and he would occasionally find some items that were like jade. However, they were all ordinary items. The amount of energy they contained was only slightly higher than rocks. However, Shi Xiaobai was too hungry to be picky, so he began eating them.

The Infernal Queen was accustomed to seeing the ridiculous scene of Shi Xiaobai eating anything. She silently watched him with a faint smile. A strange glint was hidden in her eyes as though she was planning something.

"There is one thing that I'm not sure if Darling still remembers?"

Suddenly, the Infernal Queen broke the silence.

"What is it?"

Shi Xiaobai's mouth was filled with 'food' as he responded in an intelligible manner.

"More than ten days ago, Darling had exposed my fake identity of being Infernal Queen and you had questioned my true identity. Back then, I gave Darling three chances. I said that I would definitely confess as long as Darling can correctly identify my true identity."

The Infernal Queen hung her trademark coquettish smile on her face as she said, "Darling had guessed wrong twice back then but decided to leave the third chance aside. Darling has yet to use it up till today."

The matter that happened more than ten days ago was quickly recalled by Shi Xiaobai when the Infernal Queen raised it.

Based on the Infernal Queen's weird actions, such as the lie about the red mole underneath his armpit, the aphrodisiac perfume in the room, the flaws in her words as well as the strength that he could not see through, he had exposed the Infernal Queen's fake identity.

He had guessed that the Infernal Queen might be a fake existence created by the assessment program, an outsider from outside the tower, or the Level Lord. Therefore, he had slyly used two chances to guess at three identities.

But unfortunately, they were all wrong answers. However, the Infernal Queen who was immersed in the 'guessing game' had

made an exception for Shi Xiaobai's 'slyness' and gave him a third chance.

Shi Xiaobai had nearly forgotten the matter but he never expected the Infernal Queen to suddenly raise it.

"You wish for This King to use the third chance now?" asked Shi Xiaobai with a raised eyebrow.

"No, I just want to tell Darling the correct answer now."

The Infernal Queen's mouth suffused a teasing smile.

Shi Xiaobai was surprised as he saw the Infernal Queen begin to slowly open her charming red lips.

"My true identity is..."

The gentle and loving pupils in her eyes swirled with a strange glint. The Infernal Queen had suddenly acted erratically and she was about to reveal her true identity.

"Assessment program!"

Shi Xiaobai's expression changed as he suddenly said the answer out first.

"Darling has indeed guessed it a long time ago."

The smile on the Infernal Queen's lips turned increasingly teasing.

Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders and said calmly, "It was just a guess. You aren't an outsider but you managed to make This King feel a threat that surpasses a Level Lord. Furthermore, you aren't created by the assessment program and also not the Level Lord, but you possess the powers to replace the Infernal Queen's identity."

"To possess this strength and privilege at the same time, together with the elimination of the three aforementioned possibilities, other than being the 'assessment program', This King can't think of a second answer. However, This King did not have any decisive evidence, so there was no way to confirm the logical guess."

"Therefore, This King did not choose to use the third chance. But now, you have 'forced' This King to use it, so This King naturally said the answer in his heart. But This King never expected that you really are the assessment program!"

Shi Xiaobai had no expression, but his eyes were flickering with a wise and farsighted glimmer.

"Sigh."

The Infernal Queen suddenly wiped the smile off her face and shook her head with a sigh. Her gaze suddenly turned cold.

"Shi Xiaobai, why are you still making up such a shoddy lie at this point in time? A straightforward person does not resort to insinuations. Since I have taken the initiative to show my hand, it is time for this game of chess to come to an end."

Chapter 487: Stick It In Forcefully!

"Shi Xiaobai, up till now, why are you still making up such a shoddy lie? A straightforward person does not resort to insinuations. Since I have taken the initiative to show my hand, it is time for this game of chess to come to an end."

After the Infernal Queen wiped away her faked coquettish smile and dropped the endearing 'Darling', her eyes turned sharp and cold.

"Shoddy lie? This King does not understand you, not to mention the game of chess you are talking about." Shi Xiaobai had a puzzled expression as a surprised glint flashed in his eyes.

The Infernal Queen suffused a cold smile and said, "That matter can deceive those bunch of fools but can it be kept from me?"

"Which matter?" Shi Xiaobai wrinkled his eyebrows.

"Heh heh, it looks like you plan on playing the fool till the very end."

The Infernal Queen's eyes flashed a look of disappointment. She had appreciated Shi Xiaobai's intelligence during their chess games and his unwavering principle and mindfulness of not being seduced by her beauty. However, Kali's submissive love that did not match her stature and the 'matter' that happened not long ago made her understand what it meant to be a 'hypocrite'.

"Fine. Since you insist on not talking about it by playing the fool, I'll make it such that you have nothing to say."

The Infernal Queen's eyes were ice-cold as she said with a sneer, "Do you remember that not a long time ago, you had inquired about the Infernal King's Mandate?"

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly and nodded.

He had indeed asked the Infernal Queen about the Infernal King's Mandate. Hence, he knew about the vendetta between the first generation Infernal King and Celestial King. He had also gleaned the information that the Infernal King's Mandate was to kill the reigning Celestial King.

The Infernal Queen's sneer intensified as she continued, "You are very smart. After using two opportunities, you had already guessed that I was the assessment program. You knew that although I was targeting you, I still had to obey the rules of being a 'program'."

"I can designate you as the Infernal King, making you lack the identity of a Braveheart so that you are unable to clear the level by 'becoming champion at the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament'. However, I have no way of completely severing the path to you 'gaining the program's recognition'."

"Those trial-takers that were designated Bravehearts matched their identities by either becoming the champion at the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament or killing the Infernal King. Therefore,

you logically guessed that for a trial-taker with the identity of Infernal King to obtain the 'program's recognition', it is...to complete the Infernal King's Mandate. Hence, you had asked about it."

Shi Xiaobai's expression changed slightly as an alarming glint flashed in his eyes. However, it was quickly mollified as he shook his head and said, "You are overthinking it. This King isn't that smart."

"No, you were much smarter than I imagined."

The Infernal Queen said with a sneer, "You knew that I was targeting you, but you continued asking me because you were confident that you could infer the correct answer from a wrong answer. And with me being able to easily think of that, I would give you an answer that would seem exceedingly close to the true answer to confuse you."

"When you played chess, you would often think ten steps, twenty steps, or even further ahead of time. It was the same this time. You had guessed from the beginning that I will give you an answer filled with half-truths."

Shi Xiaobai could not help but laugh as he said, "Sorry, but you are really over thinking it."

The Infernal Queen sneered and continued her monolog, "My answer was filled with half-truths. In the history of the Transcendent world, this generation's Infernal King had nearly

united the three domains. Finally, he was killed by the joint efforts of the Celestial King and the Hexstar Bravehearts.”

“Therefore, for a trial-taker with the identity as Infernal King to gain the 'program's recognition', the Celestial King has to be killed to complete the Infernal King's Mandate or the Hexstar Bravehearts have to be killed. The lives of the six leading figures of the Age of Bravehearts would be ended ahead of time.”

“Regardless of which one is killed, it will prevent the joint forces of the Celestial King and the Bravehearts. It would then change the ultimate destiny of the Infernal King. Although I concealed the latter, I had informed you of the former because I had considered an additional step.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard those words, his expression changed and he began frowning. He recalled that in Transcendence, Pulp Farmer and company were received as the 'Hexstar Bravehearts'. That identity had been deliberately designed.

Shi Xiaobai said with a wry smile, "Aren't you going overboard with your targeting? You designated This King as the Infernal King, designated Speechless Li as the Celestial King, and the rest as the Hexstar Bravehearts. You made it so, such that This King has to kill Speechless or the other six in order to gain the 'program's recognition'. What difference does this have from completely severing This King's ability to clear the level?"

"I originally thought that doing so would completely cut you off from clearing the level."

A mocking smile suffused across the Infernal Queen's lips as her gaze turned slightly cold. She said, "But I never expected that you would guess that the answer I gave was real and had ruthlessly completed that matter."

Shi Xiaobai frowned. "What do you mean?"

"With things this clear, is there a need to feign stupidity?" Since you are forcing me to expose it, I will not beat around the bush any further."

The corner of the Infernal Queen's mouth suddenly turned odd as she said, "Shi Xiaobai, three days ago, you feigned unconsciousness and took the opportunity to kill the Celestial King, completing the Infernal King's Mandate. What a great strategy and scheme!"

Shi Xiaobai's pupils constricted slightly as his expression turned austere. "That joke is getting overboard."

The Infernal Queen said with a smile, "Do you think that anything you do can deceive me? Unfortunately, even if you do it perfectly, even if you can really fool my eyes, it is absolutely impossible for you to fool the rules of the 'program'!"

Shi Xiaobai said coldly, "What are you trying to get at?"

"I only want to tell you that I can't withhold it any longer. The program's rules have already determined that you have completed

the mission. I have used all my privileges only to be able to delay it, but there is no way to stop the final outcome. You have succeeded. You won. I have lost this game of chess."

The Infernal Queen's expression was one of indignation and her gaze was burning with fury. However, there was a strange smile by the corners of her mouth.

Finally, it transformed into the usual coquettish charm.

"As you wish, the world to the eighth level has its legs opened up for you."

She curled her finger and licked her red lips as she said seductively, "So, come on in. Stick it in forcefully!"

...

...

As the important conversation was happening in the Infernal King's chamber, another important conversation began in the woods outside the Infernal Palace.

In a trial in the woods, the lush canopy blocked out the sun. Other than the chirping of sparrows and the gentle rustle of the wind, as well as two sporadic footsteps, there was no other noise.

A girl in azure clothes was walking in front at an appropriate speed.

A youth in a Daoist outfit was following behind with a hesitant expression.

Liu Yu was puzzled. He had rushed to the Infernal King's chambers when he received news that Shi Xiaobai had awoken. On the way, he had encountered Sunless, who had gone out to bring food in.

He never expected the scene to develop to what it was now.

Why would Sunless 'invite' him out alone?

Was there something she wanted to discuss?

From Liu Yu's impression of the azure-dressed girl, she was a person who seldom took the initiative to converse with others. Up to date, he had not even spoken to her at all. He never expected that the first word he received from her was "Follow."

With Sunless's personality, other than an urgent matter that needed to be done, it was impossible for her to do such a thing.

No, it was not only so.

This matter definitely had something to do with 'swords' or 'Shi

Xiaobai'.

Could it be...

When Liu Yu's thoughts came to that point, he suddenly thought of a possibility. Seeing Sunless walk into the deep depths of the forest without a word, he suddenly had an ominous feeling. He laughed dryly and spoke out first, "Benefactor Ye, are you planning on discussing with This Penniless Priest about hiding the matter from Benefactor Shi Xiaobai?"

Suddenly, Sunless, who was walking in front, came to a halt as she slowly turned to her side and gave him a nonchalant glance. The look in her pupils appeared somewhat cold.

"You lied," said Sunless suddenly.

Liu Yu's pupils constricted slightly as his expression changed. But instantly, it returned to its original calm.

"Lie?"

Liu Yu said in 'confusion', "When did This Penniless Priest lie? Oh? Is Benefactor Ye referring to the matter of hiding the truth from Benefactor Shi Xiaobai? If hiding that truth is considered a lie, This Penniless Priest has indeed made an outrageous lie, but..."

Sunless suddenly interrupted him. "Shi Xiaobai's hair did not turn silver."

The bright sunlight seemed to suddenly freeze over at that instant.

Chapter 488: A Fate That The World Can Only Watch From The Side

Liu Yu's expression immediately turned stiff as beads of sweat oozed out from his forehead.

Just as he was about to say something, Sunless said coldly, "On the way back, Shi Xiaobai's hair had always been black."

Liu Yu said with a wry smile, "Benefactor Ye, why are you saying this? How are you so sure?"

Sunless said with a deadpan expression, "I was watching him constantly."

Liu Yu was slightly dumbfounded before he immediately understood what she meant. Her eyes had been staring intently at Shi Xiaobai on the way back. Without parting her eyes from him, she had not seen Shi Xiaobai's hair turn silver during that fateful period.

With Sunless's personality, it was definite that she would place all her attention on the unconscious Shi Xiaobai even if with an injured shoulder that would emit pain with every step.

Liu Yu sighed before saying, "Benefactor Ye must be mistaken. This Penniless Priest previously mentioned that Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's hair only turned silver for an instant. It was so short that This Penniless Priest even suspected that it was a mistake."

“Even if you were staring at him the entire journey, there might be instances you miss when you blink your eyes. This Penniless Priest really did not lie. Benefactor Ye, you must have seen wrong.”

Sunless said affirmatively without any emotions, "I do not blink."

Liu Yu was surprised as he examined her carefully. He realized that Sunless's glazed eyes looked glazed not because they seldom revealed emotions, but because she never blinked.

She actually did not need to blink?

What sort of darn special effect is that!?

Liu Yu smiled wryly inwardly. He knew that she wasn't joking. She had really managed to stare at Shi Xiaobai intently without blinking once on the way back. It could be said that she did not miss a single instant.

What a terrifying girl.

Liu Yu sighed and said, "You might have seen wrong, or it might have been a mistake of This Penniless Priest. Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's hair might not have turned silver and This Penniless Priest could have been mistaken, but there is absolutely no reason to lie. Furthermore, with you staring at Benefactor Shi Xiaobai all the time, you should know better than This Penniless Priest as to what had happened, right?"

Sunless glanced at Liu Yu with an emotionless expression and said, "I saw it, but I didn't see everything. At that moment, you happened to block my vision. It was as if...you did it on purpose."

Liu Yu's expression changed as he said in a deep voice, "Benefactor Ye, your words seem a bit too harsh. This Penniless Priest had been hit by Benefactor Shi Xiaobai's elbow, lost control of my body and had accidentally blocked your vision. Everything was just a coincidence. This Penniless Priest knows you are worried about Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, but how can you malign This Penniless Priest in such an unreasonable manner?"

Liu Yu's expression appeared agitated, as though he was expressing his indignation.

Sunless calmly glanced at him and said expressionlessly, "I did not tell you when you blocked my vision. Yet, you seem to know it better than me?"

Liu Yu's heart skipped a beat when he heard that. He cursed in his heart. He had been anxious and he had neglected such a simple logical line of thought. Wasn't this equivalent to him giving an unsought confession?

Sunless said coldly, "You had indeed lied."

Liu Yu pretended to remain calm as he said in a deep tone, "You claim that This Penniless Priest was lying, but why would This Penniless Priest lie? What reason is there for This Penniless Priest

to lie?"

"You want to hide a particular truth."

Sunless's eyes were dull but they emitted an overbearing glimmer. She said, "There are two possibilities for this truth. First, you are helping Xiaobai hide the truth. Xiaobai was awake when he killed Speechless. Second, you are lying for yourself. The person who killed Speechless wasn't Xiaobai, but you. You pushed the blame on to the unconscious Xiaobai."

It was a rare moment for Sunless to say such a long sentence. Furthermore, she had used her words to express the logic extremely clearly. Obviously, she had been pondering over the matter for some time. She might have been having mixed feelings about this for the past three days.

Liu Yu smiled wryly in his mind. He knew that Sunless was very intelligent, but he never expected her to be another 'monster' with a freak intelligence. What seemed like a perfect 'plan' had apparently been seen through by her.

Liu Yu's mouth suffused a bitter smile as he said, "Out of the two possibilities, it's likely you are more willing to believe in the latter, right?"

Sunless said, "From my point of view, the possibility of the former doesn't exist."

Sunless obviously did not believe that Shi Xiaobai would deliberately feign unconsciousness to kill Speechless.

Therefore, from her point of view, everything was Liu Yu's scheme. He had sneakily killed Speechless and then push the blame on Shi Xiaobai. Although it was unknown how Liu Yu had managed to do it, that was the only possibility Sunless had come up with.

Liu Yu sighed and said, "Benefactor Ye already has an answer in her heart. It appears like it is beyond dispute for This Penniless Priest."

Liu Yu knew Sunless's personality. Nothing he said could change her mind.

"Benefactor Ye, what do you plan on doing?"

Liu Yu looked at the area around him. At that moment, they were on a forest trail with no one around them. It was a place that few people passed, so it was apparent that Sunless had deliberately led him there.

But what was she planning to do?

Kill him? It was clearly impractical. He was no match for Sunless, but he could escape with the exit command.

Use her strength to force a confession from him? He could

similarly use the exit command to escape the calamity.

Was she planning to use her 'mouth' to exhort him to confess? Sunless was obviously not that naive.

Then, what did she want to do?

What is she trying to do?

"Keep lying."

Sunless made known her intention as she calmly said, "I wish that you do not tell anyone the truth. Do not expose a single flaw. Keep this a secret forever."

When Liu Yu heard her, he was first shocked before he quickly understood Sunless's intentions.

Sunless did not believe that Shi Xiaobai would feign unconsciousness to kill Speechless. However, she had no evidence that could reject such a possibility with a hundred percent certainty.

Hence, this possibility still existed, even if it was 1%, 0.01% or a trillionth of a percent, it was still possible.

And in order to completely stem out this possibility, the only way was to hide the truth forever.

She would rather let the true murderer escape scot-free than let Shi Xiaobai take any risk.

That was Sunless's intention.

Liu Yu was astounded but he felt respect and fear for her.

To Shi Xiaobai, Sunless was definitely the cutest girl in the world.

But to others, Sunless could become a most terrifying enemy at any time.

Her reason was too unreasonable.

"This Penniless Priest is innocent. Benefactor Shi Xiaobai is not at fault either, but This Penniless Priest cannot tell the truth for now."

Liu Yu sighed and said solemnly, "There will come a day when the truth will be revealed. Now, what This Penniless Priest can do is to first say...sorry."

Sunless glanced at Liu Yu nonchalantly before she silently turned around and walked out of the woods.

Regardless of the truth, the outcome she wanted was for Shi

Xiaobai to not be harmed.

At that moment, a familiar voice resounded in the sky and spread throughout the world.

"The person to clear the Transcendental World is born. Participant, Shi Xiaobai, has been sent to the eighth level. The remaining seven trial-takers will be forcefully expelled in thirty seconds. "

The person to clear the seventh level had been born?

Shi Xiaobai had obtained the assessment program's recognition?

How did he do it?

Sunless's eyes flashed a hint of surprise as a guess arose in her mind, but she immediately wiped it away.

Liu Yu turned to glance at the Infernal King's chamber as he sighed secretly.

Was everything finally about to end?

...

...

The world of the eighth level.

Shi Xiaobai descended with a golden beam of light. He had arrived in a world that only a few mighty figures in human history had reached.

Before the system's voice that conventionally introduced the world to the eighth level sounded, a familiar fiery voice rang in Shi Xiaobai's mind.

"Absolute Choice completed. Congratulations to the Host for obtaining a 'B-level reward'—Psionic offensive skill: Eighteen Dragon Subduing Palms."

The corners of Shi Xiaobai's mouth twitched slightly as he remained expressionless. His eyes were somewhat dull.

The way the Absolute Choice announced its completion was identical to the Absolute Choices that required him to save Little Fatso and Chen Lingcun, as well as preventing Kali from raging. It was a choice without any hints.

As he recalled, the content of the choices was:

[Choice 1: Complete the King's Mandate (B-level reward)]

[Choice 2: End the Age of Bravehearts (B-level reward)]

[Choice 3: Leave the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower (No reward)]

When the Absolute Choice suddenly appeared, it left Shi Xiaobai completely dumbfounded. He did not know what choice one and two really meant.

At that moment, he finally understood what the two extremely well-concealed choices represented.

Completing the king's mandate was to complete the Infernal King's mandate by killing the Celestial King, which also meant... killing Speechless.

Ending the Age of Bravehearts meant killing the six leaders that came to the Age of Bravehearts—the Hexstar Bravehearts, which also meant...killing Sunless, Pulp Farmer, and the rest.

These two choices were cruel for Shi Xiaobai and they were difficult to complete. And it was because of the cruelty of the two choices that there was a third choice that allowed him to avoid everything...leaving the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.

If Shi Xiaobai had known the true meaning of the three choices when they first appeared, he would not have hesitated to choose option three.

And because of that, the Absolute Choice had deliberately used 'text' to do a few layers of concealment.

Everything was in order to push the story to the present situation.

With the story developing to the present moment, the Infernal King had killed the Celestial King.

Shi Xiaobai had killed Speechless Li.

It was set in stone.

The cruelest situation!

...

Shi Xiaobai's expression was deadpan as his eyes glazed over. He had been silent for a very, very long time until the Infernal Queen slowly approached him from afar.

She smiled coquettishly as she walked with a seductive gait. Every step she took left an ice lotus blooming at her feet.

She produced lotuses with every step, but they withered nearly instantly.

In another world, Kali watched the scene with a pair of cold eyes. A blob of darkness suddenly appeared in front of her as she raised her elegant hand, prepared to extend it into the darkness.

If she wished, she could easily penetrate the darkness and snap the Infernal Queen's neck.

But eventually, her fingers came to a stop just as it was about to touch the darkness.

Her constantly changing expression eventually transformed into a hint of melancholy and a light sigh.

Kali looked at Shi Xiaobai quietly before she muttered to herself, "Sorry."

"Only your Fate is something that even the World can only watch from the side."

Chapter 489: What Did Little Pervert Experience

Shanghai City, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Main Auditorium

The auditorium was not packed like it was half a month ago. With a large majority of rookies eliminated, the various organizations had left together with their personnel. Furthermore, the eight rookies that had entered the seventh level had spent more than ten days in that world. No one knew when they would come out, so they no longer waited so patiently like before.

Other than those reporters that were adamant about their professionalism, hoping to gain first-hand news, there were only a few people left in the auditorium. They were either waiting for the rookies to come out or for there to be any changes to the trial's stone monument.

Riko, Mozzie, and Kevin were one of the few people left. They were sitting at a corner in the auditorium with tensed expressions. It was obvious that they were somewhat nervous.

They were waiting.

However, they were not waiting for news of Shi Xiaobai and Mu Yuesheng. Instead, they were waiting for something equally important.

Mozzie and Kevin looked distraught and there was a faint unease in their eyes. In a particular skyscraper in Shanghai, there was a meeting ongoing that determined their future in a certain way. It could even determine their destiny. Even though they knew that they were inferior to An Mo and Zhou Chuchu, or that there were many rookies who were more qualified than them at clinching those two spots, they still had that bit of thirst in them to participate in the collective training.

They remembered that just before leaving Steel City, Shi Xiaobai had walked right in front and spoke in high spirits, "All four will enter the top ten. Let's go, set off with This King!"

At that moment, it was treated as a joke or just fool's talk.

But now, it was suddenly possible for it to be realized.

Be it the claim made by Shi Xiaobai or the desire buried deep in their hearts, everything suddenly seemed to have a minute chance of being realized.

Even if it was just a tingling bit of hope, they hoped to grasp it. But there were countless people, countless discussions, and objections that were trying their best to open their hands and break their fingers one by one.

At the young age of thirteen, how could they have the courage to retort against the excellencies from the various organizations, the biased pressure against them or the prejudice shown to them by all the people of the country?

They did not have the courage. Even if they had, it would be useless.

The only hope they had was to rest their hopes for a miracle to happen in that meeting, right?

Riko sighed inwardly. She empathized with the pressure the two were feeling. They were indignant about giving up, but they were powerless to not give up. It was not a pressure they could withstand at that age.

She patted Kevin on the shoulder and held Mozzie's hands. She said gently, "Don't worry. My dad is one who can't stand for 'unjust' matters. He will not 'succumb'. Chairman Jiang is also well known to be 'honest and upright'. He will definitely be fair. Furthermore..."

Furthermore, I 'invited' Teacher One-Pun over. There's no fear that those bunch of bastards will be unreasonable!

Riko had hidden the last sentence in her heart as she consoled them, "Furthermore, the points the both of you received to enter the top ten were not based on luck. The progress you have made has given me a shock. It's definitely not 'clinging onto a powerhouse' as those wretches claim. Don't worry, the truth will be revealed sooner or later. Reality will eventually smack them in the face! Hmph!"

Riko's words alleviated Kevin and Mozzie's expressions slightly,

but their hands were still trembling from nervousness. Mozzie forced a smile that was uglier than a cry as she nodded.

Kevin seemed to suddenly think of something as he frowned slightly. He turned his head toward Riko and whispered, "I believe Division Minister Minamiya. If not for him, it would have been over a few meetings before. But, is doing so really appropriate? Those people that are participating in the meeting aren't people to be trifled with. I heard that 'Brute Ax Boor', Zhang Meng will be participating as well. What if..."

When Riko heard what Kevin said, she looked at him in surprise. At a moment of such great importance, he was able to consider the about others. This excellent quality was extraordinary.

Although there was a saying that 'an absent scholar for three days must be seen in a different light', isn't Kevin's transformation too much? Back at the Gaia rookie evaluation, he was the 'Blondy Narcissist' whose words revolved around the word 'genius'. Now, he had become so sensible?

Riko was very curious about the changes that had happened in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.

As she looked at Kevin's worried expression, she said with a chuckle, "Don't worry. Rather than that boor, Zhang Meng, even if Thor's Thunder Emperor were to personally be there, they would absolutely not dare to use a show of force because...a particular Uncle Baldy is watching by the side."

Kevin faltered before realizing moments later that 'Uncle Baldy' referred to the hero, One-Pun. Upon recalling the master-disciple relationship One-Pun had with Riko, he was immediately relieved. If One-Pun was there, it was true that Zhang Meng would unlikely act wantonly. However, to get One-Pun, who was busy saving victims all over the globe daily, to spend some time to pay attention to a meeting regarding the rookie collective training, Riko must have spent quite a bit of effort.

When Kevin thought of that, he looked at Riko gratefully before saying with a nod, "That's good."

After that, he lowered his head and continued worrying about his 'future'.

Riko smiled and no longer said a word. She was not an 'agony aunt' who was good at consoling others. She did not know how to straighten Mozzie and Kevin's thoughts, nor did she know how to alleviate their worries and pressure. The only thing she could do was probably stay by their side and wait for the outcome of the meeting.

Furthermore, she was also waiting for another matter.

Riko turned her head to look at the massive stone monument situated in the middle of the auditorium. There had been no changes to the text on the monument. Shi Xiaobai's name was still stuck on the stone monument's seventh level.

"All the best, Little Pervert!"

Riko thought to herself.

She never expected Shi Xiaobai to come this far, much less imagine that Shi Xiaobai could conquer eight Level Lords. He had torn through the internet in a blaze within a short period of time. He was trending on the search rankings and like the rise of a new star, he became a super rookie known by everyone.

She still remembered the first time she met Shi Xiaobai. He was just a weak ordinary person, one that had not come into contact with psionic power before. He was powerless against an F-class calamity fiend and could only struggle desperately. He had constantly tried to buy time in order to save a particular fat boy.

Furthermore, how long has it been?

It hasn't been three months!

He went from an ordinary person to a super rookie that was the focus of attention all across the country in less than three months!

If not for Riko witnessing Shi Xiaobai's state from three months ago, she would probably have laughed it off as a 'ridiculous and absurd fake story'. Even having seen it with her own eyes and being aware that none of it was a fabrication, she still found it unbelievable and unimaginable.

Riko's impression of Shi Xiaobai was a boy with eight-grader

syndrome that addressed himself as This King. He was a fool that had once told her about "joining Xiaobai's Hero Squad, so as to save the world with This King". He was a 'Little Pervert' who had taken advantage of her multiple times during the superpower evaluation...

She could not link the Shi Xiaobai in her impression to the present number one super rookie of the organization faction!

Only the Heavens knew what experiences the Little Pervert had had...

"Ring Ring!"

Just as Riko was having thoughts run wild, the cellphone she clasped tightly in her hand rang!

Chapter 490: Yama Minamiya's Bet

Riko hurriedly removed her fingers and looked at the cell phone screen. Her expression immediately stiffened when she realized that it was Yama Minamiya's call.

Mozzie and Kevin had turned their heads over instantly. When they saw Riko's expression, they guessed that it was Yama Minamiya's phone call. It was definitely the outcome from the meeting. The phone call was to tell them the result!

They immediately held their breaths in nervousness.

"Don't worry."

Riko gave the duo a gentle smile as she pressed 'Answer' and placed the phone to her ear.

Despite her allaying the duo's nervousness, Riko's heart was pounding. She was extremely nervous.

In the unlikely scenario that her dad failed in the negotiations, Mozzie and Kevin's spots in the collective training would be rescinded once the rule was changed. What were they to do?

No, it was not an unlikely scenario but a high likelihood outcome. Even if she had consoled herself, she could not help but discern the cruel reality. There was the seven major organization's joint protest, the Hero Association's secret pressure, as well as the

objections and discussions of the people. Regardless of how she thought of it, the changing of the rule was reasonably the final outcome. By sacrificing Mozzie and Kevin, as well as Gaia's interests, the rest would receive a favorable outcome. Why would the senate not do it?

If they lost the nomination for the collective training, Mozzie and Kevin would definitely be hurt, right? When the time comes, how was she to comfort them and counsel them so as to let them step out of the nadir of negative emotions?

"Hello..."

Riko picked up the call. Her voice sounded stiff. She was 'Violent Girl' as termed by Shi Xiaobai, not some agony aunt!

Riko was nervous and worried. She had already begun considering words of consolation and encouragement that she was not proficient at.

Yama Minamiya's deep and stable voice sounded into her ears.

"The meeting is over. The rule will not change. The spots are still the two children's."

It was simple and direct without any foreshadowing. Yama Minamiya had explained the outcome of the meeting in a narrative tone.

"Ah?"

Riko exclaimed. Her first thought was that she had heard wrong before being pleasantly surprised. She hurriedly asked, "Won? We won?"

"Yea, we won."

Yama Minamiya answered calmly. Against countless objections, they had won.

"Hahaha...well done!"

Riko immediately laughed out loudly. She blinked at the duo sitting beside her and gestured with her fist, indicating that they had clinched victory!

Mozzie and Kevin widened their eyes and were instantly filled with pleasant surprise and disbelief. They were wondering if they were dreaming.

Riko beamed and was enjoying an upheaval of emotions. She wheedled Yama Minamiya, "Dad, quickly tell me how we won!"

"It was all thanks to Chairman Jiang. He eventually held his ground against all dissent and objected to changing the rule. Hence, the result," answered Yama Minamiya.

"Just that?" asked Riko.

"Just that," answered Yama Minamiya.

Riko was surprised but quickly smiled again. Although it wasn't her father holding his ground against all objections, the outcome was already perfect. There was nothing to be disappointed about.

"Not bad. Grandpa Jiang no doubt lives up to his title as Azure Emperor. He's indeed a just hero to have entered the Hero Hall of Fame!"

Riko praised. Suddenly, she recalled Kevin's concerns from before. Hence, she asked in a whisper, "Right, I heard that the boor, Zhang Meng, had participated in it. Did he and those unreasonable upper echelons of the various organizations make things difficult for you?"

"No." Yama Minamiya used a simple word as a response. His voice was calm and stable.

"That's good."

Riko immediately heaved a sigh of relief. It seems Teacher One-Pun did not need to play a role in it.

"Yea, let's do it this way. When Shi Xiaobai comes out, let's hold a celebration. I'm busy. I'll be hanging up," said Yama Minamiya suddenly. While Riko was still in a daze, he had already hung up.

"Doo... Doo... Doo..."

Riko was surprised. Why did he hang up just like that? She still had many questions!

"Strange. Why does it feel like something is odd..."

Riko lowered her cell phone and knitted her brows slightly. However, when she turned her head to see the 'exciting' looks on the duo sitting beside her, she immediately stopped thinking further.

She also beamed happily.

...

...

Shanghai City, First Hospital, Emergency Ward

The moment Yama Minamiya hung up the phone, he gnashed his teeth and uttered a cry of pain.

An old and experienced orthopedic was treating his kneecaps that had been shattered into pulp. Although he had been given a tiny amount of anesthesia, it was still extremely painful.

To think that Yama Minamiya was able to bear the pain through the phone call. He had feigned such a calm and stable voice.

Even the old doctor could not help but look up to steal a few glances at him.

One-Pun was standing by the side as he sighed. He said, "Couldn't you make the phone call after the treatment?"

Yama Minamiya ground his teeth and said with a trembling voice, "Those children were waiting anxiously for it...Ah...Ss..."

One-Pun shook his head helplessly as he suddenly said with a serious expression, "Those two children might not be able to keep up with the collective training."

Previously, under Riko's incessant pestering, One-Pun had taken some time out of his busy schedule to guide Shi Xiaobai, Mu Yuesheng, Kevin, and Mozzie for a short period of time.

Although it wasn't a long period of time, One-Pun had a basic level of judgment of the four.

From his point of view, Wen Hezheng had a good attitude but her natural endowment was too poor.

Kevin was somewhat talented, but he was still greatly inferior to

a real genius. Furthermore, he was an arrogant person and biased in his thoughts. Certain thoughts were ridiculous but he did not heed the advice of others. He was the person One-Pun thought the lowest of among the four.

Therefore, although he had accepted Riko's request to appear at the meeting, it was only to ensure that Yama Minamiya was fine. He was not concerned with the outcome of the meeting but he was surprised to find Yama Minamiya working so hard.

From his point of view, even if the spots of the collective training were held by the two children, it was very difficult for the two of them to keep up with the rest. They might very quickly be eliminated or abandoned.

When Yama Minamiya heard that, his expression immediately turned solemn. He looked at One-Pun and said sternly, "Those two children are completely different from how they were in the past. I believe that the present them will not disappoint anyone!"

One-Pun faltered slightly as he pondered for a moment before saying, "Then it seems I'm the one that has been superficial..."

Yama Minamiya said with a grin, "No, if not for me witnessing it with my own eyes, I would never believe that a single trial can result in such a tremendous change in the two children. Do not belittle the potential of young people!"

One-Pun nodded and said approvingly, "At least that child, Shi Xiaobai, has completely exceeded my expectations."

"Heh, that child is a rookie of my Annihilation division!"

Yama Minamiya grinned. He looked rather proud when he suddenly thought of something. He asked softly, "Speaking of which, One-Pun, do you think that child, Shi Xiaobai will have a chance at reaching the eighth level?"

One-Pun faltered as he fell into a moment of silence. He said, "Back then, I was young and rash. I entered the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm."

"At the fifth level, I had taken the initiative to search for the Level Lord and ended up being wrecked and was forced to use the exit command. Therefore, I do not have much concept of the difficulty of the seventh level. However, I know very clearly how strong a Level Lord is. They at least have the strength at the mid-stages of the Psionic Might Realm. To defeat them at the Psionic Mortal Realm would require shocking and unprecedented talent!"

"Perhaps only amazing figures like Overlord Ji Feng, Sword Immortal Xu Taibai, Conquest King Chu Tianqi are able to accomplish it. As for Shi Xiaobai being able to conquer eight Level Lords, it proves that he, at the very least, he possesses a shocking talent regardless of how he did it! With such talent, there is a very high possibility of him clearing the seventh level."

"But the Hero King, a person who history deems as the most likely person to reach the eighth or even ninth level for the first

time, had stopped at the seventh level for some unknown reason. It shows that talent and strength might not be sufficient to clear the seventh level. Therefore...I cannot be sure that Shi Xiaobai would be able to reach the eighth level."

One-Pun gave a thorough analysis but eventually gave a vague answer which supported both possibilities. Yama Minamiya could not help but rolled his eyes as he said in a fuming laugh, "I believe Shi Xiaobai has a hundred percent chance of reaching the eighth level, and even the ninth! Do you dare to make a bet with me!?"

One-Pun was surprised. He never expected Yama Minamiya to have such blind confidence in Shi Xiaobai. After a moment of hesitation, he asked, "What do we bet on?"

A 'strange' smile suffused his lips as he said softly, "If Little Shi were to reach the eighth level, you have to..."

Chapter 491: The Frog In The Well That Looks Forward To The Mighty Eagle

Auditorium

When Riko saw that Mozzie and Kevin's expression looked extremely 'interesting', she was exhilarated but also filled with disbelief. Mozzie had even pinched herself in her delicate cheeks, afraid that she was dreaming.

Riko smiled. She understood their euphoria.

She too never expected for the miracle to truly happen. The victor of the meeting was Gaia who had stood alone!

She had been considering the methods to console and counsel Mozzie and Kevin after the failure of the meeting, but she never expected that they won at the meeting!

"We won! It's not a dream. The spots to the collective training are yours. They're still yours!"

Riko announced the result in an affirmed manner to the duo who still found it unbelievable.

Kevin looked up suddenly as he clenched his constantly shaking right hand. His mouth opened up slightly. He had planned to roar and release the nervousness in him but he swallowed it back down

when he realized that it wasn't the right place to do so.

They won!

He could participate in the collective training!

Heavens, is this really a dream or not?

"Oh yeah! It's awesome. I can fight alongside Lord Shi Xiaobai again." Mozzie held Riko's hands as she jumped and danced joyfully. A brilliant smile beamed on her face. Compared to Kevin, it was easier for her to accept matters with such great impact. After all, she was a fat chick that had no ulterior motives or will. Compared to others, she had a heart that was free from care or worries.

Kevin was immediately infected when he saw Mozzie's cute jumping and cheering. His somewhat stiff face gradually suffused a smile.

He had once felt disappointed and hurt by everyone's mockery and doubts. He had even nearly lost the courage to vie for it. He began to have cowardly thoughts of giving up. But at that moment, Yama Minamiya had patted him firmly on the shoulders and said, "Child, the collective training spot is rightfully yours. The present you absolutely has the qualifications to enjoy this privilege. You also absolutely have the ability to shoulder this obligation. So do not be discouraged or dejected. Be brave and fight for it. Bravely prove yourself!"

After that, Yama Minamiya had stood forward in front of them. He bore the brunt of everyone in order to fight for their collective training spots. It made him reignite his hopes of participating in the collective training!

He did not give up nor could he give up. It was because even though he felt despair from trying to win the nomination, he absolutely did not wish to disappoint the great division minister who stood in front of him.

Words could not fully express his gratitude towards Division Minister Minamiya. At that moment, he felt from the bottom of his heart how honored he was to be a member of Gaia.

Kevin gradually lifted his head. He felt his eyes turn sour. If he did not lift his head, it was as if something strange would drip down his eyes. He had once thought himself as a genius but he later discovered that he was only a frog in a well. After seeing the soaring mighty eagle, he was jolted awake.

It was not easy for him to climb out the well to discover that the world was so vast and that the sky was so infinite. He wanted to go far and soar high but he was shocked to realize that he was surrounded by marsh and that he did not have a pair of wings behind him.

A boat had fallen from the sky one day in front of him.

Countless toads were eyeing that boat and there were countless swans that believed that he was not worthy. They had mocked

him, scolded him and 'advised' him to scram back to the bottom of his well.

The world in the well was not necessarily bad. At least it was warmer than the cold marsh.

There had been that instant when he had such a thought.

But finally, he decided to bid a final farewell to that desolate well.

It was partly because the marsh would bloom untainted lotus flowers. Also, he wanted to see and he had the desire, an insatiable desire to see with his own eyes, even if it were just a glance, the scenery as seen from that mighty eagle.

"Eh? You're crying. Kevin, you are crying!" exclaimed Mozzie, who was free from care or worries, while she suddenly pointed at Kevin.

Kevin blushed immediately as he raised his hand to wipe the corners of his eyes. He hurriedly said, "It's only sand in my eyes!"

Mozzie smacked her lips and said, "It's just tears of joy! Why do you need to blame the sand!?"

The blushing on Kevin's face intensified as he opened his mouth in the hopes of 'giving an explanation'.

Suddenly, with the sound of a ping, an exclamation was heard suddenly. It gave Kevin a fright.

"Shi...Shi Xiaobai has entered...entered the eighth...eighth level!" A suited reporter who had been sitting in front of the stone monument had suddenly leaped up from his stool. He had cried out in excitement while staring at the trial tower's stone monument.

Riko and company were first shocked before they reacted. They hurriedly turned to look at the trial stone monument in the middle of the auditorium.

They saw the three words, 'Shi Xiaobai', on the stone monument. It was covered with a layer of gold and was shining resplendently. It was surprisingly located at the stone monument's eighth level!

"Hea...Heav...Heavens!" Kevin drew a gasp. He was completely flabbergasted. If it was possible, he wished he could flood a series of thumbs-up in the form of '666' in the novel's comment section.

"Too cool! Lord Shi Xiaobai is just too cool!" Mozzie leaped up in joy. She was even happier than before when she heard that she had obtained the nomination for the collective training.

Riko gulped as she stared at the trial tower's stone monument in a dumbfounded manner. From the rookie evaluation test, the little pervert had continuously created all sorts of miracles. He had been able to give her all sorts of pleasant surprises and inundated her with shock. She never expected that...it was even more exaggerated this time. He had reached the eighth level that only

three historical figures had ever reached.

The suited reporter glanced at Riko and company and realized that he had spoken too loudly. He hurriedly covered his mouth, but after he confirmed that Riko and company were not reporters as well, he heaved a sigh of relief.

What a relief! Thankfully they were not competitors or this shocking news would have been 'shared' with others.

The suited reporter recalled the domination the experienced reporters had on him. He could not calm down even after a long time. It was all the fault of his loose tongue. He was easily tricked into providing information to others. Every time he found a piece of important news, he would be tricked and leaked the news. Therefore, over all these years, it was not easy for him to become the exclusive news agency to break the shocking news. Eventually, he would always submit to his President exclusive news that was not popular, to the reprimanding of his boss.

Hence, he had to guard his piece of news regardless of anything. No, it should be his mouth.

He surveyed his surroundings and confirmed that his peers were resting. He was elated that he was the first reporter to receive the news. He hurriedly took out his cell phone and made a call!

Chapter 492: Breaking! A Particular Village Leader Repeatedly Climbs A Tree To Find Chickens!

He surveyed his surroundings and confirmed that his peers were resting. He was elated that he was the first reporter to receive the news. He hurriedly took out his cell phone and made a call!

"Hey, President. About that...Shi...Shi Xiaobai has entered...the eighth...the eighth level!" said the suited reporter nervously and excitedly while holding his cellphone in one hand as he repressed his voice.

"What did you say? You fool, can't you speak louder! Did you find some retarded news again? How many times have I told you? You should do things in a prim and proper manner, clean and clear. You better watch it if you find trash news like 'Hen Climbs a Tree' or 'Sow Enters the Sea'. Hmph!"

The president yelled angrily. In fact, he was rather displeased with the suited reporter. The reporter had no looks or powers. Every day, he would find some unpopular piece of news. If not for his services rendered to the news agency for so many years, he would have long been fired.

The suited reporter frowned as he turned his head to the side. He placed the cell phone further away from his ear.

To him, the president was lacking in everything. He was lacking

in build, heart and tolerance. However, there was one thing that was not lacking in any way. His voice was louder than everyone else.

Hmph! Do you think it's easy for a 'hen to climb a tree' or a 'sow to enter the sea'? How can you call that trash news? What lacking foresight you have.

No matter how angry the suited reporter was, he did not forget the original goal for making the phone call. He immediately composed himself and said with a smile by raising his voice,

"President, Shi Xiaobai has reached the eighth level of the trial tower!"

"Ah!? Shi Xiaobai has finally reached the eighth level!"

The president had heard it clearly this time. He had exclaimed first before falling silent for several seconds. Suddenly, he praised with a cheerful tone, "Not bad. Good job. As expected of our Donglin News Agency's future star. Keep up the good work and continue working hard. Your 'hopes and dreams' will be fulfilled and there will be no lack of promotions and pay increments!"

After the president said those words, he smiled and said to the busy editor-in-chief in the office, "Editor Liu, that shall be headlines of the evening paper tonight. Try to get it done in the shortest possible time. This is first-hand news. Haha. There definitely won't be any news more explosive than this."

Editor-in-Chief Liu gave a strong nod as he looked excited. Donglin News Agency was just a tiny news publication agency. The field reporters were mostly the bottom of the barrel after they were eliminated by other news agencies. The news that they submitted to him made him want to kill himself. Every time, he had to showcase his 'literary talent' and come up with some 'philosophical' title, for example, "Breaking! A Particular Village Leader Repeatedly Climbs a Tree to Find Chickens!" or "Could it be that only beauties can enter the sea? No! Watch as a sow bravely dives into the sea!"

But unfortunately, the news itself was considered unsought. Even a 'philosophical' title could not save it. Instead, it earned itself as the infamy as 'shameless clickbait title'.

And today, was Donglin News Agency welcoming in a new era?

Shi Xiaobai enters the eighth level—It was a matter of national attention. It was a news that could even shock the entire world!

If they could be able to publish the piece of news first, Donglin News Agency's reputation would benefit from the situation as well!

Without any delay, Editor-in-Chief Liu began to rapidly type on his keyboard while writing the article with verve and flair.

Outside the auditorium, the suited reporter had swung his fists. The other reporters ate their meals at regular times or they would return home to sleep when they were tired. As for him, in order to await the piece of news, he had eaten bread and snacks daily. He

even laid out a mat to sleep in the auditorium at night. And indeed, just as Providence helps those who help themselves, his hard work had not been in vain!

Yeah! A celebration is in order tonight!

The suited reporter thought to himself as he began to suffer a dilemma. "Should I go to a brothel or a massage parlor?"

At that moment, there was a brouhaha from the exit to the trial tower. Following that, several medical personnel that was stationed nearby rushed to the tower's exit.

The suited reporter watched in a daze at the strange actions of those people. Before he realized that something odd had happened, he had a vague feeling that another piece of breaking news had happened.

He quickly ran over and held a female doctor back and asked loudly, "What happened!?"

The female doctor had panic written all over her face. In her nervousness, she glanced at the reporter and said with a trembling voice, "Spee...Speechless...Li is dead!"

"What? Speechless Li is dead!?" The suited reporter did not notice that he had not hung up his phone call and he had accidentally yelled into the phone.

"Beep! Spee...Speechless Li is dead!?" The president was still drinking his coffee leisurely. He had been fantasizing the scene of his newspapers being snatched up by every Chinese citizen. With the sudden yell, he nearly spat out his coffee from shock.

When the reporter heard the president's voice, he realized that the call was still connected. Taking a deep breath, he tried his best to calm down and looked at the exit of the trial tower calmly. By putting together the abrupt situation, the panic of the medical personnel, the horror of the female doctor, and the commotion at the trial tower's exit, it was very likely that Speechless Li had died. The impact this news was likely more shocking than Shi Xiaobai's entry into the eighth level. After all, Speechless Li came from a mysterious large family clan. He was a descendant of the Li family!

"President, this piece of news shouldn't be wrong. Speechless Li has really died!" said the suited reporter.

"Great. Well done!" The president was extremely shocked. He did not have the time or effort to praise the suited reporter for his 'extraordinary' performance.

At that moment, Editor-in-Chief Liu, who was preparing the headline article asked, "President, is there a need...to change the headline?"

"Of course it needs changing! The person who died is Speechless Li!"

The president was first to bellow before he realized that

something wasn't right. He said softly, "That's not right. Shi Xiaobai has reached the eighth level. That is the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower's eighth level. There have only been three people in history that have succeeded doing so. This is a huge matter that will go down in the history books. Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai is recently one of the most popular people trending on search engines. This matter might not lose to Speechless Li's death in terms of explosiveness."

Editor-in-Chief Liu wiped the sweat of his brow as he asked, "Then what should be done? There can only be one headline..."

The president wrinkled his brows as he began weighing the importance of the two pieces of news. Immediately, he had a headache and found it difficult to compare. In frustration, he shouted at Editor-in-Chief Liu, "You are the editor-in-chief. You do it as you see fit!"

Editor-in-Chief Liu was left helpless. This was the first time he realized that having too many pieces of useful news had its pains too!

Sigh, being an editor-in-chief sure was an arduous profession. It's so much better being a president.

Editor-in-Chief Liu grumbled inwardly but he began racking his brains, as usual, to resolve the problem that the news agency's president had given him.

There were two big pieces of news but there was only one

headline.

Who should be the headline?

Suddenly, Editor-in-Chief Liu's eyes lit up.

"Damn I'm stupid! Can't I just merge the two articles into one!?"

At that moment, Editor-in-Chief Liu felt that he was truly intelligent!

He chuckled and with a flash of brilliance, began tapping his keyboard. He wrote the title for the headlines for the evening papers.

"Shi Xiaobai ascends to the eighth level. Speechless Li descends to hell. The number one junior has changed!"

Chapter 493: Bunny Cao And Handsome Chen

Beijing City, Peihua University's Dragon Summer Stadium

The academic tournament that had lasted nearly a month had finally ended half an hour ago. Although the contestants at the stadium had long left the scene, the audience outside remained without any intention to leave. They were still immersed in the exciting final round. The blood in their bodies was stirring with no way for them to calm down.

"How astonishing. I completely can't believe that it was a battle among Psionic Mortal Realm rookies. Probably ranked tournaments at the Psionic Soul Realm, or even Psionic Might Realm, aren't as exaggerated as this, right? I almost slunk away after being frightened by Bunny Cao. How can that girl's magic be so terrifying? I had a nagging feeling that she could tear apart the stadium at any time. However, that boy called Chen...Chen-something was also rather impressive. He seemed invulnerable and unmovable. He resembled a humanoid monster. He was engaged in a stalemate with Bunny Cao for more than ten minutes. If not for Bunny Cao's mental energy turning 'perversely' strong, allowing her to constantly cast magic without any signs of exhaustion for more than ten minutes and then use some unknown trump card, the outcome would have been impossible to predict!"

A middle-aged man exclaimed with praises in the audience stands. He had an excited expression as he reminisced the stunning match half an hour ago. The stadium grounds in front of him that was filled with marks of the aftermath seemed to indicate how

astounding the battle had been.

"Pui! Pui! Pui! The outcome has not been decided. Didn't you see Bunny Cao looking relaxed during the match? She was casting spells in an unhurried manner. Furthermore, she was eating meat...meat buns in satisfaction at the same time? That's clearly because her opponent was too weak so she had been perfunctory with him."

"She just did not wish to show her true strength too early. It was to create certain highlights in the match. She had the interests of the audience in mind! Bunny Cao had only turned slightly serious eventually. That adonis, Chen...Chen-something did not even have the ability to put up a resistance!"

A freckled boy sitting beside the man retorted in disagreement.

As a university rookie that had paid attention to the academic tournament selection, she had long had a gauge. From the beginning, he was certain that Bunny Cao, who was ranked on par with Speechless Li as the 'North Cao, South Li' duo, would clinch final victory. It was even possible that it would have been a wipe out in every match, but he never expected the final match to last more than ten minutes. Her opponent was an adonis that was completely unknown previously.

And what he found completely unacceptable was that many people like the middle-aged man beside him had equaled the adonis with Bunny Cao!

From a long time ago, Bunny Cao was a 'female goddess' in his heart when he was still in middle school despite lacking in several aspects. Bunny Cao could only be considered to have delicate features and she had a terrible fashion sense by always wearing long pants under a short skirt. Although she had lived on campus for three years, she would often get lost but choose to travel afar. Recently, she had become obsessed with meat buns for some unknown reason. Despite her having an enviable S-class superpower and Mind Expanse, she was infatuated by magic. She only studied magic despite it being an era filled with Psionites and Espers. She became a proud oddity. Well...the more she was described, the more like the word 'nut' had to be added to the words 'female goddess'.

In short, the freckled boy adored Bunny Cao because she was truly strong. She was so strong that she made her peers question life. Even Speechless Li, who was ranked alongside her as 'North Cao South Li', was absolutely not stronger than Bunny Cao from his point of view. Hence, although Bunny Cao wasn't pretty and she had a poor sense of fashion, odd personality and various flaws, it did not stop her from becoming the freckled boy's 'female goddess' because her breasts were really big. Uh, that's not right. It's because she was really very strong.

Ahem. Anyways, the freckled boy was extremely displeased that the adonis, who looked as though he led a substantial life, could be comparable to his female goddess, Bunny Cao.

However, the moment he said those words, a female classmate sitting beside him could not remain happy.

"Bullshit! Bunny Cao looked more like she was the one using all her strength, alright!? The stadium was almost torn down by her, but Chen...Chen...Handsome Chen was completely unscathed. If not for Bunny Cao using some technique at the end, causing Handsome Chen to run out of the arena for some baffling reason, it would be hard to determine who was the victor! Hmph! Handsome Chen must have felt that it was meaningless to drag it out any further so he had deliberately lost!"

The girl glared angrily at the freckled boy. After that, she took out her cell phone to check the information of the final match. She muttered to herself, "Strange. Handsome Chen is so handsome, but why can't I remember his name...Oh, there you have it. Chen Lingcun. Oh, I must remember my male god's name this time!"

The freckled boy stared at his female classmate dumbfoundedly as he said with a stiff smile, "Lingling, aren't you a fan of Bunny Cao?"

The freckled boy was stupefied. The female classmate sitting beside him was someone he had been constantly trying to pursue. As the both of them were Bunny Cao's fans, it was not easy for him to obtain two tickets. He had hoped to find an opportunity to confess to her in the euphoria after the end of the tournament. Why did it suddenly become like this?

"Pui! Don't call me Lingling. Are we that close?"

The girl glared coldly at the freckled male.

The freckled boy opened his mouth, about to say something when his female classmate scoffed coldly and said, "Don't speak to me. It's affecting my memorization of my male god's name!"

As the girl spoke, she coldly turned her head away, leaving behind an arrogant back view of her head.

The freckled boy felt extremely aggrieved as he said sulkily, "Isn't he just an adonis?"

The girl immediately turned around and gave him a cold glare of 'never talk to me in the future'.

The freckled boy sulkily shut his mouth.

By the side, a middle-aged man tried his best to hold back his laughter. Having almost failed, he shook his head and reflected,

"This is what youth (a loser) is!"

...

...

The sun was hottest at high noon. Most of the audience in the audience stands were sweating buckets. However, few left the stadium because there was not only a prize presentation ceremony after the final match, there was also the collective training

expedition ceremony that many looked forward to.

Although the officials had spent an additional half an hour to finish up their preparations as per normal, the audience did not lose their passion. The rousing atmosphere was still as feverish as ever. It was partly because they were still reminiscing the lingering charm of the intense battle from before. And the other reason was that the audience was looking forward to the gathering of the ten rookies who would participate in the collective training as academic faction representatives.

The audience discussed the final match, the ten rookies, or the male gods or female goddesses in their heart to kill time.

"Dang! Dang! Dang!"

Suddenly, a rousing tune sounded and was spread throughout the stadium through the broadcasting system.

A yellow-browed elder walked out of a passageway. As he strode to the center of the grounds, everyone stopped their discussions and cast their gazes at the old man.

He was Peihua University's Principal Zhen, and also one of the leaders of the academic faction. He was considered one of the most esteemed figures in China.

The audience involuntarily shut their mouths and even held their breaths in a daze. The yellow-browed elder was hunched and

his footsteps were hobbled. However, every step he took to the middle of the stadium appeared as though a hundred-meter-tall behemoth was striding through the lands in everyone's eyes.

A repressive feeling that surged in every direction suddenly arose spontaneously. It made their breathing turn something to be taken with great care.

Only when the yellow-browed elder came to a stop did the strange sense of pressure disappear abruptly.

The elder stood alone in the middle of the stadium. He had a benevolent and kind countenance as his eyes squinted into a smile. He looked harmless.

However, not a single one of the audience dared to break the silence at that moment.

"Da Da Da..."

At that moment, a series of footsteps could be heard from the passageway. It sounded extremely clear in the dead silence.

As the audience turned toward the source of the noise, they saw the boys and girls that they had been eager to see walking out of the passageway.

The person right in front was an extremely handsome silver-haired youth. His hands were in his pockets as a faint smile

suffused on his lips. Under the illumination of the sun, it made people involuntarily exclaim—What an adonis!

"Ah Ah Ah Ah~"

The boy-crazy girls in the audience stands had already collectively reached an orgasm.

Chapter 494: This Child Is A Dragon

As the fanatics were roaring with 'Ah's for the silver-haired youth in waves, an old man threw up his hands and began 'Ah'-ing on a concealed platform in the corner of a stadium as well.

The old man was obviously extraordinary. He was more than two meters tall and had an imposing build. He wore a white short-sleeved t-shirt and blue colorful beach pants. He even wore flowery slippers at his feet in a bid to look 'fashionable'. It did not seem to match his age that filled his head with white hair. Although he was wearing shades, his facial features were cut sharp. One could still see inklings of an extraordinary handsomeness in his youth. However, on the left side of his face, there was an ugly blade scar that went from his eye down to his mouth, making him look rather threatening. However, the most noticeable feature was the scarlet-red goatee he had!

The red-goateed old man held a cigar in one hand while he waved his other hand high in the sky. With a deep baritone voice, he was going 'Ah'. It sounded dissonant amid the orgasmic screams of the boy-crazy girls. Thankfully, the platform was rather far off, so few people saw such a 'wincing' scene.

Standing beside the red-goateed old man was a middle-aged man. He had turned his head away, and hung an embarrassed expression of 'I do not know this old man' that his shades could not hide. He had a tidy, crew haircut that resembled a safety helmet. He was a standard height of 1.7 meters and he wore a standard suit. However, he looked like a child when standing beside the mighty and gargantuan red-goateed elder.

The middle-aged man in shades very cleverly hid behind the red-goateed old man in a bid to avoid the constant 'piercing' stares from the nearby audience stand.

Only when the fanatics stopped their screaming did the old man cease. The man in shades heaved a sigh of relief and thought to himself.

This great man that could be said to control all of China was indeed extraordinary. Compared to all the fancy schlocks, he was so much 'fancier' and 'cheaper' that it rendered people speechless.

The old man with the red goatee turned around and asked, "Little Li, what's the name of this young man that is as handsome as I was back in my day?"

The man in shades hurriedly 'tumbled' out from behind the old man and gave him a standard military salute and said loudly, "...Li reporting, Sir!" However, his first few words were drowned by the tumultuous roaring from the crowds.

"Fuck your reporting!"

The red-goateed old man hurriedly cut him off and gestured for silence. He looked at the audience stands in a guilty conscience manner before turning back at the man in shades and said solemnly, "Punk, are you trying to expose my identity? Remember, we have to keep a low profile in public. Don't call me sir."

"Yes..."

The man shrunk his neck back and answered softly. He thought to himself, "Sir, so you actually know that there's a need to keep a low profile. Isn't that act of yours from before 'attention seeking'?"

The man with shades complained inwardly but he did not reveal it on his face. Instead, he replied solemnly, "Si...Your Excellency, this silver-haired youth that is as handsome as you when you were young is called Chen...Chen...Chen..."

The man wiped the sweat from his brow and took out a stack of information without a trace. He took a nonchalant glance and with a cough, he said, "Your Excellency, this youth's name is Chen Lingcun!"

The red-goateed man nodded. He had already turned to look at the silver-haired youth, so he had not noticed the man's tiny gesture. He said softly, "Read the information you have obtained."

"Yes, S..."

The man in shades hurriedly curbed his habitual address but the price he paid was him nearly biting his tongue off. As he endured the pain, he looked at the information in his hands and tried to 'recite' it with emotion.

"According to our investigations, Chen Lingcun was not a rookie

of the academic faction. He had pulled strings to enroll in an autonomous university just after news of the two-faction collective training was announced; hence, he obtained the qualification to enter the selection tournament. He is quite a mysterious person."

"His exact identity is unknown but compared to comparison analysis, there was a rookie in Gaia's Annihilation division this year named Chen Lingcun as well. He had coincidentally disappeared, so there is a very high probability that the two of them are the same person. The Chen Lingcun in Gaia had a strength that was at the bottom of the barrel. He had a very insignificant presence and almost no rookie in the division has any impression of him."

"If not for detailed records, his disappearance might have been no different from him evaporating into thin air. And this quality is something that matches perfectly with the Chen Lingcun in the selection. However, the difference in strength between the two Chen Lingcuns is like heaven and earth."

"At the selection tournament, other than having a hard time battling Bunny Cao, he had held back in every other match. He did not use his full strength even while battling Mù Yaotian. His offensive skill and movement technique are somewhat special. It does not seem to be in the scope of the psionic cultivation system. A highlight is his immense strength. It's like he has the strength of a dragon or an elephant."

"And the most outstanding thing is his body composition. It's completely invulnerable. His skin is as hard as steel and psionic power can't harm him at all. Ancient internal strength leaves him

unscathed. Even mid-grade magic can't hurt him much. He has an extremely high resistance against the seven elements—Water, Fire, Wind, Earth, Lightning, Light, and Darkness."

"According to certain estimations, Chen Lingcun might have cultivated a long-lost body tempering technique. Furthermore, his level is extremely high. On the surface, he is at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, but based on his physical constitution, he probably has the strength to fight an expert at the Psionic Soul Realm. It's like he's a humanoid monster."

After hearing the introduction, the old man looked at the silver-haired youth with a ruminative look. He habitually stroked his funny looking goatee with his right hand. Suddenly, the corners of his mouth curved up as a glint seemed to suffuse from under his shades. He said with great certainty, "This child is a dragon."

"Ah?" The man in shades exclaimed. The information did not mention anything about that.

Wait, what did his superior say...dragon?

Dragons were rare and they bordered on being legends. Yet, his superior had said that the silver-haired youth was a dragon. Furthermore, it was a dragon that was in human form?

But with his judgment, it was absolutely impossible for him to make a mistake.

In that case...

The man's expression changed as he could not help but ask, "Sir, should this matter be..."

As the man in shades nearly blurted out the old man's identity due to his shock, he immediately shut up when he received the red-goatee elder's warning stare.

The red-goateed elder sucked at the cigar in his mouth before spewing a cloud of smoke. With a chuckle, he said, "So what if he's a dragon? Isn't he a citizen of China? Pretend that you didn't hear this. In the event this child becomes an evil dragon, I'll slay him personally."

"Yes!"

His subordinate nodded. The only person in China who could so easily mention the slaying of dragons was probably this old man, right?

"Talk about the next one."

In what way did the elder who was sucking at the cigar in delight and spewing clouds of smoke look like he had the capability of slaying a dragon?

The man with shades hurriedly looked down at the stadium. The silver-haired youth had been the first to enter the stadium. A host

who came moments later had simply introduced the battle results of the silver-haired youth. Only when the introduction was over did the second rookie walk out of the passageway.

It was a muscular youth with red hair and intricate features. He strode into the stadium with eyes blazing. He was staring intently at the silver-haired youth with eyes burning with a fighting spirit that could not be concealed.

Quite a number of the audience in the stands were cheering for the red-haired youth.

However, he turned a deaf ear to it. Neither did he lift his arms to acknowledge the audience. Instead, he walked straight in front of Chen Lingcun and said solemnly, "After this is over, can you fight another match with me?"

The red-haired youth's voice happened to transmit through the host's microphone, leaving the audience stunned before they broke out into another uproar!

The red-haired youth was regretfully defeated by the silver-haired youth in the semi-finals. It was unexpected that he had regained his fighting spirit so quickly to issue another challenge!

People in the audience who were familiar with the red-haired youth shook their heads as they laughed involuntarily. They revealed an 'as expected' expression.

The man with shades looked at the red-haired youth and similarly a smile suffused on his face. He said to the red-goateed man, "Your Excellency, this red-haired youth is Mù Yaotian, a scion of the famous Mù Global Enterprise that is based in Shanghai. He is also this selection's second-runner up. He is currently studying in Haidan University and has the title of Haidan University's rookie king."

"Other than that, he has a rather interesting nickname as well—"Challenger Mù". According to our investigations, Mù Yaotian has matriculated for less than three months, but he has already challenged third-years and fourth-years more than ten times. His opponents are basically exponents at the Psionic Soul Realm. There were even some Psionic Might Realm experts. He already possesses the strength that is capable of fighting an exponent at the Psionic Soul Realm but he has been tragically defeated under the hands of Psionic Might Realm experts."

"But interesting enough, despite the numerous failures in battles, Mù Yaotian has never shrunk back. After tending his wounds for two days, he would come out again to challenge others the moment he recovers. He eventually forced his seniors at the Psionic Might Realm to collectively avoid him. They would turn and run whenever they see him."

The old man held onto a cigar and spewed out a thick cloud of smoke while hanging a smile on his face. It was unknown if he was appreciating the excellent taste of the cigar or if he found the red-haired youth's personality interesting.

As the man in shades looked at the red-goateed man's expression,

he smiled and continued, "Mù Yaotian's talent and strength stand out when compared to other rookies. As he has awakened the offensive A-class superpower, 'Command Over Sand'; hence his cultivation path is focused on his superpower, while the psionic cultivation system is a secondary focus."

"He's considered a Psyker that leans towards superpowers. His superpower development has already reached the second stage. There are few people in the Psionic Mortal Realm that are his match. As a 'Challenge Fanatic', Mù Yaotian has no lack of competitions he has participated in at a young age."

"He is often the champion of small provincial competitions but once it becomes a national competition, he would often encounter Bunny Cao or Speechless Li. Either he gets eliminated early or he would last all the way to the final round but become first runner-up. Even at this year's Beijing secondary school exams, he had oddly ranked second as well. Therefore, he is publicly recognized as 'Runner-up Infinity'."

"At this tournament selection, if not for Chen Lingcun's sudden appearance, Mù Yaotian might have probably clinched first runner-up. It feels as though he was born in the wrong era. However, the more setback Mù Yaotian encounters, the braver he becomes. He has no inkling of Runner-up Infinity. He shows no jealousy, fear, or respect for opponents that have defeated him. Instead, he would challenge them again and again."

While the introduction was undergoing, Mù Yaotian had pleaded for a battle, but the silver-haired youth appeared lazy to bother with him. Even the host was standing by the side, awkwardly

introducing Mù Yaotian's battle results.

The old man nodded slightly and said, "Not bad. He's a good seedling."

After the host finished introducing Mù Yaotian, the next rookie walked out of the passageway. Immediately, a deafening roar sounded from the audience stands.

"Princess Xiao Xiao!"

Chapter 495: I Have A 'Vajra Body Defending' Book

The person who entered to the cheers of the audience was a beautiful girl. She wore a pure white long-sleeved blouse, a blue plaited skirt, white knee socks and black boots. It was a simple get-up but it fully showcased her skin that rivaled snow and her exquisite disposition. Pink long hair draped across her shoulders as a calm and collected smile hung on the corners of her lips. She was beautiful and graceful, demure and elegant, tall and slim, just like a noble princess.

The eyes of the old man with a red goatee suddenly lit up as he held his goatee with his right hand. He said with a chuckle, "Isn't this Xiao Lingtian's granddaughter? She's already so grown up after not seeing her for a few years. Tell me, with that ugly mug of Xiao Lingtian, how is he able to have such a lovely granddaughter?"

The man in shades was slightly surprised but he immediately responded with an awkward smile, "Maybe it's because his wife has better genes?"

The red-goateed old man's eyes glared before saying with a hearty laugh, "No wonder!"

The man in shades secretly wiped the cold sweat off his brows. Although Xiao Lingtian was a businessman, his wealth could rival a country's. He had a lot of say and power in China. Only the old man with the red goatee had the status to dare speak sarcastically of Xiao Lingtian in such an unbridled manner.

The man in shades lowered his head and looked at the information in his hand. He hurriedly switched topics by saying, "Xiao Xiao, Battle Arena Corporation's Chairman, Xiao Lingtian's only granddaughter. Her parents died in an accident a few years ago; hence, she's the only legal successor to the Battle Arena Corporation. Due to her outstanding good looks, impressive family background, and the excellent result of being third in Beijing's entrance exams, she has been labeled 'Princess Xiao Xiao' by the people."

"A few months ago, Princess Xiao Xiao had participated in a private virtual game competition organized by the Battle Arena Corporation. She encountered the assault of the Church of Virtuality's Arch-Cardinal and had nearly gotten into trouble. She luckily survived it and from then onwards, began cultivating arduously. Her strength has improved significantly and in two short months, she had grasped the basics of 'Azure Descendence Bow'. Furthermore, her superpower greatly augments her archery skills. Her strength is rather imposing and she had successfully reached the semi-finals during the tournament selection. Although she was defeated by Bunny Cao in the semi-finals, her performance was still considered astounding."

The red-goateed old man nodded slightly and extolled, "To be able to pull the Azure Descendence Bow at this young age isn't simple."

The host was equally not stingy with his praise of Xiao Xiao when he introduced her. This "Nation's Princess" had always been popular in China. She was both outstanding and hardworking, so although she was just a freshman, she had already the vague

indications of being a 'celebrity hero'.

As the audience listened to the host's introduction with their eyes trained on Xiao Xiao, a fat, bald monk began walking slowly out of the passageway.

This fat monk, who did not 'follow the rules', was of a large and plump build. He had a round face, bald head, and big ears. His eyes were narrowed into a thin line as a smile beamed on his face. He was like the laughing buddha, Maitreya Buddha that gave off an inspiring vibe. The fat monk was wearing a martial outfit. Behind the martial outfit wrote a large "Zhu". It clearly did not match his body as his rotund tummy was exposed for everyone to see. The layers of cellulite would tremble with every step he took, making it look rather humorous.

The host's face turned ashen as he quickly ended his praise for Xiao Xiao and turned his head to introduce the fat monk that walked in.

"Interesting."

The red-goateed old man bit on his cigar and began looking at the fat monk with a ruminative look. He asked, "Who is this monk?"

The man in shades hurriedly said, "Sir...Ahem. This fat monk comes from no ordinary background. He is the third son of the Zhu family, one of China's four great families. His name is Zhu Shiye. Due to certain reasons, he was left in Jinlin's Shaolin Monastery and became a monk. He doesn't cultivate using the psionic

cultivation system but instead is trained in Shaolin martial arts. He is a warrior monk that focuses on ancient martial arts and internal energy. Although Zhu Shiye is a lazy person and is often called 'Piggy Monk' by his senior brothers, his martial talent is rather high. He is adept at Golden Bell and Iron Shirt. His superpower also happens to be the defensive 'Lava Rigid Body'. Therefore, his defense is extremely high. Even exponents at the Psionic Soul Realm would find it hard to cause him trouble. However, his offensive skill and movement technique are weaker. When he was at the quarter-finals, he was kited by Princess Xiao Xiao and received more than a hundred 'Frost Ice Arrows' shots before he finally succumbed."

The old man looked at the simpering Zhu Shiye and said thoughtfully, "For him to reach the realm of outer aura at such a young age, I can't deny that this fat monk is well endowed. I happen to have the 'Vajra Body Defending Divine Skill'. I wonder if this fat monk will want to learn it or not."

When his subordinate heard that, he had nearly exclaimed in alarm.

Vajra Body Defending was a lost art of Shaolin! Why is it in your hands? That's not right. There's nothing impossible when it comes to you, but why are you giving it so easily?

The man carefully glanced at the old man and said with a stiff smile, "Your Excellency seems to place great importance on that matter?"

"Obvious bullshit."

The red-goateed old man smacked his lips and said with a sneer, "Anything that has to do with my goatee is a matter of life and death importance."

Don't tell me that scarlet-red goatee of yours is your lifeblood?

The man in shades cursed in his mind but he did not dare to speak further. He thought to himself how Zhu Shiye had truly met an eminence in his life.

Why didn't he encounter such a good thing when he was young?

Well, that's not right. Wasn't he standing beside such an eminence? Even if he did not get meat to eat, he could at least get some soup to drink sooner or later, right?

Haha, wasn't it the good fortune of three lives to become the chief's subordinate?

"Ah! Ah! Ah! Ah~"

At that moment, the boy-crazy crowd, which had finally come to a rest, suddenly roared once again.

"Ah! Ah! Ah~"

The old man refused to play second fiddle and immediately

shouted louder than the maniacs.

The man in shades was staring in a dumbfounded manner as he sensed the 'burning' gazes from the audience stands. He hurriedly slipped behind the red-goateed old man and cursed in his heart.

The good fortune of three lives my ass. It's clearly the punishment from ten lives worth of sin!

The man carefully probed his head out and looked at the passageway to see the 'culprit'.

The person who walked out was a thin youth. He had stylish black hair with a cut face. His facial features were distinct with sword-like eyebrows and brilliant looking eyes. He had a cold expression and he could not be deemed handsome, but he was very cool. The stylishness he demonstrated during the tournament had destroyed several fanatics that had raging hormones.

"This person is Wei Long," said the man in shades with a cough. "God of Assassination Wei Tai's son. Well-versed in the art of assassination. He is proficient at hidden blades and shadow strikes. He has extremely fast speed and he can have astounding bursts of speed. On a certain level, he can restrain Bunny Cao and is the only rookie at the tournament who had a chance of defeating Bunny Cao. Unfortunately, he had encountered Chen Lingcun in the quarter-finals. He had stabbed Chen Lingcun in the back but failed to break his defense. Finally, he was punched out of the arena with one strike."

The red-goateed old man finally stopped his 'wailing' upon hearing his subordinate's description. He stroked his goatee and said softly, "That punk, Wei Tai, is actually willing to expose his son. It looks like he can't bear nurturing his son into an assassin and wants to make him a hero assassin... If there is a chance, I can actually help him."

His subordinate looked at Wei Long in envy. He thought to himself how lucky these children were. Who said that people born in the same era as Bunny Cao and Speechless Li had been born in the wrong era? If not for the two children, 'that matter' would absolutely not have happened. This bunch of children would also not have such great opportunities.

The host quickly finished introducing Wei Long since there was not much information about him as he was the God of Assassination, Wei Tai's son.

"Tinkle—"

Chimes were heard from the passageway before a petite young girl in Daoist robes walked out of the passageway slowly.

The girl in Daoist robes had elegant features and her black, lustrous hair was tied into a Daoist bun. Her eyes were as bright as the stars and she wore a white Daoist robe with flowery patterns. There was a white brocade by her waist that hung several bells. With each step, her bells would shake incessantly.

"Tinkle—"

As the audience looked toward the petite girl in Daoist robes, they suddenly recalled her diligent performance in the arena. Immediately, they broke out into thunderous cheers.

The man with the shades also revealed an appreciative look as he said, "Your Excellency, this girl is a female disciple of the Three Clarities Daoist Temple. Her name is Petite Yu and she is proficient in Daoist arts. However, it's mostly supportive techniques so she isn't skilled at duels. Despite that, she became a dark horse during the tournament selection by managing to squeeze into the top eight."

"Like Chen Lingcun, she had used her affiliations to enter an autonomous university, forcefully gaining the qualifications to participate in the selection. Apparently, it has to do with her senior brother's participation in the collective training selection so she had pleaded with the old Daoist priest for permission to participate in it. The old Daoist priest thought that it was impossible for her to enter the top ten, considering how she had only cultivated in supportive Daoist arts, but Petite Yu had managed to use the eight Daoist incantations that she was unfamiliar with to defeat one opponent after another. It is apparent how talented she is."

The old man nodded and said with a smile, "Not bad!"

Truly, there were very few rookies that focused on supportive skills. It was not easy for a person to enter the top ten in the selection tournament based on her own strength.

Without holding back, the host similarly spewed out praises for Petite Yu. His praise for her made her blush slightly. She was a shy person, to begin with, so under the gazes of so many people, she was eager to shy away.

At that moment, Xiao Xiao, who was standing close to her, gave her a friendly smile. It immediately left Petite extremely touched as she hurriedly moved close to Xiao Xiao. Out of the top ten rookies for the tournament selection, there were only three girls. It was truly a depressing sausage fest.

Petite stayed close to Xiao Xiao and immediately, she felt safe. With the two beauties standing close together, it became a beautiful scene. It attracted the gazes of the audience.

And at this moment, a rookie walked out of the passageway at an inopportune moment. It made the audience draw a gasp when they turned to look at him.

They felt that the change of scenery was too drastic, making them turn their gaze back.

It was no wonder the audience acted so. It was because the rookie that had appeared was an intolerable sight to the eyes.

He was a stout man. His arms and back were bulging with muscles like a dragon. They seemed to contain immense power and he had a face that wasn't too much to be described as 'extremely vicious'. A patch of hair that circled the remaining black hair had been trimmed away, and in the middle of his head was yellow hair

that stood up like a rooster's crown. His slightly widened eyes seemed to be filled with flames of anger, while a hideous scar went from his forehead down past his right eye. His mustache was a messy scrawl, and a prominent double chin brought out the terrifying weirdness of his face.

The man in shades took a glance at his information and his expression changed slightly. With a sigh, he said, "His name is originally Ye Youtian and now, he has taken on the alias, Ye Jiaquan. He was once a 'wolf cub' reared by Seven Duke Wolf..."

Upon hearing the words Seven Duke, the gaze under the old man's shades changed slightly.

Chapter 496: An Unmistakable 36E

"Why? Is Seven Duke Wolf planning on stepping beyond his authority to interfere with the two-faction collective training? It looks like I'll need to find time to have tea with Seven Duke Wolf and have a chat?"

The red-goateed old man's eyes narrowed slightly. His eyes suddenly turned as sharp as a sword.

The man in shades immediately jumped in fright. For the great man in front of him to 'have tea' or 'chat', it would cause reverberations throughout China once again despite how lightly he put it.

He hurriedly said, "Sorry, sir. I didn't make it clear! Ye Youtian may have been a wolf cub of Seven Duke Wolf, but he has already broken away! His participation in the collective training selection and his final entry has nothing to do with Seven Duke Wolf!"

The red-goateed old man gave a nonchalant glance at the man in shades and said, "Is it so easy for the Seven Duke Wolf's wolf cub to break away?"

The man in shades nodded in reply, "With Seven Duke Wolf's style, he would rather slaughter a worthless wolf cub than let it go. Although Ye Youtian is a progeny of the Ye family, his talent is rather ordinary when compared to Heartless Ye and his sister. That sly old fox of the Ye family has already disavowed him. So logically speaking, Ye Youtian has no way of escaping Seven Duke

Wolf's clutches. But strangely, the Mù family had produced fifteen kilograms of glass coral in exchange for Ye Youtian's life."

"Fifteen kilograms of glass corals? That isn't a small amount."

The red-goateed old man asked, "Why would the Mù family do so?"

His subordinate glanced at the information and an odd expression suffused his face. He whispered, "According to our investigations, it was not the Mù family trying to protect Ye Youtian. Instead, it's the oldest daughter of the Mù family, Mù Hongyi, who secretly stole fifteen kilograms of glass coral from the Mù family's treasure vault. Apparently, Mù Hongyi had done so... for eros..."

"Eros!?"

The red-goateed old man lowered his head and glanced at the distant Ye Jiaquan and said with a fuming smile, "Are you kidding me?"

"Sir, you misunderstand!"

The man in shades panicked in horror as he hurriedly explained, "Si... Your Excellency, you are mistaken. The reason of eros was done so by Mù Hongyi not because of the ugly looking Ye Youtian but because of Chen Lingcun's brother, Chen Duqu. Mù Hongyi has been pursuing Chen Duqu for five whole years to no avail. It

recently seemed to bear some fruit and after knowing that Chen Lingcun wanted to protect Ye Youtian, Mù Hongyi immediately stole fifteen kilograms of glass coral to give to Chen Lingcun. She claimed that it was 'one of the dowries of your sister-in-law'... In short, it's because Chen Lingcun wanted to save Ye Youtian."

The red-goateed old man cursed angrily, "Punk, can't you directly say the last sentence? Must you tell such a complicated story? Instead, you missed a salient point—Why would Chen Lingcun save Ye Youtian?"

The man in shades gave an embarrassed smile and said, "Yes, Si... Ahem. Because of Seven Duke Wolf's orders from before, Ye Youtian had taken on the alias of Ye Jiaquan and infiltrated Gaia. He had accidentally exposed his identity during Gaia and Zeus's battle exchange. According to our information, Ye Youtian and Chen Lingcun happen to be rookies of Gaia's Annihilation division this year. Chen Lingcun might have saved Ye Youtian mainly because of their good relationship in Gaia. As for Ye Youtian participating in the selection, it is likely that he had done so to accompany Chen Lingcun. It was unexpected that he would enter the top ten..."

When the red-goateed old man heard those words, he mused, "Gaia again? If I didn't remember wrong, Shi Xiaobai that has caused quite a stir recently is also from Gaia?"

The man in shades said with a nod, "It's not only Shi Xiaobai. Mu Yuesheng, Wen Hezheng, and Kevin on the organization collective training's name list are Gaia rookies as well. Although Wen Hezheng and Kevin's qualifications are still being discussed at a

meeting, it is unlikely that Azure Emperor Jiang would change a rule he set easily, considering his personality. As such, including the two from the academic faction, out of the twenty people for the two-faction collective training, it is possible that six of the rookies come from Gaia or were formerly Gaia rookies... Something might be amiss with this matter..."

"Somewhat interesting."

The red-goateed old man sucked at his cigar and said, "Gaia was a powerhouse in the hero faction three decades ago but it has waned in recent years, eventually becoming second-rate. If not for One-Pun and Hisith holding up the organization, they would have been devoured by the seven major organizations who are coveting 'Gaia's heritage'. Who knew that they would cause such a stir this time. Could it be a dead cat bounce?"

The man in shades closed in and repressed his voice and asked, "Is there a need to send Dragon team to investigate it thoroughly?"

"There's no need," said the red-goateed old man with a shake of his head. "I had some ties with Gaia in the past, so I'll let it pass."

"Yes!"

The man in shades did not dare speak further. He had no right to sway something the chief had decided.

While the duo was discussing the matter, the host had already

finished introducing Ye Jiaquan. He had even rushed to introduce the remaining two people who appeared.

"Lu Hu and Zhan Peng..."

The man in shades hurriedly introduced the last two rookies.

And in the stadium, the host had already left. The yellow-browed elder that had left the stadium silently walked out once again. With the microphone in hand, he spoke slowly with a thick northeastern accent, but whatever he said was dry and uninteresting about the expedition.

The old principal of Peihua University had looked rather impressive when he appeared but once he began giving a speech, his awe immediately diminished. The audience was also rendered speechless but they did not dare express it on their faces.

However, the red-goateed old man cursed without fear, "For Peihua University to dare get Illiterate Wen be its principal, it will be doomed sooner or later."

The moment the red-goateed old man said those words, the yellow-browed elder immediately cast his gaze over. Despite only pausing on him for a second, it made the man in shades break out in cold sweat. He could not help but shrink his neck back in fear.

A banter between great figures was not something a tiny shrimp like him could withstand, even if it was a gaze!

At that moment, the red-goateed old man said suddenly, "Why are there only nine?"

The yellow browed elder had already begun his shoddy speech but there were only nine rookies present—Chen Lingcun, Mù Yaotian, Princess Xiao Xiao, Zhu Shiye, Wei Long, Petite Yu, Ye Jiaquan, Lu Hu, and Zhan Peng.

The man in shades faltered for a moment before he immediately said, "Bunny Cao is missing..."

The old man asked, "Why isn't Bunny Cao here?"

His subordinate said with a placative smile, "I...I do not know... Bunny Cao had finished the finals half an hour ago. It doesn't make sense for her lack of attendance..."

The red-goateed old man shot a glance at the man in shades before extinguishing his cigar. He placed the remaining bit into the pocket on his chest before saying, "Then, let's go back."

"Yes!"

The man in shades hurriedly nodded. With the participation of old Principal Wen in the expedition ceremony that followed, it would probably become rather 'uninteresting'. It was equivalent to going through the boring motions and there was indeed no value to watching it any further.

...

...

Just as the man in shades guessed, ever since the yellow-browed elder began his speech, the so-called expedition ceremony became extremely boring. The nine rookies had only said a few words each while the rest of the time was dedicated to the yellow-browed elder's reading of his script. He used a northeastern accent to recite it at a tortoise's pace. It was more vexing than a monk's chanting.

But thankfully, the expedition ceremony only lasted for half an hour before it came to an end.

With the expedition ceremony ending, it also meant that the academic faction's selection tournament had finally come to an end. Mù Yaotian immediately began pestering Chen Lingcun while the other rookies began having various exchanges.

Xiao Xiao did not stay behind after she exchanged her contact information with Petite Yu. She ingeniously went around the reporters' ambush and secretly left from a safety exit. The Xiao family's old steward had been waiting for her for some time and he drove an ordinary-looking private car to fetch his young mistress.

Xiao Xiao very quickly left Dragon Summer Stadium by car.

On Beijing Third Ring Road, the private car was cruising at an

adequate speed.

A cool breeze entered through the open window, ruffling the girl's long hair. Pink strands of hair fluttered in front of her delicate face that had eyes which were as beautiful as a portrait's. Like the descent of cherry blossoms, it was beautiful and mesmerizing. People in the cars that passed by her car would occasionally be stunned from catching a glimpse of the passing beauty. It nearly caused accidents.

Xiao Xiao had her head turned to look at the scenery that was whizzing past the window. Her eyes lost focus as though she was contemplating something. Her expression looked somewhat melancholic.

The steward had seen this scene through the rear-view mirror and was somewhat puzzled. He thought to himself that his young mistress had not only entered the name list of the two-faction collective training, but she had also obtained the outstanding result of placing fourth. Why did she look like she had been eliminated?

After hesitating for a moment, the steward eventually decided against inquiring.

Xiao Xiao sighed lightly as she rubbed the Azure Descendence Bow beside her. As she caressed the bow's body that seemed as mild as jade, she felt a cool touch that gradually calmed the slightly vexed emotions she was having.

She had lost. Twice.

She had suffered an utter defeat during her battle with Bunny Cao during the semi-finals.

During the match for third place, she was barely defeated by Mù Yaotian.

The abject defeat she suffered in the first match made her understand the gap between a genius and a 'freak of nature'. The second match where she was barely defeated made her realize that she was still lacking in many things.

Ever since the encounter in the virtual world, Xiao Xiao understood that there was always someone better. She had been admitted into China's best institute of higher learning, Peihua University, with her placing third at Beijing's entrance exams. She believed that she was outstanding compared to her peers but after meeting Shi Xiaobai, she had received one setback after another. It also gave birth to her competitive spirit.

She began thirsting to become stronger.

Therefore, she began pulling her bow and shooting arrows every day. She would repeat the same action without feeling fatigue or loneliness. After day after day of cultivation, compared to the 'Crimson Netherworld' she had used in the virtual world, she had grown a lot.

And because of that, she had relied on her archery skills that were improving by the day and her unique superpower to allow her to advance without obstruction during the academic faction selection tournament. It only ended when she met Bunny Cao.

The semi-final match was a trouncing that had no fancy highlights. Even she found it boring for the audience.

Bunny Cao was clearly about the same age as her. She was even half a year younger. Why was the difference in strength so immense?

Although she had been defeated in the match with Mù Yaotian for third place, she was only barely defeated. She could discover what was lacking from her failures. From that, she could continue working hard and progress so that she could fight another time.

But in the battle with Bunny Cao, it was an abject defeat. She did not even have the chance to fight back. She was unable to gain any experience from the utter defeat she had suffered. She could only summarize the great disparity of that match to two points—Bunny Cao was too strong and she was too weak.

This was a situation that was more despairing. She did not know how she could defeat Bunny Cao. Even the thought of it was difficult. It was as if her subconsciousness had determined that Bunny Cao was an opponent that could not be defeated no matter how much hard work she put in.

She had nearly lost the courage and confidence to attempt

pursuing Bunny Cao.

After the abject defeat during the semi-finals, Xiao Xiao had locked herself in her room and stayed in bed for an entire day before she gradually found her fighting spirit again.

But just a while ago, the fighting spirit that she had reignited through great difficulty was extinguished once again.

Xiao Xiao regretted watching the final match that had ended not long ago.

The battle lasted for more than ten minutes and it was extremely intense. As such, Xiao Xiao realized how 'nonchalant' Bunny Cao was when she battled her. Compared to the strength she showed during the semi-finals, Bunny Cao at the final match looked like a fierce tiger that had finally opened its eyes.

It was even possible that Bunny Cao did not even use all her strength during the final match.

"What should I do in order to chase up to her?"

Xiao Xiao sighed inwardly. At that moment, she had an unprecedented thirst for becoming stronger. Yet, she felt more dispirited and powerless than ever before.

Suddenly, a familiar but also unfamiliar figure appeared in the scene outside the window that hurled backward.

Xiao Xiao's pupils constricted slightly.

Although it was just a cursory glance, the figure she saw was just too special. Xiao Xiao had managed to recognize that person with a glance.

With a peculiar bowl cut, she wore a cotton blouse and a red scarf around her neck despite the hot weather. She wore a short skirt but underneath it was a pair of blue track pants. She held a half-eaten bun in her hand as she skipped down the highway.

And most importantly, there was a visually estimated pair of proud 36E breasts that could not be hidden at all by the loose cotton blouse!

Who else was it but Bunny Cao?

Xiao Xiao could not help but shout at her old steward, "Stop the car!"

Chapter 497: The Elusive Big Boobed Loli

"H...Hello."

Xiao Xiao disembarked the car and briskly caught up to Bunny Cao as she greeted with an overcautious expression. She was always dignified but against this same-aged girl, she could not help but feel hesitant. She felt powerless trying to chase after the girl but the girl also made her fighting spirit soar.

Bunny Cao turned her head over and took a bite on the meat bun in her hand. As she chewed, she frowned as if trying to recall. After blinking her eyes, she mumbled, "Xiao...Xiao...Xiao..."

Although 'Xiao Xiao' and her surname 'Xiao' repeated twice was pronounced the same, one could tell from Bunny Cao's expression that all she remembered was Xiao Xiao's surname. She had forgotten Xiao Xiao's first name.

"Xiao Xiao, the second Xiao has an additional 'water' radical."

Xiao Xiao wasn't vexed as she replied with a smile.

She had heard some rumors of Bunny Cao and she knew that the girl was an oddity among oddities. It was normal for Bunny Cao to not remember her name.

Have you seen a bowl-cut girl skipping down a highway while wearing cotton clothes and a scarf on a hot summer day?

Have you seen a young girl dressed oddly in a long track pants beneath her short skirt?

Have you seen a big-boobed loli who eats meat buns all day? She eats so much that she would not forget to take a bite on her meat bun even during an intense battle during the finals?

That is Bunny Cao.

"I remember you," said Bunny Cao happily as her eyes lit up slightly while she suddenly pointed at Xiao Xiao.

Although she had said 'I remember you', her expression was clearly one of—Ah, I finally remember. You are...

Fine, even an opponent at the semi-finals can't make you remember?

Or is it because I'm too weak?

Xiao Xiao was slightly disheartened but she very quickly calmed herself down. She said with a smile, "Why are you here?"

Bunny Cao was the only person who had not appeared during the expedition ceremony. Xiao Xiao had previously believed that Bunny Cao's lack of attendance was because something had cropped up urgently, but who knew that she was just skipping

down a highway?

Bunny Cao took another bite at her meat bun and mumbled, "I was hungry and came out for lunch. I'm on the way back to Dragon...Dragon...Dragon..."

Xiao Xiao was dumbfounded

You had eaten five large meat buns during the finals and you are still eating one now. Why are you so hungry?

Did you run all the way to Beijing Third Ring Road in order to eat lunch? This place is more than ten kilometers away from Dragon Summer Stadium. Furthermore, there aren't any restaurants on the highway?

Also, at least remember the name, Dragon Summer Stadium, or else, how are you returning!?

Forget it. There are too many things to complain about. I don't even know where to even begin.

Xiao Xiao suddenly recalled of rumors that Bunny Cao, who had a poor sense of direction, would frequently get lost in school but she would still often take long trips. Who knew that the rumor was true!

Did true geniuses all have such a 'personality'?

The corners of Xiao Xiao's mouth twitched but she tried her best to maintain a natural smile. She said, "The expedition ceremony has just ended. Everyone at Dragon Summer Stadium has already left."

"So fast?"

Bunny Cao was slightly dumbfounded as she quickly stuffed the remaining tiny piece of meat bun into her mouth. Immediately following that, her tiny hand extended upwards as a six-pointed star runic formation bloomed from her palm. An instant later, a hot piping meat bun appeared out of thin air and fell into her hand.

Bunny Cao swallowed the food in her mouth and began to delightfully take a nibble at the meat bun. All of this happened in a blink of an eye as she mumbled, "It ended just as I went to have a meal?"

Xiao Xiao gave a helpless smile. You ran more than ten kilometers away to have a meal and ate for more than an hour before returning.

Not only do you lack a sense of direction, you also lack a sense of time.

Furthermore, didn't you just eat a meal? Why are you consuming one meat bun after another?

Also, to use such high-grade spatial magic to 'steal' meat buns for eating. Is that really appropriate?

Sigh. This won't do. I can't complain anymore or I'll become weird as well.

Xiao Xiao felt that the invincible image she had of Bunny Cao was crumbling. She tried her best to maintain her smile as she said, "It has been more than an hour since the finals ended. The expedition ceremony was held for half an hour. However, nothing important was announced. We will be informed of the actual time of the collective training after the organization faction finishes their selection."

"Oh, that's good."

Bunny Cao took another bite at the meat bun. She ate her meat buns one bite after another. Although each bite was a tiny nibble, she was extremely fast. She probably ate much faster than a grown man.

Furthermore, after finishing one bun, she would immediately use spatial magic to 'steal' another. How many meat buns would she eat a day?

Xiao Xiao could not help but steal a glance at Bunny Cao's belly. Although her ample breasts propped her top high up, it was still possible to tell that the girl's belly was rather flat. Her waist was extremely thin and slender.

On another careful look, she immediately realized that Bunny Cao's figure was excellent. It could be said to be petite and exquisite. She was about 1.6 meters tall and she wasn't considered too tall or short. Other than the two big bunnies on her chest that were visually estimated at 36E, every other part looked slender. Her arms were willowy and her buttocks were perky. Her legs were long and upright. She was not overly meaty or overly slim. Her proportions were excellent.

Furthermore, Bunny Cao's skin was exceptional. Redness suffused from her fair skin which resembled a baby's. It was as though its moisture could be squeezed out with a pinch.

Xiao Xiao sized up Bunny Cao and the more she looked, the more envious she became of Bunny Cao's figure. Although her figure wasn't bad, it was quite incomparable to Bunny Cao's, especially that bust size...

Eh?

That's not right. This wasn't the main point!

Xiao Xiao jolted awake as she hurriedly gathered her rampant thoughts that had displaced themselves.

The important point was Bunny Cao looked petite and cute, so her stomach was definitely tiny as well. How could she eat so many meat buns?

Xiao Xiao was baffled but she did not know how to make an appropriate inquiry. After all, she was not familiar with Bunny Cao.

At that moment, the meat bun in Bunny Cao's hand was more than half gone. Noticing how Xiao Xiao had remained silent for such a long period of time, she finally took the initiative to say, "Then I'll be going back."

"Going back?"

Xiao Xiao faltered for a moment before immediately asking, "Going back to where?"

Bunny Cao chewed on her meat bun and fell into a slight daze. Suddenly, her mouth pouted slightly as she frowned. Her expression was rather cute. After thinking for a long time, she finally blurted out, "See-something hotel?"

Xiao Xiao said in astonishment, "Caesar Grand Hotel?"

"Right!"

The distressed look on Bunny Cao's face immediately vanished as she took another bite on her meat bun. Beaming, she said, "Caesar Grand Hotel. I'm going back. My dad is waiting for me."

After Bunny Cao said those words, she waved her hands in a cute 'bye bye' gesture before turning around to leave.

Xiao Xiao hurriedly shouted, "Hold on! Are you planning on walking back?"

Caesar Grand Hotel was one of the most famous hotels in Beijing. Therefore, Xiao Xiao knew that Bunny Cao was referring to Caesar Grand Hotel immediately. However, she recalled that the distance from where they were to the nearest Caesar Grand Hotel branch was dozens of kilometers away. And from the looks of it, Bunny Cao was planning on skipping her way back on the highway?

Indeed, Bunny Cao stopped and turned sideways and nodded as though it was for granted. She said, "Yeah."

Xiao Xiao fell silent.

Was she planning to really walk dozens of kilometers?

And more importantly, Bunny Cao couldn't even remember the name Caesar Grand Hotel. Could she really walk all the way back herself?

Heavens, how is her dad not worried about leaving her to frolic outside?

Xiao Xiao was a kind lady so she naturally could not turn a blind eye to this. She turned around and pointed to her private car that

wasn't that far away. She said, "That's my car. Shall we give you a lift?"

As Xiao Xiao said that, she turned around once again but she was astounded to realize that Bunny Cao had vanished. Other than the cars that were shuttling incessantly past her, there was nothing.

Eh?

Eh!

Where is Bunny Cao!?

Xiao Xiao was alarmed as she hurriedly surveyed her surroundings. The straight highway allowed her to see kilometers into the distance and there were no other forks in the road. She had only turned around for a second or two, so how could she vanish from her line of sight?

Xiao Xiao spent a few moments searching and even shouted a few times. The people in the cars that passed her gave her a strange look. If not for her beauty, they would probably think of her as a crazy woman or a fool.

Xiao Xiao returned to the car with a flushed face. She knew that the direction in which Bunny Cao was skipping towards was at least right, so she hoped that no mishap would happen during that period of time.

However, with Bunny Cao's personality and ability to live carefreely to this point in time, it was unlikely for her to suffer any mishap, right?

Xiao Xiao could only forcefully repress the worry in her heart. She got her old steward to drive the car away. It is dangerous stopping a car on a highway, so kids, don't try this at home!

The private car continued cruising down the highway as a cool breeze entered through the open window. It ruffled the girl's peach-colored long hair but Xiao Xiao's mind was no longer the same as before. The lonely feelings that came from the realization that there was an unbridgeable gap between her and Bunny Cao were wiped clean.

She wasn't envious or jealous of Bunny Cao, to begin with. She only felt that despite putting in her best efforts, Bunny Cao was still able to handle her easily. Therefore, she had felt disheartened from feeling weak.

But now, she realized that Bunny Cao was a wondrous oddity. Some of her negative emotions immediately vanished and replacing them was an intensely burning fighting spirit. It wanted to chase up to Bunny Cao!

Some geniuses were irritating to others because although they were extremely talented, they thought very highly of themselves and disparaged others.

But there were some geniuses who were extremely 'cute'. They

were so cute that they attracted people with the wish to chase up to them. They would become one's target to strive for.

Bunny Cao was like that.

Shi Xiaobai was also like that.

Xiao Xiao could not help but recall the experiences she had in the virtual world once again. Back then, she felt that the little pervert that called himself 'This King' was an unpolished genius that would eventually glow.

However, she never expected that in a short period of time, through the collective training selection, not only did he glow, he had turned so radiant that he blinded the 'titanium dog eyes' of several 'geniuses'.

When she thought of that, a faint smile involuntarily suffused on the corner of her lips. She took out her cellphone and adeptly opened a web page and entered a discussion forum named 'Shi Xiaobai Bar'.

About a month ago, a member nicknamed 'WhyArePointsNeededForLeveling' had set up the board but it did not gain much attention. Only when Shi Xiaobai suddenly turned viral not long ago did a huge batch of fans surge in. And today, the number of people following the board was no longer small in number. Although it was still far from celebrity heroes, the number of forum fans was closely behind same-aged geniuses like Speechless Li and Bunny Cao, who had made a glorious name for

themselves at a young age. It could be deemed as him being a phenomenal rookie that had his popularity suddenly surge.

Xiao Xiao flipped through a few threads to check on Shi Xiaobai's latest ongoing. The little pervert had been in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower's seventh level for more than ten days. Many people were closely watching it. They were curious to know if Shi Xiaobai, whose conquering of the eight Level Lords being an unprecedented shocking matter, would be able to become the fourth trial-taker in history to reach the eighth level.

But unfortunately, after flipping through a few pages, she did not find any relevant news. There were many threads with 'fabricated stories'. They fabricated 'fake experiences' of Shi Xiaobai. Some were written very realistically but Xiao Xiao, who knew Shi Xiaobai's character, only smiled inwardly.

However, she did not respond to expose them. In fact, she only browsed through the forum as a lurker. She never posted nor replied. She could not understand the mindsets of the flammers on the board and found them uninteresting.

Xiao Xiao put down her cell phone and began thinking about how she should greet him when she met him again at the collective training. She wondered if the little pervert still remembered her.

Xiao Xiao began rummaging through her thoughts as she looked at the scenery outside the window.

Suddenly, Xiao Xiao widened her eyes.

"Stop the car! Quick, stop the car!"

Heavens! What did she see?

There was a bowl-cut big-boobed loli skipping down the highway!

Heavens, isn't this direction completely opposite from Caesar Grand Hotel?

Eh, that's not right?

Why would Bunny Cao appear in front of them?

Chapter 498: This Isn't An Illness, But Fate!

Having met Bunny Cao again on Beijing Third Ring Road was equivalent to capturing a live big-boobed loli. Xiao Xiao was extremely careful this time as she held on to Bunny Cao, afraid that she would suddenly disappear again.

Xiao Xiao spent lots of effort before finally convincing Bunny Cao, who had insisted on going alone. She tried coaxing her with all kinds of deceit before the girl who had an extremely bad sense of direction boarded the car reluctantly.

The car turned around and headed for the Caesar Grand Hotel branch that was closest to Dragon Summer Stadium.

Xiao Xiao and Bunny Cao sat in the back together. As they were not familiar with each other, there was a tiny distance separating them in the middle.

After Bunny Cao got into the car, she began silently stuffing meat buns into her mouth. Perhaps she was somewhat unhappy that her 'tour of getting lost as she wished' had been interrupted forcefully. The speed at which she ate the buns was much faster than before. She would finish one big bun in less than thirty seconds.

After finishing one, Bunny Cao would immediately use spatial magic without taking a break and 'steal' a new piping hot bun.

Although Xiao Xiao was not familiar with magic, she had some general knowledge. Such 'spatial transference' of an object from a

great distance away into one's hand was considered an abstruse form of magic. It was a high-grade magical spell that drained a lot of mana.

Xiao Xiao was suspecting that the reason why Bunny Cao was able to continuously cast magical spells for more than ten minutes without showing any signs of fatigue at the finals was that she had repeatedly used such high-grade spatial magic on a daily basis.

Every thirty seconds, Bunny Cao would finish eating a huge bun and another would follow. There was no sign of her stopping or resting. Soon, she had eaten nearly ten.

Xiao Xiao stared at her in a dumbfounded manner as she could not help but suspect that Bunny Cao was a humanoid monster. If not, how could a human's stomach store so many meat buns?

Xiao Xiao felt her scalp tingle as she finally could not help but ask, "Are...meat buns that delicious?"

Bunny Cao turned her head over. First, her eyes lit up as she nodded, but moments later, she frowned and shook her head.

After she swallowed the food in her mouth, Bunny Cao mumbled, "Meat buns are very fragrant but eating too many of them makes them taste bad. However...meat buns are best for filling the stomach!"

No matter how delicious a delicacy was, the repeated eating of it

would make one sick of it. That was an easily understandable point.

But what did she mean by meat buns being the best for filling the stomach?

Xiao Xiao hesitated for a moment before considering how she should mince her words. She said, "Bunny, could it be that you eat so many meat buns...just to fill your stomach?"

Bunny chewed on her food as she nodded her head as if it was for granted.

Xiao Xiao said with a stiff smile, "You aren't full even after eating so many meat buns?"

Bunny nodded and mumbled, "I can't be satiated. My stomach just keeps feeling hungry."

A dark cloud hung over Xiao Xiao's head as she thought to herself.

You are indeed a humanoid monster!

"Have you always been eating so much food?"

Xiao Xiao ventured a guess once again. There was no way around it. She was too curious about the matter. An ordinary person

would be considered a competitive eater if one did not die from a ruptured stomach after eating so many meat buns. Yet, Bunny Cao was still hungry. There was clearly a problem!

Bunny said with a shake of the head, "It wasn't like this in the past. Slightly more than ten days ago, I suddenly felt very, very hungry. I wasn't filled no matter how much I ate...Then it became what it is now...Meat buns are just snacks. It curbs some of the hunger but I have to eat dozens of kilograms of meat to be satiated. Daddy says that I'm almost draining the family of all its money with my appetite!"

Bunny had said it in a simple manner but it made Xiao Xiao's scalp tingle.

So many meat buns were just a snack? She had to eat dozens of kilograms of meat just to be satiated?

It suddenly happened more than ten days ago?

Was it an illness?

Furthermore, it was quite serious!

"Can this illness be cured?"

Xiao Xiao blurted out her thoughts before she hurriedly covered her mouth. She realized that she had been too rash. Even though Bunny did not seem like a person who would mind, how could she

say such 'impolite' words?

"It's not an illness."

What caught Xiao Xiao by surprise was that Bunny suddenly swallowed the food in her mouth before her expression turned slightly serious. She said solemnly, "Daddy said it's not an illness but fate!"

Xiao Xiao was alarmed. She felt the topic seem to turn a little too heavy. "It's not an illness but fate." Such a saying usually brings with it an undisclosable secret.

Was it appropriate for her to probe into Bunny Cao's secret?

Xiao Xiao immediately did not wish to continue asking.

However, Bunny's expression suddenly changed as she pouted and said unhappily, "I think it's an illness. If not, why would I suddenly be constantly hungry for no good reason? But even Granny Divine Healer can't cure it so Daddy has given up. He said that an incurable illness is a kind of fate and that I should submit to fate..."

Xiao Xiao gaped and was momentarily at a loss as to what to say.

An incurable illness was fate. Wasn't she being too broad-minded?

To think that she had accidentally heard a humongous secret. So she had really come down ill. However, the illness was strange. It actually forced Bunny Cao to eat dozens of kilograms of meat a day to be barely satiated? After all this, where did the food she eat go to? It couldn't really enter her stomach, right?

Xiao Xiao's mind was filled with questions but she eventually did not ask. Although Bunny Cao was free from care or worries and she did not mind talking about anything, she couldn't thicken her skin to dig up her secrets, right?

With Xiao Xiao falling silent, Bunny's attention returned to the meat buns. She was eating them in delight, as though there was no hint of her being 'sick' of them.

Indeed, Bunny could not extricate herself from the immersion of meat buns. If not, how could an ordinary person choose meat buns as a snack!?

Xiao Xiao shook her head as she smiled inwardly. She turned to look at the scenery outside the window.

There was silence along the way. Xiao Xiao was quiet while Bunny focused on eating her meat buns.

After a long while, Xiao Xiao felt restless and habitually took out her cell phone to refresh the forum, "Shi Xiaobai Bar".

"Ah!"

Xiao Xiao nearly cried out loudly when she took a glance at it!

「 Ah, ah, ah! Shi Xiaobai has finally reached the eighth level! 」

「 The fourth trial-taker in history to reach the eighth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is born! Shi Xiaobai does not let down the masses! 」

「 The trial's stone monument has been updated. Shi Xiaobai's name is positioned at the eighth level. Picture as proof! 」

「 The peak of China's end-game style. Can Shi Xiaobai be able to prove to the world that 'end-game' styles still work? Stay tuned for this year's World Tournament! 」

「 Champagne tonight for a celebration! 」

「 Getting a room tonight for a celebration! 」

「 Getting KFC tonight for a celebration! 」

「 Although it's 'Shi Xiaobai Bar'...please don't celebrate. Boohoo. My most beloved Speechless Li is dead! 」

...

What could be seen were all threads of Shi Xiaobai's reaching of the eighth level but intermixed within, there were a few threads about the grievous news of Speechless Li's death. Xiao Xiao began browsing through the threads without stopping as she felt mixed emotions.

She did not know Speechless Li, so would not go as far as to feel sad for the tragic news of Speechless Li's death. However, for China to lose a young genius and an opponent she could aim for as a goal, she still felt somewhat repressed being a girl with proper values.

But at the same time, the news of Shi Xiaobai reaching the eighth level made her extremely excited. She could not help but clench her fist!

Little Pervert, well done!

Xiao Xiao roared in her heart.

She felt her mind shaking and could not help but continuously refresh the forum so as to see the constantly updating threads.

Suddenly, a thread with reply counts constantly surging attracted Xiao Xiao's attention.

「 Prediction Thread—Shi Xiaobai won't spend more than an hour in the eighth level! 」

Chapter 499: Bunny Learns To Scold

It was obvious from the thread's title that the poster was an anti-fan who had deliberately posted to stir trouble. If not, it was a troll who had menacing intentions of trying to get people worked up to get replies. Hence, Xiao Xiao did not click the thread immediately.

However, the number of replies in the thread was constantly increasing. Xiao Xiao immediately could not bear it as she clicked it to check it out.

The opening poster (OP) had written three historical records in the opening post:

Overlord Ji Feng, four hours.

Sword Immortal Xu Taibai, three and a half hours.

Conquest King, five hours.

These three people were historical figures who had previously reached the eighth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower as well as the time they had spent in the eighth level!

Yes, even these striking historical figures had only managed to spend a maximum of five hours in the eighth level before they were eliminated.

Hence, even though Shi Xiaobai had wiped out the Level Lords, no one believed that Shi Xiaobai could reach the ninth level. What people focused on was how long Shi Xiaobai could stay on the eighth level. They wanted to know if he could break the five-hour record that was set by the Conquest King!

And this so-called prediction thread had declared that Shi Xiaobai would not last more than an hour. It was clear that it was meant to sully Shi Xiaobai.

Indeed, the OP of the thread carried on analyzing. Instead of saying it was an analysis, it was more like a forceful account of affairs. The reasons that lacked logic strenuously came up with a conclusion that Shi Xiaobai would not last more than an hour. It was an insult to the intelligence of others.

And the reason why the number of replies the thread had were increasing rapidly was that the thread's OP had spent money to hire troll armies to flood the thread with replies that were filled with malicious intent. And the fans of the forum began to protest angrily. They began attacking the OP!

Sigh, anti-fans of this era would really resort to every conceivable means. Not only did they deliberately stir trouble to play to the gallery, they even managed to think of hiring troll armies.

After looking at it for a while, Xiao Xiao found it boring. She stretched out her finger to close the irritating thread.

Suddenly, a young voice echoed beside her ear.

"What nonsense."

Xiao Xiao turned her head in surprise and realized that Bunny had stuck her head over without her knowing. She was staring at her cell phone's screen and her black eyes were twinkling like stars.

Xiao Xiao felt helpless. Bunny Cao was indeed a girl that did not know any better. How could she look at the cell phone screen of others without permission?

At that moment, Bunny suddenly stretched her finger to point at OP on the screen and said, "This person is spouting nonsense! It's impossible for Shi Xiaobai to not be able to last an hour. He can last at least five hours!"

With that said, Xiao Xiao was immediately astonished.

Bunny Cao was certain that Shi Xiaobai would be able to last more than five hours in the eighth level. That would be an achievement that surpassed the Conquest King. It would create a brand new historical record for the Psionic Mortal Realm!

What did Bunny Cao base on to have so much confidence in Shi Xiaobai?

Xiao Xiao blurted a question, "You know Shi Xiaobai?"

Bunny immediately shook her head and said, "Nope?"

Xiao Xiao said in surprise, "Then why are you so sure that Shi Xiaobai can last more than five hours?"

Bunny pouted as her eyes gradually brightened. She said, "Daddy mentioned it just yesterday. He said that a boy about my age named Shi Xiaobai has recently wiped out eight Level Lords in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. This matter is something Bun Bun can't do. Daddy also once said that the present Bun Bun is only slightly weaker than the Hero King at the same age but stronger than the Conquest King. Since Shi Xiaobai has done something Bun Bun can't do, he would definitely be stronger than the Conquest King. So he will definitely exceed five hours!"

The logic in the series of words was very simple but very problematic. Furthermore, there were many points that were debatable.

For example, how was Bunny Cao's dad so certain that Bunny was stronger than the Conquest King at the same age?

Who was Bunny Cao's father? How could he say something in such an exaggerated manner?

Why would Bunny Cao completely believe her dad?

However, Xiao Xiao did not deliberately consider these questions. Instead, she nodded her head happily and said, "I also believe that

Shi Xiaobai can last more than five hours!"

Although Bunny's acknowledgment of Shi Xiaobai was because of an odd reason, it still made Xiao Xiao feel a baffling sense of happiness. Was it because the person she acknowledged was also acknowledged by someone else?

In short, Xiao Xiao felt great when she heard a positive evaluation of Shi Xiaobai from Bunny's mouth!

At that moment, Bunny suddenly said, "What are you waiting for?"

Xiao Xiao faltered and asked curiously, "Waiting for what?"

Bunny suddenly grinned and with her eyes twinkling, she pointed at the OP on the cell phone screen and said in a high-spirited manner, "Scold him!"

Bunny's head drew closer and with her grinning, Xiao Xiao realized that Bunny had two cute canine teeth. There were also shallow dimples on her cheeks.

For some unknown reason, Xiao Xiao felt that she was infected by Bunny Cao's smile. She blurted out a question, "How should he be scolded?"

Xiao Xiao has a good family background so she carried herself really well and she had almost never scolded others, not to

mention being a flamer on the Internet. She had never thought of such meaningless matters so although she felt a baffling impulse because of Bunny's canine teeth and dimples, she was unsure about the act of scolding others.

In response to Xiao Xiao's question, Bunny blinked and pondered for a moment with a frown before she exclaimed and shook her head. "I don't know how to scold. I've never scolded others before."

Xiao Xiao could not help but laugh. She felt that it was only right for Bunny to not know how to scold others.

Xiao Xiao imitated Bunny's blinking and said with a playful smile, "Then are we still scolding?"

"Yes!"

Bunny said with a nod, "Daddy says that one should be scolded if one does something wrong! This person is absolutely wrong, so there is a need for him to be scolded!"

Xiao Xiao burst into laughter as she felt that Bunny Cao was greatly influenced by her dad. However, the influence was rather positive and she could feel his painstaking efforts to educate his daughter.

However, isn't there a need to teach her some general knowledge? Also, how can you let your innocent daughter run around alone?

"Then...let's learn from the others?"

Xiao Xiao suddenly thought of a solution. Despite them not knowing how to scold, there were many experts that knew how to scold on the forum. It was especially evident in that thread. The number of people scolding the OP was not in the minority, so wouldn't learning from them be sufficient?

Bunny immediately agreed to Xiao Xiao's suggestion by nodding her head heavily.

Xiao Xiao smiled faintly as she scrolled down to the replies from the fans. It was basically a bombardment of the OP.

It would have been fine if she didn't take a look, but that look of hers gave her a fright. Xiao Xiao was appalled to discover that there was a technique to scolding the OP. The way some fans scolded the OP was filled with 'literary art' or the 'charm of literature'!

For example:

"I would like to represent 'China's Research Center for Mental Health' to solemnly apologize to everyone here. Due to our negligence, we allowed the OP to escape time and time again. It has brought unneeded trouble and undesirable effects to everyone and to society. Here, I'll express my heartfelt apologies. About the OP's sickness, our research center has always been paying close attention to it. Although the OP is currently not in a stable

condition and he might act out at any time, we will try our best even if there is a one in a hundred chance of curing him. We have the confidence, determination, and persistence to cure OP and help OP escape the clutches of his sickness's demons. At the same time, I wish everyone in the world would do their best to complement our work and create a harmonious society together. Crazy people aren't scary. We should not mock OP!"

"Shh~ Look, what did I discover? There is an OP that is alone. We can attempt capturing it. One OP can provide us with days of energy. They are rich in protein and a single unit of OP contains more protein than what beef has. However, OP is not easy to deal with. We should slowly approach it from the back. Be careful not to make any noise. Hehe, I caught it. It's struggling vigorously! We just need to twist its head once and we can then pull its innards out. The other parts can be eaten raw. Of course, if time isn't tight, we can first roast it. It would be much more delicious. Oh, it's crispy in texture and it tastes just like chicken!"

Chapter 500: Girls Do Not Know About Pounding The Meat

Xiao Xiao constantly scrolled down as all she saw was scolding passages filled with the 'charm of literature'.

"Actually, I resisted against stroking the OP's dog head the first time! Because I feel that...Hey... You can't make me stroke it at your beck and call. First of all, I want to try it out, but I don't want to say it out either...After stroking the dog head, many special effects will be added. That dog head is...very black! Very shiny! Very soft! But the audience would come out and scold me because there's no such dog head! This proves that the dog head above is fake... Later I learned that it was all organic with no addition of chemicals. So...I stroked it for a month...After a month...it was quite comfortable stroking it. As for now...,I'm stroking it every day! I'm still stroking it every day...I even gave it to the poster below me to stroke it together! Come! Come! Come! Everyone, try stroking it! Then I told the director, "I'll stroke it when it's time to stroke it! After stroking it, this dog head is still OP's dog head. So don't add any effects. If you keep adding special effects, it wouldn't look like a dog head! I want to let everyone see what it looks like after I stroke dog heads—that after you finish stroking it, you will also look like that."*

"OP, here you are trying to sully others. You made me check several communities and scour through hundreds of threads before I finally found you. The construction foreman got me to tell you to wake up early tomorrow for work. There are three cement carts and two carts of bricks that need moving. If you don't finish moving them, you won't even be paid for yesterday. Also, Widower Wang from the eastern end of the village asks you: When would

you have saved enough money to marry her? If you do not return by the end of the year, she will marry the hunchback living in the western end."

These somewhat satirical responses were without a single invective, but each would 'ruthlessly' curse the OP. It made them convulse with laughter in a greatly satisfactory manner.

Xiao Xiao was relishing the passages and came to a realization that scolding could be that interesting.

Bunny's eyes lit up too as she did not even blink. It was as though she had 'learned' a lot.

There were a lot of interesting replies that left the two girls completely clueless.

For example:

"OP has no thoughts of a perished kingdom, only to pound the meat from day to night.

I raise my head to view the bright moon, then I lower my head and pound the meat.

If my family and friends in Luoyang ask about my situation, you could say that OP is pounding the meat.

If one does not exert oneself in youth, OP pounds the meat.

Sitting up in fright on one's deathbed, OP is still pounding the meat.

Striving to be outstanding in life, pounding the meat even in death.

Since the beginning of time, who has not died, OP's continues pounding the meat.

For hundreds and thousands of times, for him I search in the chaos, OP is pounding the meat."

This comment left questions sprouting in Xiao Xiao and Bunny's minds. They could not understand why there was a constant repeat of the words 'OP pounding the meat'.

Was pounding the meat a form of scolding?

However, the duo did not delve deeply into those details as they continued scrolling down.

Suddenly, a reply in a different taste made Xiao Xiao draw a gasp.

"Why were the underwear of a retirement home destroyed? Why did hundreds of sows in the village scream out at midnight? Who is the serial rapist of sows? Was it a human or ghost who knocked on

an old nun's door every night? What is the hidden secret behind the accidental pregnancy of hundreds of mummies? Is the distortion of human nature or moral decay behind all this? Is it the explosive outbreak of hormones or out of helpless thirst? Please stay tuned to tonight's Hero Law Channel's masterpiece this year, 'OP's Path of No Return' at eight. Let us accompany the camera and walk into the perverted OP's inner world!"

Xiao Xiao only saw a few of the first few words before her face blushed; hence, she hurriedly scrolled down.

However, what she saw next was...

"Yearning to violate the OP, hoping to push her down onto a table, and while grabbing onto her ear, hear her choke and press down on her, violating her.

Yearning to violate the OP, hoping to trap her in a clothing square, and while others are buying and selling outside, violate her in the lift and hear her crying, dirtying her exercise attire.

Yearning to violate the OP, hoping to hide in a closet at the exit after work, and while looking at her yearning but not dare to shout, violating her while she wants to resist but lacks strength.

Yearning to violate the OP, hoping to hide her clothes in the gym room, and violating her as she is prevented from leaving and giving medicine to those who want to enter.

Yearning to violate the OP, hoping to capture her during luggage festival and push her down in a corner under a curtain, violating her as she becomes afraid of being discovered.

Yearning to violate the OP, hoping to caress her on the public bus and letting her tremble with mercy in her orgasmic excitement before violating her.

Yearning to violate the OP, hoping to strip her off her underwear and skirt on the balcony she lives in and pressing down on a blanket that is being sunned, violating her as she remains apprehensive of being discovered.

Yearning to violate the OP, hoping to suck at her sensitive spots while she makes a phone call and violating her after she pretends to sound calm.

Yearning to violate the OP, hoping for her to give a morning blow job, hearing her muffled sounds as she chases her parents away before violating her under her urge to be 'faster'..."

Xiao Xiao saw the first line and immediately exclaimed. Her cheeks flushed red as she hurriedly switched off her cell phone screen. She felt that her eyes had been 'tainted'.

At that moment, Bunny suddenly asked in confusion, "What does violation mean? Why did that person keep talking about violating OP?"

Xiao Xiao's face blushed when she heard that. She muttered inaudibly but she was unsure how to reply. She noticed that Bunny's eyes were extremely pure like a baby who wanted to know the answer.

Heavens, does Bunny Cao really not know the meaning to 'violate'?

Boohoo, how can there be such a pure girl?

Xiao Xiao secretly decided that she was definitely not telling Bunny the meaning of such an impure passage. She hurriedly switched topics and said, "Nothing. Just something meaningless. Oh, let's scold the OP also?"

Bunny's attention was immediately diverted as she joyfully nodded and said, "Alright! I want to scold OP! Let me do it first!"

Xiao Xiao smiled slightly as she handed her cell phone over.

Bunny took it over and began typing out words at an extremely slow speed. Furthermore, she had made several typos. It was obvious that she very rarely typed with her cell phone. It was even possible that she had never used one before.

After a few minutes of typing, Bunny displayed the results of her 'studies'.

"OP is speaking nonsense! Shi Xiaobai will definitely last more

than five hours! Hmph! Signing off, Bunny Cao!"

Xiao Xiao could not help but laugh when she looked at it.

Was scolding someone in such a 'cute' manner appropriate? Also, why did she say 'Signing off, Bunny Cao'? Wasn't she afraid that others would criticize her?

Xiao Xiao held back her laughter and said encouragingly, "Nicely done!"

Bunny beamed with pride. It was as though she felt that she had done a good job scolding. She chuckled and handed the cell phone back to Xiao Xiao.

Xiao Xiao took the cell phone over and realized that Bunny was looking at her with a look of anticipation.

Xiao Xiao gave a helpless smile and began typing on the screen. She began producing the first 'bitch' reply of her Internet life.

"Stroking OP's dog head while smiling. Waiting for five hours before Shi Xiaobai smacks OP's face into a pig head!"

Bunny's eyes lit up as she gave her a big thumbs up.

Xiao Xiao also smiled happily.

...

...

As the Xiao family car was cruising down the highway, a middle-aged man was running in mid-air while following the car closely from behind.

This scene made passers-by who happened to see it gape. That was because not only was the middle-aged man running in mid-air more than hundred meters in the sky, he was running very leisurely. It looked like he was walking on flat ground but he was able to follow the car closely behind. He was never left in the dust.

And most crazy of all was that as the middle-aged man ran, he suddenly took out a cell phone and made a call!

However, as there was a constant layer of clouds lingering around the middle-aged man, there was no way of discerning his appearance or knowing what he was saying.

And in fact, the conversation was also very strange.

"Hello, Wifey...Bunny, Bunny has learned to curse. What do we do?"

The middle-aged man looked nervous as he carefully asked.

"Ah!? Why would Bunny learn how to curse!?"

A woman's roar came from the cell phone like a lion's. "I told you to watch Bunny, but you thought nothing of it? You can't even take care of our darling daughter! Do you want to kneel on a washboard?"

The middle-aged man hurriedly said, "Wifey, I know my mistakes. Listen to my explanation..."

The woman said angrily, "Don't explain. Any explanation is just a form of concealment. Concealment means fabricating a story! Speak, what else are you keeping from me?"

The middle-aged man's face turned pale as he stuttered, "Bunny... Bunny even...even asked what violation means..."

The moment the middle-aged man said those words, he closed his eyes as though he was waiting for his death.

"Groundless Cao!"

"Don't you dare step into my room tonight!"

The woman's roar came blaring out from the cell phone as though she was about to flip the sky upside down.

The middle-aged man immediately said in a manner too deep for

tears, "Wifey, I think it's better if you make me kneel on a washboard!"

...

...

News of Shi Xiaobai reaching the eighth level proliferated throughout China quickly. Every citizen was discussing fervently the amount of time Shi Xiaobai would spend on the eighth level.

As for Shi Xiaobai, he was experiencing an 'inward interrogation'.

He had stood silently at the beginning point of the eighth level's world, motionless and expressionless. His eyes were slightly glazed over until the Infernal Queen suddenly appeared as she slowly walked over from a distance.

The Infernal Queen smiled coquettishly as she walked with a seductive gait. Every step she took left an ice lotus blooming at her feet.

She produced lotuses with every step, but they withered nearly instantly.

Shi Xiaobai jolted awake and locked eyes with the Infernal Queen before opening his mouth slightly and he mouthed two words...

From a distance, the Infernal Queen suddenly made out the two words that Shi Xiaobai was about to say from the shape of his mouth. Immediately, her expression changed slightly.

The two words were...

Open Sesame.

Also, it was the exit command!

Translator's Note: This is a passage said by Jackie Chan in an interview on a hair shampoo commercial he did when he was interviewed. It was discovered that it could be taken out of context by changing washing hair to something else, in this case, stroking the dog head (stroke: wash, dog head: hair).